

**IRELAND IN PAST TIMES;**  
**AN HISTORICAL RETROSPECT,**  
**ECCLESIASTICAL AND CIVIL;**

WITH  
ILLUSTRATIVE NOTES.

*Præterita compellunt nos futurorum rationem habere.*

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

LONDON:  
JOHN HATCHARD AND SON, PICCADILLY;  
B. DUGDALE, AND R. M. TIMS, DUBLIN.

1826.





941.5

Ir 21

v.1

11/11/42 read

## PREFACE.

---

THE writer of the following pages can, with perfect integrity, disclaim every interested motive or party feeling in the choice of her subject: the only aim has been, to give a plain and simple narrative of the progress of the Christian religion in Ireland, from the idea that it is always pleasing to the mind to return to times gone by; to trace to their sources the springs from whence flow the virtues and the errors of men, and to examine the silent operation of those powerful agents in human affairs—religious zeal and moral law.

It is confessed, that reflecting how far the subject might lead her, much intimidation ensued; yet, having frequently experienced the indulgent candour of the public, she has encouraged herself to proceed in her self-imposed task, from a conviction that the subject is worthy of attention, as it never can be an uninteresting or useless contemplation, to mark the vicissitudes and conflicts of past ages, whether of a warlike, civil, or ecclesiastical nature, forming, as they have done,

the foundation of present manners, habits, and principles. Nor can it be unpleasing to the patriot and philanthropist, to find from the faithful records of history, that the Irish certainly have not all been, (what too many deem them,) buried in barbarism and ignorance from the beginning of time, distinguished only by the vices to which human nature is prone, when not corrected by education, or restrained by law—assertions alike rash and uncharitable when universally applied. Deductions thus hastily drawn from the errors or weaknesses of the human mind, under the influence of many combining and unfavourable impulses, the following pages, it is diffidently hoped, will prove, are not founded either on reason or justice. It is too much the weakness of our nature to pride ourselves in a fancied superiority to those who had preceded us in the march of existence; perhaps it may be said, that the present age is strongly marked by this mental disease of vanity. It may temper it with a portion of the mild spirit of humility, to find that many a bright star illumined the cloudy horizon of those dark times, beyond the obscurations of which we think we are for ever removed.

It is not by severity of judgment, or by marking too nicely the perversions of honest, but misguided minds, that we can correct error, or chase superstition; these desirable effects are

only to be produced by extending knowledge, and diffusing salutary precepts with candour and mildness; for by thus gaining the affections of men, we may assuredly hope, and reasonably expect, to influence their opinions, and to regulate their practice. Persecution and illiberality are not however the spirit of the age, that of indifference rather prevails; let us be upon our guard against it in religious sentiment, lest in granting too indiscriminate indulgence, and by endeavouring to divest men of bigotry and superstition, we sap or destroy the foundations of their final hope. Let us remember, no sound opinion, no estimable principle could subsist, if the different errors that entwine around it were torn away with an injudicious, rash, or violent hand; and if the evil which inevitably mingles itself with every terrestrial good becomes the subject of a blind proscription.

Such a work as the present must of necessity be confined to the subordinate class and merit of a compilation, and it would rather evidence a foolish and unbecoming pedantry, than true literary integrity, to name the various sources from which illustrations of the subject have been derived. It is therefore the hope of the writer, that it will be sufficient generally to observe, that the most approved historians, both civil and ecclesiastical, have been consulted with diligence,

and made subservient to the design of giving a faithful epitome of the rise and progress of the Hibernian church.

Unaided by literary connection, and removed from that advantageous collision of thought afforded by intelligent society, the writer is perfectly conscious, that both in expression and arrangement, her composition is open to the utmost severity of criticism ; yet she trusts, that simplicity and fidelity may together form the softening veil, through which the keen eye of experienced judgment will view the numerous defects of her unpretending work.

# CONTENTS.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### INTRODUCTION.

Ireland first peopled by Celtic tribes from Gaul—Their government, religion, the mysteries attending it—The Druids—their office and power, their superstitions—Their distinguished habits—Chiefs of the tribes—The Vergobretus—The people question the power of the Druids—Their influence declines—The Druids endeavour to assert their privilege—The effort unsuccessful—The limitation of their power a prelude to its extinction—The Bards—Their office and influence—Cormac O'Conn, his splendour, his dignity and character—State of society, the progression of improvement—Counteracting causes—Introduction of Christianity—It is mingled with Pagan superstition, the mischiefs thence accruing—The corruption of the ministers of religion—Unguarded conduct of the converts—The consequences—The introduction of Christianity is a positive national blessing . . . 1

## CHAPTER II.

Germanus the preceptor of Patrick—Biographic sketch of St. Patrick—Armagh—Doctrines taught by St. Patrick—Various motives produce conversion—Monastic institutions rapidly increase—Influence of fear—Miracles—One relating to St. Patrick—Growing influence of the clergy—The improvement produced by them—Hibernia the seat of learning from the sixth to the close of the seventh century—The effects arising therefrom—Colum-kill—Aidan, his mission to



Northumbria, and character; patronized by Oswald—The piety of Oswald; his laudable endeavours to improve his subjects; his character—Piety flourished in Northumbria—Desired union between the Roman and British churches respecting the observation of Easter, effected—Increasing power of the bishops of Rome, gradually freed from the civil restraints it was subject to—Augmentation of the papal power creates disputes and divisions—Irish missionaries renowned for piety and learning—Irish schools famed for their superiority during the seventh century; Alfred king of Northumbria studied there—Columban, an Irish monk, his missions—Killian, his missions and tragical death—Religion and learning increase in Ireland, but decline in Great Britain during the fifth and sixth centuries; the probable causes; the clouds dispersed in the seventh century—Labours of pious men—Anglo-Saxons were ruled by a succession of great men . . . 16

### CHAPTER III.

General state of Christian religion in Europe—Romish Faith increases—The Irish brought over to Roman Observation of Easter—Ireland distinguished as a prime seat of learning—Success of Irish missionaries—Rumold—Virgilius—Human reasoning displaces simple faith—Image worship—Funereal rites—Temporal power of the popes—Gloom of superstition increases—Accession of papal power—Study of philosophy prevails—Johannes Grigona, his great talent and favour with Charlemagne and Alfred—Devotional spirit prevails in the British isles—Monastic institutions increase, and numbers dedicate themselves to the cloister—Superstition increases greatly—While a secular spirit arises among the religious orders—Reverence paid to religion and learning among the Irish—Ireland is invaded by the barbarians, is plunged in consequence into disorder and ignorance—Indulgence of the first missionaries injudicious, and productive of mischief to true religion—Civil polity of Ireland effected by Christianity in some degree—Low standard of morals—Mischief and advantages of monastic seclusion—State of the clergy in regard to morals and discipline—Their riches and power continue to increase, and they are encouraged by princes to become statesmen and courtiers—The policy of the papal court—Terrors of excommunication—Causes of the depravity of the sacerdotal orders—Ireland invaded by the Danes—Their success, the want of plan and unanimity among the Irish septs favourable to the invaders—Pontifical power continues to augment—This restless and ambitious

spirit resisted by some kings and princes—Their inconsistency negatives their efforts—Great ignorance prevails—The exceptions—Art and science revive; in a degree to be attributed to the Norman Conquest—Some effects of the reception of Christianity among the Normans—Invasion of Ireland by Magnus—His defeat and death—Ireland decreed to become a conquest—Internal discord favours the success—Ambitious views of the papacy . . . . . 46

## CHAPTER IV.

Circumstances render Ireland an easy conquest—Motives and designs of Henry not divulged—Obstacles to his invasion—He requires the sanction of the pope—Gains it—The bull authorising him to invade Ireland—Reforms in the Irish church—Cardinal Papanon—Irish supposed to know the intentions of Henry, but make no preparations—Delays of the design—Domestic factions of Ireland expedite it—Roderick O'Connor—Dermot Mac Murchad—His ferocious character—His solicitation of foreign aid—Application to Henry—He gives him a letter of credence—Dermot disappointed in its prevailing power—He applies to Earl Strongbow—With difficulty succeeds in obtaining a promise of aid—Gains the assistance of Fitzstephens and Fitzgerald—Returns to Ireland privately, but soon avows his designs—Fitzstephens arrives in Ireland, alarms the inhabitants—Attempts the siege of Wexford; is obliged to retire—Renews hostilities—Influence of the clergy in conciliation—Dermot refreshes the troops at Fernes—Monastic luxury—A series of engagements ensue—Roderick defeated—Strongbow applies to Henry; receives an implied assent to his design—Terror of the Irish—Their expedient to avert the anger of heaven—Favourable turn of affairs—Dermot defeated—Henry, jealous of his nobles, issues peremptory orders to withdraw from Ireland—Strongbow despatches a messenger to him, explanatory of his views—Henry's tardiness—Distressed state of the British troops in Ireland—The decease of Dermot increases the perplexity—Spirit of Lawrence, Archbishop of Dublin—The English reduced to great difficulty—Terms offered them rejected—Act of desperate valour—Dissensions and hostilities renewed—Act of treachery—Henry prepares to pass over to Ireland—His resentment against his nobles propitiated—The Irish exhibit no loyalty, but with a selfish and sordid spirit many even meet and submit to the invader—They are received with condescension by Henry . . . . . 85



## CHAPTER V.

Henry the Second invades Ireland—His assurances of protection—No resistance made—Strongbow does homage—Dermot M'Arthy, the first monarch who submitted, and acknowledged the authority of Henry—Interview with the Archbishop of Cashel—Chiefs of Munster all graciously received, and sumptuously entertained—Fitzstephens liberated from his treacherous captors—Henry visits Dublin—The astonishment of the Irish at his splendid retinue—Henry receives the ready homage of the chiefs—Treachery of O'Ruare—Roderick's spirit aroused—He collects his forces, and determines to dispute the claims of Henry—His efforts vain—The nobles attach themselves to Henry—Magnificent entertainment given by Henry—The clergy favourable to his invasion—They swear fealty to him—He directs a synod to be held at Cashel, to confer on the subjects recommended by the pope—A rival synod held in Connaught, by the authority of Roderick—Gelasius, primate of Armagh—His simplicity and piety—Proceedings of Henry's synod—Compliments to Henry—He convenes a council at Lismore—The proceedings of it—The authority of the English laws limited to a certain district, styled the pale—Which was divided into shires or counties—A chief governor appointed—His privileges and powers—Circumstances hasten the departure of Henry from Ireland—His jealousy of Strongbow, and measures to counteract his ambitious views—Mischievous consequences of his imperfect plans—He embarks for England—Proceeds to Normandy, and conciliates the Cardinals sent by the pope on the affair of Becket—National failings of the Irish exemplified at this period—Tranquillity prevails some time—Nuptials of Strongbow's daughter at Fernes—Animosities arise—Domestic perplexities of Henry prevent his return to Ireland—He withdraws several of his garrisons from thence—Strongbow hastens to the aid of Henry in Normandy—The joy of the Irish at Henry's difficulties—Divisions and jealousies arise—Strongbow is sent to Ireland—Is accompanied by Raymond de Gros—Series of hostilities—Roderick attempts the recovery of his throne, but not succeeding, sends deputies to Henry with offers of submission—Treaty concluded—Jealousies of the English lords counteract the beneficial consequences expected to flow from the treaty—Conduct of Raymond—National character injured by these feuds—Religion of the period—Supreme power of the papacy—Instance of the blind devotion paid to the pope—Waldenses—Precedency of two archbishops disputed—Knowledge is disseminated, and the Sciences studied—Encouraged

by the European monarchs—Learned societies and colleges established—As these increased, episcopal and monastic schools declined—Corruption of the monks—Complaints of the Irish clergy of the depredations of the English—Causes and consequences—Ordinance of Cardinal Vivian—Demoralised state of Ireland. . . . . 115

## CHAPTER VI.

Raymond's military successes—Death of Strongbow—Raymond's measures—Obsequies of Strongbow—Harsh judgment of the Irish respecting him—Personal description of him—English council at Dublin exercise their delegated power of electing a chief governor—Raymond elected—Henry does not sanction the choice—Nominates William Fitz Andelm—His train—Administration of Fitz Andelm—Assumptions of the pope, servility of princes—Obnoxious measures of Fitz Andelm—The consequences—De Courcy, his precipitance—Complaints to Henry of Fitz Andelm—Hugh de Lacy, his administration—Prince John invested with the lordship of Ireland—Remonstrances of the chieftains—Jealousy of Henry in consequence of de Lacy's popularity—He is recalled to England—Conduct of de Lacy; he is re-invested with the government with Robert de Shrewsbury—Decease of Laurence O'Toole; his character—John Comyn succeeds him—Irish chiefs renounce their allegiance to Henry—State of the English lords—Small force sent by Henry—Phillip Barry and Giraldus Cambrensis; their injudicious conduct—Pernicious instability of Henry—De Lacy recalled, and Philip of Worcester appointed; his vicious administration—Preparations of Prince John to exercise his authority—Henry declines the interference of the pope on the occasion—John sent to Ireland with a splendid train—Irish lords congratulate—Want of courtesy in Norman nobility; the consequences—Insurrection—Tragical death of de Lacy—De Courcy made governor; his administration—Death of Henry II.—His conquest of Ireland rendered imperfect by circumstances—Richard Cœur de Lion neglects Ireland; engages in the crusade—John assumes the title of Earl of Moreton and Lord of Ireland; grants various privileges—Appoints deputies to govern Ireland during the reign of Richard—His power but partially acknowledged—A legate sent by the pope to levy contributions for the crusade—Hugh de Lacy made governor—Jealousy of de Courcy—Irish avail themselves of it; their disunion favourable to the English—Hamo de Valois succeeds de Courcy—He invades the ecclesiastical

possessions to supply the necessities of his government—Remonstrances vain to effect redress—Conduct of Archbishop Comyn—Oppressions of Hamo—Death of Roderick O'Connor, the last of the Irish monarchs, caused little sensation—Demise of Richard I.—Papal power in its zenith—Increased and supported by the promulgation of the canon law, and other causes—Mendicant orders, their popularity; their privileges—Resisted by the regular clergy—Dispensing power of the popes—Jealousy of sovereigns roused by their encroachments, and the foundations of the hierarchy thereby imperceptibly undermined—Constitution of Boniface VIII. . 143

## CHAPTER VII.

John's accession to power—Hamo de Valois dismissed from his government—His successor Miler Fitz Henry possesses political abilities—These advantages counteracted by dissensions of Irish lords—John de Courcy and Hugh de Lacy assume independence of the crown—English lords engage in local factions—Consequences—Great superstition prevailing—Conduct of William de Burgo—Conduct and indignant feelings of de Courcy—Is summoned to the presence of John—Obeys not the mandate—Is forcibly conveyed to England and confined—Proceedings of John—Policy of Innocent the third—Litigation of John with Irish clergy—Operations of the pope—John determines to make an expedition to Ireland—William de Braosa—Irish chiefs swear allegiance—Facile disposition of the Irish—Proceedings of the king—Political measure—Henry de Londres invested with the government—Ireland included in the submission of John to Innocent the third—The indignant feelings of Henry de Londres—Innocent writes to the clergy of Ireland—John's quarrel with his barons—Ireland at least indirectly benefited by the great charter—Superstition greatly prevails—Religious orders abound—Mendicant orders favoured—Useful to the hierarchy—Dissensions produced—Increasing arrogance—The evil tends to effect its own remedy—Doctrine of transubstantiation pronounced—And auricular confession ranked among the duties prescribed by divine law—Persecutions against heretics—Death of John—Henry the third accedes—Irish lords petition for new graces—Request the queen that the king's brother may reside in Ireland—The king's answer—Duplicate of charter sent to Ireland—The good defeated by local rivalry, envy, and disunion—Pernicious consequences—Tranquillity—Geoffry de Maurisco administers the government

aided by Henry de Londres—Distinguished by his sovereign—His character—Ireland lost much by the death of Earl of Pembroke—Disorders revived—Churches burned—Priest massacred—State of society not favourable to peace and union—Henry's desire to improve the condition of Ireland—Investiture of Ireland on Prince Edward on his marriage—He undertakes a crusade, and neglects Ireland—State of Ireland similar to that of England, but evils aggravated by local circumstances—Exactions of the king and the pope—The consequences—Italian clergy encouraged—Remonstrances of Irish clergy—English clergy equally disliked—Arrogance of Irish clergy—Petition illustrative of their general conduct—Pope writes to Irish clergy—Encroachments of the clergy—Excommunication—Instances of it—Statute of Merton—Insincere policy of Henry—Pride of the clergy—Low state of moral feeling—Assumptions of the pope—They arouse the jealousies of the people—Gregory publishes his decretals. 179

## CHAPTER VIII.

Decease of Henry III.—Accession of Edward I.—Ireland not essentially improved—Maurice Fitz-Maurice governor—Country embroiled with civil dissensions, increased by Scottish marauders—Thomas de Clare receives grants of land, passes over to Ireland—Impolicy of such grants—Contests with the new comers—Disadvantageous situation of the Irish—Petition of the Irish—The answer—Non-concurrence of those to whom final decision was submitted—Bitter jealousies and feuds prevail—Richard de Burgo, his oppressive measures—Exactions of the king—The Irish appeal to the pope—The king waives his demand—William de Vesey entrusted with the government—Dissensions not easily quieted—Vigorous government of Sir John Wogan—A more regular parliament than hitherto convened—More pacific temper prevails—Severe exactions of Edward, even the pope appears to fear him—Irish nobles join the army against the Scots—Insurrections in Ireland—Edward opposes the presumptions of the papacy—Refuses his homage to the pope—His death a calamity—The partiality of Edward II. to an individual of temporary service to Ireland—He appoints Gaveston to the government of Ireland—He is received with favour, and admired for his showy qualities—He excites the jealousy of the Irish lords—Earl of Ulster becomes his rival—They hold different courts—Frivolous subjects of dispute—Invasion by Robert Bruce—Distress and suffering occasioned by it—Papacy takes part

in the contest—Robert and Edward Bruce excommunicated—Irish send emissaries to Rome, stating their distresses and oppressions of the English government—Pope exhorts Edward to leniency—The distress of the country extreme, famine and pestilence desolate it—Two archbishops administer the government, and Prelate of Armagh endeavours to rouse the spirit of his country against the invaders—And takes part with the English—Scots defeated—Effects of the war—Insufficiency of law to restrain excesses—English interest declines in Ireland—Clergy refuse to comply with the king's exactions—Edward endeavours to take refuge in Ireland—Demoralized state of the times—Clergy endeavour to check the vices and disorders of the realm, by encouragement of learning—Endeavour to establish an university—Conduct of Bishop of Ossory—Charges of heresy—Attempts made to stem the torrent of papal corruption—Canons—Statute of provisos—The respect paid to the pontiff diminishes—Literature improves—Rapid march of mind—Richard Fitzraf opposes the pretensions of the friars—He is cited before the pope, and persecuted for his bold opinions—Died in exile—Considerable ardour prevails in literary pursuits—Restoration of the civil, and formation of the canon law conducive to it—Scholastic philosophy—Zeal for ancient learning—Science is encouraged by princes—Public libraries formed—Ecclesiastical corruption—Remarks of Bernard, a proof of the mental energies of men having been roused . . . . 217

## CHAPTER IX.

Subject resumed—Disappointment of the Irish—Consequences—Sir Anthony Lucy nominated governor—His vigorous proceedings—The king declares his intention of visiting Ireland—His insincerity, neglect of Ireland—Injudicious measures—Ecclesiastics frequently employed in official affairs, reasons why—Edward's displeasure and severity—Jealousy and dissension created—Parliament summoned at Dublin—Did not obey—One convened by the lords at Kilkenny—Prepare a remonstrance to the king—King's answer gracious—Ralph d'Ufford appointed chief governor—His vigorous measures—His death unfortunate—Irritated lords repair to England, two of them appointed to attend the king to France—Proceedings of the parliament in Ireland—Ralph Kelly, bishop of Cashel, refuses to levy a subsidy—Consequences—Tranquillity at length obtained—Sir Thomas Rokeby's meritorious government—Insurrections renewed—Earl of Desmond made



governor, his speedy death—Useful ordinances of parliament and salutary regulations—Strong and obnoxious measures against the Irish—Impatience of the king—Sends his second son Lord Lionel to Ireland—Prejudices counteract every expected advantage—Endeavours to repair his error—Created Duke of Clarence—Recalled to England—Things revert to their former state—Clarence again sent—A parliament assembled at Kilkenny—Statute of Kilkenny—Clarence again leaves Ireland—Earl of Desmond made governor—Dissension and war—Parliament convened—Repugnance of nobles to repair to Ireland—Sir William Winsore appointed governor—Hires the Irish chieftains to oppose the incursions of their countrymen—The king complains of the deficiencies of the Irish revenue—Commands a parliament to be summoned—It refuses supplies—Displeasure of the king—His passionate conduct—Controversy with the parliament—The military genius of Edward inimical to Ireland, to be lamented—English interest declines in Ireland—English clergy, their conduct—Religious opinions an interesting study—The progress of intellectual improvement uniform—Literature encouraged—Circumstances progressively favourable to freedom of discussion and mental emancipation—Infallibility of the pope questioned by many—Wickliffe—Sacerdotal orders quarrel among themselves—Persecution renders men more zealous—Great schism in the church contributes to weaken it—Digression—Death of Edward the third—Accession of Richard the second—Complaints of the English parliament—Those of Irish subjects as to absentees—Objects of the English government—Parliament convened—De Vere the king's favourite created Marquis of Dublin—He is sent to Ireland with extensive powers—Richard hesitates and withdraws his consent to part from his favourite—Distresses of the Irish—Gloucester proposes to pass over to still the disturbances—He is prevented by the king, who resolves to go himself—He is assisted by his parliament—Lands at Waterford—Pride of the English, and assumption of superiority defeat the good which might have resulted—Narrow minded measures—Irish chiefs do homage—Elation of the king—Chieftains invested with knighthood—Magnificent display of the king—Writes to his uncle York—The reply—Richard is requested to return to England—The Lollards—The king besought to protect the church from this heresy—Richard's proceedings before departure from Ireland—Earl of Marche appointed his vicegerent—War is soon resumed—A pretence for a second royal expedition—Unmindful of the storm brooding in England decreed to overwhelm him, Richard lands at Waterford—

Distresses the army encountered—Intelligence from England—Panic of the king—His deposition and death—Confusion of Ireland—A subsidy granted by the English parliament for the service of Ireland—Duke of Lancaster appointed vicegerent—Invasion of the Scots—Arrival of the duke—Art Mac Murchad—Little effected by Lancaster—He returns to England—Butler, prior of St. John, left deputy—Proceedings in Ireland—Black rent—Penal acts passed against heresy—The king advised to seize the temporalities of the church—Henry the sixth disregards Ireland—Sir John Stanley, governor, short continuance—Crawley, Archbishop of Dublin, succeeds—War and faction distress the kingdom—Lord Furnival, governor—Decisive measures, but partial—Prejudices of the English against the Irish—Causes of them—Narrow policy of the English government on the point—The king memorialized—The chancellor refuses to sanction it with his seal—Indignant feelings roused—Earl of Ormond succeeds Furnival—Petition sent to the king—The prayer of it—Satisfaction of Ormond's government—Litigation of the clergy—Want of amity among the Irish—Accession of Henry the sixth has no effect in Ireland—Earl of March and Ulster appointed to the government—Deputes the Bishop of Meath—Altercations in consequence—State of the church and literature—Learning flourishes—Arts and science cultivated and encouraged—Pontiffs patrons of letters, Nicholas the fifth—Invention of printing—Favouring causes of improvement—The church corrupt—John Huss—Jerome of Prague—Council of Constance—Monastic orders, their degeneracy—Diminution of the papal power—Causes—Fratercelli, their sufferings—Brethren of common life, their rule—Schools of the Lollards—Religion debased—The scriptures studied by many—Reflections . . . . . 244

## CHAPTER X.

Weakness and incapacity of Henry—Richard, Earl of March and Ulster, appointed to the government of Ireland—Accepts it conditionally—His designs—Returns to England—Ormond, his deputy, is summoned to England, appoints the archbishop of Armagh—Is remanded to Ireland, does not long survive—Edward Fitz Eustace obtains the government—Reconciliation of the King and Duke of York, he is restored to his Irish government—Obtains possession of the king's person, and determines to strengthen his own interest in Ireland—

Government entrusted to Earl of Kildare—Duke driven for refuge to Ireland, received with ardour—His cause warmly espoused—Is declared Henry's successor—Falls at the Battle of Wakefield—English interest in Ireland declines—Corrupt government—Battle of Wakefield—Earl of Kildare chosen governor—Accession of Edward the fourth—Duke of Clarence appointed to the lieutenancy of Ireland for life—Change of parties in consequence—Earl of Ormond attainted and executed—Earl of Desmond, governor—Earl of Worcester appointed Lord Deputy—Intrigues against Desmond—Is condemned and executed on false and frivolous charges—Kildare appointed lord deputy—Accession of Henry VII.—Earl of Pembroke appointed Lord Lieutenant of Ireland—Kildare appointed his deputy—Receives the king at Dublin—Earl of Warwick—Irish desire to invade England—Poverty of the government—Henry prepares for resistance—Hostile armies meet at Northampton—Defeat of the Pretender—Papal Bull—Henry pursues pacific measures. Extends his royal grace to Kildare and others—Keating, prior of Kilmainham declared unpardonable—Contests among the Irish—Perkin Warbeck—His proceedings—Consequences—Archbishop of Dublin summoned to attend the king—Received with high consideration—Sir Edward Poyning is sent to Ireland—His measures—English Chancellor and other civil officers appointed—Conduct of the Irish—Poyning's Law—Act of attainder passed against Earl of Kildare—Interview between the King and Earl of Kildare—Triumph of Kildare—Execution of Warbeck and two of his Irish adherents—Henry has recourse to papal authority—Proceedings of Kildare's government—English power revives in Ireland—The dawn of the reformation—Monastic orders instituted—Jesuits—Attachment of Ireland to Rome . . . . . 307

## CHAPTER XI.

Accession of Henry the eighth—Kildare continues in administration—His sudden death produces commotion—His son Gerald elected—Is obliged to take the field—Hatred of Wolsey towards him—Duke of Norfolk created Lord Lieutenant—Vigorous administration of the Duke—Earl of Ormond succeeds him—Kildare resumes his government—His proceedings on the death of Wolsey—Alan, archbishop of Dublin—Kildare receives the royal mandate to repair to the presence—Leaves the government to his son Thomas—Rash conduct of



the young governor—Result of the rebellion is the ruin of Kildare—Dawning of the reformation—Henry desires to extend the Reformation to Ireland—George Browne employed—Is advanced to the see of Dublin—Ireland is considered as a fief of the pope—Prepossession in favour of the ancient establishments—The people refuse to acknowledge Henry's supremacy—Browne's life exposed to danger—King declared supreme head of the church in Ireland—Authority of the Bishop of Rome renounced—Refusal of the oath of supremacy declared high treason—Intrigues of the Romish party—Conduct of Lord Grey—Difficult situation of archbishop Browne—Emissaries sent to Rome—The intrigues of the Romanists—Letter of Bishop of Metz to the chieftain O'Nial—Confederacy formed for the suppression of heresy—O'Nial acknowledged lord and leader of the Northern Irish—His hostile proceedings—Lord Deputy disperses the insurgents—Lord Grey recalled to England—He suffers—The Irish are defeated by Sir William Brereton—Sir Anthony St. Leger assumes the government—Title of Lord of Ireland changed for that of King of Ireland—Parliament assembled to confer the new title on Henry—Conciliatory measures of the king—O'Nial visits the English court—His concessions—Is created a peer of the realm by the title of Earl of Tirowen—Progress of reformation—Irish forces attend Henry to Calais—Invasions of ecclesiastical privileges—A military force sent to Ireland—Bellingham made governor—Assiduity of the Romanists—Bellingham's conduct towards the Earl of Desmond—Anecdote—Barbarous zeal of Somerset—Liturgy to be introduced into Ireland—Neglect of moral improvement in Ireland—Pernicious consequences—Proclamation transmitted enjoining the acceptance of the new liturgy—It is opposed—Proceedings of the clergy—Dowdal archbishop of Armagh and his clergy—Sir James Crofts supersedes St. Leger in the government—Writes a conciliatory letter to Dowdal—Desires a conference—Interview—Superiority of the primacy changed from Armagh to Dublin—John Ball, his conduct—In what injudicious—Earl of Tirowen's ambition—Domestic dissensions in his family—Death of Edward the sixth has a powerful effect on the ecclesiastical system—Accession of Mary—Her proceedings respecting Ireland—Kildare's family restored—Sir Anthony St. Leger governor—Fitzwalter—A papal bull recited—State of religious feeling—Paul the fourth—His policy—Personal sketch of Archbishop Browne—Extract from a sermon of his . . . . . 339

## CHAPTER XII.

Accession of Elizabeth—Earl of Sussex governor of Ireland—Commutations—Inflamed by religious antipathy—Severe measures—Rebellion of John O’Nial—Parliament convened to establish the reformed religion—Ecclesiastical system of Mary reversed—Penal statutes enacted—Sussex returns to England, appoints Sir William Fitz William—Statutes evaded and neglected—Indulgence of the queen—Difficulties of Sir Henry Sydney’s government—Feuds of the houses of Desmond and Ormond—Intrigues of the enemies of the reformed religion—Acts of the parliament—Attaints John O’Nial—Prejudices against Elizabeth—Government of Sir John Perrot—His vigorous government—A colony from England to people the Ulster lands—Earl of Essex, his expedition to colonise—Unfortunate result—Designs of Philip II. upon Ireland—Thomas Stukeley—Intrigues with the papists—Pope Gregory XIII. encourages him—James Fitzmaurice a tool of the Romanists—His design of invading Ireland—Catastrophe of Stukeley—Fitzmaurice lands in Kerry—Insincerity of the Earl of Desmond—Disappointment of the invader—Catastrophe of Fitzmaurice—Lord Grey recalled—Loftus, Archbishop of Dublin, appointed lord justice, in conjunction with Sir Henry Wallop—Miserable death of Saunders—Sir John Perrot governor—His extensive plans of improvement—His enemies falsely represent him to the queen—Her unjust suspicions—Scheme of re-peopling Munster with an English colony—Rebellion of De Burgho—Hugh O’Nial, his character—He goes to the English court—His insinuating arguments—His petition granted—He returns elated to Ireland—His deep designs—Tirowen repairs to England—His duplicity—He is charged with having entered into treaty with Spain—He artfully evades the charge, and the restrictions he had agreed to—Foundation of the University of Dublin—Opposition of Loftus and Sir John Perrot—Tirowen discloses his ambitious designs—Spain sends assistance to the insurgents—The war justly to be regarded as religious—Sir John Norris removed from power—Lord Burgh succeeds him—His vigorous measures—His sudden death—Tirowen recurs to his former dissimulation to gain time—He succeeds in procuring pardon—Unfortunate affair of Blackwater, favourable to the rebels—Distresses of the country—Essex accepts the government of Ireland, with the title of Lord Marshal—Resistance of the insurgent Irish—Incaution

of Essex lays him open to his enemies—Oviedo named by the pope archbishop of Dublin—Elevation of Tirowen—Publishes a manifesto—Makes a pilgrimage—Letters to the pope—Bull granting indulgences to Irish insurgents—Extracts from manifesto—Royalists act on defensive . . . . . 396

### CHAPTER XIII.

English power in Ireland reduced—Queen's authority condemned—Tirowen's activity—Mountjoy appointed deputy—His proceedings—Infuses spirit into the queen's authorities—Fickleness of the Irish—Tirowen's reputation diminishes—Distress and devastation attending the state of warfare—Ireland, a cause of anxiety to Elizabeth—Impolitic measure—Proceedings of Mountjoy—His sentiments—Insurgents encouraged by prospect of Spanish aid—Diligence of the ecclesiastics—Some chiefs sent to England—Arrival of Spaniards under d'Aquilla—Instigates the Irish to revolt—Mountjoy acts with determination—Spaniards reduced to difficulties—Disgust of Tirowen—Spirit of dissaffection kept alive—Extreme distress of the country—Proceedings of Mountjoy—Tirowen makes overtures—They are listened to—His abject submission—Promised pardon—Death of Elizabeth—Tirowen's behaviour—Restoration of tranquillity—Spirit of party—Hypocrisy of Tirowen—Romish power diminishing—Artful suggestions of the Romanists—Their success in forming a strong party—On the accession of James it begins to manifest itself openly 447

### CHAPTER XIV.

Romanists pretexts for intrigue—Contempt of the penal statutes—Boldness of the Catholics, their violent proceedings—Seditious spirit requires check—Interview of ecclesiastics with Mountjoy—His proceedings against the turbulent—Act of oblivion published—Mountjoy returns to England, is accompanied by his prisoner Tirowen—Irish present a petition to the king—King becomes more reserved towards them—Extract of letter from Sir John Harrington—Intentions of James respecting Ireland—Sir George Carew, governor—Sagacity of the people—Sir Arthur Chichester, governor, advances civil reformation, but good effects counteracted by religious animosities—Reasons of encouragement for the Catholics—Objections of James to the politics of the Catholics—Conduct

of James—His measures not acted upon with a right spirit by his agents—Consequences—Daring spirit of the recusants—Severity towards them—Remonstrances—Coincidence of circumstances creates suspicion, seizure of Lalor—His conduct—His trial—Chichester—His proceedings—Book of Common Prayer translated into Irish—Seditious spirit prevailing keeps the government on the alert—Suspicious circumstance—Restlessness of the Northern chiefs—Tirowen and Tirconnel flee to the continent—Complaints of Romish agents—James's proclamation—Reception of Irish chiefs on the continent—Colony of Ulster—Chichester well calculated to bring into effect the designs of his sovereign—Rebel chieftains conciliated—Lands reclaimed by the clergy—Ecclesiastical institutions—Noble plans of James—Towns incorporated . 460



## CHAPTER I.

### INTRODUCTION.

*Ireland first peopled by Celtic tribes from Gaul—Their government, Religion, the mysteries attending it—The Druids—their office and power, their superstitions—their distinguished habits—Chiefs of the tribes—The Vergobretus—The People question the power of the Druids—Their influence declines—The Druids endeavour to assert their privilege—The effort unsuccessful—The limitation of their power a prelude to its extinction—The Bards—their office and influence—Cormac O'Conn, his splendour, his dignity and character—State of society, the progression of improvement—Counteracting causes—Introduction of Christianity—It is mingled with Pagan superstition, the mischiefs thence accruing---The corruption of the ministers of religion---Unguarded conduct of the converts---the consequences---The introduction of Christianity is a positive national blessing.*

As these volumes will principally treat of the Ecclesiastical History of Ireland, that of a secular nature will be no further adverted to, than as it necessarily tends to the illustration of the predominant subject. Hence the vague and uncertain records of Irish history before the introduction of the Christian faith will not be explored, nor any endeavour made to dispel the obscurity in which they are enveloped antecedent to that event. It will suffice to say, that in an early period of the second century of the Christian era, Ireland is stated to have been peopled by Celtic adventurers from ancient Gaul, who having emigrated from thence to Britain, prosecuted their way even to the fertile shores of Ireland, and were generally



## CHAPTER I.

### INTRODUCTION.

*Ireland first peopled by Celtic tribes from Gaul—Their government, Religion, the mysteries attending it—The Druids—their office and power, their superstitions—their distinguished habits—Chiefs of the tribes—The Vergobretus—The People question the power of the Druids—Their influence declines—The Druids endeavour to assert their privilege—The effort unsuccessful—The limitation of their power a prelude to its extinction—The Bards—their office and influence—Cormac O'Conn, his splendour, his dignity and character—State of society, the progression of improvement—Counteracting causes—Introduction of Christianity—It is mingled with Pagan superstition, the mischiefs thence accruing---The corruption of the ministers of religion---Unguarded conduct of the converts---the consequences---The introduction of Christianity is a positive national blessing.*

As these volumes will principally treat of the Ecclesiastical History of Ireland, that of a secular nature will be no further adverted to, than as it necessarily tends to the illustration of the predominant subject. Hence the vague and uncertain records of Irish history before the introduction of the Christian faith will not be explored, nor any endeavour made to dispel the obscurity in which they are enveloped antecedent to that event. It will suffice to say, that in an early period of the second century of the Christian era, Ireland is stated to have been peopled by Celtic adventurers from ancient Gaul, who having emigrated from thence to Britain, prosecuted their way even to the fertile shores of Ireland, and were generally



distinguished there and elsewhere by the apposite name of "Scuites," "Scots," that is, "wanderers or refugees." These people were in Ireland divided into eighteen tribes, retaining the language, customs, and manners of the Celtæ in general.

The form of their government was a mixture of aristocracy and monarchy, but the Druids bore supreme sway. These sacred chiefs preserved their empire over the minds of the people by asserting their intercourse with heaven, and by the profession of magic and divination.

The mysteries which enveloped their worship, and the cruel rites which accompanied it, created a profound awe in the uninitiated, and a deep personal veneration for the ministering individuals of this sacred order; and as in all ages and in all countries there must be always artful and ambitious spirits, the order of the Druids opened an ample field, and offered powerful incitements for the operation of those passions which are in their very nature inordinate, and hence was easily extended their power and authority over secular as well as religious affairs. These ministers and judges were chosen from the highest ranks, and by their knowledge of the sciences and their study of nature, they doubtless strengthened their power and preserved their empire over their disciples in those days of imperfect knowledge, when the principle of terror was easily excited by any thing uncommon, interpreted to suit the purposes of the artful and designing agents.

Whoever refused obedience to the mandates of the Druids was declared by them impious and accursed, was forbidden to enjoy the benefits of their sacrifices, and of their worship, and was solemnly classed with the most wicked. The tremendous mysteries of their religion were usually buried in the gloom of the thickest woods, the

sacred branches were too often sprinkled with human gore. We are informed, that it was the custom of the Gallic Druids to set up an immense gigantic figure of a man formed of wicker, in the texture of which they entwined numerous human victims, and then consumed the whole as an acceptable offering to their gods !

They professed a belief in the immortality of the soul and the metempsychosis. The order was divided into six classes, having a chief or arch Druid in every nation. This superior had absolute authority over the rest, and was succeeded by the most considerable of his survivors. The arch Druid was distinguished by wearing an oaken crown, and bearing a sceptre. His form was completely draped in flowing robes. The inferior Druids wore no crown, but were habited in a sleeved tunic under a kind of surplice, and bore a crescent the apparent size of the moon when she has passed her first quarter; and as it was at that time they cut the sacred mistletoe, perhaps it was the symbol of the class who officiated at that ceremony. The highest religious regard was paid by the Druids both to the oak and the mistletoe: not any of their sacred rites were performed without the leaves and branches of the oak; and whenever they found the mistletoe growing on those sacred trees, they announced that it was sent from heaven, and was a sign that the tree was chosen by God. The mistletoe, however, being rarely found on the oak, when discovered it was distinguished by great ceremonies: they called it by a name which signified "the curer of all ills," and having duly prepared their feasts and sacrifices near the favoured tree, they brought to it two white bulls, whose horns were then for the first time tied. The Druid, habited in a white robe, ascended the tree, and with a golden pruning-hook severed the

mistletoe, which was received in a white sagum or sheet by the attendant Druids; they then sacrificed the victims, praying that God would bless his own gift to those on whom he bestowed it. The younger Druids were beardless, but the elder wore theirs very long: they passed through six gradations or classes before they arrived at the summit of their dignity. The first, or plain priest's garment, was distinguished only from that of the laity by the colour and shape, and was without ornament. The second rank had a sash reaching from the right shoulder across the body to the bottom of the garment; the third was a broad facing like a scarf, crossed with horizontal stripes reaching round the neck and to the bottom of the robe,—the garment so adjusted was loose and without girdle; the fourth had no ensign of dignity, but of place; the fifth had a broad sash depending from his shoulder across the body and the hind part meeting the front: the sixth was the arch Druid, crowned with sacred oak, and bearing the sceptre of command.

They rose from the office of sacrist to others by interest as well as probation, and the supreme priesthood descended frequently from father to son. Like the tribe of Levi among the Jews, the Druids were, by virtue of their sacred office, exempt from war and from tribute. Youth were instructed by the Druids, retiring with them for that purpose into deep caves and almost inaccessible forests, where they remained under tuition sometimes twenty years. It may therefore be well imagined how ample were the opportunities possessed by the preceptors to mould their pupils at their will, and to make them subservient to the extension and stability of their power. We are informed, that they practised human sacrifices on the remarkable principle that the anger of the

immortal gods could be no otherwise appeased than by paying the life of one man for that of another.\*

Historians, however, are agreed, that although the religion of the Druids was of such a dreadful and terrifying nature, yet, generally speaking, the high and extended power they possessed was not abused by acts of oppression, and that they carefully preserved that sanctity of manners which they were conscious was essential to its stability.

The chiefs of the several tribes executed the laws, but the supreme legislative power rested in the Druids. In periods of imminent danger, they possessed the privilege of uniting the several tribes under one head, and at the conclusion of hostilities the universal chief thus nominated laid down his office. He received, on entering it, the title of Vergobretus, or "the man to judge." At length various causes combined to shake the supreme power of the Druids. History is replete with instances to prove how difficult it is to preserve the success which ambition has attained; mankind continually experience new excitements, new agitations, from new scenes, and new events. The march of mind still proceeding, however slowly, opens to view more and more the encroachments on its freedom, and the obstacles which impede its progress.

As society advanced contentions arose, the people engaged in warfare, and becoming attached to its powerful excitements, the numbers who initiated themselves into the order of the Druids became proportionably diminished, and consequently the power vested in them also declined.

\* The altar of the stupendous temple of Stonehenge, upon which human victims were offered, consists of one large dark-coloured stone of a different nature from those of which the rest of the circle is composed.

The people even so far dared to throw off the yoke as to choose the Vergobretus without the concurrence of the hierarchy, and he, retained his office against their will, hitherto regarded as the supreme law. The retention of power strengthened the interest of the Vergobretus among the tribes, where private views, from the changes which had taken place in their relative situations, were hostile to the permanence of the druidical authority.

The Druids, however, did not passively submit to this innovation on their prerogative, so materially affecting their general influence. They proceeded to assert their supremacy, and to vindicate the honour of their order by endeavouring to resume their privilege of chusing the Vergobretus. A certain number of the order were deputed to attend the acting Vergobretus, and to command him in the name of the whole sacred body to lay down his office. This was refused, and the denunciations of the offended hierarchy contemned.

The limitation of their power was but the prelude to its extinction. The minds of men had received an impulse in direct opposition to that power. The Druids were hurried by the force of opinion to the brink of a rapid and ruinous descent, resistance was vain; civil wars precipitated them from their height almost to the extermination of their once resistless order. The few who escaped from the effects of this popular revolution, retired to the dark recesses of their consecrated groves, and the deep and solemn caves once the haunts of meditation, to prepare them for worldly action, but now the refuge where they must remain unheeded by a people, converted from servile devotees into sanguinary foes.

A total disregard to the sacred order and to its functions, was the consequence of the scorn and



hatred which had produced this singular revolution, and the religion of the Druids became altogether enfeebled, and at length nearly extinct.

The Bards, however, an inferior class of them, shared not the ill fortune of their superiors, but were retained by the Chiefs to minister to their vanity, and excite the passions of their followers by reciting their heroic deeds, and by their recording songs to give immortality to their fame. These bards preserved society from sinking into a state of utter barbarism; for originally the disciples of the superior Druids, who were the depositaries of learning, their ideas were in a degree enlarged and their minds expanded. With imaginations vivid, high wrought, and unchecked, with feelings ardent, romantic, and strong, and passions powerfully excited by the plaudits of the listening chiefs these traditionary historians could expressively describe acts of heroic virtue, and in language glowing and animated, dwell on the virtues and exploits of those heroes they served, or the high qualities which had ennobled their ancestors. Thus did they infuse a generous ardour and spirit of emulation into the bosoms of those young heroes who listened to their songs, addressed as they were to their love of fame, and teaching the high moral lesson that it could only be obtained by their virtues and exploits, tempered by moderation, humanity, and clemency; so the poet beautifully expresses the character of his hero Fingal.

“None ever went sad from Fingal! O, Oscar! bend the strong in arms, but spare the feeble hand. Be thou a stream of many tides against the foes of thy people, but like the gale that moves the grass, to those who ask thine aid; so Frenmor lived; such Trathal was; and such has Fingal been. My arm was the support of the injured, the weak rested behind the lightning of my steel.”

Supposing this and other similar characters are pourtrayed in the vivid colouring of poetic praise, yet the very praise denotes the estimation which those moral qualities described bore in society, and hence we shall cease to wonder that many noble passions were excited, cherished and frequently displayed in multiplied instances of virtuous action in peace, and genuine magnanimity in war.

We have spoken generally of the Druids, and the decline of their power. In Ireland, that decline is stated to have taken place from the era of Cormac O'Conn, who was the most renowned of all the pagan Irish monarchs. The commencement of his reign is fixed about the middle of the third century.

The annalists dwell with poetical enthusiasm on the splendour and magnificence of his court, his warlike sons, his ten beauteous daughters, his military appointments, his revision of the laws, endowments of learned seminaries, the conquest over his rebellious subjects, the resignation of his dignity, and philosophical retreat. It was the liberal and penetrating spirit of this highly-gifted monarch, which first led his subjects to regard with jealousy the inordinate power of the Druids, and to him is principally attributed the gradual decline of their order in Ireland, although it was not entirely extinct on the arrival of Patrick as missionary, as authentic records mention the name of a Druid who violently opposed the introduction of the Christian faith, warning the monarch of the heavy and oppressive taxations which the people must suffer from the new religious establishment.

No correct history however of Ireland can be given prior to the mission of St. Patrick, (for such in courtesy we shall call him,) all accounts being dubious and uncertain, resting only upon dark

and contradictory traditions. It has been observed there are three stages in human society: the first is the result of consanguinity and the natural affection of the members of a family to one another; the second begins when property is established, and men enter into certain imperfect associations for mutual defence against the invasions and injustice of neighbours; mankind submit, in the third, to certain laws and constitutions of government to which they trust for the safety of their persons and properties.

As the first is formed on nature, so of course it is the most disinterested and noble; men in the last have leisure to cultivate the mind, and to restore it by reflection to a primæval dignity of sentiment; the intermediate state is the region of barbarism and ignorance. About the middle of the fifth century the Irish were advanced to the second stage, and were consequently influenced by those circumscribed views and sentiments which distinguish barbarity. It was about this time that an overruling Providence decreed that the benign ray of Christianity should beam on their darkened hemisphere. But ere we enter upon the detail of that important event, we must observe, that amidst the various and heterogeneous accounts derived from the poetical annals of Ireland previous to the fifth century, though we cannot mark with precision any distinct detail, yet many lively pictures of manners are presented to our contemplation,—of a brave people searching for new settlements, establishing themselves in a fertile land, making division of the territory, and anxiously devising means to give strength and stability to the possessions acquired by their valour. Noble instances of courage, generous effusions of benevolence, ardent resentments, desperate and vindictive outrages are found in full



exercise during the formation and organization of the infant society.

Those who possessed a portion of superior knowledge quickly perceived the power it gave them to influence the fancies and passions of the multitude, and the facilities it opened to obtain the popular confidence and veneration. Such is the natural homage that mental vigour commands; hence the ministers of religion were regarded as superior intelligences, were referred to by contending parties, and consulted as oracles on every subject, whether of law or policy. The gradual and imperceptible progress of social order, however, rendered a settled code essential to general well being, by taking cognizance of, and regulating the actions both of the legislator and people. These benefits were felt and acknowledged, but still in the infancy of society the violence of passion resists the salutary curb, and proves superior to just restraint. Turbulent spirits impatiently avenge their own cause, and authority still recurs to force and to the summary decision of arms, upon any real or fancied invasion of its just or assumed rights.

Such was the state of the Irish previous to the introduction of that faith which promulgates peace and goodwill towards men, and which has such a tendency to promote both, to ameliorate the condition, to calm the passions, to soften the sentiments and to polish the manners of any community receiving it with sincerity. But these effects were, as might naturally be expected, sadly counteracted by the inveterate and barbarous superstition of the people, which mingling itself with ill understood Christian principles and the profane and absurd ceremonies of paganism produced that combination of violence, abject devotion, and puerile folly, which deformed

the religion of the age. The object rather than the spirit of religion was changed.

The people after embracing Christianity retained the superstitions of paganism, and such of them as assumed the sacerdotal habit, still cherished their original habits and prejudices, and emerged but very little from the dark clouds of ignorance; the pure principles of Christianity were lost in the mazes of superstitious external ceremonies—these, rather than the rectifying the wayward will and the purifying the heart, were deemed essential by the professors. The clergy with a pernicious emulation of the heathen priests, whose influence had been founded upon the ignorance of their disciples, sought also to extend and establish their authority by confining knowledge to their own order.

Those of the ignorant multitude who received the gospel regarded the Bishop of Rome (through whose authority it was conveyed to them) as the successor of their arch Druid or high-priest; and as the tremendous Druid had enjoyed during the darkness of paganism a boundless power, and had been treated with a veneration which, from its excess, degenerated into terror, so upon their conversion to Christianity they naturally (however absurdly) conferred upon the chief of the bishops the same honours, and a similar authority as had formerly been vested in their arch Druid; and it will readily be supposed by those who mark the passions of our nature as they are developed and excited by worldly interests, that the Roman pontiffs were not backward to receive these august privileges.

For at the period of which we speak the arrogance and pride of the servants of the meek and lowly Jesus were arrived at a great height. The bishops, particularly those of superior rank, occu-

pied in self-indulgence, created delegates or ministers who managed for them the affairs of their dioceses, and a species of courts were gradually formed, where these haughty ecclesiastics gave audience and received the homage of the superstitious multitude. The corruption of that order who were appointed to promote by their doctrine and example the sacred interests of piety and virtue, will appear less surprising to us when we consider the multitudes of persons who were every where admitted without examination into the body of the clergy, the largest proportion of whom it is to be feared had no other views than the enjoyment of indolent repose or of obtaining advantages by imposing upon the credulity of the ignorant, for Christianity as it then existed was perverted into a system peculiarly fitted to enchain the mental energies by sagaciously discovering the springs of human action, and controlling them so as to render them subservient to selfishness and corrupt passions. The unguarded conduct of the superstitious favoured and cherished the growth of this spiritual despotism, which progressively became so commanding as to enchain and enslave all Europe. Ignorant and unconscious of the fetters they were forming for themselves, the people by giving the bishop of Rome the same privileges as their heathen high-priest, perpetuated a series of pernicious consequences, as their infatuation greatly served to inflate the arrogance of the pontiffs, and gave to the see of Rome that high pre-eminence and despotic authority in civil and political, as well as ecclesiastical affairs which have produced so much contention and so much misery. It is certainly from such imitation of the pagan superstitions, we may trace the erroneous and presumptuous opinion, that such individuals who were by

the fiat of the pontiff, or any of his ministers, excluded from the communion of the church, forfeited thereby not only their civil rights and advantages as citizens, but even the common claims and privileges of humanity.\* Yet great as was the evil we have been contemplating, as tending so lamentably to obstruct the growth of genuine and vital religion, it will be found that many germs of this yet remained uninjured, and though shaded and concealed by the noxious weeds of superstition and the ungenial spirit of the age, were prepared to spring forth when circumstances proved favourable to their expansion. Genuine piety seems evidently to have actuated the first missionaries to our favoured shores as well as those of Ireland, and their zeal, their perseverance, and withal the excellence of the faith they diffused, made their labours successful.

Although the influence of pagan prejudices and the habits it had generated continued long to operate, and produced that mingled character in religion and morals which marked the period, yet the introduction of Christianity could not but be a positive benefit in every degree of its prevalence. "Wherever it has penetrated" says an interesting historian "it has appeared like the guardian angel of the human race, meliorating the heart and enlightening."

It is a system directly tending to soften the asperities of the human character, to remove its selfishness, that bitter foe to happiness, to restrain its malignity, and to animate its virtues. Hence, in that barbarous age its influence must have been most salutary. If it did not eradicate the

\* Among the ancient Romans when a man was cursed for any act whoever would, might kill him; and among the Gauls, such as obeyed not their priests, were forbidden the sacrifices or to unite in worship.



vices of him by whom it was professed, it taught him to abandon many, and threw a shade of odium on them that roused the principle of shame. It gradually implanted a moral sense in the bosom of its converts, and taught the mind the habit of moral reasoning and its application to life; thus its effects on the poorer classes of society must have been great and important. Before its introduction, war and depredation were the principal sources of subsistence among the lower classes; but when the Christian clergy were established and monasteries arose, the poor were taken under their protection, fed and nourished by their bounty or by their influence on the bounty of others. They were thus gradually rescued from a life of plunder and rapine, and in consequence the habits these induced declined in proportion. But in nothing was the introduction of Christianity more strikingly beneficial than by introducing a moral and intellectual education; it could not be known unless some portion of literature was attained or diffused, it therefore was actually the introducer of learning in those countries where it was received. That these were the moral effects flowing from the introduction of Christianity into our island we have sufficient historic evidence: of the political effects we can only admit they were as good as might reasonably be expected in an age of general darkness; "but it must be confessed" remarks the historian before quoted "that they were not so beneficial as its individual influence." But the defects, which we shall have ample reason to remark as we proceed, were the faults of the system into which Christianity was distorted and not of the religion inculcated by the scriptures; monkish Christianity was not apostolic Christianity. Religion is calculated to mingle with all the

duties of life, to be the governing principle round which they may all revolve in regular harmony. Its discipline is that of affection exacting of us to unite our happiness with virtue.

But the system which the papal hierarchy established was an attempt to transfer the government of the world into the hands of ecclesiastics, under the name of Christianity, but it was certainly by a complete departure from its spirit and precepts. The religion of the gospel favours not the gloomy ascetic or the melancholy recluse, consuming life in mortifications and cruel self-discipline ; it breathes love and goodwill towards men ; is social, cheerful, benevolent, kind, mingling gracefully with all our innocent pleasures, and giving dignity to the most trivial pursuits, forbidding only those which cannot be indulged without debasing ourselves and injuring others ; in short, it is the noblest gift of happiness to man. We may imagine every pagan singing with the candour of the convinced Coifi : “ Formerly I understood nothing that I was worshipping, and the more industriously I sought the truth the less of it I could find, but in this system (Christianity) the gift of eternal life and happiness is clearly unfolded to us ; therefore, O king, I advise that our useless temples be immediately consigned to flames and execration.”\*

\* See the account of the conversion of Edwin king of Northumbria, in various historians.



## CHAPTER II.

*Germanus the preceptor of Patrick—Biographic sketch of St. Patrick—Armagh—Doctrines taught by St. Patrick—Various Motives produce conversion—Monastic institutions rapidly increase—Influence of fear—Miracles—One relating to St. Patrick—Growing influence of the Clergy—The improvement produced by them—Hibernia the seat of learning from the sixth to the close of the seventh century—The effects arising therefrom—Colum-kill—Aidan, his mission to Northumbria and character; patronized by Oswald—The piety of Oswald; his laudable endeavours to improve his subjects; his character—Piety flourished in Northumbria—Desired Union between the Roman and British churches respecting the observation of Easter, effected—Increasing power of the bishops of Rome, gradually freed from the civil restraints it was subject to—Augmentation of the papal power creates disputes and divisions—Irish missionaries renowned for piety and learning—Irish schools famed for their superiority during seventh century; Alfred king of Northumbria studied there—Columban, an Irish monk, his missions—Killian, his missions and tragical death—Religion and learning increase in Ireland, but decline in Great Britain during the fifth and sixth centuries; the probable causes; the clouds dispersed in the seventh century—Labours of pious men—Anglo-Saxons ruled by a succession of great men.*

## FOURTH CENTURY.

IN sketching the biography of the Irish apostle Patrick, we are naturally led to the reference of the individual who had a considerable share in the formation of his character and mind, as well as the direction of their energies.

This individual was Germanus, bishop of Auxerre in Gaul, one of the greatest ornaments of the Christian church at that early period. Endued with a persevering zeal, unblemished integrity, undaunted firmness, unwearied activity, and a

versatility of genius which readily adapted itself to the present exigence ; this remarkable man was a fit instructor to form the mind and habits of a missionary at that important period of the Christian era. It was at Auxerre, in the exemplary discharge of his high duties as a dignitary of the church, that Germanus assisted in forming the mind of Patrick, and was greatly instrumental in effecting the mission of that father of the Hibernian church, who, during the period of eighteen years, enjoyed the advantage of being under his tuition. From the judicious and familiar illustrations of the inspired writings imparted by the pious Germanus, Patrick derived a large portion of his biblical knowledge. That he was a pupil worthy of such a tutor was sufficiently proved by the subsequent acts of his life, we shall therefore proceed to relate the brief account of it (if divested of legend) which has come down to us, regretting that it has not been transmitted more circumstantially. Sufficient, however, is recorded to prove beyond all doubt his perseverance, resolution, and patience, as well as his penetration and address in converting a barbarous people, and rendering himself revered and beloved by those whose errors he fearlessly reprov'd. The Irish people were in some degree prepared for the preaching of their great apostle by the labours of some former missionaries, particularly Pallidius, subsequently first bishop of Scotland, the success of whose mission did not bear any proportion to his laborious and pious endeavours among the rude inhabitants of the island.

St. Patrick was born April 5, 373, of a good family at Kirk Patrick, near Dumbarton, North Britain. His baptismal name Succ'eath, signifies in the British language " valiant in war." On some incursions of exiles from Ireland he was

when very young taken prisoner, and carried into that kingdom, where he continued six years in the service of a chief named Milcho, who had bought him of three others, whence Patrick acquired the name of Cathraig or Cather-Tigh, namely four families. During this period of captivity he evinced the energy and activity of his mind by making himself master of the Irish language, and at length with much hazard effected his escape, and returned to Scotland. His mind however had received its impulse, he deeply reflected upon what he had observed in Ireland, and he formed the design of endeavouring to convert the people from their senseless and debasing superstition. "It is beautiful," says the pious Milner, "to observe the motions of Providence in causing the confusions of war and desolation to be subservient to the propagation of the gospel." This was strikingly displayed in the case of Patrick. The better to qualify himself for the arduous and important labour which he contemplated, and meditated upon with all the intensity of an ardent and reflecting mind, he travelled to the continent in order to pursue his studies under the direction of his mother's uncle, Martin,\* bishop of Tours, who ordained him

\* Martin was a native of Italy, and in his youth served in the army under Constantius and Julian, but against his will in obedience to his father, who was a soldier. When only ten years of age he had voluntarily gone to the church, and given his name as a catechumen or candidate for baptism. At twelve he had a desire to lead a monastic life, but compelled to military service, he was remarkable for his exemp-

tion from the vices of the profession, his liberality to the poor, and his reservation of nothing for himself out of the pay which he received, except what was just necessary for daily food. At eighteen he was baptized, and two years after left the army. Sometime after falling into the hands of robbers among the Alps, he was delivered bound to one of them, to be plundered. This robber conducted him to a retired

deacon. Under the discipline and instruction of this prelate he remained several years, and on

place and enquired who he was: "I am a Christian," replied Martin. "Are you not afraid," rejoined the bandit? "I was never more at my ease, because I know the mercy of the Lord to be present in all trials. I am more concerned for you, who by your course of life render yourself unfit to partake of the mercy of Christ." The robber struck with the heroic sincerity of his defenceless captive, besought his blessing and instruction. Martin opened simply the Christian scheme to his attentive listener; conviction impressed his mind, he professed his belief and entreated the continued prayers of his pious instructor, whom he respectfully conducted to a place of safety. The new convert persevered in godliness and it is from his testimony we receive the account.

We follow not the credulous tales invented of this esteemed bishop, for little interesting can be gathered from accounts derived from a period when the human mind was clouded by ignorance and superstition. We shall only add that Martin was with difficulty persuaded to quit his monastery in order to engage in the arduous duties of the church as bishop of Tours, to which he was called by the universal voice of the people. He still preserved his monastic taste, and had a monastery two miles only from the city. Here he resided

with eighty disciples who followed his example. They lived in common, with extreme austerity, the celebration of his supposed miracles had a powerful effect on the ignorant Gauls, every common action being magnified into a prodigy. His integrity and piety were unquestionable; disfigured as was the latter with monastic superstition, and the former in some instances bordering upon a false humility. His patience and charity were exemplary. Surely we may refer the peculiar bias of St. Patrick's mind to the influential character of his revered relative, a character he most likely had studied; it was calculated to awaken enthusiasm and excite emulation. Youth contemplating such a character naturally would determine like it to "act a noble part." There is a circumstance connected with this brief notice of Martin which displays in a striking manner the peculiar spirit of the times, and the inconsistencies to which even the best men are liable. While Martin lived with all the austerity and simplicity of an anchorite, he regarded the office of a presbyter of the church as of so high and eminent a nature, that he maintained at a public entertainment that even the Emperor was inferior in degree to one of that order. This sufficiently proves the arrogance which had crept into the system

the decease of the bishop became the pupil of Germanus, who ordained him priest, and gave him his third name, Mawn, or Magninim. "Germanus" says an ancient writer, "considering him alike distinguished in religion, eminent for virtue, and steadfast in doctrine, and regretting that he should remain in a manner inactive in the spiritual vineyard, greatly encouraged his going to Ireland.

Thus confirmed in his long meditated design Patrick resorted to the chosen scene of his pious labours, and intent upon accomplishing his object was not discouraged by the ill success he first experienced, the Irish rejecting his doctrines, as they had previously done those of Pallidius, and four other missionaries, who had preceded him.\*

of the church, and evidences its early departure from the humble spirit of its Divine Founder.

\* Pelagianism entered the church in the fifth century, and in a greater or less degree has continued to our own times, its doctrines are subversive of the foundation of Christianity, as they question the operation of the Holy Spirit. Pelagius denied the doctrine of grace, contending that men may arrive at the height of purity supported by mere human nature, exclusive of the operations of the Divine Spirit. Pelagius was a native of Britain and was in his own time called Brito. He had for his coadjutor Celestius, an Irishman. The great Augustine allows the genius and capacity of both these individuals to have been of the

first order; and Jerome speaking of the humility which was directly opposed by the proud tenets of the Pelagian heresy, observes beautifully, "This is the only perfection of men, to know themselves imperfect."

In avowing his doctrine, "That man needs not the Holy Spirit to render him truly pious and holy, but has sufficient resources in his own nature for that end," Pelagius mingled much artifice and evasion speaking with such ambiguity of the doctrine of grace that it might mean anything, but a positive influence on the heart, imparting a power to will and to act, agreeably to the pleasure of God, and exalting the soul to communion with the Creator and Redeemer.

The heresy of Arius tended to lessen the belief of the Divinity



Patrick in consequence returned to Gaul and passed some time with his enlightened tutor Germanus, whose conversation and example inspired him with renewed zeal. Strongly recommended by this valuable friend, to Celestine, the then Roman pontiff, as a man worthy of his highest confidence, and as possessing qualifications eminently fitting him to become an apostle, Patrick resorted to the papal court.

His ecclesiastical merit was not passed over by Celestine, but approved by the judgment and confirmed by the blessing of the apostolic father.

of the Son of God, and professes to explain by reason, the mysteries which we are required to believe on divine testimony alone.

He maintained that the Son of God was totally and essentially distinct from the Godhead; that he was indeed the first and noblest of those beings whom God had created, the instrument by whose subordinate operation he formed the universe, therefore inferior to the Father both in nature and in dignity. Also that the Holy Ghost was not God, but created by the power of the Son. He owned that the Son was the Word, but denied that Word to have been eternal. He also maintained that Christ had nothing of man in him but the flesh, to which the Word was joined which was the same as the soul in men. "Arius" says Milner "was by nature formed to deceive; understanding and capacity will command our respect, and

these were undoubtedly possessed by Arius."

In his behaviour and manner of life he was severe and grave. In his person tall and venerable, and in his dress almost monastic. He was agreeable and captivating in conversation, and well skilled in logic, and in all the improvements of the human mind in estimation at the period in which he lived. (the 4th Century). Cicero's words with little variation, in his masterly character of Catiline, might be applied to Arius: "Had he not possessed some apparent virtues he would not have been able to form so great a design, nor to have proved so formidable an adversary." He who does much mischief in misleading others, must at least have a fair appearance of morals. This heresy, assuming perhaps different names, is by no means an exploded doctrine even in our own times, but may rather be considered as increasing.



Patrick once more proceeded to Ireland, having previously been consecrated bishop by the Pope, who gave him his most familiar name Patricius, expressive of his honourable descent, and to give weight and lustre to the commission with which he was charged to convert the Irish. The first fruit of his mission was the conversion of Sinell, eighth in descent from Cormac, King of Leinster, but not meeting with the encouragement of his labours which he wished in the first scene of his mission, the zealous Patrick proceeded to Dublin, and from thence to Ulster, where he founded a church, afterwards the famous abbey of Saul, in the county of Down, remarkable for its position, for having originally been a barn, its greatest length reached from north to south.

After labouring with indefatigable zeal and patience in his great work during seven years, unawed by opposition, unchecked by difficulties, undaunted by dangers he extended his zealous labours to the Isle of Man, having engaged the services of several eminent men to assist him in his important work. He met with success in these endeavours to evangelize the rude inhabitants of Man, and founded a bishopric. Having effected this service to the island he returned to Armagh, the see of which he founded three years previous, and there continuing his meritorious and unwearied exertions, he in a few years effected the conversion of Ireland. Armagh was named the metropolitan see, and Patrick consecrated archbishop.

He also founded there a priory of Augustine canons, dedicated to St. Peter and St. Paul, and a house of canonesses of the same order, under the discipline of Serpita his sister. The spirit of the age is exemplified in the name of this religious female establishment, it being called "Temple na

firta," or the house of miracles. St. Patrick after his return from the Isle of Man, passed the remainder of his eventful and useful life between the monasteries of Armagh and Saul, superintending and enforcing the great plan of doctrine and discipline which he had established. In order to ensure by every human means within his power the stability of his important work, this great man founded schools for the instruction of youth and ignorance, and at length closed his holy ministry and life at Saul abbey in the 120th year of his age, March 17th, A. D. 493. He was afterwards interred at Down, in the same grave with St. Brigid and St. Columb; his immediate successor in the see was St. Binen, or Begnus. Armagh was held in the highest estimation and veneration not only by bishops and priests, but also by kings and princes on account of the meritorious labours of this great father of the Irish church, who had so largely contributed to the temporal and eternal good of his converts.\*

\* Armagh on the river Kallin gives name to the county, and is the see of the primate of Ireland; here was anciently a monastery built by St. Columb, about 610. The cathedral has been often burnt, but as often rebuilt and enlarged, particularly by Patrick Scanlain, about 1262. His successor Nicholas, son of Molissa, beside books, rich ecclesiastical vestments, and other things bestowed on it an annual pension of twenty marks; he appropriated also to his see the manor of Dromyskin. This city was first subjected to the English by John de Courcy, but subsequently

entirely destroyed by Tir'Oen, or O'Neal, in the reign of Elizabeth. It was however afterwards recovered, rebuilt, and garrisoned by the English.

The see of Armagh is valued in the King's books by an extent taken anno 30th Henry VIII., at £183. 17s. 5½d. Irish money per ann., which amounts to £137. 18s. 0¾d., English, exchange being then one-fourth. But by an extent returned in the 15th James I. it is valued at £400. sterling per annum, and pays so much first fruits to the present time. It is reputed to be worth annually £8000. The chapter of Ar-

It has been asserted by an eminent writer that the doctrines taught by St. Patrick were free from the errors of the church of Rome; admitting that they were so, we ought not to be surprised that they were not so deeply imbibed nor so blended with the principles of the people as to effect any rapid change of national manners; for while we speak of the gradual conversion of a people, and award a just praise to the persevering agents whose zeal and labours effected it, we must also acknowledge that many combining motives may render conversion more a matter of policy than a real change of heart. Fear of punishment, the prospect of secular advantage, and the desire of obtaining succour against their enemies from the countenance and persuasions of the holy men, whose superior knowledge, if not their sanctity of life, made objects of popular reverence, added to the supposed miraculous influence of their religion, were doubtless with the many, the prevailing motives to renounce the service of their gods, who had been proved impotent to save.\* Accordingly we find that in Ireland as

magh is composed of five dignitaries and four prebendaries, who have voices in every capitular act. The dignitaries are thus ranked, viz. a dean, chanter, chancellor, treasurer, and archdeacon; there are also eight vicars choral, and an organist attendant on the service of the cathedral. The vicars choral were anciently fewer, and of the number only one priest; primate Marsh added another priest, but without increasing the number of vicars. In 1720 primate Lindsay obtained a new charter for

enlarging the number of the said vicars to eight, and laid out upwards of £4000. on a purchase in augmentation of the estate of the choir.

\* Among the many instances of this, is one related in the English history respecting Edwin, king of the Northumbrians in the seventh century, when upon his anxious enquiry as to the truth of that religion promulgated by Paulinus, he held a consultation with his friends and counsellors, "What is," said he, "this hitherto unheard of doctrine,

well as in other countries which in general terms are said to have received the gospel, many are the instances recorded in which the converts after being initiated by baptism into the church, apostatized from their sacred vows, and dishonoured their Christian profession by acts totally inconsistent with its spirit. These facts tend but to prove the inherent evil of our nature, and to illustrate in a forcible manner the great corruption of manners which powerfully counteracted the pious labourers in the Christian vineyard, even when the doctrines they had scattered had been received in an apparently genial soil. Yet though yielding little genuine fruit, the principles of Christianity were not falsified. They must necessarily however imperceptibly refine, harmonize, and elevate the human mind, and in fact they did so at the period of which we speak, even in the imperfect manner in which they were inculcated, by *restraining*, though they did not *eradicate* the national vices of the Irish.

It was at this early period of the Irish conversion that monastic institutions multiplied almost incredibly.

Monks, who previously to the fifth century had

this new worship?" Cofti, the chief of the pagan priests answered, "See you, O king, what this is which is lately preached to us? I declare most frankly, what I have found to be true, that the religion we have hitherto followed is of no value. If the gods could do anything they would more particularly distinguish me with their favours who have served them so diligently. If the new doctrine be really better, let us embrace it."

The result is well known, that the king, all his nobles, and many of his people received the Christian faith. The whole account is highly interesting and affecting as given by the Venerable Bede, who relates many instances of the peace, order, and justice which prevailed during the reign of Edwin, proving not only his own sincere reception of the gospel, but also that of his court generally speaking.

lived in solitary retreats by themselves, and thought not of assuming any rank among the sacerdotal orders, were, from the commencement of that period of time, gradually distinguished from the populace, and acquired so many honourable privileges, that they were enabled to claim an eminent station among the supports and pillars of the Christian community. Such, indeed, was the fame of their piety and sanctity, that bishops and presbyters were often chosen out of their order; and the practice of erecting edifices and convents, in which the monks and female devotees might serve God in the most uninterrupted manner, was carried to great excess. Hence a numerous body of ecclesiastics, both secular and regular, quickly peopled Ireland, frequently became umpires between contending chieftains; and if unable to influence their conduct by reason and religion, they succeeded frequently in alarming them into submission by denunciations of the divine vengeance against their excesses. When fear has once gained an entrance into the soul, and that of a mighty but undefined evil, most powerful are its operations upon every faculty.

Unskilful must be the hand, that in possession of such an engine can fail to subdue the most daring mind in which there lurks one particle of superstition; but employed by individuals at once bold and active, frequently also gifted with various other commanding qualities—clear ideas, resolute will, ambitious emulation, and a courage which brings them fearlessly into action, we may easily understand the powerful influence of the Romish denunciations on weak ignorant minds, tortured by guilt, conflicting with passion, or enfeebled by superstition. “The simplicity and ignorance of the many,” says Mosheim, “furnished ample occasion for the exercise of those pious frauds which



early disgraced the Christian church, and the ingenuity of the impostures increased in proportion to the credulity of the multitude, while the sagacious who perceived them, were constrained to silence, through the dangers that threatened their lives and properties, if they endeavoured to remove the veil which concealed the secret but powerful machinery by which the fears of the many were acted upon."

The pretended miracles were regarded with awful silence and deep religious horror. We shall recite only a single instance of this species of craft, as it is an illustration of our subject, and refers to the zealous labours of St. Patrick; though it is utterly inconsistent with every account we have on record of the simple integrity of his character, to suppose that he descended to such means to effectuate his desired and laudable ends.

There is in the county of Donnegal, or Tirconnel, near the source of the Liffy, a cave, called by the modern Irish *Ellan n' Fradatory*, or the island of Purgatory, and Patrick's Purgatory. They affirm with a pious credulity, doubtless derived from father to son during many succeeding ages, that St. Patrick, the apostle of Ireland, or some abbot of that name, they cannot precisely determine which, obtained of God by his earnest prayers, that the pains and torments which await the wicked after this life, might be here set forth to view, in order more effectually to recover the Irish from their sinful and heathenish errors.

It is easy to trace the invention of this story to the pernicious power gained over the imaginations of the people, and those who attained this ascendancy soon learned to derive emolument from the public credulity and veneration, while important privileges and exemptions, were granted to the



administrators of those spiritual benefits to which man naturally clings for support and comfort. In the midst of every provincial conflict, every domestic strife, the persons and the property of the clergy were preserved inviolate; the infant church was every where nobly endowed, and the prayers of the holy conventual inhabitants repaid or bought by large and voluntary donations. The people were taught to dedicate the first-born of all their cattle to the church, as a matter of indisputable obligation. Many of the clergy, who had acquired riches by the donations and bequests of the pious and superstitious, rose above selfish interests, and applied them to the noblest purposes, regarding themselves strictly but as channels through which the stream of benevolence was to pass in order to fertilize and adorn the country.

Many of the monks, say the historians, fixed their habitations in deserts, which they cultivated with their own hands, and rendered the most delightful spots in the kingdom. These deserts became well polished cities; and it is worthy of remark, that to the monks may be attributed the forming into one civil community the discordant and rival tribes of Ireland, hence they ought justly to be regarded as national benefactors.

In these cities they established schools, in which they educated the youth, not only of the island, but of the neighbouring nations, and under the mild influence of the Christian doctrines Hibernia became the seat of learning from the fifth to the close of the seventh century.

The justly termed Venerable Bede bears testimony, that in the seventh century, during the ecclesiastical power of the revered prelates Finian and Colman, many Anglo Saxons and others retired from their own country into Ireland, either to receive superior instruction, or for the oppor-

tunity of living in monasteries under stricter discipline; and that they were maintained, taught, and furnished with books, by their Irish preceptors and guides without fee or reward.

This is a lively instance and honourable testimony, not only of the superior learning, but also of the generous hospitality and bounty of the early Irish Christians. It cannot be doubted that the collision of minds which such a confluence of foreigners to a retired island in search of instruction must produce, had a powerful effect, in refining and humanizing the manners of the people, as well as to enlarge their mental capacity. When the rest of Europe was sunk in ignorance, and torn with contentions, Ireland shone with lustre as a seat of learning; seven thousand students are said to have studied at Armagh alone, although the seminary of that see was but one of many similar ecclesiastical institutions, in different parts of the island; among which number we may name Innisfallen, Lismore, Kells, Kildare, Kilkenny, Glendalough, Ardfert, &c. \* as distinguished for their high ec-

\* Innisfallen is an island on the lake of Killarney; in it are the ruins of a very ancient religious house founded by St. Finian, the patron saint of that part of Ireland. To him the cathedral of Aghadoe is also dedicated. The remains of this abbey are very extensive, the situation highly romantic and reclusive. Upon the dissolution of religious houses, the possessions of the abbey were granted to Captain R. Callam. St. Finian flourished about the middle of the sixth century. He was descended from the kings of Munster.

In this abbey a chronicle

was kept, often cited by antiquaries, under the title of *Annals of Innisfallen*. These annals inform us, that in 1180, the abbey in which all the gold, silver, and richest goods of the whole country were deposited, as a place of greatest security, was plundered by Mildwin, son of Daniel O'Donoghoe, as was also the church at Ardfert, and many persons were slain in the very cemetery by the Macarty's; but God, as the chronicle says, punished this impiety by the untimely end of some of the authors of it.

Kells, anciently called *Kenanus*, and subsequently *Ken-*

clesiastical consequence, and important civilizing influence. Nor were the labours and talents of the

lis, was one of the most considerable cities in the kingdom. Within a short distance is the church of Senan, and at the south of the church-yard is a round tower 99 feet in height, the roof ending in a point, and near the summit four windows facing the cardinal points. There was formerly a very celebrated monastery at this place founded in 550 for regular canons, dedicated to the Virgin Mary. It owed its origin to St. Columb, to whom the site of the abbey was granted by Dermot Mac'Carval, or Dermot, son of Kervail, king of Ireland. An episcopal see was afterwards formed, which in the 13th century was united to that of Meath.

A priory or hospital was also erected by Walter de Lacie, Lord of Meath, in the reign of Richard the First, for cross-bearers, corruptly crouched friars following the order of St. Augustine.

There was likewise a perpetual chantry of three priests or chaplains in the parish church of Columb in Kells, to celebrate mass daily, one in the Rood chapel, another in St. Mary's, and a third in the chapel of St. Catherine the Virgin.

Kells is also the name of a village, county Kilkenny. It is a very ancient place, and noted for a priory of Augustines, built and richly endowed by Geoffry Fitz-Robert, who came into Ireland with Earl Strongbow.

The prior of this place had the title of Lord Spiritual, and as such sat in the house of peers before the Reformation. The ruins only of this abbey now remain. A synod was held in it, 1152, when John Papano, legate from Rome, made one of the number of bishops that were convened at that time to settle the affairs of the Irish church.

Kildare, capital of the county of the same name. The church of this place was very early erected into a cathedral with episcopal jurisdiction, a dignity which it retains. The cathedral is now, however, in decay. St. Brigid founded a nunnery at Kildare, which afterwards came into the possession of the regular canons of Augustine. This saint deceased Feb. 523, and was interred here, but her remains were afterwards removed to the cathedral of Down. In 638, Aod Dubh, or Black Hugh, King of Leinster, abdicated the throne, and took on him the Augustinian habit in the abbey of Kildare: he was afterwards chosen bishop and abbot. Here also, in 756, Eigililien, the abbot, who was likewise bishop of Kildare, was killed by a priest, as he was celebrating mass at the altar of St. Brigid. Since which time, no priest whatsoever is allowed to celebrate mass in that church in presence of a bishop.

In 1220, Henri de Londres, archbishop of Dublin, put out

Irish clergy confined to their own country, many resorted to the continent, converted heathens,

the fire called inextinguishable, which had been preserved from a very early period by the nuns of St. Brigid. This fire was, however, relighted, and continued to burn till the total suppression of monasteries. There was also at Kildare a grey abbey, erected for friars of the Franciscan order, or, as they are frequently styled, Grey Friars, in 1160, by Lord William de Vesey; but the building was completed by Gerald Fitzmaurice, Lord Offaley. A considerable portion of it yet remains. A house for White Friars was also founded by W. de Vesey in 1290. The round tower is 130 feet high, formed of granite to twelve feet above ground, and finished with common blue stone. Kildare gives title to the family of Fitzgerald. The county of Kildare was anciently called Chille-dair, viz. the wood of oaks, from a large forest which comprehended the middle part of the county. In the centre of this forest was an extensive plain, sacred to heathen superstition: it is at present called the Curragh of Kildare. At the extremity of this plain, about the commencement of the sixth century, St. Brigid, one of the heathen vestals, on her conversion to the Christian faith, founded, with the assistance of St. Cunleath, a church and monastery, near which, after the manner of the Pagans, the holy sister kept the sacred fire

in a cell, the remains of which are yet visible—a proof of the tenacity of the human mind to early customs and habits.

Kilkenny is capital of the county of the same name, in the province of Leinster. It derives its name from the church or cell of Canie, who was an eminent hermit, and is one of the most elegant cities in Ireland. It is the seat of the bishop of Ossory, which was translated from Agaboe to Ossory, about the end of Henry the Second, by bishop O'Dulhony. That it was once of the greatest consequence is abundantly evident, from the great variety of venerable ruins remaining of churches, monasteries, and abbeys, which even now in their dilapidated state exhibit such specimens of exquisite taste in architecture, as may vie with any modern improvements. The cathedral, situated in a sequestered spot, is a venerable gothic pile built about five hundred years since. Near it is one of those remarkable round towers which have so much engaged the attention of travellers. The bishop's palace is a handsome structure, communicating by a covered way with the church. The college was originally founded by the Ormond family, who also built and endowed a free-school,

There are the ruins of three monasteries, St. John's, St. Francis, and the Black Abbey. Belonging to the latter are

confirmed believers, erected religious houses, and established schools of learning. We are told,

many curious monuments almost buried in the ruins; and the courts of the others are now converted into the inappropriate use of barracks.

Glendalough, otherwise called the Seven Churches, anciently a celebrated town; it is in the county of Wicklow, province of Leinster. The name signifies the valley of the two lakes. In this valley, surrounded by lofty and almost inaccessible mountains, St. Kevin or Cavan, called also St. Coungene, about the middle of the sixth century, founded a monastery, which in a short time, from the sanctity of its founder, was much resorted to. It at length became a bishopric, and a religious city. St. Kevin died June 618, at the advanced age of 120, and on that day annually numbers of persons flock to the seven churches to celebrate the festival of the venerated saint. During the middle ages, Glendalough was held in great esteem, receiving many donations and privileges, its episcopal jurisdiction extending to the walls of Dublin.

About the middle of the 12th century, on some account which does not clearly appear, it was much neglected by the clergy, and became, instead of a holy city, a resort of banditti; wherefore Cardinal Papiron, in 1214, united it to the see of Dublin, which union was confirmed by King John. The O'Tools, chiefs of Ferthuathal,

by the assistance however of the Pope, continued long after this period to elect bishops and abbots to Glendalough, they possessed neither revenues nor authority beyond the district of Tuathal, which was the western part of the county of Wicklow. In consequence of this, the city fell into decay, and had become nearly a desert in 1497, when Denis White, the last titular bishop, surrendered his right in the cathedral church of St. Patrick, Dublin. From the ruins of this ancient city still remaining, it must have been a place of high consequence, containing seven churches and monasteries; small indeed, but built in a neat elegant style, in imitation of the Grecian architecture. The cathedral, the walls of which are yet standing, was dedicated to St. Peter and St. Paul. South of it is a small church nearly entire, and roofed with stone; and in several parts of the valley are a number of stone crosses, some of which are curiously carved, but without inscriptions.

In the north-west corner of the cemetery belonging to the cathedral, stands a round tower ninety-five feet high, and fifteen in diameter; and in the cemetery of a small church, on the south side of the river called the Rheafert Church, are some tombs with Irish inscriptions, designating them to have been in memory of the O'Tools. In a perpendicular projecting rock



that some Irish ecclesiastics were settled at Glastonbury in the reign of Edwin, king of Northumbria, and taught the liberal sciences to the children of the nobility; also that the eccentric and ambitious Dunstan attached himself to their instructions, and diligently explored their books. The ecclesiastics of Ireland had also the merit of converting the ferocious Picts by the ministry of Columb-kill, one of their renowned order, who resorted to the northern parts of Scotland for that pious purpose, and met with great success.

Columb-kill lived thirty-four years after his passage into Britain, and his disciples were distinguished for the holiness and abstemiousness of their lives. Aidan, also an Irishman, was emi-

south of the great lake, thirty yards above the surface of the water, is the celebrated bed of St. Kevin, hewn out of the rock, exceedingly difficult of access, and terrible in prospect. Amongst the ruins have been discovered a number of stones, curiously carved, and containing inscriptions in the Latin, Greek, and Irish languages. At a small distance from St. Kevin's bed, and on the same side of the mountain, are the ruins of a small stone building called St. Kevin's well. In short, there is abundant evidence that Glendalough and its vicinity was sacred ground in the estimation of the primitive Irish Christians.

Ardfert was the ancient capital of Kerry, with an university held in the highest esteem: it is a bishop's see and borough by ancient prescription, and has been held in commendam

with the bishopric of Limerick ever since the restoration. The bishops were formerly styled bishops of Kerry.

St. Brandon, to whom the cathedral is dedicated, had his first rudiments of education at Ardfert under bishop Ert, but finished his studies in Connaught, St. Jarlath, bishop of Tuam, being his preceptor. The ruins at Ardfert are very extensive. Near the cathedral was what is termed an anchoret tower, the loftiest and finest in the kingdom; it was 120 feet in height. It fell suddenly in 1771. In the several ruined churches are numerous inscriptions round the mouldings of the tombstones; and over an arch behind the late Earl of Glandore's mansion is an inscription in relief, executed in a masterly manner, but characters unknown.



nent as an apostle of Christianity. In the seventh century, Cadwallan, one of the British kings composing the octarchy, tyrannized over the subjects of the deceased royal convert, Edwin, king of Northumbria, till at length Oswald his nephew vanquished and slew him, establishing himself in the kingdom. The piety of Oswald was sincere; he had in his youth lived an exile in Ireland, where he had been baptized. Influenced by the genuine spirit of religion, he earnestly laboured to instruct his rude subjects, and to advance their moral tuition. He accordingly sent for a pastor from the sister kingdom. This ecclesiastic made many fruitless attempts to fulfil the wishes of Oswald; but at length, wearied with his ill success, returned to Ireland, complaining of the intractable disposition of the Northumbrians. "It seems to me," remarked Aidan, who was an auditor of these complaints, "that your austere manners and severity of conduct towards them, was unsuitable to their state of extreme ignorance; they should be treated like infants with milk, till they become capable of stronger meat."

With all the boasted refinement and candour of the nineteenth century, perhaps we should find it difficult to meet with a sentiment more just, or sagacity more penetrating, than is contained in this simple remark of a monk of the seventh. The consequence of his frankness, was what perhaps Aidan little expected, he was himself deputed by an Irish council to enter on the mission. The character of Aidan would have done honour to the purest and most refined times: he was a shining example of true godliness, and with the active but temperate zeal of a faithful apostle, laboured to convert infidels, to strengthen the weak, to confirm the wavering. He gave to the indigent what he received from the opulent, and employed him-

self with his pious associates in the continual study of the scriptures. Strictly avoiding every thing luxurious, and every appearance of secular avarice and ambition, he redeemed captives with the money given him by the great and the pious, carefully instructing the emancipated individuals, and fitting many for the ministry. We may the more confidently depend upon the accounts we have of this eminent man, as they are derived from those who regarded him as a schismatic in the observation of Easter, in which the church of Rome differed from the British and Irish churches, excepting only the Saxons. Augustine and his immediate successors, had ineffectually laboured to bring all the British churches into a conformity with that of Rome, in this and other respects. Nor ought we to impute unworthy motives to those pious prelates for seeking an unity they believed favourable to the general interests of the Christian church, for their constancy in labour, steady views of Christian duty, holy and unblemished lives, seem to prove them to have been actuated by the purest and most exalted sentiments and desires for the temporal and eternal good of mankind.

Oswald, the royal patron of the pious Aidan, was not inferior to him in his endeavours to promote religion. Many interesting instances might be adduced that he strengthened by his own example his recommendation of those great duties which confer dignity on the lowly, and add lustre to the diadem. Uncorrupt and humble in the midst of prosperity, he evidenced the beauty of holiness. He was the benefactor of the poor and needy, and zealously and cheerfully encouraged every attempt to spread the knowledge and practice of godliness among men. His early education had rather prejudiced him in favour of the same schism which

marked the religious opinions of Aidan, and probably might strengthen the bond of attachment existing between them.

He bestowed upon his esteemed pastor the episcopal see of Lindesfarn, (now called the Holy Island, near Berwick-upon-Tweed.)

One great difficulty attended the ministry of Aidan, he spoke the English language very imperfectly; Oswald, therefore, inspired with a holy and honourable zeal, became his interpreter. Encouraged by his countenance and protection, several other Irish missionaries resorted to the north of England, churches were erected, the gospel was preached, and Northumbria enjoyed the high privilege of spiritual instruction, the advantages of pious example, and the fertilizing streams of christian charity. Even to the year 716, the principles of evangelical piety flourished in the Irish schools amongst the Northumbrians, at which period they were led to conform to the Roman communion.

Oswald had the satisfaction of seeing the blessings of Christianity diffused into Wessex. A spirit so lowly and so charitable must have powerfully felt the beauties of its benign morality, and rejoiced in its increase. But whether we regard the labours and simplicity of the Irish missionaries, or the comparative pomp of the Romish prelates, we see abundant proof of the zeal, integrity and diligence of all. We mark genuine traces of their steps, and observe salutary fruits to arise from the rich seeds which they had assiduously sown. The Irish missionaries Columban and Aidan, the Roman prelates Augustine, Laurentius, Mellitus, Justus, and Paulinus, left wholesome vestiges of their indefatigable labours, which have extended their influence to distant ages. We are told, that in the seventh century, Lauren-

tius, the successor of Augustine in the see of Canterbury, in conjunction with Mellitus, bishop of London, and Justus, bishop of Rochester, endeavoured to reduce the Scots, who inhabited Ireland, to a conformity with the English church; and that John, bishop of Rome, wrote also letters to Ireland against the Pelagian heresy, which was there reviving. The three prelates above-named wrote upon the subject of conformity to the Irish Christians, declaring themselves to be sent by the Roman see to propagate the gospel among the Pagan nations. Laurentius complained of the bigotry of a certain Irish bishop, who, coming to Canterbury, refused to eat at the same table, or even in the same house with him. Thus sadly do differences of opinion weaken the bonds of Christian charity and humility, and swell the human heart with self-conceit and pride. The archbishop and his colleagues could not however prevail either on the Irish or the Britons to enter into the desired conformity, and frequent subsequent attempts were equally unsuccessful.

Egbert, an Englishman, effected this union among many of the Irish in the following century; and as the Romish church grew more corrupt at that period, of course those that conformed to its communion became in proportion more infected with its increasing superstitions.

The power of the Popes had been gradually increasing from the third century. At that period they indeed possessed a marked preeminence in the church, though it was much questioned and regarded with jealousy; it being contended, that it ought to be only that of order and association, not of power and authority. But from the superiority which consisted of convening councils, of presiding in them, and collecting voices, soon arose that consequence attached to certain evidences of

external grandeur and opulence, which render the possessor an object of admiration in the eyes of the world. The bishop of Rome, from simply presiding over his brethren, was led to surpass them in the magnificence of his ceremonies, in the richness of his revenues, in the number and variety of his ministers, and in his splendid manner of living.

These dazzling evidences of human prosperity drew forth the blind admiration of the ignorant, and excited the passions of the ambitious. Hence arose divisions and endless factions : yet still the Papal power was restricted. Bishops did not acknowledge that they derived their authority from the Pope, or were created by favour of the apostolic see. These high prerogatives afterwards possessed, and so arbitrarily used, by the Popes, were obtained by the imprudence or incaution of the emperors in whom the power was vested, by the dexterity of prelates, the inconsiderate zeal, and the precipitate judgment of bishops, by which easy steps were formed for the ascent of despotism. From this proud desire of dominion, endless divisions arose in the eastern and western churches, the fruitful sources of various schisms that became prevalent among those who severally arrogated the titles of defenders of the church, all which were favourable to the growing authority of the Roman pontiff.

For by taking under his protection those prelates whose rights were invaded, he added to the influence and strength of the Roman see, and established its supremacy. The incursions of the barbarians also in the fifth century, were favourable to the augmentation of the papal power, for the monarchs who penetrated into the empire, were naturally solicitous to give stability to their respective governments;



and perceiving the subjection of the multitude to the bishops, and the dependence of the bishops on the pontiffs, they politically concluded their best course was to reconcile the spiritual ruler to their interests, by loading him with honours and benefits. The Gothic kings, however, set bounds to his power in Italy, permitting none to be raised to the pontificate without their approbation, and reserving to themselves the right of judging of the legality of every election. The supreme dominion over the church and its possessions, we have observed, was vested in the emperors and kings both in the east and west. Nor was the consecration of the Roman pontiff of any validity, unless performed in the presence of the emperor's ambassadors. The Roman pontiffs obeyed the laws of the emperors, received their judicial decisions as of indispensable obligation, and executed them with submission. The kings of the Franks appointed extraordinary judges, whom they called envoys, to inspect into the lives and manners of the clergy, to take cognizance of their contests, to terminate their disputes, to enact laws concerning the public worship, and to punish the crimes of the sacred order, as well as those of citizens.

It is to be observed, however, that the Latin emperors did not assume to themselves the administration of the church, or the cognizance and decisions of the controversies that were purely of a religious nature. They acknowledged, on the contrary, that these matters belonged to the tribunal of the pontiff and the ecclesiastical councils. But the jurisdiction of the pontiff was confined within narrow limits; he could decide nothing by his sole authority, but was obliged to convene a council when any religious differences were to be terminated by an authoritative judg-



ment. Nor did the provinces, when any controversy arose, wait for the decision of the pope, but assembled by virtue of their own authority, their particular councils, in which their bishops disclosed their sentiments with perfect freedom on the subjects in debate, frequently voting in direct opposition to what was known to be the opinion of the pontiff.

It is further necessary to observe, that the power of convening councils, and the right of presiding in them, were the prerogatives of the emperors and sovereign princes, in whose dominions those assemblies were held; and that no decree, of any council, obtained the force of law, until it was approved and confirmed by the supreme magistrate. Happy would it have been for the peace of nations and individuals, had the spiritual authority of Rome continued thus wisely bounded by the civil power, but the pontiffs liked not the imperial curb, and left no means untried to break their bonds. They arrogantly claimed a supreme dominion, not only over the church, but also over kings, and aimed to reduce the universe to their spiritual authority. However extravagant these pretensions were, perseverance and favourable circumstances, adroitly managed, finally realized them. It was during this gradual augmentation of papal power, and the divisions and animosities it created, as well as the injury it occasioned to genuine religion, that Burgundy, Germany, and other countries received the instruction of many learned and pious Irishmen, and Europe, with gratitude confessed the superior knowledge, piety, zeal, and purity of the missionaries from the "*Island of Saints*." Gildas, surnamed the Wise, a native of Dumbritton, in Scotland, preached with much success in his own country and in Ireland. In him we perceive the

vigorous plant rising from the seed sown by the gifted Germanus; as Gildas indirectly obtained his religious knowledge from that great man, having been instructed by Hiltut, who was the immediate pupil or disciple of Germanus. It is pleasing to trace the existing causes of the soul's energies, and the agency which has directed their bias. Dyson also, an Irish monk, taught the gospel in his native land and in France and Germany. His labours were most remarkably crowned with success in the neighbourhood of Mentz, and in regard to the conversion of the northern parts of Europe in the seventh and eighth centuries, the British, Scots, and Irish were the principal instruments in the important work. The erection of many convents for the Scots and Irish, may thus easily be accounted for.

Many persons travelled from Great Britain and Ireland, with the laudable purpose of preaching the gospel to the benighted heathen, and, however superstition might, in modern estimation, tarnish their labours, yet there must have been noble principles in action, to have induced men thus to undergo dangers, difficulties, and privation, without much probability or prospect of advantage or of fame.

Marianus Scotus, speaking of the seventh century, says, Ireland was filled with saints. Their schools were renowned for ages. Many divisions arose, but while such men as Paulinus and Aidan lived, the diversity of sentiment produced no great mischief. It was in the seventh century that Alfred, king of Northumbria, the worthy precursor of his great namesake, devoted himself to piety and literature, and rejected from the throne of his father by a faction of the great, voluntarily retired into Ireland, that he might pursue his unambitious studies. For fifteen years, he enjoyed

a life of philosophic tranquillity and progressive improvement. The books revered by Christians, engrossed so much of his study, that one of the epithets applied to him was, "most learned in the scriptures." It may be interesting to add, that this monarch continued to exhibit to the world this example of contented privacy till called to the throne, and that he governed with the same virtue that had marked his retirement, deriving his happiness from the peace and enjoyments of his people. Northumbria was blessed with his superintendence for nineteen years.—(See Turner's History of the Anglo-Saxons.)

But to return from the digression, which we have committed to illustrate the estimation of Irish instruction.

As depravity increased, and the spirit of faith and love grew colder, hurtful disputes arose, to the scandal of the gospel. The Roman church, however, acquired more and more influence, though it was very far from pervading the whole of the British isles at the end of the century. Let it suffice, that our ancestors saw in this century a blessed time, the fruits of which will abide for ever.

Columban, an Irish monk, distinguished from him of the same name before alluded to, (who was called the Ancient,) towards the close of the sixth century had extirpated the remains of the expiring paganism in France. He also passed the Rhine, and evangelized several German states. In fortitude, constancy, and unwearied labour, he was inferior to none of the missionaries of the age. Columban was an author as well as missionary. He wrote on monastic rules, and his sentiments, as well as the tenour of his life, were pious and devout. Although, as may be expected, he was infected with the servile genius of the

times, and the spirit of superstition, which had then pervaded the church, one sentence remarkably proves the evangelical purity of his doctrine; "We must have recourse to Christ, the fountain of life." Killian was also an Irish missionary, he received a commission from the apostolic see to preach to the infidels, and with some disciples he resorted to Wurtzburg, on the Mayne, the governor of which place was a pagan. He received the gospel and was baptized, and many followed his example. This governor had married his brother's wife, and it is a proof that Killian blended discretion with his zeal, that he deferred any marked admonition on this head, till he had established his convert pretty firmly in his faith; convinced that a deep and sincere reception of it, and a conviction of crime could not coexist. Killian at length ventured to act the part of John the Baptist, and the event was very similar. Gosbert promised to obey his monitions, and appeared deeply sensible of his moral turpitude; but he *delayed* the sacrifice of his inclinations to his religious duty, till his return from a projected expedition. Delays of duty are always perilous, the mischief of procrastination against the light of conscience, was never more strikingly illustrated. In his absence, Guiland, the incestuous wife of Gosbert, and the German Herodias, procured the murder of the faithful Killian and his holy companions. They were all engaged in devotional exercise, when thus made a sacrifice to the revenge of a wicked woman, and died with the patience of martyrs, in the year 688. Gosbert weakly yielded to suffer the murderers to escape with impunity.

While religion and learning increased in Hibernia during the fifth and sixth centuries, the doctrine of the gospel had been declining in Great

Britain. In a discourse of Gildas yet extant, he addresses with honest vehemence and much spirit, the clergy of Britain, rebuking them for their avarice, ambition, and simony. This declension and decay in the religion of the Britons were produced by many concurring causes, the principal of which was, perhaps, the invasion of the Saxons, who were altogether idolaters.

A few faint gleams of true religion, indeed, remained in the extremities of the kingdom, but in the heart of the island, the invaders had obscured the rays that had beamed, and Christianity though retaining a few of its forms, possessed neither spirit nor life, and the ministers of it were either fearful or inattentive to the propagation of their tenets in the island, while the Saxons, continued for the most part, immersed in darkness. To those who know how necessary it is, day by day, to refresh and invigorate the principles of the soul by diligent exercise, who know the tendency of the human mind to retrogression, and to fall back through indolence, to the low standard, above which it may have been elevated, this degenerated state of religion during the period we have alluded to, will not be surprising. When we also reflect upon the general spirit of the times, restless, warring, greedy of conquest, our reason will at once pronounce, that the mild spirit of Christianity must have evaporated in the baleful atmosphere. Nothing can more forcibly exemplify the low ebb of Christian zeal among the professors, than the fact that no attempt is recorded to have been made to convert the Saxons. Congall, indeed, an Irish monk, is said to have persuaded a number of persons in Britain, to embrace a monastic life, under a rule of discipline, of which he was the founder. But during the seventh century, she emerged from the clouds



which had obscured her religious hemisphere, and providence peculiarly blessed many instruments employed to propagate the glad tidings of salvation. We have already remarked upon the success of Aidan and others, and we have no reason to doubt that pastors, both of the Roman and British communion, laboured in the important work with simplicity and integrity.

Towards the close of the century, zeal grew more faint, and religion suffered from worldly contention and uncharitable divisions; the subtile spirit of selfish ambition easily insinuates itself into the human heart, and corrupts human actions.

Were it relevant to our subject, it would be interesting to trace the fluctuations of religious opinion during the vicissitudes of the Anglo-Saxon octarchy, presenting to our contemplation a succession of great individuals, each distinguished by some peculiar characteristic traits worthy their high station; and the result of which was, that the Anglo-Saxons, though fluctuating in the prosperity of their several districts, yet, considered as a nation, rapidly advanced in civilization and power.



## CHAPTER III.

*General State of Christian Religion in Europe—Romish Faith increases—The Irish brought over to Roman Observation of Easter—Ireland distinguished as a prime Seat of Learning—Success of Irish Missionaries—Rumold—Virgilius—Human Reasoning displaces simple Faith—Image Worship—Funereal Rites—Temporal Power of the Popes—Gloom of Superstition increases—Accession of Papal Power—Study of Philosophy prevails—Johannes Grigona, his great Talent and Favour with Charlemagne and Alfred—Devotional Spirit prevails in the British Isles—Monastic Institutions increase, and Numbers dedicate themselves to the Cloister—Superstition increases greatly—While a secular Spirit arises among the religious Orders—Reverence paid to Religion and Learning among the Irish—Ireland is invaded by the Barbarians, is plunged in consequence into Disorder and Ignorance—Indulgence of the first Missionaries injudicious, and productive of Mischief to true Religion—Civil Polity of Ireland effected by Christianity in some Degree—Low Standard of Morals—Mischief and Advantages of Monastic Seclusion—State of the Clergy, in regard to Morals and Discipline—Their Riches and Power continue to increase, and they are encouraged by Princes to become Statesmen and Courtiers—The Policy of the Papal Court—Terrors of Excommunication—Causes of the Depravity of the sacerdotal Orders—Ireland invaded by the Danes—Their Success, the Want of Plan and Unanimity among the Irish Septs favourable to the Invaders—Pontifical Power continues to augment—This restless and ambitious Spirit resisted by some Kings and Princes—Their Inconsistency negatives their Efforts—Great Ignorance prevails—The Exceptions—Art and Science revive: in a Degree to be attributed to the Norman Conquest—Some Effects of the Reception of Christianity among the Normans—Invasion of Ireland by Magnus—His Defeat and Death—Ireland decreed to become a Conquest—Internal Discord favours the Success—Ambitious Views of the Papacy.*

## EIGHTH CENTURY.

THE religion of the eighth century, historical truth obliges us to say, consisted greatly in a motley round of external rites and ceremonies. We are not, therefore, to be surprised that more

zeal and diligence were employed in multiplying and regulating the exterior of a superstitious devotion, than in converting the hearts, correcting the passions, regulating the wills, and enlightening the understandings of men; and that a variety of senseless ceremonies disfigured the beautiful simplicity of the Christian institutions, particularly the eucharistic part of them. As a proof of the increasing influence of the Romish faith, we have already related, that at an early period of this century, or rather at the close of the preceding, the Irish were brought over to the ~~Roman~~ mode of celebrating Easter; hitherto the Christians of Ireland and Britain are believed to have served their Creator with greater sincerity and purity than other nations which had been evangelized; that is, more closely accordant to apostolic simplicity.

Ireland was peculiarly distinguished as a prime seat of learning in this century. Several Irish laboured in the Christian vineyard, and during the time of Charlemagne, were received at his court, and consecrated bishops in Germany and France. They taught both sacred and profane learning with reputation and success. The labours and industry of the divines of this age were principally employed in collecting the opinions and authorities of the fathers, by whom are meant the theological writers of the first six centuries of the Christian era. To these, rather than to the pure Fountain-head of their faith, they resorted to guide their practice, to form their opinions, and to exercise their understandings; no wonder therefore they were "in endless mazes lost;" for, as has been most justly observed, amongst all the diversities of opinions and modes of Christianity, from what quarter shall the sincere Christian receive that solid satisfaction and wise

direction, which such multifarious systems are not adapted to administer?

These he will receive, and can only receive by turning his dazzled view and bewildered imagination from the secret decrees of God, which were neither designed to be *rules* of action nor sources of comfort to mortals here below, and by fixing his mental vision upon the mercy of the Creator, as manifested through the mercy of the Redeemer, the pure laws and sublime promises of the Gospel, the righteousness of the divine government, there revealed, and the awful justice of his future tribunal.

When we attempt by our reason to interpret the Scriptures, we must involve ourselves in difficulties and error; for we must all, at one time or other of our lives, have experienced the fact, that we view things according to our various dispositions and cast of opinion; this or that interpretation pleases us and appears indisputable, because perhaps it suits our existing feelings, and captivates the dominant passion, and our nature is ever prone to conform our sentiments to the prejudices of our own minds.

We cannot suppose the divines, of the period of which we now speak, were exempt from these weaknesses and prejudices of humanity, hence their blind and servile veneration for those primitive doctors, eminent as they were, for wisdom and piety was most unquestionably unfavourable to genuine religion, and had a decided tendency to exalt the pride of human reasoning above the pure and simple doctrines of the gospel, for the dictates of the fathers were considered infallible, and their writings as the boundaries of truth, beyond which reason was hardly permitted to push its researches, although the scriptures were allowed to be summoned to its bar; and men, not

content with acknowledging that the Holy Spirit is the true and original author of all that is good in the affections of the heart, and in the actions which emanate from it, scrupled not to dispute about the *manner* in which it operates upon the mind of man.

The Irish or Hibernians, who, in this century, were known by the name of Scots, are remarkably distinguished as the only divines who refused to prostrate their reason by submitting it implicitly to the dictates of authority; but naturally subtle and sagacious, they dared to apply their philosophy, such as it was, to the illustration of the truths and doctrines of religion; a method which was almost generally contemned and exploded in other nations. That the Hibernians were lovers of learning, and distinguished themselves in those times of ignorance by the culture of the sciences, beyond all the other European nations; travelling through the most distant lands, both with a view to individual improvement and to communicate their knowledge, is ascertained by undoubted facts, well authenticated by history; in the interesting details of which we behold them discharging, with the highest reputation and applause, the functions of doctors, in France, Germany, and Italy, both during the eighth and ninth centuries. Benedict, abbot of Aniane, in the province of Languedoc, who lived in this period, testifies (says Mosheim) that Hibernians were the first teachers of the scholastic theology in Europe, illustrating the doctrines of religion by the principles of philosophy; and that so early as the eighth century, Benedict, while he pays a tribute of just praise to the learning and zeal of the Hibernians, gives some examples of their subtlety, which he greatly and justly condemns; severely animadverting upon its introduction into

theology, as tending to error and pride, wisely recommending in its place that amiable simplicity and plainness which is alone conformable to the nature and genius of the gospel. In this century, Rumold, an Irishman, laboured in the service of religion. He travelled into Lower Germany, also into Brabant, diffused much light in the neighbourhood of Mechlin, and was constituted an itinerant episcopal missionary. He was finally murdered by two persons, one of whom, with the fidelity of his sacred profession, he had reproved for adultery.

Virgilius, also an Irishman, was appointed, in 780, bishop of Salzburg, by king Pepin. His modesty prevented his entering upon his sacred office for two years; but he at length consented to the consecration. A misunderstanding once took place between Virgilius and the famous Boniface. The latter accused him to the see of Rome, of teaching "that there was another world, and other men under the earth, or another sun and moon." To the pious and ardent spirit of Boniface, a difficulty of solving the great question arose on this view of the tenets of Virgilius; how such ideas were compatible with the Mosaic account of the origin of all mankind from Adam, and of the redemption of the whole species by Jesus Christ. After all it appears that Boniface was mistaken, and that Virgilius being better acquainted with the true figure of the terraqueous globe, than most of his contemporaries, only held the opinion of the antipodes, a notion as sound in philosophy as innocent in theology. As Virgilius was subsequently consecrated bishop, he continued to labour in the same cause as the zealous Boniface, and to tread in his steps. It is therefore reasonable to conclude, that both Boniface and the Pope were satisfied with the soundness of his



faith, and accordingly dismissed the accusation against him.

One of the mischievous and fatal consequences of that mental departure from the simple reliance on the Redeemer, which was the beautiful and distinguishing principle of the primitive Christians, to that proud glorying in the strength of human reasoning, of which we have spoken, was the dispute respecting image-worship, which arose in this century, and very, very long agitated the church in every part. The knowledge of the gospel had become too generally adulterated, and the faith of men in the Redeemer losing its stability, they had recourse to vain refuges for the relief of accusing conscience, "and the mind," says Milner, "no longer under the influence of the Holy Spirit, betook itself to the arts of sculpture and painting, in order to inflame its affections and to kindle a false fire of devotion. Nothing can more strongly prove the neglect of the scriptures, than the progress of this idolatrous practice, as they so decidedly condemn it. It is, however, quite unnecessary to dwell upon the subject here, or to detail the various evasions and sophistical arguments, with which the advocates for image-worship justified their opinions and practice.

We shall merely add, that Gregory the Second, who then filled the papal chair, was an open defender of the superstition; and, as it forms a distinguishing feature in the Romish religion to the present day, we may regard him as the advocate, the first *real Pope* of Rome. Many superstitions and abuses, in the discipline of the church, had been gradually arising; one is worthy of observation, as marking the decline of purity of doctrine. We allude to the practice of



interring the dead in the churchyards, a custom to be dated from the beginning of this century.

The dead had previously been buried near the highways, according to the Roman laws, and Christian congregations had followed the practice, at least they had burial places remote from the cities.

But during the pontificate of Gregory, the priests and monks began to offer prayers for the deceased, and received gifts from the relations for the performance of those services. On this account, the ecclesiastics requested permission of Gregory that the deceased might be interred near the places of the monks' abode, or in the churches or monasteries, in order that the relatives might have a better opportunity of uniting in the funeral devotions. To this practice, so congenial to the feeling of sorrow, and the dictates of affection, we may trace the doctrine of purgatory, or rather its progress, as well as the avaricious advantage taken of it, and the departure from the purity of the church. "While men rested in the Redeemer," says a pious author, "and dared to behold themselves complete in him, they had no temptation to apply to false refuges of prayers for the deceased. In the article of death, they committed their souls and bodies to their Saviour. That hope of glory being obscured or lost, they struggled in vain through life with doubts and fears, and departing in uncertainty, left to the charity of friends to supply their supposed deficiency of merit, and found no end, in wandering mazes lost." \*

\* Cuthbert, Archbishop of Canterbury, introduced the custom into England in 750.

The reasons on which the

doctrine of purgatory is justified by Papacy are:—"Some part of the debt, which the penitent owes to divine justice,

It was during this century that the Popes acquired temporal as well as spiritual dominion; assuming not only infallibility in the latter, but interfering in all secular affairs with ambitious intrigue.

may remain uncanceled. Certainly some sins are venial, and deserve not eternal death; yet, if not effaced by condign penance in this world, they must be punished in the next. The smallest sin excludes a soul from heaven, so long as it is not blotted out. But no man will say that a venial sin, which destroys not sanctifying grace, will be punished with eternal torments. Hence there must be a relaxation of some sin in the world to come. Venial sins of surprise are readily effaced by penance, as we hope, through divine mercy. Venial sins of malice, or those committed with full deliberation, are of a different nature, far more grievous and fatal. They are usually sins of habit, and lead even to mortal sin." Thus by the help of certain distinctions of sins, conclusions are drawn no where warranted in scripture, and mankind were led to regard purgatory as a relief to a troubled conscience. If they had not effaced their guilt by penance in this life, it was hoped that purgatory, assisted by the prayers and donations in behalf of the deceased, would release them afterwards from damnation. How strongly men were hence encouraged to live in sin all their days, is too apparent.

"The doctrine of purgatory," says an agreeable modern writer, "is very easily, nay, consistently embraced by such as believe in the expiatory nature of pain and suffering. The best feelings of our hearts are, besides, most ready to assist the imagination in devising means to keep up an intercourse with the invisible world, which either possesses already, or must soon possess, whatever has engaged our affection in this. Grief for a departed friend loses half its bitterness with a Catholic, who can firmly believe, that not a day shall pass without repeated and effectual proofs of attachment on his part, till he join the conscious object of his love in bliss. While other articles of the Catholic faith are too refined and abstracted for youth, the tender and benevolent juvenile mind easily seizes on the idea of purgatory fire. A parent or a brother, still kind to them in another world, yet suffering excruciating pains, that may be relieved, shortened, or perhaps terminated, by some privation or prayer, are notions perfectly adapted to youthful capacity and feelings:" and, it may be added, is one of the most powerful engines to move the sensibilities and draw forth sacrifices by human beings.

The churches, both of the east and west, were deformed with false worship, and those parts which had not yet sunk into the prevailing idolatry were prepared for the gradual admission of it, partly by the increase of superstition and partly by the servile submission of the European churches to the domination of the Roman see.

As we enter the ninth century, we appear to be more and more involved in the form of superstition; for, unlike institutions of human science, which improve and become clearer by time, Christian principles are seen in their greatest perfection on their first display; for, derived immediately from the simple divine word, and impressed on the hearts of men by the divine grace, pure and unmingled, they appear in full freshness and vigour. Too soon, however, the boasted wisdom of the world, aided by the inherent propensities of a fallen nature, corrupts and deteriorates them; too often leaving them divested of their radiance and despoiled of their purity. The exciting causes of the declension of true religion, which marked this age, were the preference which was given to human writings above the study of the scriptures—the increasing domination of the Papacy—the vast accumulation of external ceremonies, and the attention given to the decrees of men rather than the oracles of God. The Roman pontiffs gained great accession of power from the contending interests of ambitious princes. Charles the Bald, having obtained the imperial dignity by the good offices of the Pope, returned this eminent service by delivering the succeeding pontiffs from the obligation of waiting for the consent of the emperors, in order to their being installed into their office, and thus the election of the bishop of Rome was thenceforth carried on with little regard to law and propriety, being generally at-

tended with much tumult, until the reign of Otho the Great, who exercised his authority to arrest these disgraceful and disorderly proceedings.

The power and influence of the pontiffs, however, in civil affairs, arose in a short time to an enormous height, through the favour and protection of the princes, in whose cause they had employed their influence over the minds of the people. The increase of their authority was not less rapid or less considerable in spiritual matters, as it arose from the same causes. The European princes suffered themselves to be divested of the supreme authority in religious matters, which they had enjoyed: the power of the bishops declined, and even the authority of councils, both general and provincial, began to be disregarded.

The pontiffs, elated with this prosperity, became extremely arrogant, and their claims rose in proportion to their success. They were earnest in persuading all, and did succeed in persuading numbers, that the bishop of Rome was appointed and constituted by Jesus Christ supreme legislator and judge of the church universal, and therefore that the bishops derived all their authority from the Roman pontiff, nor could the councils determine any thing without his permission and consent. Notwithstanding these opinions, inculcated with zeal and ardour by the pontiffs, were opposed by such as were acquainted with the ancient ecclesiastical constitution and the government of the church in early ages, they were finally admitted.

Thus the church of Rome played a successful game, in the chances of which she had long been engaged, and to effect this auspicious termination she summoned all her forces of intrigue and insinuation. Having at length proclaimed

the necessity of an abstract creed for salvation, and made herself the infallible framer and expounder of that creed, she left her votaries no alternative of receiving or rejecting her doctrines, and as she suppressed in the bud every attempt to inform the understandings of men, she established her power upon ignorance, thus depriving her votaries of the power, had they possessed the inclination, to trace the sources of her doctrines, or to examine her theological system.

But, although vital Christian knowledge, and its beautiful fruit practical piety, shone feebly indeed in this dark season, learning, which had little connexion with the heart, or the great truths of religion, was not unknown or disregarded. The philosophy and logic that were taught in the European schools during this century, scarcely indeed deserved those honourable titles; yet there were to be found, especially among the Irish, men of acute perceptions and extensive knowledge, who were perfectly well entitled to the appellation of philosophers. The chief of these was Iohannes Scotius Erigena, a native of Ireland, as his name imports. He was the friend and companion of Charles the Bald, who delighted so much in his conversation, as to honour him with a place at his table. Scotius was endowed with an excellent, and truly superior genius, and was considerably versed both in Greek and Latin erudition. He explained to his disciples the doctrines of Aristotle, for which he was singularly well qualified by his perfect knowledge of the Greek; but, as his genius was too bold and aspiring to confine itself to the authority and decisions of the Stagirite, he pushed his philosophical researches yet further, dared to think for himself, and ventured to pursue truth by the efforts of his own reason, the



result of which is contained in several works yet extant. This celebrated philosopher\* formed no particular sect, at least it is not known that he did; and this will be considered by those who reflect on the spirit of the times in which he lived, as a fair proof that his immense learning was accompanied with meekness and modesty, a circumstance as rare as it is admirable. In one recorded instance, he opposed the powers of his mighty mind to the absurd tenet of transubstantiation, introduced during his time by an ecclesiastic named Pascasius Radbert; but however successfully Scotius and his colleague Rabanus, Bishop of Mentz, might plead the cause of common sense in this controversy, it would appear they were lamentably deficient in the one true knowledge, as they united in opposing the doctrine of grace, concerning which a controversy was raised in this century.

In the British Isles, it is pleasing to be authorised by history to say, that a devotional spirit prevailed. Monks in Ireland and Scotland, who gave themselves to prayer, preaching, and teaching, in the middle ages, were called Culdees, that is, cultores Dei. They were first known in this century by that name at St. Andrew's particularly, but had no settlement in England except at St. Peter's, York. During this century also, monastic institutions greatly multiplied, and were held in the highest repute: kings, princes, nobles, abandoned their thrones, and shut themselves up in monasteries, devoting themselves to God. And,

\* Erigena was a companion of our Alfred, admired for the acumen of his intellect, and the expansion of his knowledge. He was in high favour with Charlemagne, who delighted

in his ready wit and vast mental resources. He was munificently rewarded by Alfred, and died by violence at Malmsbury.



if the allurements of the world opposed their separation from society during their lives, such was the absurd and blind superstition that spread itself over the minds of men, that when death approached, they were accustomed to demand the monastic habit, and actually assumed it before their departure, that they might be regarded as one of the fraternity, and be in consequence entitled to the fervent prayers and other spiritual succours of their brethren. So deeply will fallible man sink in mental weakness and debasement, when he loses his hold of that anchor which is fixed to support him buoyant above error. But nothing affords a stronger instance of the veneration in which these recluses were held, than that princes drew numbers of them from their retired cloisters, and placed them in situations entirely foreign to their vows and their habits, and even in general, of their characters; placing them even at the head of state affairs, and amidst the splendour of courts.

Hence we find in the history of those, and subsequent times, frequent examples of monks and abbots performing the functions of envoys, ambassadors, and ministers of state; and displaying their secular talents with various success in those eminent and important stations, and hence it was that worldly ambition too often usurped the place of that humility which should mark the temper, and adorn the conduct of spiritual guides.

During the three centuries, of which we have thus taken a rapid glance, we are informed, that among the Irish, great reverence was paid to religion and learning; but its insular and exposed situation, leaving the country a prey to the devastating incursions of the northern barbarians, the attendant calamities, combined with intestine commotions, banished learning from its shores,

and sunk it into all the miseries of foreign invasions and civil wars, in which dreadful state of disorder and barbarity it continued during a long series of years.

The first Christian missionaries to Ireland, avoided with a caution, the judiciousness of which may be questioned, any violence to the ancient religious manners and customs of the ignorant people they desired to convert. Had this temporising spirit extended no further than favouring and protecting the bards and poets, and forbearing to persecute the feeble remnant of the druidical order, it would have been laudable, and no ill consequences might have resulted from the indulgent system—but, by overlooking a variety of Pagan rites, feasts, and ceremonies, in the spirit of this indulgence, the license encouraged their incorporation with the professed Christian faith, and they thus extended rather than contracted the empire of fanaticism, and effectually prepared the people for the reception of the gross superstitions of the Romish church. Many of those Pagan ceremonies remain in practice to this day; for instance, fires are lighted up at particular times, and the ignorant peasantry drive their cattle through these fires, in the firm belief that it is an effectual means to preserve them from all future accidents.\*

\* This is evidently derived from the worship of Bel or Baal. There is a curious custom which prevailed in the Highlands, (but is now yielding to the diffusion of knowledge,) resembling this we have named as practised in Ireland, and certainly derived from the same source. “Upon the first day of May, which is called

Beltan or Belstien day, (allusive to the sun,) all the boys in a township or hamlet meet on the moors. They cut a table in the green sod, of a circular figure, by casting a trench in the ground of such circumference as to hold the whole company. They then kindle a fire, and dress a repast of eggs and milk, to the consist-

It will be sufficiently evident, that while such absurd ceremonies were connived at, and perhaps encouraged, (for this was but one of many

ence of a custard. Having done this, they knead a cake of oatmeal, which is baked in the embers against a stone. After having eaten the custard, they divide the cake into so many portions, as similar as possible in size and shape, as there are persons assembled.

One portion they daub over with charcoal until perfectly black; they then put them in a bonnet, and every one blindfold, takes out a piece: he who holds the bonnet is entitled to the last piece. Whoever draws the blackened portion, is the devoted person who is to be sacrificed to Baal, whose favour they mean to implore, in rendering the year productive of the sustenance of man and beast. There is little doubt of these inhuman sacrifices having been once offered in the countries of Ireland, Scotland, and Britain, as well as in the East; although they now pass from the act of sacrificing, and only compel the devoted person to leap three times through the flames, with which the ceremony of the festival is closed."

— *Jameson's Dictionary of the Scottish Language.*

An account of another author respecting the observance of this superstitious ceremony differs in some degree from the above. "They cut a square trench in the ground," he re-

lates, "leaving a turf in the middle; on that they make a fire of wood, on which they dress a large caudle of eggs, butter, oatmeal, and milk, and bring besides the ingredients of the caudle, plenty of beer and whiskey; for each of the company must contribute something. The rites begin by spilling some of the caudle on the ground by way of libation; on that, every one takes a cake of oatmeal, upon which are raised nine square knobs, each dedicated to some particular being, the supposed preserver of their flocks and herds, or to some particular animal, the real destroyer of them. Each person then turns his face to the fire, breaks off a knob, and flinging it over his shoulder, says, 'This I give to thee; preserve thou my horses—this to thee, preserve thou my sheep;' and so on. After that, they use the same ceremony to the noxious animal. 'This I give to thee, O fox! spare thou my lambs—this to thee, O hooded crow!—this to thee, O eagle!' When the ceremony is over, they regale on the caudle; and after the feast is concluded, what is left is hid by two persons deputed for that purpose; but on the next Sunday, they re-assemble, and consume the relics of the entertainment." — *Pennant's Tour.*

of a similar nature,) it did not avail much to denounce the divine vengeance on those who dared to worship the sun, moon, and winds.

The early Irish missionaries, however, notwithstanding these injudicious indulgences to the superstitious practices of their converts, seem to have been sincerely zealous in their holy cause, and so absorbed in that great concern, that no secular views occupied their attention: the civil polity of the Irish therefore underwent no alteration for a considerable period after the first introduction of the Christian faith. But as the interests of the church must at all times be necessarily interwoven with the best interests of the state, so it was of course found that the civil establishment of Ireland must in several points be accommodated to the growing improvements of the received Christian faith.

“Accordingly we are told,” says Leland, “that St. Patrick was one of nine persons, kings, bards, and ecclesiastics, appointed to revise the ordinances of Pagan times, and to form a new code of laws; and that this code was formed, published, and known to posterity under the title of Scandias Moir, or the great antiquity.”

It forms no part of the plan of this work to enter into the detail of these and other ancient Irish laws. It will suffice to say, that they not only provide against those crimes usually cognizable by human tribunals, but also against those which are too generally committed with impunity even in civilised nations. The most criminal offences were, however, only punishable by fine, termed *eric*. A person being expelled, or otherwise quitting one tribe, could not enter another unless he had paid *eric* for all offences committed in his former residence.

The fine paid to a son for the murder of his father, was rated at seven *cumhals*, as they were

termed, or twenty-one kine. Hence we may form a judgment of the lenity of their penal laws in other instances. Property was guarded by many minute institutions, breathing equity and humanity; and historians agree in awarding to the Irish the honourable praise of being lovers of justice. In some fragments of their laws, singular clauses are found, regulating the prices of dress for all orders and ranks, a proof that it was considered a very important subject, both as affecting the interest and morals of the community.

These laws ordain that wives who bring no dowry, (including even queens,) shall be restrained in the expence of their apparel: they ascertain the prices also of needle-work, embroidery, and other ornaments of dress. Hospitality is generally a very prominent virtue of a rude people. The ancient Irish were peculiarly distinguished for it; and their laws expressly enjoin its observance, enacting that no rath, (the term for the dwelling-house and offices, where an individual resided with his dependants,) should break up suddenly, lest the traveller, whatever his condition or rank, should be disappointed of his expected reception and refreshment. Even the lowest of the people claimed this reception and refreshment by an almost perfect right; and so interwoven was the custom with the habits of the people, that centuries have not effaced it: even now, the wandering beggar enters the house of a farmer or gentleman with the ease and freedom of a constant inmate, and an entire consciousness of the validity of his claim. The benign spirit of Christianity favoured and inculcated this virtue of hospitality, and the clergy enforced and countenanced the prevailing custom. "The most holy men of heaven," say the Irish laws, "were remarkable for hospitality; and the gospel com-



mands us to receive the sojourner, to entertain him, and relieve his wants."

In thus taking a cursory view of the manners of the Irish, it is necessary to observe, that although considerably raised above barbarity by the introduction of a civilising faith, they yet remained a rude people during several centuries; notwithstanding, there were many individuals who adorned their native society by their talent, learning, and piety. It also clearly appears, that although rights were accurately defined in their societies, and the people were generally impressed with an habitual love of justice, and a desire to act upon its obligations; yet their passions being extremely irritable, and their sense of injuries lively, they were led precipitately to recur to brute force for redress, and hence there was but little that could truly be called a peaceable connexion between the different inhabitants of the country, although it most certainly possessed very many opportunities and facilities of self improvement.

From these circumstances we are led to infer, that the change of principles and sentiments which is the natural effect of a sincere reception of the gospel, was very slow in advance, and feeble in degree, among the Irish; for there is every reason to believe, there was perfect sincerity in the preaching, and a constancy of zeal in the missionaries and ministers of the introduced religion; and that these advantages were not more evidently improved, must be attributed to the counteracting spirit of the times, and the imperfections of the government of the island, which powerfully existed, and kept in pernicious action the violent and irascible passions, so directly opposed to the mild and peaceable spirit of Christianity.

The influence of the Irish monarchs was weak and fluctuating; their power was often controlled,

contemned, and resisted. The provinces, and even the inferior septs into which the island was divided, lived in a species of federal union with each other, which the pride, the ambition, avarice or revenge, of the several chieftains was ever ready to interrupt. Their histories are replete with records of the fatal effects of these dangerous and malignant passions, which throw a deep shade over those fairer portions of the moral pictures displayed of the equity, rectitude, benevolence, and generosity of the ancient Irish. But, while we are thus painfully obliged to speak of the low standard of general morals, we must still remember, that of Ireland was not lower, nor indeed so low as that of other nations of Europe, during what are termed the middle ages; that is, the period comprehending the interval between the fifth and the fourteenth or fifteenth centuries. It was a period of ignorance and abject superstition; neither arts, learning, nor laws, were valued or understood, and consequently there was neither motive nor stimulus to cultivate them, even by the few who shone like dim stars in a cloudy hemisphere.

It was during this general degeneracy, that monastic institutions took their rise, and though the immorality which soon disgraced those who established them, renders it impossible for the faithful historian to exempt them from the general censure; yet certainly, within their recesses was buried many a gifted genius, and many an exalted mind, whose influence in *active* life would have given a higher tone to public manners, by erecting a higher standard of virtuous example. But, it was the genius of Popery, and the spirit of the times, which led so many to sequester themselves from the duties of active life, and wilfully to destroy their social utility. Yet it would be unjust

to pass a general and severe censure on these monastic retreats, or to regard them only as the receptacles of indolence and superstition, as in the zeal of reform they were considered. We must in justice remember, that during some of the middle ages, the monks were the depositaries of whatever piety, or learning, or humanity there remained in Christendom; that amidst all their superstitious practices, the spirit of true devotion was not totally extinct, that they were the chief instructors of youth, the almost sole historians of their times. That as landed proprietors, they were indulgent and easy to their tenants; and that their hospitality was boundless and extensive. In short, that the virtues compatible with their vows, were by many exercised in an exemplary manner. "It appears but just," says a periodical writer, speaking of the severe censures indiscriminately laid upon monastic houses and their inmates, "that while we lament the ignorance, and detest the vices which prevailed among this great body of men, we do not totally forget that there were very many among them, who possessed much virtue and much learning; and while we yield to the popular zeal, which has blackened their character, let us remember, we of the present day, owe them much. That they were the promoters of science, and the preservers of all that is valuable to us in literature, their remains abundantly testify. Utter ignorance, neglect, and insensibility, could not have been universal among men, who preserved through many dark ages of the deepest barbarity, the remains of Augustan learning and Attic elegance; who have bequeathed to us many models of architecture, which in their design and execution are, by more refined ages yet unrivalled; who have illuminated their beautiful missals with colours, which the

apparently perfected science of chymistry has not been able to equal ; who were the inventors of many of the most useful and valuable arts, tending to the advancement and adornment of society ; and finally, whose remains of metallic works, painting, and sculpture, are yet the admiration of the enlightened and cultivated genius. Indulgence has always been shown to the faults and errors of an individual, when he has been acknowledged to have been a public benefactor. If this principle be a just one, some tenderness is surely due to the memory of men to whom we owe not only the elegancies of literature, and acquisitions in science, but the more permanent and more valuable blessings derived from the knowledge of Christianity."

Many were the causes which contributed to the prosperity, and to its much to be lamented consequence, the arrogance of the sacerdotal order during the period we now are describing ; during which, the clergy sadly departed from their spiritual duties, or mingled them with secular dispositions, and even military engagements. Yet, although thus disgracing their profession, instead of displaying to the world the attractions of virtuous example, they were still regarded almost as deities, and held in the highest veneration by the submissive multitude : nothing can more forcibly prove the insinuating power they possessed. Their riches and privileges of course continued to increase ; excessive donations, not only of private possessions, but public grants, made to the clergy with extravagant liberality, augmented unceasingly the treasures of the European churches, which increased to a great height during the eighth and ninth centuries, according with the system of policy prevalent at that period. Kings employed either in usurpation or defence, endeavoured to attach those who could assist them ; and accordingly

bought them over to aid their interests, by donatives, territories, privileges, &c. Hence it became an axiom of political prudence with sovereigns, to distribute among the bishops and others of the clergy, the same sort of donations that had, under a different spirit of the times, been made to generals, &c.; nor is it to be inferred, that religion, or superstition rather, was always the principle which drew forth liberality: they expected perhaps, more fidelity and loyalty from men bound by the obligations of religion, and consecrated to the service of God, than from a body of nobility; at least, they knew the influence they held over the actions of the latter. It is probable, from the consciousness of this influence, they hoped to check the turbulent spirit of their vassals, and to maintain them in obedience by the authority of their spiritual guides, whose commands were reverently respected, and whose denunciations rendered formidable by ignorance, struck terror into the boldest and most resolute hearts. Thus the excessive augmentation of sacerdotal opulence and authority, regarded upon a superficial view, as the effect of superstition alone, was in very many instances certainly, the result of great political sagacity and prudence, of which unnumbered proofs might be given, if necessary to establish the fact.

The terrors of excommunication\* so truly formi-

\* Excommunication was lodged in the hands of the clergy, and was distinguished into greater and lesser. The lesser simply called *aphorismos*, "separation, or suspension," consisted in excluding men from the participation of the eucharist, and the prayers of the faithful: but they were not expelled the church, for they

had the privilege of being present at the reading of the Scriptures, the sermons, and the prayers of the catechumens and penitents. This excommunication was inflicted for lesser crimes, misbehaviour, or neglecting to attend the service of the church, &c.

The greater excommunication called *pantiles apho-*



dable and hideous, acquired at this period, if possible, new accessions of terror in Europe. Excommunicated persons were indeed considered in all places as objects of aversion to God and man, but they were not on that account robbed of their privileges as citizens, nor of the rights of humanity,

rismos, "total separation and anathema" consisted in an absolute and entire exclusion from the church, and the participation of all its rites. When any person was thus excommunicated, notice was given of it by circular letters to the most eminent churches all over Christendom, that they might all confirm this act of discipline, by refusing to admit the delinquent to their communion. The consequences of this excommunication were very terrible; the excommunicated person was avoided in civil commerce, and outward conversation. No one was to receive him into his house, nor eat at the same table with him, and when dead he was denied the solemn rites of burial.

The Roman pontifical takes notice of three kinds of excommunication: 1st. The minor, incurred by those who have any correspondence with an excommunicated person. 2dly. The major, which falls upon those who disobey the commands of the holy see, or refuse to submit to certain points of discipline, in consequence of which they are excluded from the church militant and triumphant, and delivered over to the devil and

his angels. 3dly. Anathema, which is properly that pronounced by the pope against heretical princes and countries. In former ages the papal fulminations were most terrible things. The form abounds in dreadful imprecations. It is evident that this assumed power was a terrible engine of oppression and cruelty. This unnatural empire over the mind of men owes its origin to pagan customs. Upon the conversion of barbarous nations to Christianity, the new and ignorant proselytes confounded the excommunication used among Christians with that which had been practised by the priests of their gods, and considered it of the same nature and effects. This opinion was favoured by the injudicious indulgence of missionaries, in suffering them to retain many of their pagan institutions.

The Roman pontiffs on the other side were sufficiently artful to encourage error, so calculated to gratify their ambition, to aggrandize the episcopal order in general, and to ensure to them the influence of fear over the mental energies of the people.

much less were those kings and princes whom the head of the church thought proper to exclude from its communion, supposed to forfeit on that account their crown or their territories.

But from the eighth century it was different in Europe, excommunication received that hideous power which dissolved all connections, so that those whom the bishops or their chief excluded from the church communion, were degraded to a level with the brutes. Under this horrid sentence, the king, the ruler, the husband, the father, nay, even the *man* forfeited all their rights, all their advantages, the claims of nature, and the privileges of society.

History presents to our contemplation a gloomy moral picture during the ninth century. Many circumstances contributed to the general depravation. Among them may be reckoned the political calamities of the times, in which Ireland had her full share, the bloody and perpetual wars, the incursions and conquests of the barbarous nations, the gross and almost incredible ignorance of the nobility, and the affluence which flowed in upon the churches and religious communities from all quarters, encouraging luxury, self-indulgence, and licentiousness amongst those who professed to have renounced the pomps and vanities of the world, and rendering them too generally indifferent, and neglectful of their sacred functions.

A very corrupt ministry also, we are told, dishonoured the church; noblemen, who from indolence, want of talent, activity, or courage, were rendered incapable of appearing with dignity in the council, or with honour in the field, immediately turned their views to the church, and aimed at a distinguished place among its chiefs and rulers, becoming contagious examples of vicious indulgence and stupid neglect, to the inferior clergy: while the patrons of churches in whom

rested the right of election, unwilling to submit their ignorance and disorderly conduct to the keen censure of zealous and upright pastors, industriously sought out the most servile and worthless, to whom (to avoid accusation) they committed the important care of souls. But one of the circumstances which contributed in a particular degree to render at least the higher clergy irreverent and depraved, and to divert their minds from the peculiar duties of their sacred station, was the obligation they were under of performing certain military services to their sovereigns, in consequence of the possessions they derived from the royal bounty.

The bishops and heads of monasteries held many possessions by feudal tenure, and being thereby bound to furnish their princes with a certain number of soldiers in time of war, were obliged also to take the field themselves, at the head of their troops, and thus to act in a sphere utterly inconsistent with the nature and the duties of their sacred character; and we must all know how easily the mind loses her proper dominion, and becomes the slave of those inferior powers which it is her duty to hold in subjection, and the prey of those turbulent passions which follow in the train of ambition. Besides this, it often happened, and Ireland woefully proved it, that rapacious princes, in order to satisfy the craving wants of their soldiers and retainers, boldly invaded the possessions of the church, which they distributed among their armies. In consequence of which, the priests and monks, in order to avoid perishing through hunger, abandoned themselves to the practice of violence and fraud, which were regarded as the only means of procuring themselves a subsistence.

It was about the close of the eighth century

that Ireland experienced a formidable invasion of the Danes, called by the Irish by the general name of Normans, Galls, or foreigners, distinguishing their particular tribes by those of Daffgalls, Firgalls, and Danfhir, or Danes. By the Englishmen they were stiled Ostmen, or Eastmen collectively. They infested England, they threatened France, Charles the Great finding it necessary to fit out a navy to secure his coasts from their attacks. We have seen that Ireland was internally weak and disunited, and inferior in the art of war. The country was open and inviting to foreigners roving in search of new settlements.

The monarchical power was at this time enjoyed in alternate succession by two branches of the same race; the power of the monarch was feeble, the inferior dynasties factious and assuming: but great reverence was paid to religion and learning, correcting in a great degree the evils of the political constitution, the general state of the people being happy, and the country respected.

The first invasion was made in small places, for the sake of plunder; they were repelled by the chieftain, whose territory they invaded.

Other parties appeared in different parts, terrified the inhabitants with the havoc they committed, and were again opposed and repelled. Thus harassed during the long period of twenty years, the Irish yet formed no plan of union to repel the common enemy.

The northern pirates encouraged by this apathy and want of co-operation, gradually obtained some small settlements, and at length Tunges, a warlike Norwegian, landed with a powerful armament, dividing his fleet and army in order to strike terror in different quarters. His followers were permitted every species of outrage calculated to drive

the inhabitants to despair ; they burned, they massacred without regard to sex, age, or character, and of all others the clergy, who greatly abounded in Ireland, were persecuted by these ferocious Pagans with especial fury.

Those Danes who had formed settlements flocked to the standard of Tunes, and the invader seated himself in Armagh, from which he expelled the numerous clergy, lived on their lands, and acquired riches, with all the state of sovereignty.

The Irish, after some ill concerted and unsuccessful efforts, rendered so by their private competitions, sunk gradually into a state of abject submission, and Tunes, after a residence of thirty years in Ireland, was at length proclaimed monarch of the kingdom. The government of the usurper was odious to the feelings of the people, and severe in the highest degree. It was marked by oppression, extortion and insolence, particularly directed against learning and religion. All seminaries and religious institutions, with their books, utensils, and furniture were destroyed, and their clergy were banished to foreign countries, or to remote and miserable retreats in Ireland. Irish spirit at length revived, the usurper was seized by a prince of Meath; the joyful news quickly spread; the Danes were every where surprised by a sudden insurrection, massacred and dispersed, while their leader was condemned to death, which sentence was executed by precipitating him into a lake.

Thus the invaders were subjected, but not exterminated.

Fiery as are the passions of the Irish, they quickly subside, and give place to indolence. They impolitically suffered the remnant of the Danes to remain as subjects, and tributaries to



particular chieftains. In consequence, a new colony arrived, professing peaceable intentions, and declaring their views commercial.

They were credulously received, and the Irish, as if infatuated, suffered them to become masters of Dublin, Limerick, Waterford, and other maritime places, which they secretly enlarged and fortified with works unknown to the Irish, and in which they remained secure, ready to receive reinforcements from their native country. Their power increased imperceptibly, while the Irish, proud and supine, engaged in national feuds and distractions, left them to extend their territories until they again threatened to dispute the sovereignty of the whole island.

At length roused from their apathy, the Irish attacked, pursued and defeated them, yet they still subsisted, sometimes acknowledging the superiority of the Irish, sometimes boldly asserting their independence, but still not subdued, nor considerably reduced.

The Irish annalists detail the actions of Cormac,\* the reverend and learned prelate of Munster, during these contests with the Danes.

\* Cormac M'Culinan was a prince celebrated by the Irish historians for his learning, piety, and valour. He wrote in his native language a history of Ireland, commonly called the Psalter of Cashel, which is still extant, and contains the most authentic account we have of the annals of the country to that period, about the year 900.

The royal seat and archbishopric of Cashel was formerly the metropolis of Munster, and on the ascent to the ca-

thedral is a large stone, on which every new king of Munster was, says tradition, solemnly proclaimed.

The ruins of the cathedral testify Cashel to have been a place of importance, and the structure extensive as well as handsome, boldly towering on the celebrated rock of Cashel, forms with it a magnificent object, bearing honourable testimony to the labour and ingenuity, as well as zeal and piety of its former inhabitants. It is seen at a great distance in

It is evident even from the imperfect history given by the Irish of these foreigners, that they were through the revolutions of some ages a very powerful and distinguished sept of Ireland. They embraced Christianity in the year 948, and their settlement was so well established, and consequence so considerable, that they engaged the attention of the neighbouring countries.

The most vigorous enemy whom the northern foreigners experienced in Ireland was Brian Boromy, a hero celebrated in the annals of his country. He was called by the death of his brother to the throne of Munster, when at an advanced age. Brian laboured to support his new dignity with the spirit of a veteran, whose life, spent with honour in the field, had endeared him to his countrymen, and with the prudence and moderation becoming a man, advanced to the age of seventy. Malcontents were subdued, the factious conciliated, those who had suffered in times of commotion were redressed, they who had been ejected from their possessions by the invaders were restored, they who had been reduced to a state of bondage were emancipated. The havoc caused by the invaders was repaired, the clergy restored to their endowments, churches and religious houses rose from their ruins, learned seminaries were re-established and enlarged, laws

many directions. Adjoining to it are the ruins of a chapel of Cormac M'Culinan, who was at once bishop and king of Cashel, or Munster; it is supposed to be the first stone building in Ireland, and seems by the rude imitation of pillars and capitals to have been copied from the Grecian architecture, and long to have preceded that

which is termed Gothic. Modern Cashel is small to what we may suppose it to have been in ancient days. The archbishop's palace is a fine building; there is a handsome market, sessions-house, county infirmary, and charter school for twenty children of each sex.

were reviewed, corrected, and strictly enforced. The venerable Brian was about to crown all the noble actions of his reign, by building and fitting out a formidable navy, in order to ensure the island from future invasion, when the Danes, injudiciously left in free possession of the maritime cities, invited their countrymen to their assistance, and the neighbouring Irish, impatient of the ancient tribute still exacted by the monarch, ungratefully concurred with the foreigners, and even encouraged and aided them in insurrection. The flame of war was kindled, and Brian at the advanced age of eighty-eight was called to the field. He lived to be the witness of the bravery of his son, Mortagh, and the victory of his troops. Mortagh fell in the field, and the venerable Brian was slain by some fugitives as he lay unguarded in his pavilion.

The Danes still continued their settlements in the country, they were governed by chiefs bearing the title of kings, and their church was modelled without the assistance or concurrence of the Irish, their Bishops being remitted for consecration to the primate of Canterbury. They had the more leisure to extend and to strengthen their settlements, as the Irish fell into deplorable political confusion. The country was harassed by competitions for the sovereignty, laws and religion lost their just influence, and licentiousness, violence, and immorality prevailed.

Donehad, the son of Brian, who had established his power in the south, endeavoured to do the same in the north, but was prevented by Turlogh, his nephew, who was proclaimed king by his faction. Donehad, after a series of hostilities and feuds, at length yielded to the superior power of his rival. Donehad presented an in-

stance of the selfish principle of contending princes, proving favourable to the pretensions of the Roman pontiffs, which had now arisen to an exorbitant degree of arrogance. Many bishops maintained, that the pontiff was not only Bishop of Rome, but of the whole world, an assertion they had not hitherto ventured to make. Acknowledging this supremacy, Donehad in the first anguish of disappointed ambition fled to Rome, laid his crown at the feet of the pontiff, promising to invest him with the sovereignty of Ireland. But he met with no assistance from the head of the church. Fearful of returning among his enemies, he assumed the habit of a religious, and immured himself in St. Stephen's abbey at Rome.

Turlogh thus left without competitor, exercised the monarchical power, although not formally elected or recognized. "But the defects of his title were," says archbishop Lanfranc, "supplied by the merit of his administration." The same prelate attributes the elevation of Turlogh to the gracious interposition of providence in favour of the Irish. Upon his decease, however, the state of things reverted to the confusion from which he had drawn them. The general state of religion was such as might be expected, in times of prevailing ignorance and corruption, an age which even the annalist of the Roman church, Baronius, styles "an iron age, barren of all goodness, a leaden age, abounding in all wickedness, and a dark age, remarkable above all others for the scarcity of writers, and men of learning." In fact the christian world was at this time enveloped in a thick veil of superstition, a heavy cloud which obscured from the sight of the illiterate, the craft and subtlety of those who had gained the empire over

their conscience, an empire which was further established by the universal belief of the final day of judgment being near.

The immense donations made to the church during the tenth century were drawn forth by the panic which had seized all the European nations. This is evident by the gifts being generally introduced with the sentence—"The end of all things being now at hand." Nor did this terror cease to operate on the minds of men till the century had passed away. Saints and ceremonies also greatly multiplied during this century. Towards the close of it, the famous annual festival celebrated in remembrance of all departed souls was instituted by the authority of Odile, abbot of Cluni, and the worship of the Virgin, which had previously been carried to a high degree of idolatry, received now new accessions of solemnity and superstition. The custom was also introduced of celebrating masses, and abstaining from flesh every Sunday, in honour of her. The rosary and crown of the Virgin was also instituted, by which her worshippers were to reckon the number of prayers they were to offer to her; the rosary consists in fifteen repetitions of the Lord's prayer, and one hundred and fifty repetitions of the salutation of the Virgin, while the crown, according to the different opinions of the learned concerning the age of the Virgin, consists in six or seven repetitions of the Lord's prayer, and six or seven times ten salutations, or Ave Marias; so abject and senseless had superstition become. The doctrine which exalted the papacy above all human power had gradually diffused itself from the immediate court of Rome, to the utmost limits of Christendom, and the authority and lustre of the Roman pontiffs arose imperceptibly to the highest degree during the tenth and eleventh centuries, although,



not without much opposition and many obstacles. Temporal dignities were accumulated every where upon the clergy, who gave themselves up, says an ecclesiastical writer, "to the pursuit of pleasure and ambition, frequenting the courts of princes with splendid retinues, and every mark of external magnificence." The pontiffs received the high sounding titles of masters of the world, and popes, viz. universal fathers; they presided every where in the councils, by their legates assumed the authority of supreme arbiters, of all controversies concerning religion and church discipline, and maintained the pretended rights of the church against the encroachments and usurpations of kings and princes. Their authority was yet, however, confined to certain limits restrained by princes from arrogantly aiming at civil dominion, and was opposed by the bishops, that it might not arise to entire spiritual despotism, and destroy the liberty and privileges of synods and councils. But the pontiffs assiduously endeavoured to remove these limits of their power, and to render their dominion despotic and universal, not only spiritually but politically; this restless ambition, however, of the aspiring popes was opposed by the emperors, the king of France, and William the Conqueror, who was the boldest assertor against the lofty claims of the apostolic see. It is to be lamented, that although they did this, they inconsistently had recourse to the influence of the pontiffs on the minds of the multitude, in order to accomplish their individual schemes of ambition, and thereby encouraged and cherished the pride and arrogance they dreaded, and otherwise opposed.

While William was projecting the invasion of England, for instance, he sent ambassadors to pope Alexander the second, in order, we are told by Matthew Paris, to have his undertaking justi-

fied and approved by apostolic authority; and the pope having considered the claims of the contending parties, sent a standard to William as the omen of his future royalty. When we reflect upon this, and many other similar instances, it cannot excite our surprise, that the popes aimed at, and finally obtained universal dominion, encouraged as they were by such submissions and servile homage from European princes.\*

That the people during this age were sunk in the grossest superstition, is not to be wondered at, when the depravity of their teachers is recol-

\* Under the pontificate of Hilderbrand, the face of the Latin church was in fact entirely changed; its government was subverted, and its most important rights and privileges usurped by him. The views of Hilderbrand, or Gregory VII. were not confined to an absolute spiritual dominion, but aimed at a civil monarchy, equally extensive and despotic; his decided purpose was to engage in the bands of allegiance and fidelity to St. Peter, that is, to the Roman pontiffs, all the kings and princes of the earth, and to establish at Rome an annual assembly of bishops, by whom the contests that might arise between kingdoms and sovereigns were to be decided, the rights and pretensions of princes to be examined, and the fall of nations and empires to be determined. In these aspiring projects he was opposed by France and England, and also by the emperor: his arrogance is exemplified in the

address made to Philip I. of France, to whom he recommends a humble and obliging carriage, from this consideration, "*that both his kingdom and his soul were under the dominion of St. Peter; namely, his vicar the Roman pontiff, who had the power to bind or to loose him both in heaven and upon earth.*" When Gregory wrote to William the Conqueror demanding the arrears of the Peter pence, and at the same time summoning him to do homage for the kingdom of England as a fief of the apostolic see, William granted the former, but refused the latter, declaring that he held his kingdom of God, and his own sword. It was under the administration of Gregory that the emperors lost the privilege of ratifying by their consent the election of the Roman pontiff, a privilege of no small importance, when we consider it in all its bearings, and reflect upon the concatenation of political events.

lected. Doubtless there were numberless judicious and pious men in existence, who were able and willing to support declining religion, but the prejudices of a barbarous age rendered all such attempts dangerous, and those elevated spirits who had soared above the general contagion, were too much concealed in the privacy of the cloister, or possessed of too little influence to combat, with any prospect of success, the formidable patrons of impiety and superstition, who were found in all ranks and orders, from the throne to the cottage. During the whole of this century, the European nations were, however, employed in rebuilding, repairing, and adorning their churches; for in the preceding century, the general panic as to the approach of the final day of judgment, had occasioned the churches and monasteries to remain without repair, from a notion that they would soon be inevitably involved in the general fate of all sublunary things. These apprehensions passed over; things immediately put on a new aspect, tottering temples were rebuilt, and the greatest zeal, with the richest and most liberal donations, were employed in restoring the sacred edifices to their former lustre, or rather, in giving them new degrees of beauty and magnificence. Thus while morals and religion might be said to have sunk to the lowest point of depression, men had recourse to externals and vain refuges, to still the monitions of conscience, and lay the flattering unction to their souls.

The arts and sciences revived, indeed, in a small degree, among the clergy and the monks; and this, in the British isles, may doubtless be attributed to the conquest of the Normans, to whom is due the praise of restoring letters in England.

William possessed sagacity and genius. Though his severity rendered him hateful to his English

subjects, he certainly raised the tone of society, by introducing from Normandy and other countries, men of learning and talent, and exerted himself to dispel that ignorance which debased his new subjects, over whom, indeed, he ruled with a rod of iron. The reception of Christianity had, in a remarkable manner, changed the manners of the Normans. Under the darkness of paganism, they had evinced the utmost ferocity and aversion from all branches of knowledge, and every kind of instruction. But subsequent to their conversion, they distinguished themselves by an ardent application to the study of religion, and the pursuit of learning. Hence their rugged minds became comparatively polished and civilized. This desire of knowledge increased and extended itself rapidly, and became at length the impulsive spirit of the age. To it we must refer the rapid accumulation of schools at this period, and the more judicious choice of eminent and able masters to superintend them than before.

Towards the conclusion of the preceding age there were no schools, but those which belonged to monasteries or episcopal residences, each monastery being obliged to have one or two teachers resident, nor were there any other masters than the Benedictine monks to instruct the youth in the principles of sacred and profane erudition.\*

\* Benedictines. This order, which in a manner absorbed every other in the west, was instituted A. D. 529 by Benedict Nureia, a man of piety and reputation. The order made a rapid progress, and soon arrived at a most flourishing state. Its interest was promoted in Britain by Augustine and Miletus, and there were many mo-

nasteries of the order in Ireland.

The rules of Benedict were as follows:

They were obliged to perform their devotions seven times in the twenty-four hours, the circle of which had a reference to the passion and death of Christ. They were obliged always to go two and two to-

But not long after the commencement of the eleventh century, circumstances in this respect were changed. In many places learned men, both among the clergy and laity, undertook the arduous and important charge of instructing the youth, and succeeded much better in this worthy undertaking than the recluses had done, not only by

gether, every day in Lent to fast until the evening, and abated their usual time of eating and sleeping, but they were not allowed to practise any voluntary austerity without permission of their superior. They never conversed in the refectory at meals, but were obliged to attend to the reading of the scriptures. They occupied the same dormitory, but slept singly, reposing in their clothes. For small faults they were shut out from meals; for greater they were debarred religious commerce, and excluded from the chapel; and incorrigible offenders, were expelled from the community. Every monk had two coats, two cowls, a table book, a knife, a needle, and a handkerchief; and the furniture of their couch was a mat, a blanket, a rug, and a pillow. Their habit was a loose black coat or cloak with large wide sleeves, and a capuche or cowl, ending in a point behind: they were in the canon law styled Black friars, from their habit. The rule of discipline is obviously not encouraging either to luxury or ambition, and it was an obligation of the noviciate to promise not to infringe any rule on the penalty of expulsion. Yet hav-

ing acquired immense riches, the order gradually departed from its simplicity, and extended their zeal and attention to worldly affairs, insinuated themselves into the cabinets of princes, and took part in political cabals and court factions, while they made a great augmentation of superstitious rules and ceremonies in their order, to blind the multitude to the departure from their simplicity and virtue. Pope John the Twenty-second, who deceased 1334, made a curious calculation respecting the astonishing rise and extent of this order from the time of its institution to the period above. That there had been of it 24 popes, near 200 cardinals, 7000 archbishops, 15,000 bishops, 15,000 abbots of renown, above 4000 saints, and upwards of 37,000 monasteries! There have likewise been of this order, 20 emperors, and ten empresses, 47 kings, and 30 queens, 20 sons of emperors, and 48 sons of kings; about 1,000 princesses, daughters of emperors and kings, besides different degrees of nobility innumerable; the order has produced a vast number of eminent writers and learned men.



comprehending in their course of instruction, more branches of knowledge than the monastic doctors were acquainted with, but, perhaps, even more by teaching in a better method and with greater perspicuity, many of the same branches, in the knowledge of which the monks really possessed a superiority. The most eminent of these new masters, were those who had travelled into Spain with a view to study in the schools of the Saracens, or had improved their stock of erudition and philosophy by a diligent and attentive perusal of the writings of the Arabians, of which a great number were translated into Latin.

The learning indeed, says Milner, was not philosophical, like that of modern times, but consisted chiefly of grammar, rhetoric, and logic. It was, however, connected with divinity, the scriptures were held in veneration, the hardy presumption of subtile theory, and the supercilious negligence concerning piety and public worship were then unknown among men. Amongst the fruits of Christianity, we may remark the forbearance of the northern nations, who, towards the close of this century ceased to invade the southern. One attempt only was made by Magnus, king of Norway, to invade Ireland. He landed without opposition, and ventured to penetrate the country, but he was suddenly surrounded, for the Irish were accustomed, instead of meeting their enemies with warlike parade, to watch their advantage, and dart unexpectedly upon them. Magnus and his party were cut to pieces. Hume attributes the forbearance of this restless people to disturb their neighbours, to their addicting themselves to agriculture, which occupied them at home: and Milner, with his usual piety, refers the tractable spirit which induced them to submit to domestic labour rather than remain rovers, to

the influence of Christianity, which they had received, it would appear, with sincerity, if it induced peace, order, and tranquillity. But, although Magnus thus fell a victim to his temerity, Ireland was decreed to become a conquest, and the domestic contentions which continually disquieted it, rendered the conquest no difficult undertaking, aided as it was, by the assumptions of the Roman pontiff, who, it will be seen, strikingly displayed his arrogant pretensions, in attaching, without hazard and expense, an extensive island to his spiritual jurisdiction, under the plea of its imperfect conversion.

## CHAPTER IV.

*Circumstances render Ireland an easy conquest—Motives and designs of Henry not divulged—Obstacles to his invasion—He requires the sanction of the pope—Gains it—The bull authorising him to invade Ireland—Reforms in the Irish church—Cardinal Papanon—Irish supposed to know the intentions of Henry, but make no preparations—Delays of the design—Domestic factions of Ireland expedite it—Roderick O' Connor—Dermod Mac Murchad—His ferocious character—His solicitation of foreign aid—Application to Henry—He gives him a letter of credence—Dermod disappointed in its prevailing power—He applies to Earl Strongbow—With difficulty succeeds in obtaining a promise of aid—Gains the assistance of Fitzstephens and Fitzgerald—Returns to Ireland privately, but soon avows his designs—Fitzstephens arrives in Ireland, alarms the inhabitants—Attempts the siege of Wexford; is obliged to retire—Renews hostilities—Influence of the clergy in conciliation—Dermod refreshes the troops at Fernes—Monastic luxury—A series of engagements ensue—Roderick defeated—Strongbow applies to Henry; receives an implied assent to his design—Terror of the Irish—Their expedient to avert the anger of heaven—Favourable turn of affairs—Dermod defeated—Henry, jealous of his nobles, issues peremptory orders to withdraw from Ireland—Strongbow despatches a messenger to him, explanatory of his views—Henry's tardiness—Distressed state of the British troops in Ireland—The decease of Dermod increases the perplexity—Spirit of Lawrence, archbishop of Dublin—The English reduced to great difficulty—Terms offered them rejected—Act of desperate valour—Dissensions and hostilities renewed—Act of treachery—Henry prepares to pass over to Ireland—His resentment against his nobles propitiated—The Irish exhibit no loyalty, but with a selfish and sordid spirit many even meet and submit to the invader—They are received with condescension by Henry.*

## CENTURIES ELEVENTH AND TWELFTH.

MANY circumstances rendered Ireland an easy conquest to any power, who might have made it an object of acquisition; but in the eleventh and twelfth centuries, the peculiar state of the neigh-

bouring kingdoms was by no means favourable to the attempt, although the internal situation of Ireland was not unknown to England and other kingdoms.

The Irish chieftains were celebrated for their valour, and we have seen that learning and piety were also eminently displayed amongst them; but Ireland not only was the retreat of learning, but the refuge sought by distressed nobles or factious leaders. For instance, on the disgrace of Earl Godwin, during the reign of Edward the Confessor, Harold, his son, retreated to Ireland, and there formed such connections as proved the resource of his family, when William, his Norman rival, was in the height of his glory and prosperity. His three sons also fled thither immediately after the fatal battle of Hastings, and in the reign of William led an Irish army into England, to assert the liberty of their country and the pretensions of their family. They were however defeated, and obliged to retreat with great loss to Ireland. France is also said to have drawn considerable succours from Ireland in several of her wars, and the Irish annalists even say, that such assistance first excited the jealousy of Henry II. of England, and urged him to the measure of annexing Ireland to his dominions. But the motives and designs of Henry, belong rather to the civil than the ecclesiastical history of Ireland. It is only necessary to say, that such design had been long formed, as a very superficial knowledge of the island was sufficient to awaken the ambition of a powerful and popular sovereign, at a period when it was considered reproachful to any distinguished character, not to be engaged in some gallant or pious exercise, but the disputes of Henry with the hierarchy respecting Becket, the general state of Europe, and the turbulent spirit of the barons and

great vassals, had prevented the fulfilment of a measure which he had not, however, lost sight of, amidst his various other domestic and foreign engagements.

A pretence alone was wanting, to colour with some appearance of justice, a design of invading a kingdom, which had confined itself to its own internal affairs, without interfering with those of its neighbours. Such pretences were soon found; royalty is generally surrounded by flatterers, who watch the prince's ambitious designs, and are seldom deficient in plausible arguments to justify them to the mind, that is prepared by previous inclination. Though the sagacity of Henry could not admit many of the reasons offered to justify his invasion of the sister kingdom, yet the same sagacity, aided by the suggestions of an interested and subtile ecclesiastic, soon supplied the necessary pretence for the indulgence of his ambition. This was also in perfect accordance with the spirit of the age, which yielded, in such a pusillanimous manner, to the assumptions of the popes. They had succeeded so well in their ambitious views of authority, that they confined the election to the papacy, to the conclave of cardinals alone; they usurped the privilege of nominating and investing sovereigns with their dignity, even claiming the power of erecting new kingdoms and disposing of territories, thereby imperiously dictating to kings and nations in their secular concerns. Thus we have seen the pontiff decide in favour of the claims of William the Norman, and denounce spiritual vengeance against those who should dispute or resist them. Stephen, although an ungrateful usurper, obtained a ratification of his power from the same quarter, a proof, as is justly observed by our elegant historian, that the sentiment of religion corrupted into



superstition, has often very little efficacy in fortifying the duties of civil society.

To this power Henry the Second determined to resort, and thus, with a confined and selfish policy, unworthy his character, gave a sanction to claims dangerous to all sovereigns, and this, for what might almost be termed an imaginary advantage, and certainly to aid a design contrary to the principles of strict justice, however he might seek to gloss it over by pretending an anxious desire to extend the church of God on earth.

In the important negociation of obtaining the sanction of a papal decree for his meditated invasion of a people who had never given any reason of complaint to neighbouring states, Henry employed John Salisbury, his chaplain, upon whose zeal and diligence he had the greatest dependence; nor did Salisbury disappoint his expectation; for, aware that his success would equally recommend him to his royal and spiritual masters, he left no energy of his sagacious mind unemployed to aid the design. He represented to Adrian the Fourth, who then filled the papal chair, that the inhabitants of Ireland were sunk into the most wretched state of corruption, moral and religious; and that his royal master ever zealous for the furtherance of piety and the honour of God, had conceived the laudable and pious design of ameliorating the abject condition of an unhappy country, situated so near to his own kingdom, and was anxious to devote himself and all his power to the meritorious service. With this view, he implored the benediction of the holy father, and requested his permission and authority to enter Ireland, to reduce the disobedient, to reclaim the corrupt, to eradicate sin and wickedness, to instruct the ignorant, and to disseminate the blessed influence of the gospel, in its purity and perfection, promising, at

the same time, to pay a yearly tribute to St. Peter from the land thus to be reduced to his obedience and that of the holy see. Can we have a stronger instance than the above of the tendency of avarice and ambition, to cloud the judgment and to deprave the nobility of the soul? "Habituated, as we may be," says an elegant historian, "to the depravity of mankind, we cannot seriously reflect upon the profane hypocrisy of this transaction, without the utmost horror." In the blindness of his ambition, little did the ardent Henry foresee the perplexities he was to experience from the power he thus injudiciously aided to aggrandize, or the weight of the oppression it was to place upon him. Adrian secretly exulting in an application so favourable to the enormous claims of the Romish see, which so unequivocally recognized his supreme authority; and, moreover, as an Englishman, well pleased to gratify his royal countryman, a prince of exalted character and abilities, easily entered into the political views, and admitted the persuasive arguments of the negociator. And this he was more particularly induced to, by the consideration of the imperfect conversion of the Irish, which he inferred from their following the doctrines of their first teachers, never having acknowledged any subjection to the see of Rome, or at least, had not been disposed to acknowledge its supremacy till long after other countries had done so. All ecclesiastical authority having been, till within about four years previous to Henry's accession to the throne of England, exercised by her own prelates, nor had the ceremonies and discipline of the Irish church, points considered of the greatest moment in that age of externals, been conformable to those of Rome. At that period, however, the pontificate, by the indefatigable and interested zeal of its

numerous and ever active emissaries, had at length extended its fearful influence even to an island so remote, and alarmed the Irish clergy with hints of the irregularity of their ecclesiastical constitution, persuading them to submit to a reform, to be modelled and dictated by Rome. Cardinal Papanon was accordingly, in the year 1152, admitted into Ireland with a legantine commission. Three thousand ecclesiastics assembled by his direction in the town of Drogheda; four palls were solemnly received from the pope by the prelates of Armagh, Dublin, Cashel, and Tuam. The celebration of Easter was adjusted according to the Romish decisions; and for the further reformation of the church, the celibacy of the clergy was enforced, and their privileges and properties secured by various canons.\* Thus, although a passion for intellectual improvement was very strong in this century, and the human mind by exercise recovered a large portion of its lost tone and vigour, yet it did not enable the people to see the folly of enslaving themselves to the popedom, for subtilty of mind, rather than depth of research and close thinking, marked the learning that prevailed; although the voice of natural conscience and the dictates of common sense guided not a few, who felt the temporal oppression of ecclesiastic tyranny, and yet with strange inconsistency, aided

\* The dispute respecting Easter, was not respecting the *rite itself*, but the particular time when the festival was to be kept. The Asiatic churches celebrated their Easter upon the same days the Jews observed their passover, viz. the 14th day of their first month, chiefly answering to our March, and this they did upon what day of the week soever it fell, and from

thence they were styled Quarto Decimans; keeping Easter upon the 14th day after the appearance of the moon. The other churches, especially those of the west, kept Easter upon the Lord's day following the Jewish passover. These latter pleaded apostolical tradition, the Asiatics the practice of the apostles themselves.

the church of Rome in its aspirations, and were borne forward by the superstitious torrent of the times.

“The celibacy of the clergy,” says Hume, “was a great object in the politics of the Roman pontiffs, and it cost them infinitely more pains to establish it, than the propagation of any speculative absurdity which they had ever attempted to introduce.” It proves, therefore, the influence obtained among the Irish clergy, and that it was agitated and enforced in the numerous assembly called by Cardinal Papanon. A friendly, or perhaps, we should more properly say, a filial correspondence was now opened by Ireland with the Romish church, and her supremacy formally acknowledged. It remained, therefore, only for the pope to improve these auspicious openings, to which nothing could more greatly conduce than the application made to him by the agent of Henry, which at once enabled him to extend his new dominion in Ireland, and also to conciliate the friendship of a great monarch. A bull was accordingly framed without delay, altogether conformable to the wishes and purposes of Henry. We here give it at large as a fair specimen of the arrogant hypocrisy and plausibility of papal usurpation and pretension.

“Adrian, bishop, servant of the servants of God, to his dearest son in Christ, the illustrious king of England, greeting and apostolic benediction. Full laudably and profitably hath your magnificence conceived the design of propagating your glorious renown on earth, and completing your reward of eternal happiness in heaven, while, as a catholic prince, you are intent on enlarging the borders of the church, teaching the truth of the Christian faith to the ignorant and rude, exterminating the roots of vice from the field of the Lord, and for the more convenient execution of

this purpose requiring the counsel and favour of the apostolic see. In which, the maturer your deliberation and the greater the discretion of your procedure, by so much the happier, we trust, will be your progress, with the assistance of the Lord, as all things are used to come to a prosperous end and issue which take their beginning from the ardour of faith and the love of religion. There is, indeed, no doubt but that Ireland, and all the islands on which Christ the sun of righteousness hath shone, and which have received the doctrines of the Christian faith, do belong to the jurisdiction of St. Peter and of the holy Roman church, as your excellency also doth acknowledge. And, therefore, we are the more solicitous to propagate the righteous plantation of faith in this island, and the branch acceptable to God, as we have the secret conviction of conscience that this is more especially our bounden duty.

“ You then, most dear son in Christ, have signified to us your desire to enter into the island of Ireland, in order to reduce the people to obedience unto laws, and to extirpate the plants of vice; and that you are willing to pay from each house a yearly pension of one penny to Saint Peter, and that you will preserve the rights of the churches of this land whole and inviolate. We, therefore, with that grace and acceptance suited to your pious and laudable design, and favourably assenting to your petition, do hold it good and acceptable, that, for the extending the borders of the church, restraining the progress of vice, for the correction of errors, the planting of manners, and the increase of religion, you enter this island, and execute therein whatever shall pertain to the honour of God, and the welfare of the land; and that the people of this land receive you honourably, and reverence you



as their lord; the rights of the churches still remaining sacred and inviolate, and saving to St. Peter the annual pension of one penny from every house.

“If then you be resolved to carry the design you have conceived into effectual execution, study to form this nation to virtuous manners, and labour by yourself, and others whom you shall judge meet for this work, in faith, word, and life, that the church may be there adorned, that the religion of the Christian faith may be planted and grow up, and that all things pertaining to the honour of God and the salvation of souls, be so ordered, that you may be entitled to the fullness of eternal reward from God, and obtain a glorious renown on earth throughout all ages.”

The Bull, thus artfully framed, was presented to king Henry, who, however his high spirit might revolt from its assumptions, determined to arm himself with the authority, although being engaged on the continent at the time he received it, he could not immediately put his design in execution. There is ground, however, to believe that the Irish ecclesiastics were very soon informed of the existence of a document, which, virtually at least, charged them with corruption and barbarism; for, from the date of Adrian's Bull, the annalists mention several synods, wherein regulations were repeated and enforced, as it were, in solicitude to remove the imputations against their church; in their simplicity not reflecting that such imputations were necessary to the purposes of the Holy See.

The annalists state, that they made the most salutary ordinances, not only for the preservation of clerical discipline, but also for the reformation of manners, and carefully providing for the edu-

cation of their clergy. Armagh was then their most reputed seat of learning; and, by a solemn ordinance it was provided, that no one should be allowed to profess or teach theology, in any of their churches, who had not been educated in this seminary.

But whether their zeal and solicitude were merely accidental, arising from the general impulse the minds of men, had about that period received, or purposely intended to demonstrate that ecclesiastical reformation needed not the interference of foreign aid; the ambitious conspiracy, as it may be termed, between the Pope and Henry, was sufficiently alarming; and, had any political union existed in Ireland, would have roused its inhabitants to have asserted their independence, and armed them with vigour to resist its invasion. The Irish had ample time to have prepared themselves for this resistance, for a succession of obstacles, arising from various agitating causes, both on the continent and in his English dominions, obliged Henry to suspend his design against Ireland. It in fact seemed nearly to have passed into oblivion, when the domestic factions in Ireland itself revived it, and internal dissensions opened a way for the English arms and power to penetrate into that country. It will be necessary to take a cursory view of the civil state of Ireland at this period, in order to illustrate the ecclesiastical. Besides numerous small tribes, there were five principal sovereignties existing in the island, viz. Munster, Leinster, Meath, Ulster, and Connaught; and as it had been usual for the one or the other of these to take the lead in their wars, there was commonly some prince who seemed for a time to act as monarch of Ireland. Roderick O'Connor, king of Connaught, was, in the age of Henry II. advanced to this dignity; but his

government, feebly administered, was ill obeyed even in his own territory, and was quite inadequate to unite the people in general in any measures, either for the establishment of political order, or for defence against foreign invasion.

The province of Leinster was divided into several inferior principalities, governed generally by their own chieftains, but gave the title of royalty to Dermod Mac Murchad, a prince, who, even in an age and country of rudeness appears, from the accounts of his countrymen, to have been distinguished for his vices and his fierce and oppressive spirit. Endowed by nature, however, with a commanding stature and great physical strength, combined with that boisterous valour which commands the popular wonder and admiration, he possessed great influence over the inferior orders of his countrymen, whom, as the useful instruments of his ambition, he was careful to protect and favour. His donations and endowments of religious houses, probably arising from the same interested policy, recommended him to the clergy; but his tributary chieftains felt his unmitigated pride and tyranny. We must refer our readers to other histories for a detail of the series of aggressions which at length urged the enemies of Dermod to invade his province with irresistible force, to depose him, as utterly unworthy of his high station, and to compel him to give sureties for his submission and fidelity to the monarch whom he had injured. As is commonly the case with those who have abused their power, he experienced the desertion of his tributaries on his change of fortune, they even united with his enemies. His submission was as abject, and his flattery as servile, as his pride had been lofty and his arrogance inordinate. Defeated, degraded, raging with malignant resentment,

he desperately resolved to quit the kingdom, and seek in foreign countries the means of regaining his state and gratifying his revenge. He chose England as his immediate place of refuge from his powerful foes, and, with only sixty followers, hastily embarked for the port of Bristol.

In England, the odious traits of his character were unknown, and with that generous credulity which believes well of individuals till proved to be criminal, so peculiarly characterizing Britons, he was considered to be an injured prince, deserted by his turbulent and rebellious vassals, and forced from his rightful dominions by base usurpation and iniquitous violence. He was accordingly, under these favourable impressions, received with every mark of respect and pity, especially by the clergy, who entertained the friend and benefactor of their order, in the monastery of St. Augustine, with the utmost hospitality.\* Dermod learned from them that Henry, whom he could not but think his sole resource, was engaged in Aquitaine; thither he proceeded without

\* Augustines, an order so called from Augustine, whose rule they observe: they are popularly styled Austin Friars; were originally hermits. Alexander the Fourth first congregated them into one body, under their general Lanfranc, in 1256. Soon after their institution, this order was introduced into England, where they possessed about thirty-two houses at the time of the suppression. They are clothed in black, and constitute one of the five orders of mendicants. From these arose a reform, under the denomination of

barefoot Augustines, or Minorites—friars minor.

There are also canons regular of St. Augustine, who are clothed in white, except their cope, which is black: these are known at Paris under the appellation of the religious of Genevieve, that Abbey being the chief of the order. There are also nuns and canonesses, who observe the rules of Saint Augustine. In England, this order made great progress, in two hundred years. There were thirty kings and queens who preferred the religious habit to their crowns and founded stately monasteries.

delay, obtained an immediate interview, and, throwing himself at the feet of the monarch, implored his assistance and protection against his rebellious subjects; offering, upon his compliance, to acknowledge him as his liege lord, and to hold his dominions (which, by the interposition of so magnanimous a prince, he was confident of regaining) in vassalage to Henry and his heirs. To Henry, whose views had been so long directed towards Ireland, nothing could be more agreeable than this unexpected petition of Dermod, as it not only revived all the flattering ideas he had conceived respecting the island, but gave him such a just pretence for hostile measures; yet embarrassed at the time by the rebellions of his French subjects, and involved in a contest with the hierarchy, through the violence and obstinacy of the imperious Becket, he was too busily employed to enter personally into the proposals of Dermod. Still, determined to improve the incident as far as his situation permitted, he treated Dermod with the highest consideration, made him munificent presents, and accepted his tender of allegiance. He proceeded yet further, by giving the Irish prince a letter of credence, addressed to all his subjects, notifying his grace and protection granted to the king of Leinster, and assuring those who were disposed to aid him in the recovery of his rights, of free licence and royal favour. Dermod, supported by this authority, and elated by the courtly reception he had experienced from Henry, returned to Bristol with the most confident hopes of deriving important advantages from the credentials of the English monarch. At Bristol he published Henry's letter, and with the insinuating art, which he well knew how to assume, lavished his promises on all those who should assist the friend



and vassal of their sovereign. But all this had little effect, either his true character and the demerits of his cause had become known, or a disadvantageous idea had been formed of his country; for, even in those days of enterprize and adventure, no one was found to take arms in his cause. Dermot, thus disappointed in his sanguine expectations of British aid, began to despond, but determined to make a desperate effort, he addressed himself to Richard, earl of Chepstow or Strigul, a nobleman of the house of Clare, known by the titles both of Chepstow and Pembroke, and of considerable note and consequence in Wales. This nobleman, who had impaired his fortune by extravagance, was distinguished for military genius, possessed an elevated station and great alliances, was attended by a numerous train of vassals, over whom his courtesy and generosity had given him great influence; but he was estranged from royal favour, he lived retired and disengaged, a prey to that gloom which was the natural fruit of self-created distress, dissipated fortune, disappointed ambition, and dark prospects. Such a character offered every hope to Dermot that his overtures would be attended to, and he failed not to press the haughty Earl Richard with the most urgent solicitations. But these were received with coldness and reserve, which ill suited the ardent and violent Dermot. He had to excite to action a man, who, in any affair in which he was to take a leading part, considered every difficulty minutely, and brought forth every objection to bear with full force. Richard could not be persuaded to consider the general licence of Henry sufficient warrant to justify a measure of such consequence, as that of conducting his vassals into a foreign country. Dermot persisted in his arguments and redoubled his promises, and

at length the earl yielded to the tempting offers of receiving in marriage Eva, the daughter of Dermod, and of being declared the heir of the dominions he was solicited to assist in recovering. He covenanted to assist the crafty Dermod with a considerable force, which was appointed to be transported to Ireland the ensuing spring, provided he could obtain the king's particular licence and approbation. Elevated by the success thus obtained by his perseverance, Dermod retired to St. David's, in South Wales, in order to pass privately over to Ireland, to collect his few adherents, and to prepare for the reception of his ally. The bishop of St. David's received the fugitive with undissembled kindness, and exerted himself to obtain friends to a prince, whose munificence to the clergy had made him every where a favourite of the order, notwithstanding the crimes that disgraced him. Through the intervention and persuasions of the prelate, Robert Fitzstephens, constable of Abertivi, and Maurice Fitzgerald were engaged in the cause, and with some other adventurous knights of Wales, promised to take a part in the Irish expedition. Dermod, promising on his part to cede to the principal leaders, Fitzstephens and Fitzgerald, the entire dominion of the town of Wexford, with a large adjoining territory, as soon as he should be reinstated in his rights.

Dermod, being now assured of succour, returned privately to his own state, and sheltering in the monastery of Fernes, which he had founded, he prepared every thing for his British allies.

We have thus given a rapid sketch of the original scheme of an invasion, which in the event, was fraught with so many important consequences, connected with the immediate plan of

our work. We shall follow the historian, from whom we have drawn the account, in his interesting detail of the progress of the principal agent.\* And it is worthy of remark, that an important scheme, which we have seen receiving the sanction of the Holy See, was effected by a discomfited fugitive and a few adventurous spirits, whom pursuit of fortune and youthful valour led into Ireland, in hopes of advantageous settlements. Previous to his departure, Dermot had paid his vows in the church of St. David's, and upon his arrival at Fernes, he took care to magnify to the clergy in particular, the gracious reception he had received from Henry, and the disposition of the English in his favour.

By this means he well knew he should best ensure the co-operation he required; and, as the secret of his return could not be long concealed, he assumed the air of the utmost confidence. Yet was he secretly distracted and terrified; tormented by delay, and dreading disappointment, he dispatched a faithful vassal into England, to hasten the promised succours, and to solicit others, with unbounded promises of rich settlements and large rewards to all adventurers. While thus seeking foreign aid, he had recourse to all those superstitions which the pomp of gaudy worship led men to practise, as propitious to their worldly views; for, in vain ceremonies, bodily austerities and exercises, and especially in a blind veneration for their spiritual guides, mankind seemed to place the whole of religion. Relics were regarded more than redeeming merit, and prayers to saints deemed more acceptable to God, than those offered through the Saviour.

\* From this historian (Leland) we have so largely extracted, that, not to acknowledge our obligations would justly render our literary integrity to be doubted.

This was a religion which well suited such characters as Dermod, and was also abundantly calculated to multiply them. The troops of Fitzstephens were first ready, and, though a small body, being brave men, well acquainted with discipline, and completely armed, they on disembarking in Ireland, struck terror into the inhabitants, as menacing them with some fearful revolution. They were withstood, however, with the spirit of undisciplined and undirected valour, and as numbers on each side were nearly equal, the Irish courage and conduct was brought to severe trial. Fitzstephens, in the first instance attempted the siege of Wexford; it made an obstinate defence, and obliged him to retire. But the spirit of Fitzstephens was not to be subdued by one repulse; he drew off his men to the shore, set fire to his transports, and the following day, having first ordered divine service to be performed in his camp, he disposed his forces with greater care, and again led them to the assault, animated by devotion, impatient of their late disgrace, and convinced of the necessity of conquering.

The garrison were not unobservant of their motions, and accustomed to decide their contests by one vigorous effort, they were astonished at the persevering resolution of their assailants. The clergy in particular were terrified, and made the most pathetic remonstrances against an opposition which must prove fatal to all within the walls. It was at length agreed to treat with the besiegers, and a deputation of the inhabitants, headed by two bishops, were sent to settle terms of capitulation. The insolence of Dermod protracted this treaty for three days, when the authority of his prelates, and the advice of his foreign allies at length prevailed. He accepted the submission of his terrified subjects, and en-

tered Wexford in triumph. Thus, although the religion of the age was debased by superstition, the influence of the clergy was very frequently of great service in checking the excesses and calming the passions of men. It not only united an immense number of men in one body, possessing a great sway over the community, but also kept that community entire, shaken as it was by the factious and independent power of proud and arrogant chieftains. And what was also of infinite importance in a turbulent and unquiet age, it gave a mighty authority to men, who tempered by their mediation, (as in the instance which has drawn forth our remarks), the general disposition towards violence and hostility, and, who from their profession still maintained, even amidst the shock of arms, those secret links without which the chain of society would be utterly deranged and destroyed.

After a few days residence at Wexford, Dermot led the British forces to his previous sanctuary at Fernes, where three weeks were passed in refreshing the soldiers, feasting their commanders, and concerting future operations. That the hospitality they enjoyed in the abbey of Fernes was of no mean description, may be inferred from the declaration of Bernard, in what he terms his apology.

In painting, the pride and vanity of the abbots, their superfluity and magnificence in dress, furniture, equipage and buildings, he observes they looked more like governors of provinces than the spiritual fathers of holy and humble communities, whose original profession it was to be dead and crucified to the interests and pleasures, the pomps and vanities of the present world.

With a pious concern he adds, "that he knew several abbots, each of whom had above sixty horses in his stables, and such a prodigious va-



riety of wines in his cellars, that it was scarcely possible to taste the half of them in a single entertainment."\*

By the accession of the garrison, the army of Dermot was augmented to three thousand men, and a series of engagements ensued, ultimately terminating in the defeat of Roderick, the chief

\* The monks at St. Swithin's, at Winchester, made a formal complaint to Henry II. against their abbot, for taking away three of the thirteen dishes they used to have every day at dinner. The monks at Canterbury were still more luxurious, they had seventeen dishes every day, besides a desert, and these dishes were dressed with spiceries and sauces, which excited the appetite as well as pleased the taste. As an instance of the splendour and hospitality of the monasteries, we may cite the celebrated abbey of Cluny, composed of benedictines, founded by William, duke of Berry and Aquitaine, in the year 910. This abbey was anciently so very spacious and magnificent, that in 1254, after holding the first council at Lyons, pope Innocent IV. went to Cluny, accompanied by the two patriarchs of Antioch and Constantinople, twelve cardinals, three archbishops, fifteen bishops, and a great number of abbots, who were all entertained without any of the monks being put out of their place, or inconvenienced, though Saint Louis, queen Blanche his mother, the duke of Artois his

brother, and his sister, with the emperor of Constantinople, the sons of the kings of Arragon and Castile, the duke of Burgundy, six counts, and a great number of lords, with all their retinues, were there at the same time. Cluny at its first creation was put under the protection of the apostolic see, with express prohibition to all secular and ecclesiastic powers to disturb the monks in the possessions of their effects, or the election of their abbot. By this they assumed to be exempted from the jurisdiction of bishops, which at length gave the hint to other abbeyes to insist on the same. The Cluniac fraternity was the first congregation of various monasteries, united under one chief, so as only to constitute one body, or as it is termed one order.

This order was introduced into England by William, earl of Warrenne, son in law to William the Conqueror, who built a house for them at Lewes, in Sussex, about 1077. There were twenty-seven priories and cells of this order in England, which were governed by foreigners, afterwards made denizens.

monarch of the island, and the submission of the prince of Ossory, against whom revenge as well as policy had instigated the imperious Dermot: but treachery as well as arms produced the result, and Dermot, not content with being reinstated in his kingdom of Leinster, with that lofty pretension usual in tyrannical tempers, when inflated with success, projected the dethroning of the defeated Roderick, and aspired to sole dominion.

It would lead us too far in digression, to detail the plans and operations of Dermot in the prosecution of these lofty views, but it is necessary to say, that he dispatched a messenger to earl Richard, challenging the performance of his promise, and displaying the great and certain advantages which might at such a juncture be obtained by a reinforcement of troops; but Richard, not satisfied with the general licence of Henry to all his subjects, and perhaps with natural sagacity, foreseeing the important result, determined to apply to his monarch then in Normandy.\*

Henry, who by no means desired that his subjects should make too considerable a progress in Ireland without his aid, and interposition, was perplexed how to act, as he could not put a negative upon the present application of earl Richard, without disavowing his general licence. He therefore evaded direct reply, and under various pretences deferred an explicit answer to his petition. Richard, flattered by the promises of Dermot, of wealth and honour, awaiting the fulfilment of his engagements, stung with the neglect of his sovereign, and op-

\* Richard seems never to have departed from his caution, for he sent with Fitzstephens his uncle Henry of Mountmorris, to survey the

country and report its state and circumstances, so as to direct him in his intended enterprize. Henry had no military train.

pressed with his necessities, renewed his application importunately, till the fiery Henry passionately commanded him to begone, with some equivocal expressions which might be construed into assent. Richard determined, so to interpret them, and indignant at the violence of his liege lord, departed from his presence, and prepared for his expedition with all imaginable vigour.

After many conflicts and enormities committed by all parties, the cause of Dermot and his auxiliaries prevailed. "Every day," says Leland, "were now spread through the island fearful accounts of the power, progress, and devastations of these foreigners, the depopulation of whole districts, the miseries of the inhabitants, ravages, massacres, and all the affecting incidents of war, terrible in themselves, and magnified by report. The people were in dismay, their monarch had shrunk from the danger; they who were most exposed or threatened, directed their thoughts to heaven, and besought the clergy to devise some means for deprecating the divine wrath which had thus visited the nation. The clergy, scarcely more enlightened than their ignorant flock, had formed some crude notions of the miraculous interpositions of providence, and concluded that the national calamities must be the consequence of such interposition, and ordained as a punishment of some particular offence. The laity were corrupt and vicious: the clergy shared too deeply in the depravity of the times. Yet utterly at a loss to determine *what* this particular offence might be, which had brought down such a heavy judgment upon their land, they convened a formal synod at Armagh, to inquire into the interesting point, as if they were to be favoured with some extraordinary communications of the divine will.

After a long and solemn debate, it was suggested, and unanimously agreed by the synod, that the real cause of the divine displeasure, which Ireland now experienced, could be no other than their unchristian practice of purchasing and selling Englishmen as slaves, an iniquity which the Almighty now seemed to punish by English invaders, who threatened to reduce all Ireland to slavery. By the spiritual authority of the synod it was ordained, that every English bondsman should be emancipated. This solemn determination served to raise the people from their dejection, as they, upon better ground than usual in such cases, conceived they had now discovered and removed the latent cause of the calamity. Clouded by superstition as was the subject of debate in this spiritual synod, the result indicated a faint notion of union between Christian doctrine and practice : it is pleasing to trace this in any manner during the darkness of the period. It is true the literary improvements of the times rendered the intellectual faculties more acute, but while scripture was too generally neglected and the salutary doctrines of the gospel were in a manner buried in darkness, learning could produce few benign effects on the manners of mankind. Of course we speak generally, for doubtless there were many individual instances, both among the laity and the recluses, who studied, and who practised something nobler and better than superstition, though the glare of fictitious holiness which invested the church prevented them from beholding their object clearly and perspicuously.

But to return to the state of the unfortunate Irish ; their affairs did subsequent to this period assume a more favourable aspect. Dermot, insolently venturing to pursue his advantages, was defeated, and obliged to a precipitate retreat, and

another unlooked for cause of alleviation occurred to relieve the oppressed people.

Henry, jealous of the progress made by subjects, in a design which he appears personally desirous to effect, sent peremptory orders to withdraw the English, and made preparations for an attack in person. He was doubtless jealous of the success, and particularly of the increasing power of earl Richard, who by his alliances in England, his acquisitions, and marriage with Eva, he was aware might be enabled to defy his authority, and soon obtain an independent sovereignty of formidable extent, and which with sagacity he foresaw might become exceedingly injurious to his tranquillity and political interests. He therefore issued his royal edict, strictly prohibiting any English vessel from crossing to Ireland with arms, men, or provisions, and commanding all his subjects resident in Ireland, and of every order and degree, to return to their native country before the ensuing feast of Easter, on pain of forfeiting their lands, and being declared traitors. This measure was a cruel blow to the prosperous adventurers. Strongbow, for such was the familiar title of earl Richard, with characteristic calmness, maturely revolved the danger, and the means to avert it. Well acquainted with the character of Henry, and as well aware of the secret motives of his present resentment, he determined to send his faithful adherent Raymond de Gross with letters to the monarch then resident in Aquitain; these letters contained the most humble submissions from himself and fellow adventurers, declaring that they were fighting only for their sovereign, to reduce the stubborn spirits of the Irish to his obedience, whatever they had gained was for him, and should remain at his disposal, as the natural and rightful lord of the present possessors, whose lives



and fortunes were devoted to him, and who were still ready to obey his royal mandate of quitting their acquisitions, should it be again required, or deemed necessary to the interests of the crown. Raymond proceeded to the execution of his commission, he was received by Henry with the severe dignity of an offended monarch, not displeased at his representations, yet not disposed to give an explicit, much less a favourable answer. From day to day Raymond attended on the court, while his spirits were harassed at the suspense, and by the consciousness that the affairs of his associates became every day more distressing and alarming. At this critical juncture intelligence was received of the death of Becket. Henry was thrown into the utmost consternation at that fatal catastrophe, and had neither leisure nor inclination to attend to the less interesting affairs of Ireland. While in this state of expectation and anxiety, of difficulty and apprehension, the adventurers were alarmed by another incident, deeply involving the interests of their situation, namely, the death of their ally, the haughty and aspiring Dermot.

The Irish annalists in relating this event, show their abhorrence of the man, who, as they emphatically express it, “first shook the foundations of his country.” They represent his death as the miraculous effect of divine wrath, poured upon his guilty head *at the intercession of every Irish saint*. His disease they say was strange and tremendous, and rendered him an odious and offensive spectacle of misery; they add, that he was deserted in extremity by every friend, and expired without any spiritual comforts, in a state of frightful impenitence.

The decease of Dermot was followed by an almost total defection of the Irish from earl Strongbow and his associates, one or two petty chiefs

were the only allies who now adhered to them in their distress when abandoned by their king, deprived of supplies, and threatened by the storm collecting around them. The period which Henry had assigned for their return was expired, Raymond could obtain no explicit answer, and on his return found earl Richard in the utmost dejection, cut off from all supplies, and already considerably straitened to maintain his army. The Irish chieftains were no strangers to his distress.

Laurence, archbishop of Dublin, whose sanctity gave weight to his representations, flew with patriotic ardour from province to province, entreating, exhorting, and commanding the chiefs and the people to seize the present opportunity, to take arms against a common enemy now worn out by their distress, and ready to sink for ever under the first vigorous assault. This politic and indefatigable prelate, not satisfied with thus endeavouring to raise the spirit of indignation and valour in his countrymen alone, proceeded in conjunction with Roderick to dispatch emissaries to the king of the island of Man, and to other northern princes, entreating their assistance against enemies who would not confine their ambitious attempts to Ireland, but doubtless would extend their usurpations even to those quarters which seemed the most remote from danger. The affecting and passionate representations of Laurence prevailed, the islanders consented to assist their neighbours, and soon blocked up the harbour of Dublin, while the confederated Irish took their several stations, so as to surround the city, in which were earl Richard and his associates. Even Laurence himself appeared in arms, commanding his particular troop, an instance of martial spirit not unusual to the prelates of those feudal times, but far from being always brought into

action in a cause so honourable as that in which it was exerted by Laurence. But their injudicious mode of warfare made this zeal nugatory; yet, during two months, in which they invested the city, they reduced the earl to the greatest difficulties. Oppressed by these individual difficulties, and the intelligence of dangers which threatened to overwhelm his associates Fitzstephens and Fitzgerald, Strongbow determined to enter into treaty with the Irish monarch Roderick. The prelate of Dublin it was naturally supposed would willingly become the mediator, and to him the application was made. With the fairest expressions of his readiness and solicitude to prevent the effusion of Christian blood he attended, to receive the overtures of the distressed warriors. Strongbow proposed to acknowledge Roderick as his sovereign, to hold the province of Leinster from the Irish monarch, provided he raised the siege, and accepted him as his vassal.

Laurence engaged to bear this proposal to his sovereign, and soon returned with an answer. He entered the council, with the dignified composure of a man conscious he was addressing those who must accept his terms; and with a firm tone and aspect declared, that the only terms that his monarch was disposed to grant were, that Dublin, Waterford, and Wexford, with all the forts possessed by the Britons, should be immediately surrendered; and that the earl and all his forces should depart from Ireland by a day assigned, renouncing every claim. On these conditions they were to be spared; but the least reluctance or delay would determine the besiegers to storm the city. As the Britons might be considered absolutely in the power of the besiegers, these terms would appear neither severe nor insolent, but perfectly consistent with the spirit of the prelate, as

well as the judgment of an upright patriot. No revenge for past cruelties appears : they were assured of safety, allowed to depart unmolested, and required but to resign what they were supposed to have usurped and unwarrantably detained. But the justice of the terms appeared not to indigent and aspiring adventurers ; to them, the terms appeared insupportably mortifying : silence indicated the contending feelings of the chiefs, till one starting suddenly from his place, declared his resolution to die bravely, rather than to submit to the mercy of a barbarous enemy. The spark created a flame ; the spirit of desperate valour soon pervaded the council : all concurred in resting their fortune on one brave effort, which at the worst, would end in an honourable death, far more eligible than to perish with famine, or resign themselves to perhaps a perfidious enemy. In pursuance of this resolution, they assailed the quarter of the camp occupied by Roderick : such an assault, and at such a time, was utterly unexpected. The consequence was, the assailants found this quarter of their besiegers without discipline or order, careless and secure, and with little of military appearance. The assault was furious ; they bore down all before them, forced their way through the confused and dismayed crowds, and quickly spread consternation and blood through the whole camp. The Irish fled from the danger which the surprise had magnified ; and their monarch himself, who in perfect assurance and confidence had retired to a bath, escaped only by starting from his retirement half naked, and joining in the general route. The chieftains of the other stations heard the confusion, caught the panic, and while the victors continued the pursuit, broke up their camps precipitately. Thus did the Britons by a sudden ebullition of valourous

spirit, effect a revolution in their desperate situation ; not only dispersing their enemies, but gaining a sufficient store of provisions to maintain themselves for many months.

The dissensions and hostilities that ensued, were of course similar to those which had preceded this act of desperation : one only incident we shall relate, as marking the spirit of the times, and as involving an instance of sacerdotal depravity, too forcibly exemplifying the low state of morals among those whose influence was unbounded. Fitzstephens had defended himself bravely at Carig, having repeatedly foiled the attempts of the enemy. At length they had recourse to a stratagem to gain their revenge : a parley was desired ; it was granted ; and a party were admitted to confer with the brave Welchman. With the appearance of the utmost friendship, they assured him that earl Strongbow had suffered the punishment of his temerity ; that Roderick was in possession of Dublin, having put the Britons to the sword ; that he was now on his march to Wexford, to exterminate the remains of the adventurers, and particularly, breathing vengeance against Fitzstephens, who had first conducted them to Ireland ; that attached as they were to him above any of his associates, they announced this intelligence, and the danger that awaited him. To assist him was impossible, but to favour his escape was an office which his kindness justly merited. They earnestly requested him to commit himself to their protection, solemnly promising to convey him and his garrison into Wales, before the arrival of Roderick should frustrate their amicable intentions. The noble-minded Fitzstephens doubted and hesitated ; his own safety entered not into calculation, but that of his friends was of infinite importance to his generous spirit.



His enemies marked the internal conflict: to remove his suspicions, they summoned two reverend bishops in their robes of ceremony, bearing the cross, the host, and several relics. Laying their hands on these, they swore a solemn oath, in confirmation of all that they had asserted. Fitzstephens, effectually deceived by this solemnity, committed himself and his friends into the hands of his mortal enemies, who, instead of conducting him to the sea, loaded him with chains, disarmed his followers, practising every wanton cruelty upon them that insolent barbarity could devise.

In the midst of this triumph of hypocrisy, intelligence is received that the victorious Britons are on the march to rescue their companions, and must soon arrive. Alarmed at this, they set fire to the town of Wexford, and retire with Fitzstephens, and such other of their prisoners who had survived their cruelty, to an island in the middle of the harbour, called Holy island.

In an ensuing engagement, a monk named Nicholas, serving in the British army, decided the fortune of the day in its favour, by killing with an arrow, the Irish leader O'Rian.

The period was now approaching, when these competitions for power and barbarous violences were to terminate. Henry, recovered from his consternation at the death of Becket, and having succeeded, at least in suspending the indignation of the offended Papacy, resolved no longer to defer his Irish expedition. He summoned earl Richard to his presence at Newnham, near Gloucester; and expressed in strong terms his displeasure at his presumption and disobedience. His resentment, whether real or feigned, was however, soon allayed by the submissions of the cautious earl, who repeated his professions of allegiance, and yielded all his Irish acquisitions to the royal

disposal. Henry of Mountmorris attended with his nephew, and was his successful advocate with the high-spirited monarch. Strongbow, restored to favour, remained with his sovereign, in a royal progress he made on the borders of Wales, while the forces destined for the expedition, were assembling near Milford. Meantime, the Irish received the intelligence of the intended royal invasion in a state of helpless suspense, as if borne down and dispirited by their late contests. The fame of Henry's preparations do not appear to have produced any on their part, or to have effected any union among the chieftains. A sordid and selfish spirit seems to have pervaded them; and so little of loyalty, that they saw the power of their monarch on the point of dissolution, and saw it with apparent indifference. Some were even ready to meet the invader, and to submit before he had reached their shore. The men of Wexford in particular, who had possessed themselves of Fitzstephens in the perfidious way we have related, resolved to avert the probable consequences of their criminal conduct by the forwardness of their submissions. They sent deputies to Henry, entreating him to accept them as his vassals, ready to resign themselves, their lands, and possessions to his absolute disposal, and adding, that they had already endeavoured to prove their devotion, by seizing Fitzstephens as a traitor to his sovereign.

Henry received them with condescension, commended their zeal, and declared, he would soon enquire into, and redress the wrongs they had sustained. Thus he inspired them with favourable dispositions to his interests, and effectually rescued Fitzstephens from the immediate effects of their resentment and cruelty.

## CHAPTER V.

*Henry the Second invades Ireland—His assurances of protection—No resistance made—Strongbow does homage—Dermot M'Arthy, the first Monarch who submitted, and acknowledged the authority of Henry—Interview with the Archbishop of Cashel—Chiefs of Munster all graciously received, and sumptuously entertained—Fitzstephens liberated from his treacherous captors—Henry visits Dublin—The astonishment of the Irish at his splendid retinue—Henry receives the ready homage of the Chiefs—Treachery of O'Ruarc—Roderick's spirit aroused—He collects his forces, and determines to dispute the claims of Henry—His efforts vain—The Nobles attach themselves to Henry—Magnificent entertainment given by Henry—The Clergy favourable to his invasion—They swear fealty to him—He directs a Synod to be held at Cashel, to confer on the subjects recommended by the Pope—A rival Synod held in Connaught, by the authority of Roderick—Gelasius, Primate of Armagh—His simplicity and piety—Proceedings of Henry's Synod—Compliments to Henry—He convenes a Council at Lismore—The proceedings of it—The authority of the English Laws limited to a certain district, styled the Pale—Which was divided into Shires or Counties—A chief Governor appointed—His privileges and powers—Circumstances hasten the departure of Henry from Ireland—His jealousy of Strongbow, and measures to counteract his ambitious views—Mischievous consequences of his imperfect plans—He embarks for England—Proceeds to Normandy, and conciliates the Cardinals sent by the Pope on the affair of Becket—National failings of the Irish exemplified at this period—Tranquillity prevails some time—Nuptials of Strongbow's daughter at Fernes—Animosities arise—Domestic perplexities of Henry prevent his return to Ireland—He withdraws several of his garrisons from thence—Strongbow hastens to the aid of Henry in Normandy—The joy of the Irish at Henry's difficulties—Divisions and jealousies arise—Strongbow is sent to Ireland—Is accompanied by Raymond de Gros—Series of hostilities—Roderick attempts the recovery of his Throne, but not succeeding, sends Deputies to Henry with offers of submission—Treaty concluded—Jealousies of the English Lords counteract the beneficial consequences expected to flow from the treaty—Conduct of Raymond—National character injured by these*

*feuds—Religion of the period—Supreme power of the Papacy—Instance of the blind devotion paid to the Pope—Waldenses—Precedency of two Archbishops disputed—Knowledge is disseminated, and the Sciences studied—Encouraged by the European Monarchs—Learned Societies and Colleges established—As these increased, Episcopal and Monastic Schools declined—Corruption of the Monks—Complaints of the Irish Clergy of the depredations of the English—Causes and Consequences—Ordinance of Cardinal Vivian—Demoralised state of Ireland.*

## CENTURY THE TWELFTH.

As the expedition of Henry to Ireland may be regarded somewhat in the light of a crusade, or even a mission, if we advert to the sanction he sought and obtained, and as the circumstances we have detailed gave it too little of a military character to alter its ostensible nature, we may with propriety enter into the particulars which, although trivial in themselves, and merely entertaining, led to important national results both to the country and political interests of the invader, as well as the invaded.

Henry the Second, surnamed Fitz-Empress, having completed his preparations for his long-meditated Irish expedition, performed his solemn devotions in the church of St. David's, to implore the blessing of the Almighty upon an enterprize undertaken by the authority and in the cause of the church.

The solemnity being concluded, he embarked at Milford, attended by his reconciled noble, Earl Strongbow, William Fitz-Andelm, Humphrey de Bohun, Hugh de Lacy, Robert Fitz-Bernard, and other barons, four hundred knights, and about four thousand soldiers. His fleet, consisting of two hundred and forty ships, presented an awful and formidable object to those on whose coast they appeared. They entered the port of Water-

ford, and the forces were landed on the feast of St. Luke, in October 1172.

It was immediately published, that the design of the expedition was not to *conquer* but to *take possession* of a country granted by the pope, and to exercise a sovereignty which Henry affected to believe would be acknowledged and obeyed, without difficulty or reluctance. In fact, instead of resistance, acclamations of joy resounded on the arrival of the new sovereign; Earl Strongbow made a formal surrender of Waterford, and did homage to Henry for the principality of Leinster. The men of Wexford presented themselves with their prisoner, repeating their accusations, and imploring justice against their oppressor. Henry received them with affected commiseration, reproached Fitzstephens for his presumption, and remanded him to prison. The perfidious Irish exulted that they had so craftily eluded punishment, and involved their enemy in disgrace; and Fitzstephens, naturally believing his liberation was certain, was the less mortified at the result, as he well knew the price of his liberty, must be the relinquishment of his Irish acquisitions to the king.

Dermod M'Arthy, prince of Desmond, was the first chieftain who submitted and acknowledged the sovereignty of Henry, and that on the very day after his arrival, resigning his city of Cork, stipulating to pay tribute for the rest of his territory, which, on these conditions, he was to enjoy without further restraint.

At Cashel, Henry had an interview with the archbishop, who was the first Irish prelate who appeared before him. The monarch professed to him his gracious intentions to the country, and his zeal for the regulation of its church.

All the chiefs of Munster followed, each seem-



ing to vie with the other in the alacrity of submission. All were graciously received, assurances of favour and protection given, while they were entertained with magnificence, gratified with presents, and dismissed with deep impressions of the grandeur and condescension of this powerful monarch, who, indeed, historians agree, possessed the most estimable and amiable social qualities; his "conversation being affable and entertaining, his elocution easy, persuasive, and ever at command."

Henry after these short excursions returned to Wexford, where as it was no longer necessary to dissemble, his barons were permitted to plead for Fitzstephens, who was at their instance liberated, and surrendered Wexford and its territory to the king, doing homage for the rest of his acquisitions, which he was allowed to retain, from Henry and his heirs. Having provided for the security of Munster, and stationed several garrisons, Henry proceeded to Dublin, to take possession in due form. He led his troops through Ossory in slow and stately progress. The rude inhabitants were struck with the splendour and magnificence of the royal army, and the chiefs had every facility of repairing to his camp, and acknowledging his sovereignty, which they were perfectly disposed to do; for their indifference to Roderick, and their terror at the English arms, determined them, without delay, to make their peace with Henry.

The lords of Leinster, indeed, deemed the royal service more honourable than a subjection to Strongbow, against which their feelings revolted, for his severity had rendered him obnoxious to the Irish, since the first period of his landing. As Henry, therefore, proceeded towards Dublin, he had ample occupation in receiving the homage

of his newly acquired vassals, among whom was even the intimate associate of Roderick himself. O'Ruarc of Breffney, who thus abandoned his former friend and ally, and became the voluntary vassal of the new sovereign, leaving to his fate his native monarch, him who had defended his interests, revenged his personal injuries, and loaded him with benefits! With how many instances of a similar ungrateful defection does history abound! In a state of abandonment by friends, at least those apparently so, a man thrown upon his own internal resources, and resting on his own energies, frequently acts with a spirit and dignity, of which he before appeared destitute. So it was with Roderick, who although sensible of the danger of meeting an English army, determined not at once to resign his title to the monarchy of Ireland. He collected his provincial troops, and intrenching himself on the banks of the Shannon, seemed resolved that his own territory should not become a part of the dominions of Henry.

Henry deputed Hugh de Lacy and William Fitz Andelm, to confer with Roderick, and either persuade or force him to submission. But the attempt was unavailing.

The Irish chieftains who had submitted, attended at the court of Henry. Equally proud and inexperienced, they were highly flattered with those conciliating expressions of favour, which flow with such ease from the lips of sovereigns and their courtiers, when necessary to advance their projects of ambition.

It was the feast of Christmas, a season of great and general festivity, for which Henry prepared with such magnificence and liberality as his present situation permitted, and such as was perfectly astonishing to his Irish followers. Crowds from all quarters flocked to Dublin, in the eagerness of surprise and admiration. "As

the city (adds Leland, from whom we draw the account) afforded no building capable of receiving the royal train, and the numerous assembly of guests, a temporary structure was raised with hurdles, after the Irish fashion, in the south-eastern suburbs, of large dimensions, and richly ornamented; and here the vassal lords of Ireland were admitted freely, and feasted sumptuously. Piles of silver, costly meats, generous wines, dress, music, and attendants, all conspired to possess them with a vulgar admiration of the invader. Dazzled by his grandeur, and intoxicated with his condescension, they forgot the baseness of their submission, and fancied themselves exalted to a degree of consequence, by being allied to such magnificence and splendour.”\* We now proceed to relate what more immediately concerns the professed object of Henry’s invasion.

The clergy were, if possible, more ready and more abject in their submissions to the new monarch, than the lords and teparchs. This was naturally to be expected, for the Roman pontiffs, by the maxims of worldly wisdom which actuated them, had created great and continual contests and divisions in the church, which had obscured the lustre of religion, by a profane mixture of the inventions and superstitions of designing men,

\* At this feast, the Irish princes and chieftains were perfectly astonished at the profusion and variety of provisions which they beheld, and were, with difficulty, prevailed upon by Henry to eat the flesh of cranes, a kind of food to which they had not been accustomed. In the remaining notices of these times, we meet with the names of several dishes, as *dollegront*, *manpi-*

*gyrnum*, *karumpie*, &c. the composition of which is now unknown.

At these great feasts, besides the ordinary drinks, ale, cyder, and mead, there were great quantities of wines of various kinds. Some of these, as *ypoenas*, *pymment*, and *claret*, were compounded of wine, honey, and spices of different kinds, in different proportions.

who shielded themselves under papal protection, and, of course, lost no opportunity of augmenting its power, and conciliating its favour. Doubtless apprised long before of the sanction Henry had received from their spiritual head, the numerous body of the Irish ecclesiastics waited upon Henry soon after his arrival, received him as sovereign lord of Ireland, and swore fealty to him and his heirs. Henry received from each prelate a charter of their respective submissions, which he transmitted immediately to Rome.

This is the statement made by the English historians, but it has been deemed not altogether correct. It is asserted upon good authority, that Henry having, as we have seen, been acknowledged, without resistance, as sovereign of the greatest part of the island, remaining unmolested by those who had not formally submitted, and prevented by the season from commencing hostilities, affected to display his zeal and solicitude to fulfil the conditions of his grant from Adrian, by turning his attention to the state of the Irish church, and to a reformation of its supposed abuses. For this professed purpose he directed a synod to be summoned and assembled at Cashel, to inquire into the prevailing state of morals and religion.

Gelasius, however, primate of Armagh, a man highly revered by his countrymen, did not attend, pleading his age and infirmities. But it would appear he had other reasons for declining to sanction, by his presence, any decrees of the synod, called in the name of the king, for he held another synod, convened soon after in Connaught by the authority of Roderick, probably in opposition to that summoned by Henry. Gelasius, from the sanctity of his character, had considerable influence, which he directed to the laudable purposes of regulating the ecclesiastical affairs in the western and northern parts of the island, and

in a sedulous attention to his sacerdotal duties. The Irish writers record, that this venerable prelate, in every progress through the kingdom, was constantly attended by a white cow, a particular favourite, which supplied him with milk, the chief sustenance of the pious and abstemious primate. The prelates of Ulster followed the example of their metropolitan: and although the bishop of Tuam, and Laurence of Dublin, who had so zealously contended against the English, obeyed the summons of Henry, candour may suppose they deemed their presence necessary to preserve the honour of their church from injurious representation, and by showing a readiness to correct what might be found wrong, to deprive the invader of the grand plea for extending his hostilities.

Christian, bishop of Lismore, presided as the pope's legate at the assembly. In this character, about twenty years antecedent, he had presided in the grand assembly of kings, prelates, and nobility, convened by order of Cardinal Papanon.

The Abbot of Buldwais, the archdeacon of Landaff, and some other of the English clergy, attended on the part of Henry, to forward the purposes of their royal master, and to observe the conduct of the Irish prelates. The synod was professed to be summoned, in direct obedience to the sovereign pontiff, in order to consult upon and devise remedies for ignorance and wickedness, to eradicate every fibre of depravity and iniquity, and to restore the purity of their ecclesiastical constitution, now contaminated and disgraced. Having thus boldly assumed that all these evils existed, the ordinances which were to answer the important purposes of correcting and removing them, we find to be, forbidding marriages within the prohibited degrees of consanguinity, directing that baptism should be publicly administered, youth instructed, tythes regularly paid, the lands of the



clergy exempted from secular exactions,\* and that all true sons of the church should have power by will to distribute their effects in due proportion between their wives and children, and be decently interred in hallowed ground. This plan of reformation was unquestionably good and judicious, but it is obvious that it required not the interposition of the pope, nor obliged him in order to effect it, to transfer the sovereignty of Ireland to a foreign prince at the hazard of filling the island with contention and bloodshed. Nor did it demand the presence of the English monarch and a royal army to enforce ordinances which had been repeatedly enacted, and which the progress of knowledge could alone render effective. The imposing scene was closed by a declaration highly flattering to Henry, expressed in terms of abject servility, which, however they might please his vanity, his judgment must have rejected with disdain. It directs that the divine service of the church of Ireland shall in future be in all things conformable to that of the church of England. "For it is very meet and very just, that as Ireland hath by providence received a lord and king

\* This ordinance was as follows; "All the ecclesiastical lands and possessions shall be entirely free from every exaction of secular men. And especially no petty kings or lords, or any potentates of Ireland, nor their children or families shall, for the future, exact maintenance or entertainment, according to custom, in the ecclesiastical territories, or presume to extort them by violence. And that detestable entertainment which is four times a year required by neigh-

bouring lords shall not, for the future, be demanded from the ecclesiastical towns. And moreover, in all cases of homicide committed by the laity, as often as they shall compound for the same with their adversaries, the clergy, who are their relations, shall pay nothing on this account; but as they had no part in the perpetration of the homicide, so shall they be free from contributing to the fine." In exempting the clergy, however, the laws were not abrogated, as will appear.

from England, so she may receive from the same a better form of living. For to his royal grandeur are both the church and realm of Ireland indebted for whatever they have hitherto obtained, either of the benefits of peace or the increase of religion. Since before his coming into Ireland, evils of various kinds had, from old times, gradually overspread the nation, which by his power and goodness are now abolished."

The reverend adulators seem to imply that Henry had been endued with a power of working miracles! Other acts of government exercised by Henry in Ireland, must be adverted to, as assisting to effect the grand object of reformation and civilization. He convened a council at Lismore, in which the laws of England were accepted and established by the sanction of a solemn oath. By this we are not to understand that the Irish abolished their own laws, and submitted entirely to the English. In fact, the old Irish polity was not only still to subsist, but was warranted, secured, and regulated by compact between Henry and his new subjects. They stipulated to become his tributaries and vassals; he was to protect them in the administration of their governments according to their own model. "They governed their people," saith Sir John Davies, "by the Brehon law, they made their own magistrates and officers, they pardoned and punished all malefactors within their several countries, they made warre and peace one with another, without controulment, and this they did not only during the raigne of Henry the Second, but afterwards in all times, even untill the raigne of Queen Elizabeth."\*

\* Brehon laws denote the general maxims or rules of law observed by the Brehons, and

having force throughout the provinces of Ireland. By the statute of Kilkenny, made

The concessions of the Irish lords were uniformly made to Henry and his heirs ; and thus the kings of England were for ever to become paramount lords of the territories which these lords retained, and inheritors of those they resigned, which were inseparable from the crown annexed to the kingdom, and appendent on its dignity. Henry having acquired a considerable territory, and a number of subjects in the island, granted to them the English laws as stated, not, however, as a model by which they might govern themselves, and frame their own polity, but as they resigned their Irish acquisitions, and renewed their allegiance, he, on his part, consented and declared they should still be considered as the subjects of his realm, and still retain the advantages of that constitution, which as subjects they formerly enjoyed, and which he graciously declared, that they should retain, in the same capacity, without any diminution of their rights or any change in their relation to the king. "Hence," adds Leland, "the necessity of a new oath, whereby they were bound in due allegiance to Henry and his heirs, and to a faithful observance of the laws of his realm in their new settlements, thus made a part and member of this realm, inseparably connected and intimately consolidated with it." Thus, notwithstanding the nominal conquest of Ireland, the authority of the English was limited to a certain district, which received the designation of the *pale*, comprising Dublin, Kildare, Meath, with the cities of Waterford, Cork,

under Edward the Third, it is enacted that no English subject shall submit to a trial by the Brehon law on the penalty of high treason. Notwithstanding which, many were

still under the necessity of being concluded by the Irish laws and customs, till the whole kingdom was settled on an English basis by James the First.

and Limerick, and the lands in their immediate vicinity. The benefit of these laws was granted and considered as an act of special grace, and not in general to all those who submitted, much less obtruded on any as an evidence of conquest.

For the better execution of these laws, Henry made a division of the districts subject to him into shires and counties. Sheriffs were appointed, itinerant judges, and other ministers of justice, officers of state, and every appendage of English government and English law. To complete the system, a chief governor or representative of the king was appointed to exercise the royal authority in the king's absence, and it was enacted in order to preserve the peace of the country, that should this chief governor die, the chancellor and other officers of state should be empowered with the consent of the nobles, to elect a successor, who was to exercise the full power and authority of this office until the royal pleasure could be known. Henry had ample leisure to form his Irish government, for the winter was remarkably severe and tempestuous, totally preventing any hostile attempts against those who had not submitted to his authority. The same cause had precluded all possibility of intelligence either from England or Normandy, till at length on his arrival at Wexford, after three months residence at Dublin, he was met by couriers, who brought the intelligence that Cardinals Albert and Theodine, delegated by the pope, had arrived in Normandy, to make inquiry respecting the death of Becket; that having remained there waiting Henry's return, till their patience was exhausted, they now peremptorily summoned him to appear without delay, if he would avert the sentence of excommunication, and preserve his dominions from a general interdict.

A circumstance so important to his interests and safety, obliged Henry to make hasty preparations for his departure. His ambition was mortified in being thus compelled to quit a country which afforded every prospect of advantage, but of which a very considerable part he had not even visited, still less reduced. But papal denunciations were of too much consequence to be disregarded. He was sensible he left an imperfect conquest, and his jealousy suggested that Strongbow waited only his absence to improve the advantages he had acquired, and assume the sovereignty.

In this perplexing situation, he took every means to conciliate the other English adventurers, and executed an important grant to Hugh de Lacy of all the territory of Meath, constituting him also his governor of Dublin, with a guard of twenty knights. Fitzstephens and Fitzgerald were made his coadjutors, with an equal train; and these, with other of the first adventurers, under the cover of an honourable appointment, were thus obliged to reside in Dublin, under the immediate inspection of Hugh de Lacy, who appears to have possessed the entire confidence of his sovereign. Lands were assigned for the maintenance of the knights and soldiers; a castle was directed to be built at Dublin; and, at the request of John de Courcy, a baron of distinguished genius and military abilities, the entire province of Ulster was granted to him, provided he could reduce it by force of arms.

Was this to do justly, and to love mercy? But such was the custom of the times, and certainly it was a method admirably calculated to make conquests without expense to the crown, but fraught with danger and oppression. To this system may be imputed the miseries which Ireland



felt for ages ; but, in all probability, had Henry not been interrupted in his engagement, the gradual subjection of the country to his power would have been attended by the most auspicious consequences.

The political state of nations at this period of history, rendered princes unable to maintain their conquests by regular armies. The only mode they had to make their work durable, and to establish their acquisitions, was by making settlements in the conquered country, dividing among them the possessions of the vanquished, giving them the authority, and thus gradually transforming the ancient occupiers into a new people. But it appears that the state of Ireland was so little inviting to the English, that only a few of desperate fortunes could be persuaded, from time to time, to transport themselves into it, who instead of reclaiming the inhabitants from their uncultivated manners, were gradually assimilated to them, degenerating from the customs of their own nation. Such is the opinion of our historian, Hume ; but when it is recollected that arbitrary military leaders were the first settlers, we are not to be surprised at the repugnance of the Irish, nor can we suppose much refinement was introduced. The same historian judiciously remarks : “ the natives, never wholly subdued, still retained their animosities against the conquerors ; their hatred was retaliated by the like injuries, and from these causes, during the course of four centuries, remained still savage and intractable.” “ Henry,” says an old historian, “ obliged Strongbow to return to Ireland, being likely for his own wealth, and assurance to procure all possible means of bridling and annoying the Irish ;” much is comprehended in this remark.

Henry having as effectually as the short time

permitted made his dispositions relative to his new conquest, or rather acquisitions, embarked at Wexford, on the feast of Easter. He landed in Pembrokeshire, and without delay proceeded on foot to the cathedral of St. David, where he performed his devotions with that appearance of piety and humility, which became an individual under the displeasure of the church. He proceeded on with all possible speed to Normandy, to meet the indignant cardinals. He had a conference with them at Savigny, but their first requisitions were so haughty and unreasonable, that he broke up the negociations, declaring he would return to Ireland, where he had much to do, and leave them to execute their legantine commission as they might. The legates found they must lower their terms with the indignant and high-spirited Henry; another congress took place, terms less injurious and unreasonable were proposed, and Henry at length succeeded in concluding an accommodation. When these were adjusted, the king's submissions accepted, his absolution pronounced, Pope Alexander consented to seal the reconciliation, by confirming the grant of Ireland, made by his predecessor Adrian.

His brieve recites the propriety of allowing the *just* acts of his predecessors, and the gifts made by the late pope to Henry of the dominion of Ireland, ratifying the same, with the reservation of Peter-pence, and on the former condition, of reforming the barbarous natives, and regulating their disordered church.\*

\* Peter-pence, so called from being collected on the festival of St. Peter in Vinculis. It was an ancient tax of a penny on each house, first granted, A. D. 725, by Ina, king of the West Saxons, for the establishment and support of an English college at

Rome, and afterwards extended, in 794, by Offa, over all Mercia and East Anglia. In process of time, it became a general and standing tax throughout all England, and though it was sometime applied to the support of the English college, according to

The national failings of the Irish, a sanguine credulity, mingled with personal pride and vanity, fickleness of purpose, and reckless impetuosity, with an impatience of suffering, inducing the belief that any change must be relief, were all exemplified at the period when they were, as we have seen partially, placed under the dominion of Henry.

As they became his vassals with apparent indifference and levity, they were as little solicitous or disposed to adhere to their submissions. Yet as the impressions in favour of their new sovereign, while fresh were lively, and the English settlers did not appear desirous of extending their acquisitions, every thing for a time wore the appearance of security and peace. Strongbow, in the confidence of it, retired to Fernes, which he possessed in right of his consort Eva; to celebrate the nuptials of his daughter with Robert de Quiny, one of the nobles who had engaged in the Irish war. This state of tranquillity was, however, soon interrupted, and aggressions seem to have begun soon after the celebration of these nuptials. Strongbow had created De Quiny constable and standard bearer of Leinster, which principality he enjoyed by homage to Henry. Being obliged to march into Offally, to exact his tribute from a refractory vassal, his forces on their return were attacked in the rear, and De Quiny, as standard bearer, with some others, fell in the fury of the first sudden assault. Subsequently to this, De Lacy was near falling a victim to the treachery and violence of O'Ruarc, the perfidious deserter of his friend and monarch. But he was, in his attack on De Lacy, himself killed, and being con-

the original design, the popes found means to appropriate it to themselves. It was confirmed by the laws of Canute,

Edward the Confessor, William the Conqueror, and never totally abolished till the reign of Henry VIII.

sidered as a rebel and a traitor, his head was sent to Henry.

Thus mutual animosities increased, complaints of oppression, treachery, injustice, and cruelty, were made by both parties, equally perhaps founded in truth, while the critical circumstances of the monarch, who alone could heal the dissensions and restore tranquillity, by the justice, firmness, and vigour of his government, gave opportunity and encouragement for all parties to avow and act upon their animosities. It was at this period that the unnatural combination of his sons involved Henry in all the miseries and difficulties of domestic strife, and produced the most dangerous factions among his nobles, raising the storm of rebellion and war in every quarter of his extensive dominions. To aid in forming a sufficient force to intimidate and resist his foes, the king found it necessary to withdraw several of his garrisons from Ireland, as well as to claim the attendance of some of his barons and commanders from thence. This summons was obeyed with such promptness and evident zeal by Earl Strongbow in particular, that Henry's jealousy of him was dispelled, he became convinced of his attached loyalty, and immediately entrusted him with the important government of Gisors. The intelligence of Henry's distress was received with joy by the Irish chieftains. On Earl Richard's departure, they openly disavowed their submissions, and denounced the vengeance of an injured people against their invaders.

Jealousies and divisions among the English lords prevented proper resistance to this turbulent spirit of the Irish, and the royal interests might have received irreparable injury, had not Henry despatched Earl Strongbow to take upon him the sole direction of Irish affairs, consenting

to the request of Richard that he should employ Raymond de Gros, who was much beloved by the army, as his assistant in the arduous duties of governing a violent and refractory people.

To quicken the zeal, and reward the services of the earl, Henry granted him the town of Wexford, and a fort erected at Wicklow, dismissing him with gracious assurances of favour.

A long series of hostilities, and all the attendant violences and horrors of civil war succeeded, during which Roderick endeavoured to recover dominion. But at length, having repeatedly experienced the instability and perfidy of his chieftains, and the inefficiency of a mere vassal army, he determined to save his own province from the depredations of a victorious enemy by a submission.

A proud consciousness of dignity, truly admirable, made him however resolve to treat only with the royal Henry, who had happily eluded the attempts of his continental enemies, and was at this period in England. After due notice given, Henry accordingly received at Windsor three deputies from Roderick, viz. Catholicus, archbishop of Tuam, the abbot of St. Brander, and Master Laurence, as he is stiled, chancellor to the king of Connaught. The terms were easy, and the treaty was ratified in a grand council of prelates and temporal barons, among whom the archbishop of Dublin was one of the subscribing witnesses. As metropolitan of Leinster he was become an English subject, and was doubtless summoned on the occasion, as obliged by his oath to attend; and having been made a participator of the English legal rights, assisted by virtue of them in the king's great council. It is worthy of note, that Henry treated with Roderick not merely as a provincial prince, but as monarch of Ireland; for al-



though invested himself with the complete sovereignty, the marks of this sovereignty were no more than homage and tribute, in every other particular the regal rights of Roderick are left inviolate by the treaty; the English laws and government, only to be enforced within the English pale. At the same time that this treaty was concluded, Henry, as an evidence of his sovereignty, invested Augustin, an Irish ecclesiastic, with the bishopric of Waterford then vacant, and directed him to be consecrated by the archbishops of Dublin and Cashel.\* This submission of Roderick, and recognition of Henry's sovereignty, were circumstances which certainly appeared to promise peace and tranquillity; but the disunion, jealousies, and envy of the English lords, counteracted all the beneficial consequences which might have been produced by the circumstances. Hervey of Mountmorris, the uncle of Strongbow, had long been the bitter enemy of Raymond, and either upon some just cause which does not appear, or urged by malice, he dispatched emissaries to Henry with unfavourable representations of Raymond's conduct. These representations, urged with plausible professions of loyalty by a baron of distinguished character high in the estimation of his sovereign, made the intended impression on the mind of the hasty Henry, whose jealousy was ever alive to the increasing power and success of his nobles in Ireland, more espe-

\* That the Irish regarded this treaty as acknowledging the supremacy of Roderick, appears by an extract from their annals, anno 1175. Catholicus O'Dubhy came out of England from the empress's son, with the peace of Ireland and the

royal sovereignty of all Ireland to Rory O'Connor, and his own loighedh (province) to each provincial king of Ireland, and their rents to Rory. Ann. Lagen, M.S. (See Leland's History.)

cially as the delation was countenanced by recent tumultuous declarations of the army in favour of Raymond. The king, with his confidence thus shaken in the fidelity of Raymond, immediately sent four commissioners to Dublin, two of whom were to conduct the suspected noble to his presence, and two to remain in order to inspect the national affairs, watch the conduct of the chief governor Strongbow, who, from having solicited the assistance of Raymond, shared with him the royal suspicions.

Raymond, conscious of integrity, and suspecting the machinations of his secret enemy, declared his perfect readiness to obey the summons of his liege lord. He prepared without delay for his departure, but was detained by contrary winds. In the interval, Limerick was besieged by the Irish chief O'Brien of Thomond, a declared enemy to the English power. The garrison was in the utmost distress, and must inevitably have become a prey to the besieger, unless relieved without delay. Earl Strongbow, although labouring under severe indisposition, and deprived of his able commander, prepared for the relief of the besieged place, but the soldiers refused to march, unless under the command of their favourite general Raymond.

The king's commissioners were consulted, and urged by necessity, they consented that Raymond should conduct the expedition.

Thomond had abandoned the siege of Limerick, and entrenched himself in a defile through which the English were to pass; Raymond evinced his military talent on the occasion, O'Brien was driven from his entrenchments, and seeing no prospect of regaining his position, proposed an interview with the English general to offer terms of pacification. At the same time

Roderick, in pursuance of the recent treaty, repaired to Raymond, delivered his hostages, and took the oaths of fealty ; so that this noble, at the instant of being under the displeasure of his sovereign, had the honour of receiving the submissions of the King of Connaught and the Prince of Thomond, who renewed his engagements to Henry and his heirs, and gave hostages as securities for his future allegiance. To this victory succeeded another, in which Raymond avenged the cause of an injured prince, and by the service obtained a valuable grant of land in the county of Kerry, which he enjoyed unmolested, and transmitted to his heirs. We have related these instances of anarchy, to prove that the national character must receive injury from such a state of lawless violence and constant excitement. Education must, under such circumstances, be necessarily neglected and disregarded : youths, instead of pursuing their studies, were engaged in the open conflicts of the field or the baser pursuit of private revenge ; of course, personal vices and political crimes deformed the aspect of that society which, under a steady, wise, and judicious government, would have been rendered beautiful and peaceful.

The vital interests of religion and morals, are necessarily connected with those political ; hence in the state of anarchy which now prevailed in Ireland, little attention was paid either to the sanctions of the one, or the obligations of the other.

The religion of the period, indeed, possessed little that could counteract the violence of human passion, or oppose the torrent of human depravity. The power of the papacy was supreme, and no public profession of the gospel which asserted independence of its domination was tolerated in

Europe, although there were several bold oppositions made to the errors of popery. The general spirit of the times we are cursorily reviewing was to weigh human merits and demerits in opposite balance, and hence determining the question of a man's salvation or destruction as resulting from the comparison of his good actions and his crimes. It is manifest what a fruitful harvest was derived by the priesthood from this system, as well as the total impossibility of receiving from it that consolation which is only to be drawn from the Christian doctrine of vicarious sacrifice, that doctrine which is "wholesome and so full of comfort," as is beautifully expressed by the pious Anselm.

Practical godliness appears to have been lost amongst a thousand senseless opinions and absurd ceremonies. Taught to believe that self inflicted pain is acceptable to the Deity, both as an atonement for crime and as a token of thankfulness, it is evident that such an opinion of the Almighty can offer no check to depravity, must tend to harden still more the unfeeling, and can prove no corrective to the thoughtless. About the period of which we now speak, the doctrine of transubstantiation was required by the court of Rome to be acknowledged by all men; this tended still more to separate men from the sublime simplicity of the gospel. Men fell down before the consecrated host, and worshipped it as God. Thus the sublimest mysteries of religion were corrupted by the exuberance of imagination, and the overwrought excitements of the latter were mistaken for the genuine fervours of the former, leaving the heart uncorrected and the passions unsubdued; while the noblest faculties of the soul were prostrated at the shrine of deception and crafty avarice.

The true love of God and our neighbour consti-

tuting true holiness, must necessarily be subverted when such human inventions are resorted to as principles of faith and rules of practice; and if ecclesiastical authority asserts its supremacy over the mild and comprehensive precepts and discipline of the gospel, it is equally evident that the minds of men must either be debased to the lowest standard, or be forever fluctuating in dangerous speculations and demoralizing subtilties.

Such was now the mighty power of the pope-dom, that the great ones of the earth, even kings and princes, as well as the community at large, bowed beneath its authority, and ministered to its arrogance. An instance of this is related by our church historian, Milner, as extracted from the annals of Baronius. "In 1162, two years after Waldo had begun to preach the gospel at Lyons, Lewis the Seventh of France, and Henry the Second of England on foot, holding the bridle of the horse of Pope Alexander the Third, walking one on one side of him, and the other on the other, conducted him to his habitation; exhibiting," adds Baronius, "a spectacle most grateful to God, to angels, and to men!"

The most cruel persecutions took place also at this time, to suppress what was styled the heresy of the Waldenses, and an enthusiastic ardour prevailed for a second crusade to the Holy Land. To engage Christians in this meritorious service, the Pope had recourse to various persuasions, every argument was employed to excite the ruling passions of the age, superstition, and jealousy of military honour. The regular clergy being exempted from the tax imposed upon the people on this occasion, the secular contended for the same immunity, on the plea that their duty only obliged them to pray for the success of the expedition.



To display the genius of the age we shall add to our detached notices the quarrel between two ecclesiastics, which sufficiently proves how little influence the mild spirit of the gospel had over the turbulent passions of those who were its ministers; we derive the account from Hume. Cardinal Haqueren being sent, 1176, as legate into Britain, summoned an assembly of the clergy at London, and as both the archbishops pretended to sit on his right hand, this question of precedence begat a controversy between them. The monks and retainers of archbishop Richard fell upon Roger in the presence of the cardinal and the synod, and so bruised him with blows that he was taken up half dead, and his life was with difficulty saved from their violence. The archbishop of Canterbury was obliged to pay *a large sum of money* to the legate, to suppress all complaints with regard to this enormity. The demon of avarice having thus entered the church, and commutation for offences being established, it is sufficiently obvious that the fountain thus polluted, the streams issuing from it must more or less partake of the pollution. Processions of saints, and granting indulgences, were the ingenious means resorted to by the priests to impose upon the people and to enrich themselves. Although the lives and manners of the clergy were not improved in this century, circumstances were however preparing the way; the pursuit of knowledge was great, and the sciences were studied with application, industry, and ardour.

This literary enthusiasm was encouraged and cherished by the influence and liberality of certain of the European monarchs, who could not but perceive the happy tendency of the sciences to soften the manners and thereby to afford an

additional support to civil government, as well as to ornament society. Hence were established in various places learned societies and colleges, in which were publicly taught all the liberal arts and sciences. The prodigious number of students who resorted to these seminaries, in process of time rendered their enlargement necessary, and the consequence was the establishment of universities in the succeeding age; in proportion as these arose into repute, the episcopal and monastic schools declined. The advantages attending these establishments were many and important; as they not only rendered knowledge more universal, by facilitating the means of instruction, but they were also the occasion of forming a new circle of sciences, better digested and more comprehensive than any taught heretofore.

Mosheim, speaking of the monks at this period, says "they gave themselves up to pleasure, and lived carelessly. The Cistercian or Bernardine monks surpassed all others in the external regularity of their lives and manners and a certain air of innocence and sanctity, which in others was degenerated or lost." The censures of this historian are generally too unqualified, but it is to be feared that his picture is too true a likeness in this instance, as it is fully substantiated by other historians.\* The regular canons, an order

\* Cistercians, this order was founded in the eleventh century, by St. Robert, a Benedictine. They became so powerful that they governed almost all Europe. Their discipline was severe; they abstained from flesh except in

sickness, also from fish, eggs, milk, and cheese, reposed upon straw beds in tunics and cowls, rose at midnight to prayers, and spent the day in labour, reading and prayer, and in all their exercises observed a continual silence. The habit of

between that of monks and secular clergy, are said to have employed themselves far more usefully than the monks; they kept public schools for the education of youth, and exercised a variety of ecclesiastical functions, which rendered them extremely useful to the church. Hence they rose greatly in general estimation, and in consequence incurred the jealousy of the monks, which soon degenerated into hatred; disputes of pre-eminence arose, and pretensions were carried so high that, as is usual, moderation and temper were lost in the contest. Amongst all these causes of spiritual jealousy and contending worldly interests, it is not surprising that genuine religion was obscured, and that its pure and sublime doctrines were disregarded or misunderstood. Our remarks have necessarily been general, because upon the immediate subject nothing peculiarly affecting, or relating to, the state of Irish clergy appears. The monkish annalists of Ireland indeed make affecting complaints of the destruction of churches by the English in their expeditions; with an asperity which we perhaps ought candidly to pardon, when we reflect upon the circumstances, they represent the new settlers as a race of savage barbarians, destitute of any principle of veneration for things sacred and holy, or even possessed of an aversion bordering on that of heathens to religious edifices.

Without attempting to justify the sacrilegious spirit here complained of, we may however venture to assert it had its origin in the pressing physical wants, rather than in the moral and reli-

the Cistercian monks was a white robe, in the nature of a cassock, with a black scapulary and hood; a woollen

girdle confined it. The nuns of the order wore a white tunic and black scapulary and girdle.

gious insensibilities of our ancestors. Ireland had long been the unhappy scene of hostility and violence, it had therefore become a custom for the insecure inhabitants to deposit provisions and effects of greater value in the churches, where they were secure amidst all their domestic feuds, as in a kind of sanctuary, which it would be deemed the height of impiety to violate. The English settlers however had no scruple of the kind, and if they had, their necessities were too pressing not easily to stifle it when a supply of provisions was to be found. The churches therefore were always visited as a sure resource, the sacrilege was in many instances with a laudable spirit resisted, but this opposition, however justifiable, frequently occasioned a destruction far greater than would otherwise have occurred.

To prevent these destructive effects however, Cardinal Vivian, the pope's legate, procured an ordinance in a synod held in Dublin, that the English, when engaged in any expedition, should have free liberty to take provisions deposited in the churches provided they paid their just value. But this ordinance proved of little avail, so violent were the animosities and rooted the hatred of the Irish, that in order to deprive the invaders of resource they burnt down their own churches, as is expressed in their annals, "in spite of the foreigners," and did in fact reduce them by this means to the greatest distresses.

The local dissensions and continual contests which filled this unhappy country form the melancholy picture of the times, treachery and murder were revenged by similar horrid means, and outrages the most disgraceful marked each passing day. A spirit of irrational, unmanly superstition pervaded the land, debasing the mind so that all were nearly equally strangers to the nobler

virtues of humanity. Religion, in the form it then assumed, was altogether inefficient to restrain or to subdue the brutal passions of the people. "An effectual conquest and general subjection of the whole island to one reasonable and equitable government," observes Leland "must have proved a singular blessing to these unhappy people. But Providence was pleased to ordain that their enormities should continue much longer to prove their own severe punishment."



## CHAPTER VI.

*Raymond's military successes—Death of Strongbow—Raymond's measures—Obsequies of Strongbow—Harsh judgment of the Irish respecting him—Personal description of him—English council at Dublin exercise their delegated power of electing a chief governor—Raymond elected—Henry does not sanction the choice—Nominates William Fitz Andelm—His train—Administration of Fitz Andelm—Assumptions of the Pope, servility of Princes—Obnoxious measures of Fitz Andelm—The consequences—De Courcy, his precipitance—Complaints to Henry of Fitz Andelm—Hugh de Lacy, his administration—Prince John invested with the Lordship of Ireland—Remonstrances of the Chieftains—Jealousy of Henry in consequence of de Lacy's popularity—He is recalled to England—Conduct of de Lacy; he is reinvested with the government with Robert de Shrewsbury—Decease of Laurence O'Toole; his character—John Comyn succeeds him—Irish chiefs renounce their allegiance to Henry—State of the English Lords—Small force sent by Henry—Phillip Barry and Giraldus Cambrensis; their injudicious conduct—Pernicious instability of Henry—De Lacy recalled, and Philip of Worcester appointed; his vicious administration—Preparations of Prince John to exercise his authority—Henry declines the interference of the Pope on the occasion—John sent to Ireland with a splendid train—Irish Lords congratulate—Want of courtesy in Norman nobility; the consequences—Insurrection—Tragical death of de Lacy—De Courcy made Governor; his Administration—Death of Henry II.—His Conquest of Ireland rendered imperfect by circumstances—Richard Cœur de Lion neglects Ireland; engages in the Crusade—John assumes the title of Earl of Moreton and Lord of Ireland; grants various privileges—Appoints deputies to govern Ireland during the reign of Richard—His power but partially acknowledged—A Legate sent by the Pope to levy contributions for the Crusade—Hugh de Lacy made Governor—Jealousy of de Courcy—Irish avail themselves of it; their disunion favourable to the English—Hamo de Valois succeeds de Courcy—He invades the Ecclesiastical possessions to supply the necessities of his government—Remonstrances vain to effect redress—Conduct of Archbishop Comyn—Oppressions of Hamo—Death of Roderick O'Connor,*

*the last of the Irish monarchs, caused little sensation—Demise of Richard I.—Papal power in its zenith—Increased and supported by the promulgation of the Canon law, and other causes—Mendicant Orders, their popularity; their privileges—Resisted by the Regular Clergy—Dispensing power of the Popes—Jealousy of Sovereigns roused by their encroachments, and the foundations of the hierarchy thereby imperceptibly undermined—Constitution of Boniface the Eighth.*

#### THE TWELFTH CENTURY.

It is necessary that we should revert to the situation of Raymond, who in the midst of his military success received the intelligence of the decease of Earl Strongbow. Well knowing the fickleness of the Irish; their real hatred of the foreign sway to which circumstances had induced them to submit; their readiness to revolt, and eagerness to embrace every plea of assuming arms; Raymond, as next in command, was aware how important it was to keep the event concealed till some measures of security could be fixed upon. To do this he held a secret consultation with some select friends, and took the necessary precautions to preserve the peace of the English provinces.

The obsequies of Earl Strongbow were performed under the direction of Raymond (who had married Basilica, the sister of the earl) and Archbishop Laurence, with all due solemnity and magnificence. In the true superstitious spirit of the times, the Irish clergy imputed the death of the earl to the divine vengeance judicially inflicted on his enormities, particularly those devastations of the churches which he had permitted. The rigorous exertion of his power which Earl Richard was obliged to in order to support the interests of his sovereign, and what he considered his rightful inheritance, renders the harsh language of the Irish respecting him perfectly natural. "Since the day of Tungesious, the savage Dane,"

say the annalists, "Ireland never knew so cruel and unrelenting an oppressor. Remorse and horror attended his dissolution, and in the awful moment of his departure he confessed he had been smitten by the saints of Ireland." We have however a fairer picture of the earl given us by Giraldus: "Earl Strongbow," says that historian, "was of a complexion somewhat sanguine and spotted, his eyes grey, his countenance feminine, his voice small, his neck slender, but in most other particulars he was well formed and tall; liberal and courteous in his manners, and what he could not gain by power, he frequently obtained by an insinuating address. In peace he was more disposed to obey than to govern; his state and authority were reserved for the camp, and here supported with the utmost dignity. He was diffident of his own judgment, cautious of proposing his own plans of operation, but in executing those of others undaunted and vigorous. In battle he was the standard on which the soldiers fixed their eyes, and by whose motions they were determined either to advance or to retreat. His temper was composed and uniform, not dejected by misfortune nor elated by success." By the decease of Strongbow the English council at Dublin had to exercise their delegated authority of electing a chief governor. The office was conferred on the gallant Raymond, and the king's commissioners concurred in the choice, believing that they best consulted and provided for the interests of their royal master by leaving them under the conduct of this favourite of the army.

The favourable report Henry received of Raymond from his appointed commissioners by no means allayed his jealousy of him. He therefore did not sanction their concurrence in conferring upon him the viceregal dignity, but determined

to nominate to that responsible situation, a noble man allied to him by blood, and of approved allegiance. Accordingly William Fitz Andelm was sent to Ireland with a train of twenty knights. At the same time John de Courcy, Robert Fitzstephens, and Milo de Cogan were appointed, with each a suitable train, to attend the new governor. With these embarked Vivian, the pope's legate, and Nicholas Wallingford, an English ecclesiastic, with the brieve of Alexander, granted to Henry in confirmation of his title to the kingdom of Ireland. The new governor and suite landed at Wexford, where they were received by Raymond with due reverence. He resigned his state to Fitz Andelm with all inferior trusts held by virtue of his temporary commission.

Fitz Andelm began his administration by a steadily progress along the coast in order to inspect the forts and cities, and the ecclesiastics were also active in their peculiar vocation. An assembly of the Irish clergy was convened at Waterford, when the bull of Adrian and the confirmatory brieve of Alexander the Third were solemnly promulged; the king's title to the sovereign dominion of Ireland asserted and declared in form, with dreadful denunciations of the severest censures of the church against all those who should impeach the grant made by the holy see, or resist the sovereign authority of Henry, thus constituted *rightful* lord of Ireland. From the time of Gregory the Seventh, the pontiffs claimed the privilege of erecting kingdoms, and it was in many other instances, besides that of Ireland, assumed; even two years subsequent to the period we are now reviewing, viz. in 1179, Alexander conferred the title of king, with the ensigns of royalty, upon Alphonso, the first Duke of Portugal, who had previously rendered his province tributary to the

Romish see. Alphonso had been declared king of Portugal so long antecedent as 1136, in the midst of his exploits against the Moors, so that in fact Alexander did no more than confirm this title, although in an arrogant bull, he treats the prince as his vassal, and makes himself the donor of his royal dignity. It is hardly necessary to have given this instance of the encroaching nature of ambition, only as it evinces the advantage taken of the incautious concessions of princes, in sacrificing to future uncertain good their present independence, and by an impolitic submission to Rome to obtain some temporary aim. The consequences of this submission were, that all disputes between princes were to be referred to the pope as rightful lord, and if either party refused the reference, he was to be excommunicated and deposed. Every Christian sovereign was to assert the violated dignity of Rome, under pain of a similar forfeiture of his royal power. On every side the thunder of the papal resentment burst over the heads of the royal vassals; nations were subjected to a general interdict, during the existence of which the living were deprived of the offices and consolations of religion, and the dead remained unburied. The too general tyranny, and oppression, and cupidity of princes rendered this scheme of spiritual supremacy as onerous to the distressed, as it tended to shed lustre upon the head of the church, yet in some instances the interference was undoubtedly favourable to social order and human happiness.\* Invested thus nominally at least with the

\* As a specimen of the language of the papacy in asserting the supremacy, we cite a passage from a bull of Innocent III. a man possessing a great mind, though prone to

sacrifice every object to ambition. An extensive learning in ecclesiastical law, a close observation of whatever was passing in the world, an unwearied diligence sustained his



executive power over Ireland, Henry was yet far from having adopted either judicious or adequate means to effect his political designs beneficially to his new subjects or profitably for himself. Nothing short of his personal administration of a well ordered political system, could have power to conciliate the invaded or to unite the invaders. The new governor possessed neither the ability nor the disposition to sustain a government, requiring a vigilant and martial spirit to organize the people into a tranquil and well ordered community.

A jealousy of the original adventurers, infused into him by his royal relative Henry, marked every act of Fitz Andelm, and he possessed little temper and policy, or too much haughtiness to conceal it. On the gallant Raymond especially, he looked with a malignant envy, even at the first interview, upon observing the numbers and appearance of his train. Destitute of true patriotic feeling, and of a generous sympathy with the mortified feelings of those he was delegated to govern, the sole object of his administration was mercenary, and to accomplish his object, he scrupled not to descend to craft, fraud, and circumvention. To conciliate the favour of the Irish chieftains, he had recourse to mean flattery, and affected courtesy; but so little judgment did he possess in the management of these courtly engines, that his insincerity was easily discovered even by the Irish, and by them despised, while

fearless ambition. Impetuous in temper, and with such advantages, he was formidable beyond all his predecessors, and, perhaps, beyond all his successors. "As the sun and the moon are placed in the firmament, (says Innocent,) the greater as the light of the day,

and the lesser of the night, thus are the two powers in the church; the pontifical, which, as having the charge of soul, is the greater, and the royal, which is the less, and to which the bodies of men only are entrusted."

he rendered himself in various ways detestable to his own countrymen. Unhappy, the people subjected to the government of such an individual, equally corrupt in manners and rapacious in principle. It is obvious, that the reformation which was the ostensible reason of invasion, was not likely to be effected under such an inauspicious sway. It was impossible that the advantages of moral civilization could result from corrupt official despotism, and a state of society destitute of those ties and combinations which unite man to man in consistent and strong cohesion. The English lords who had formed the first settlements in the country could ill brook the unjust encroachments and the haughty assuming manners of Fitz Andelm and his dependants. Among the first who betrayed their impatience, was the bold and enterprising John de Courcy. Availing himself of the discontents of the army, he prevailed upon a few of the most adventurous to assert their independence, and to penetrate into parts of the country not yet visited by the English. In this expedition is involved an instance of superstition in perfect consistency with the generally prevailing spirit, also one of laudable interference of a Christian dignitary to arrest the violence of a desperate chief. Several circumstances favoured the design of De Courcy, and his own superstition confirmed his hopes of conquest. He had discovered in the prophecies of Merlin, that the acquisition of Ulster was reserved for his valour, and his Irish adherents supplied him with another prophet, who declared that Down (the object of his enterprise) was to be subdued by a stranger mounted on a white horse, with a shield charged with painted birds. De Courcy accoutred himself according to this description, and marched in full

confidence to his destined conquest.\* This incursion involved the country in devastation and distress. The prince of Uloah had recourse, in the emergency, to the interposition of Vivian the legate, who, in his spiritual progress through the island, now chanced to reside at Down. He instantly addressed himself to the fiery De Courcy, boldly represented to him the injustice of his conduct, reminded him of the royal treaty, and by every argument his religion so abundantly supplied, intreated the haughty baron to spare an unoffending people, who had a claim upon his protection rather than to become the victims of his violent ambition. But the Christian arguments of Vivian made no impression upon the indurated heart nor prevailed over the impetuous passions of De Courcy, who continued his hostilities undismayed by the probable consequences which his disregard of the monitions of the pope's representative might provoke. It does not appear, however, that any fulminations were issued against him. But Vivian, indignant at the contempt shown to his exhortations, and affected by the sufferings of the people, exercised his spiritual influence to urge the oppressed to take up arms and resist the incursions of an unjust enemy. Thus was he provoked by circumstances to depart from the original principal object of his legantine commission, which was to exercise that influence to attach the Irish to the interests of Henry. A

\* Downpatrick, in the county of Down, is one of the most ancient towns in Ireland. The bishopric was erected in the fifth century by St. Patrick, is now united with that of Connor. Near the town, on the ascent of a hill, are the ruins

of the old cathedral, remarkable for the tomb of the founder, and about a mile distant is St. Patrick's well, which is frequented either to drink the water, or to perform a penance enjoined by the priests.

tumultuary army of considerable force was accordingly collected to dispossess the foreigners, an action ensued, but discipline prevailed over numerical force, De Courcy, by the overthrow of his opponents made good his conquest. A second effort was made by the Irish, defeat again succeeded, and several brave chieftains fell in the noblest of causes, that of maintaining their native independence.

A spirit of enterprise, awakened by courtly dissension, now seized others of the English leaders, and the domestic feuds of the Irish gave them ample field for the exercise of their military talents. It cannot be a subject of surprise, that in the midst of this anti-social chaos, every act of the delegated government served but to render the principles of the system more jarring and discordant, and less likely to effect those great objects, which candour obliges us to suppose Henry was sincere in his wish to accomplish. In fact, complaints so strong and serious were made to him respecting the inefficient and corrupt government of his relative Fitz Andelm, that Henry resolved to remove him.

Historians agree with the Irish monks (whose single testimony might be suspected of prejudice) in condemning the conduct of this governor. The monks attribute but one commendable act to him during the period of his administration, how far it may serve to redeem his character from obloquy, we pretend not to pronounce. The act thus distinguished, was the removal of what the monks call the staff of Jesus, a relique held in the highest estimation, from the cathedral of Armagh to that of Dublin. The peculiar reason for this removal deemed so meritorious, is not distinctly explained; perhaps, it might be to secure it from martial violation, as Ulster was the seat of war. One

other act of Fitz Andelm, however, the clerical historians have omitted, that of founding and endowing the monastery of St. Thomas the Martyr in the western suburbs of Dublin, still known by the name of Donore. It was thus titled, from the recently canonized archbishop of Canterbury, and Henry, with a zeal or affected reverence for the memory of a man who had caused him so much trouble, immediately confirmed the endowment of Fitz Andelm by his own royal charter. The care of reliques and the founding of monasteries were, however, quite insufficient exercises for a governor of Ireland, requiring the full action of every political talent, every intellectual energy, and every moral principle, to reduce chaos to order, and to connect the dissevered links of the social system into a firm and beautiful chain. Such an individual was found in Hugh de Lacy, who was appointed by the sovereign will. We detail not the wise and salutary regulations he made, but content ourselves with saying, that he acted upon the principles of a just and generous spirited administration. Henry also, to assist in some regulations he projected in the kingdom, summoned some of the principal lords to attend him in England; at the same time, he made a formal and solemn appointment of his son John to the lordship of Ireland. He also granted to several of the barons, territory as a reward for their faithful services, to be held by feudal tenure of himself and his son John. By these grants Henry certainly invaded the rights of Roderick, which he had stipulated to preserve, but this violation of equity and good faith was one of the poisonous fruits of that debased religion which substituted outward formalities for inward principles; whilst the doctrine that attention to saints, and a due liberality to their servants, could save



the most culpable and even the most atrocious, could not fail to encourage crime and pervert the moral sense. But although Henry thus disregarded his engagements, the Irish chiefs were not prepared to yield to his demand, territories, the quiet possession of which they had not forfeited by any act of rebellion or disregard of the conditions upon which they were retained. Upon the claim of the English lords, remonstrances of intrusion were therefore naturally made; hostilities succeeded, but were suspended by a treaty by which each party conceded a portion of their rights, and tranquillity was in a degree restored. In the meantime, the judicious Hugh de Lacy continued to administer justice with impartiality and lenity, setting an example of politic union between the contending parties, by espousing the daughter of Roderick O'Connor. The influence and government of such a mind, must have proved beneficial, but Henry, with all the high qualities he possessed, was frequently led by his jealousy of power and quick feeling, into great inconsistencies, and measures injurious to his interests as well as dishonourable to the nobleness of his character.

The popularity of De Lacy had produced its invariable consequence, the envy and malignity of narrow minds. The doubts and suspicions infused into the mind of Henry by these insidious slanderers, were received with a readiness which indicated the proneness of his disposition to jealousy, and how little his feelings were under the controul of his judgment. Urged by feelings so unworthy of his high station and good sense, he hastily recalled De Lacy to England, and John, constable of Cheshire, and Richard de Peach, bishop of Coventry, were appointed to govern a country to which they were entire strangers, and

who were otherwise but imperfectly qualified for a trust so important.

This error in the political judgment of Henry must inevitably have been prejudicial to his interests as well as unhappy in its consequences to Ireland, had not the better feelings of the monarch been roused by the candour of Hugh de Lacy. The proofs he gave of his zeal and loyalty, dissipated in a moment the too readily formed suspicions of his royal master, who, with a facility equal to that which produced his removal, now remanded De Lacy to his government. Lacy, however, requested that Robert de Shrewsbury, a domestic chaplain to the king, and in whom he placed the greatest confidence, should attend him as co-adjutor, or rather, as the inspector of his actions, that the king might be assured that his interests were properly regarded, and the designs of idle or malignant rumour might be frustrated. Though the incursions of John de Courcy, and those of the turbulent Irish lords, still disturbed the peace and devastated the country, they rather favoured than prevented the immediate object of De Lacy's government, that of improving and defending the province of Leinster, and the effects of his wise and strenuous administration were felt and acknowledged as most honourable to him. This immediate period (1181) is marked by the decease of Laurence O'Toole, the prelate of Dublin. He was held in the highest estimation by his countrymen, and although his political conduct is less dwelt upon than the numerous miracles he performed, yet sufficient is detailed by the Irish historians to prove that he took a considerable part in those contests, which attended the first establishment of the English in his country, of this we have already cited one instance to which others if necessary might be added. The father

of Laurence was a chieftain of consequence in Leinster, and while Laurence was very young had been obliged to deliver him to king Dermot, as a hostage, and by that monarch he was assigned to the care and custody of the Abbot of Glendalough. In this deep solitude, surrounded by the awful and grand in nature, his mind rose into vigour, and he acquired a high devotional and retired taste; of course a monastic life was the choice of his heart. The virtues he displayed in seclusion, were however so superior, that he was drawn from the quiet scene where they were practised, in order to be placed in the high station for which his abilities fitted him. In the fulfilment of its duties, the sanctity of his manners, and the nobility of his birth, engaged the attention and respect of all the higher orders of his countrymen, while his comprehensive mind and shining abilities necessarily gave weight to his opinions, and involved him in the political affairs of his distressed country. In him we see the pious ecclesiastic employing his spiritual influence, not for his own aggrandizement but for the good of his country, a pure patriotism animated his soul, possessing a full conviction that to preserve a state from dilapidation and decay, each individual must support his own virtue in order to give strength and consistency to that of the community of which he forms a part. The temperance and purity of Laurence, was unmingled with austerity, they were softened by a boundless hospitality, dispensed with that free good will, which evidenced it was not a vain display which he sought, but the genuine emanation of a spirit that delighted to do good, and to contribute to the innocent gratification of others. His guests, while entertained with liberality, saw the pre-

late himself adhering to his monastic rules of abstinence and self-denial, yet without affectation or severity. The influence he thus justly acquired over the minds of his countrymen, he not only employed in the wise regulation of his church, and governing his clergy with the strictest though affectionate discipline, but in that beautiful exercise of christian charity, the moderating and composing the dissensions of those irritable chieftains whose barbarous ambition spread anarchy and misery through their country. His patriotic fervour rendered his opposition to the English interest strenuous and determined as long as he thought there was any prospect of success, and even after he found it necessary to submit to Henry, his attachment to his own country remained undiminished; the warmth of his patriotism unchilled. Deeply affected with the arbitrary and corrupt conduct of some of the English governors, he resorted to England purposely to lay before Henry the unprovoked injuries and oppressions his unhappy countrymen sustained. On this occasion Laurence was, by a singular incident, in imminent danger of losing his life. He was officiating in the cathedral of Canterbury, when a man of unsound mind, struck suddenly by the circumstances of the place, the appearance and occupation of the prelate, conceived the thought of honouring him with the crown of martyrdom, and immediately assaulted the astonished Laurence with the utmost violence, nor was he rescued from the attack of the maniac till he had received a desperate wound in the head. The unhappy wretch was seized, and would have suffered capitally for this act of madness had not the prelate interceded and prevailed upon the king to pardon him. Whilst Laurence was in England he was summoned to

the council of Lateran, in the year 1179, and by Henry's permission he obeyed the mandate. It is asserted that he was bound by a solemn oath not to attempt any thing on this occasion, derogatory to the king's dignity and authority, but by this he did not consider himself bound to silence, respecting the injustice of the English governors in Ireland, and accordingly he made the most powerful and affecting representations of the wrongs and calamities of his countrymen, and is stated to have pleaded so effectually, that some decrees were made in favour of the Irish nation; and at the same time he procured a confirmation from Pope Alexander, of all his rights and possessions to him and his successors by a brief.

This zeal for the interests of his see and his country was, however, so displeasing to Henry, that he sent the prelate a mandate, forbidding him to return to his pastoral charge; so that the estimable Laurence died an exile in Normandy. This exercise of royal power appears as injudicious as cruel, when we reflect upon the noble and patriotic spirit of Laurence, and the salutary influence of his high character among his countrymen. In him Roderick lost not only a wise counsellor, and faithful friend, but also an active and diligent minister, whose acts were tempered with the moderation befitting his ecclesiastical character, and free from the treachery, chicane, and art, which disgraced too many of his countrymen.

Laurence was succeeded in his episcopacy by John Comyn, an Englishman, whom Henry nominated to the clergy of Dublin, and whose election was ratified by Pope Lucien, with a confirmation of the grants made by Alexander, of the rights and possessions of the see. This prelate was chosen by Henry as being attached to his



interests, and as one whose character promised vigour and abilities no less in temporal affairs, than in those of his spiritual function. Indeed, the king found it necessary to send men of abilities both in war and politics, in order to repair the losses which the continual state of warfare had caused amongst some of the bravest and most distinguished of the original settlers; who, when they began to have a prospect of peaceable repose, and confidence with the Irish appeared increasing, were attacked in the midst of their security, in the most treacherous manner, the chiefs with characteristic levity renouncing allegiance to Henry, and spreading war and devastation in attempts to expel the foreigners. The spirit which had upheld the warriors in their youth, grief, disappointment, and age had nearly quenched. Fitzstephens' spirit had been subdued by the death of a beloved son; and the violent attack of the Irish proved too heavy for his years and his debilitated mind—the once ardent and fearless veteran became an unconscious maniac! Hervey of Mountmorris, turning his view from the unsatisfying acquisitions of ambition, embraced a religious life, and immured himself in a monastery, at that time the usual retreat of disappointment and adversity.

To supply the losses sustained, Henry sent a small force into Ireland, which was shortly followed by a reinforcement, under the command of the brave Philip Barry. Girald Barry, an ecclesiastic, better known by the name of Giraldus Cambrensis, attended his brother Philip in this expedition. Henry had such a reliance on the abilities of this ecclesiastic, that he had intrusted to him the education of his son John, and his reason for uniting him to the expedition was, that he might give such information, and aid in such dispositions, as might fur-

ther the interests of the prince destined to assume the reins of government in Ireland. For the same reason, the Archbishop was commanded to repair to his diocese. But whatever might be the abilities of these men, and however qualified Henry might think them to effect his purposes, they appear to have entered upon their new and important scene of action, with ideas and sentiments ill calculated to conciliate the proud people with whom they were to associate, and little likely to gain that influence over their affections and opinions, which alone could reconcile them to foreign administration. A sovereign contempt of those with whom they condescended to converse, and a vain display of their own superiority, marked the demeanour of the Englishmen, equally proving their contracted minds and selfish hearts. Few are the minds that do not spurn at such assumptions, and who are not led to betray the mortification it produces, by acrimony, while prejudices are held with an increased tenacity, in proportion as they are attacked with invidious observations, or insulting contempt. Thus while Cambrensis endeavoured to inform himself from the Irish clergy of the state of their ecclesiastical constitution, he could not refrain, in the vanity of his mind, from drawing mortifying comparisons. For instance, the Irish naturally recorded with pious veneration the illustrious actions of those holy men, whose piety and learning had adorned the church of Ireland, and in their zeal for its honour they were not silent respecting the long catalogue of saints it had produced. "Saints!" said Girald, with a tone of the utmost self-sufficiency, "yes, you have your saints, but where are your martyrs? I cannot find one Irish martyr in your calendar." "Alas!" replied the prelate of Cashel, "it must be acknowledged

that as yet our people have not learned such enormous guilt as to murder God's servants ; but now the Englishmen have settled in our island, and that Henry is our sovereign, we may soon expect enough of martyrs to take away this reproach from our church." This severe, though indirect allusion to the murder of Becket, proved the bitter feeling of the speaker, as did the readiness of the application his acuteness and ability. Contemptible as altercations of this sort may appear, they had a powerful and pernicious influence in keeping alive animosities, and fomenting divisions between two nations, whose mutual interests could only be promoted by close and friendly union. Arrogance naturally begets hatred, and recrimination will follow invective. But lamentable indeed is it when this is found among the professors of a religion of peace, and when those meetings wherein the good of others should be dispassionately discussed, are dishonoured by language of mutual reproach ; yet such was the case of the synodical meetings of Ireland, to the prejudice of the interests of religion and morality.

Perhaps, had Henry studied the means most likely to disgust and irritate the Irish, he could not more effectually have done it, than he did by his culpable and extraordinary instability in respect to the individuals chosen as chief governors. Listening once more to the artful suggestions of those, who infused doubts of the official integrity of Hugh de Lacy, he recalled him from his government, and appointed as his successor Philip of Worcester, a man whose sole object was to enrich himself, even if it were by plunder and oppression. The first act of his administration was one of fraud and injustice. He enforced his exactions with the utmost rigour, and to the great

scandal of religion, and of Armagh as a seat of piety, he passed there six days in mid-lent, feasting and revelling, extorting money from the clergy with unrelenting severity, and deaf to their plea, that by the articles of the synod of Cashel they were exempt from military exactions. Their only resource was to denounce the judgments of heaven against their ravager. And when he was, at his departure, seized with a sudden fit of sickness, they were encouraged to hope their supplications were heard, and that the object of their hatred was also the object of the Divine wrath; and this ignorant superstition was strengthened by the incident of a fire breaking out in the quarters of one of his attendants, which was instantly converted into a miraculous punishment for the sacrilege of Philip, in robbing a religious house of its furnace.

1385.—The exercise of his oppressive power, was, however, not of long continuance. Prince John prepared to exercise that authority in Ireland, conferred upon him by his royal father. He received knighthood from Henry's hand, and a splendid train was appointed to attend him to the seat of government. A legate was sent from Rome to wait on the prince, and to perform the ceremony of his coronation in Ireland. This representative of the holy pontiff presented the young prince with a curious diadem of peacock's feathers, hallowed by the benediction of the sovereign pontiff. The jealousy of Henry, however, betrayed itself on this occasion. He declined the interference of the pope, and with a caution which the unnatural combination and conduct of his other children justified, sent John to his government without additional title, or any ceremonial, but attended with a considerable military force, and a magnificent train of young

and gallant Normans. These were followed by a number of Englishmen, who were induced to follow in the young prince's train, to a country which, although unknown to them, they concluded possessed some advantages by which they might better their condition, having dissipated their fortunes by extravagance and profligacy. This gay train could assimilate little with the hardy Welshmen, who were the original settlers, and who attended on the young prince, to do him homage on his arrival.

Glanville, an eminent lawyer, had been appointed by the king to assist and direct his son. Several ecclesiastics also attended him, and Cambrensis, who had acquired some knowledge of the country, was in attendance on his pupil. The Irish chieftains reconciled to submission by the dignity of John's birth and station, felt their refractory spirits softened, and determined to do homage to the king's son. The native lords of Leinster, who had ever been first, hastened to Waterford to congratulate the arrival of the new prince; but neither the Prince, or his Norman courtiers, had sufficient judgment, discretion, or experience, to treat them with due attention and respect. The beautiful virtue of courtesy, the elements of which are modesty, a generous sympathy in the feelings of, and respect for others, was unknown to the youthful and glittering circle which surrounded the English prince. To them, the uncouth dress, and unfashionable figures of the Irish chieftains, appeared proper and fair objects of contempt and derision, and these feelings were betrayed generally and insultingly. Spirited and proud, tenacious of their state, and of all men most impatient of the slightest mark of contempt, with tempers rendered irritable by oppression, the Irish lords could not but keenly



feel the ill-timed ridicule of the new comers, who, had they possessed either understanding or policy, might have easily conciliated the unfriendly, and, in all probability, reduced the disobedient, by less objectionable methods than by arms. As it was, however, the Leinster chiefs quitted the court, fired with indignation, and resolved on revenge. They repaired to other chiefs, related their insulting reception, and all the probable consequences of yielding to a people whom no concessions could induce to depart from a system of contempt and outrage. The flame of proud resentment was readily caught, for the materials were combustible to which the spark was applied. The chiefs agreed, that instead of proceeding to do homage to the prince, they would waive every private animosity, and unite to assert their independency, and exert their utmost combined endeavours to free their country from the insulting and imperious foreigners.

The storm of war was on all sides collecting; but John indulged in idle pomp and dissolute excesses. The clergy solicited for grants to the church, while soldiers urged the necessity of defence. The religious house of Thomas the Martyr, founded by Fitz Andelm, received additional donations.. But the tumult of insurrection soon reached the prince and his luxurious dependents. Hostility and disaster marked each succeeding hour. The land was laid waste, carnage and commotion deluged and shook the unhappy country; and to add to the horror of the time, the improvident John had lavished the sums appointed to pay his army, so that a dreadful scarcity threatened to follow close upon profuseness, luxury, and war.

Eight months of disorder and misery had

elapsed before Henry became fully acquainted with the wretched situation of Ireland, and the weak and wanton administration of his son, whom he determined to recall. Unfortunately, he was about this period deprived of the valuable services of Hugh de Lacy. The circumstances attending the death of this noble are so affecting, and so strongly indicate the blind superstition which pervaded society, that we shall relate them in the words of an historical writer, of whose highly interesting work we have amply availed ourselves in collecting illustrations of our subject.

In the recent predatory incursions into Meath, the land of De Lacy had received considerable damage, which upon the restoration of some tranquillity, he was indefatigable in repairing. Earnestly intent upon accomplishing these important works, he was accustomed to superintend his labourers, among whom were many of his Irish tenants. He would also frequently, for their encouragement, himself unite in their labours. He was proceeding to erect a small fort at Denworth, upon the site of a venerable abbey. The Irish were shocked at such profanation of this ancient seat of devotion, a residence of one of their most renowned saints; and the hatred of their invader, inflamed by this superstition, operated upon one of the workmen even to a degree of frenzy. He seized the moment when De Lacy was employed in the trenches, and as he stooped down to receive his orders, drew out his battle-axe, which he had concealed under his mantle, and with one vigorous blow smote off the head of the unsuspecting and unguarded De Lacy. The assassin was too much favoured by his own countrymen not to escape. The flame of insurrection was instantly rekindled in Meath. The news of Lacy's death was eagerly spread,

and joyfully received. The clergy represented it as an act of vengeance executed by the holy Columbk-kill on the sacrilegious usurper of his abbey and ravager of Irish churches. Thus were the people taught that the act of an assassin was meritorious, and the hostile purposes of the Irish insurgents were confirmed and encouraged. Thus had religion lost almost every quality which renders it conducive to the good of society; it is not, therefore, a subject of surprise, that the restrictions of human law were contemned and insulted, and that violence, rapine, and crime desolated and disgraced the country. In this critical situation of affairs, the rude and inflexible valour of John de Courcy, appeared to Henry best suited for the government, he was therefore entrusted with it, and John, with his frivolous train, returned to England, well pleased to leave a country of turbulence and danger. De Courcy entered upon his martial administration with indefatigable vigour, and, in conjunction with the son of the murdered De Lacy, took severe vengeance for the act. His forces were in continual action, and though confined to defensive operations, he succeeded in preserving from extinction that power whose extirpation had been threatened. The native Irish act from sudden fits of passion and violence, but the ebullition quickly passes off. This characteristic disposition was manifested at the period we now speak of. Factions and local feuds consumed that energy all had vowed to exert against the common foe; their jealousy of the English progress diminished, and in the rage of domestic jealousy and revenge, the weaker party not unfrequently sought assistance in the English settlements. To govern a people whose national pride was so strong, whose dispositions were so versatile, and temper so irritable,

was certainly no easy task. De Courcy might have been enabled by this fluctuating spirit of the Irish to have maintained his government; but he was of a temper too bold and enterprising to be contented with acting upon the defensive; he resolved, therefore, to make an attempt upon the disordered province of Connaught, but the result was not honourable to his arms, he was compelled to retreat, the merit of which could not be properly appreciated by his tumultuary enemy, therefore they exulted in having driven their foe from the province.

Amidst the anarchy and slaughter in which a considerable part of the island was involved by the fierce and unnatural ambition of the chieftains, John de Courcy was enabled to maintain his authority, and to support the English acquisitions, though he failed to extend them either by reconciling the sullen, or subduing the more bold and open contemners of the English power. Such was the state of Ireland, when Henry the Second paid the debt of nature, 1189. Though ranking among the first characters of history, the delineation of the distinguishing traits which rendered this monarch such, enters not into the plan of this work, only so far as relates to his Irish expedition; for, from the cursory view we have given, it evidently cannot be termed a conquest.

When we reflect upon the general character of Henry, and contemplate the vigorous mind and correct judgment which had induced him to repress the clerical usurpations of his time, and to penetrate into the mischief of that superstition which held society in subjection; we cannot suppose that in his reference to the pope respecting Ireland, he was actuated by any other motive than to give the enterprise some colour of fair pretence, and to reconcile to the vulgar, the pre-

judiced, and the superstitious, an extension of power, which would otherwise appear in their estimation, base and unwarrantable.

Had Ireland enjoyed the personal benefits of his sway, the greatest good might have resulted, but the unfortunate incidents of his reign, permitted not Henry to make that most important of all conquests, that of the affections of his new subjects, and through that kindly medium to have influenced their opinions, and regulated their stormy and irascible passions. The measures Henry was compelled to pursue were those of necessity; they were certainly not always guided by good policy, that being too often forgotten in the irritable moments of his jealousy, of the growing power of his vassals, a jealousy, perhaps, increased, if not actually produced by the experience of the infidelity and ingratitude of men, imposing upon, and outraging, as they too often do, the finest sensibilities of our nature. Be this as it may, the plans pursued, we have seen, were both injudicious and totally insufficient to effect what we must, in common justice to Henry suppose were his intentions, which must certainly have been to obtain something of greater value than a sovereignty of mere formal homage and inconsiderable tribute.

Richard, surnamed Cœur de Lion, succeeded to the English throne without opposition, but imbued with a large share of the prevailing passions of the times, a romantic desire for strange adventures, and an excess of zeal for the external rites of religion, Richard seemed to think the principal design of his government must be the attempt to recover the Holy Land from the infidels, and he united with the Emperor Frederick Barbarossa and Philip Augustus of France, in the third and last crusade. In the enthusiasm of this expedition, he was in-



different to his claims as sovereign in Ireland, and left his brother John to assert the power and authority derived from his father's grant.

John now assumed the title of Earl of Moreton and Lord of Ireland.\* By the latter, he had formerly granted lands to St. Thomas the Martyr, and one of the first acts he now exercised was, to grant to this religious house a tenth of the revenue of *his* city of Dublin. By another charter it is also invested with several privileges and possessions, with immunities from all exactions and secular services, excepting only *in hiis quæ ad regiam coronam pertinent* with the power of holding a court for all pleas and complaints *nisi de hiis quæ ad regiam coronam spectaverint*. John also granted franchises and liberties to the city of Dublin, to be held of him and his heirs. He granted lands to be held by knight's service of him and his heirs, with liberties and free customs, and with a reservation of church lands, donations of bishoprics and abbeys, and pleas belonging to the crown. He confirmed a grant of land to the abbot of Glendalough, and united the see of Glendalough to that of Dublin. He appointed the deputies to govern Ireland during the reign of his brother Richard. These were the essential acts of power exercised by John during the reigns of his father and brother, by virtue of his pompous title of Lord of Ireland, which appears to have given him no higher authority than other governors. In those parts of Ireland not possessed by the English, his authority was not acknowledged even by foreigners. And when Richard had pre-

\* The title of earl or eorl, meant originally a man of noble birth, as opposed to the ceorl. It was not a title of office till the eleventh century, when it

was used as synonymous to alderman, for a governor of a country or a province. After the conquest it superseded altogether the ancient title.

vailed on the pope to send his legate to solicit contributions for his expedition to the Holy Land, this spiritual mendicant was commissioned to exercise his jurisdiction in those parts of Ireland in which John, Earl of Moreton, had power and dominion. John himself speaks of his limited authority, and Eva, heiress of king Dermot, with still more precision, establishes the fact. But while John reserved the exercise of these powers, the administration of affairs and the support of his authority were entrusted to the British deputies. Hugh de Lacy had so conciliated the good-will of John, that he supplanted the rough De Courcy, and obtained the government. The uncourtly soldier could not conceal his indignation, to find his long services so slighted, and he retired in disgust. After his secession, the real weakness of the government was betrayed. The Irish were not insensible of the advantages to be derived from the discovery, and were ready to prove that their national spirit was not extinct, should fair opportunity be given for its action.

This spirit was soon displayed in insurrections and confederacies, to the confusion and distress of the kingdom, to add to which, Dublin was nearly destroyed by accidental fire, and the country was infested by robbers, who practised their violence without restraint or correction. Yet in the midst of this disregard of all laws human and divine, an abbey was founded by Cathal, surnamed the Bloody-handed, a fierce Irish chieftain, to mark the spot where he obtained a victory over the English. This victory raised to excess the dangerous spirit of the chiefs, urging them to hostilities against the detested borderers, occasioning continual distractions, and fraught with misery to both parties, of whom it is

hard to say which was the most barbarous. Again domestic jealousy and dissension saved the English from destruction, but the country was laid waste and ravaged, without any acquisition of real or permanent advantage. Such were the unfortunate events during the administration of the Earl Marshal, when Hamo de Valois was appointed to succeed him in the year 1197, a period of the utmost confusion and distress, when John de Courcy and Hugh de Lacy were employed in their respective provinces, independent of the English government, all Munster evacuated, and the province of Leinster with difficulty maintained. We avoid as much as possible secular history, but it will be found that a brief attention to the progress of political events is absolutely necessary, to illustrate those immediately connected with the Irish church.

To supply the necessities which he found pressed heavily on the enfeebled government, Hamo could devise no more speedy, and he thought effectual expedient, than the invasion of the ecclesiastical possessions. He therefore commenced his administration (instructed, it is probable, by John, being in perfect accordance with his exacting spirit) by seizing various lands, which had been granted to the see of Dublin. This act of violence was the more offensive and revolting, as the ecclesiastical rights were at that period deemed infinitely more sacred than those of other subjects. The archbishop, John Comyn, personally interested in the prosperity of the see, inveighed bitterly against the unwarrantable usurpation. Remonstrances, expostulations, and denunciations of the vengeance of heaven against the abominable sacrilege were abundantly employed, but without effecting redress. Comyn pro-

fessed to consider this obstinacy as a persecuting expulsion from his pastoral charge, and resolved to abandon his diocese rather than appear to acquiesce in the profane usurpation of ecclesiastical rights. He accordingly repaired to his cathedral with every solemn indication of a holy confessor, weighed down by the hand of persecution. All the attractive and gaudy appendages of Romish ceremonies were removed. No books, chalices, or images, were visible. He ordered the crucifixes to be crowned with thorns, and laid prostrate on the ground, and laying a tremendous sentence of interdict upon his diocese, departed from the kingdom. A miracle was devised more deeply to affect the minds of the ignorant and superstitious on this memorable occasion. One of these prostrate crucifixes was shown with all the marks of agony impressed upon it, the face inflamed, the eyes dropping tears, the body covered with sweat, and blood and water issuing from its side! The exiled prelate received this wonderful declaration of heaven in his favour, solemnly attested by his clergy, to be laid before the Roman pontiff. Yet were his enemies still obdurate, and though the devotional horror of the multitude was exalted to feverish excess by this deliberate and impious fraud, which their credulity and fanaticism construed into an evidence of divine wrath against the profane usurpers of sacred property, yet the suffragans of the archbishop were too much interested in the preservation of their own individual properties to hazard the displeasing the civil government by espousing the cause of their metropolitan. Hamo in fact did not confine his depredations to the see of Dublin. When that of Leighlin became vacant, he would not allow the abbot of Rosseval, who had been elected bishop by the clergy, to be consecrated, but seized the temporalities for his

own use and that of the state.\* The exiled archbishop made the most earnest applications to Earl John, as well as to Richard, but neglect followed both. We are informed by Leland, that it was not till some years after, that Hamo, struck with compunction for his offence, granted to the see of Dublin twenty carucates of land, in atonement for the depredations he had committed in the course of his government. This was in perfect conformity to the principles of the age, in regard to ecclesiastical property, in which we may observe a species of moral compensation ; for great as were the acquisitions of the church, they were frequently torn from her, as in this instance, by lawless power. Men who perhaps passed their lives in sacrilegious plunder, left their acquisitions as expiatory offerings. Rapacity frequently invaded ecclesiastical possessions with a daring violence not to be resisted, while, with a strange inconsistency, the utmost apparent reverence was paid to religious institutions and its ministers. During these disorders, Roderick O'Connor, last of the Irish monarchs, died in extreme old age in the monastery of Cong, where he had passed twelve years of profound quiet, unaffected, and

\* Leighlin, in county Carlow, and province of Leinster. The bishopric was united to Ferns. At the east end of the church of old Leighlin is a famous well covered with great ash-trees, and dedicated to St. Lasarian. This place was formerly a city though now a mean village. It was a *sole* bishopric, founded in 632, and united to Ferns 1600. It is said, Germundus, a Danish prince, lies buried in this church. The last bishop of Leighlin, before the union

with Ferns, was Robert Grave, who, coming by sea to be installed, suffered shipwreck in the harbour of Dublin, and perished in the waves. The cathedral was burnt to the ground in consequence of lightning, and rebuilt in 1232 ; then dedicated to St. Lasarian or Lazarinus. Since the sees were united, it is used as a parish church, and is kept in good repair. There are also the remains of an old abbey.



undisturbed by the contending factions of his province, and unnoticed by his subjects. Like his contemporary Henry the Second, he suffered from the defection of his sons, which unnatural act deprived him of his throne. As Roderick had long ceased to exercise the regal power, his death occasioned no changes, and was an incident which soon passed into oblivion. By the demise of Richard the First the succeeding year, the rights transferred to John as Lord of Ireland reverted with the title to the crown of England.

From this period to the close of the thirteenth century we may regard the papal dominion as in the zenith. Rome had resumed all the terrors of her ancient name among the nations, her empire was even greater, for it extended over the minds as well as called into action the physical energies of men, in the contests in which she involved her royal vassals, in order to effect the purposes of her temporal ambition. The general supremacy affected by the Roman church over mankind in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, derived considerable support from the promulgation of the canon law. As the jurisdiction of the spiritual tribunals increased and extended, it was found necessary to establish an uniform system for the regulation of their decisions. After several minor compilations had appeared, Gratian, an Italian monk, published about 1140, his *Decretum*, or general collection of canons. The canon law was almost entirely founded upon the legislative power of the pope. The superiority of ecclesiastical to temporal power, or at least the absolute dependence of the former, strongly marks every passage in the canon law. It expressly declares that subjects owe no allegiance to an excommunicated lord, if after admonition he is not reconciled to the church. By means of her new jurisprudence, Rome ac-

quired in every country a powerful body of advocates, who, although many of them were laymen, would of course defend every pretension of the papacy. The institution also of the mendicant orders contributed powerfully to the aggrandizement of the papacy. The luxury and ostentation of the old monastic orders, had in a considerable degree brought them into disrepute. Their accumulated wealth had produced a deplorable relaxation of that discipline which had rendered them the object of public reverence. To counteract this alienation from the hierarchy, no means seemed so apparently efficacious as the institution of religious societies strictly debarred from the insidious temptations of wealth. Upon this principle was founded the order of mendicant friars, rendered incapable by the rules of their foundation of possessing estates, being maintained only by alms and pious remunerations. Of these, says our historian (Hallam), the two most celebrated were formed by St. Dominic and St. Francis of Assisa, and established by the authority of Honorius the Third, in 1216, and 1223.\*

\*The Dominicans first came into England 1221 at Oxford. Franciscans at Canterbury, 1234. Both orders being confidential agents of the pope, they under various pretences exacted large sums of money through the kingdom, and drew even from the abbots of the monasteries. They early settled in Ireland also. An abbey of the Franciscans was founded 1460, at Innisherhan, county Cork, by Florence O'Driscoll, and an abbey of Dominicans was founded by the sovereign brethren and commonalty at

Kilmallock, county Limerick, which from the many remains of ancient grandeur has been called the Irish Balbec. In 1296, Sir William de Burgh founded a monastery for Franciscans at Galway, county Galway, province of Connaught. In 1381, at the period when there were two popes, the people of Ireland were doubtful to which they should pay obedience; pope Urban, to fix them entirely to his interest, empowered the guardian of this monastery to excommunicate every person in the pro-

Various other mendicant orders were instituted in the thirteenth century, but most of them declined or were suppressed, and besides the two principal none remain, except the Augustins and the Carmelites. These preachers were received by the people with enthusiasm not in the smallest degree deviating from the faith of the church, they professed only to teach it with greater purity, and to observe her ordinances with greater regularity. The supineness and the corruption of the secular clergy gave them every advantage over them; by preaching in public ways and administering the communion at a portable altar, they drew around them multitudes of such listeners as in all ages are easily attracted by similar means. The parish churches were deserted, none confessed but to these friars, and the regular discipline appeared to be subverted. The privilege of performing the sacerdotal functions in this manner was conceded to the mendicant orders by the favour of Rome; for aware of the powerful support they might receive from these orders, the pontiffs accumulated privileges and benefits upon them. They were exempt from episcopal authority, permitted to preach or hear confessions without leave of the ordinary, to accept of legacies, and to inter in their churches. Such privileges were naturally resisted by the other clergy, the bishops remonstrated, but it was all in vain, the privileges and the communities of the mendicant orders were

vince of Connaught who should adhere to Clement the seventh who he assured them was anti pope. A Dominican friary was founded at Clonmell in 1269, dedicated to St. Dominic. In the same year Otho de Grandison created a Franciscan friary, the church of which was

esteemed the most magnificent in Ireland; in it was kept an image of St. Francis, of the miracles wrought by which, marvellous stories are related. These are sufficient to prove that the mendicant influence early prevailed in Ireland.

peremptorily established. The bishops and secular clergy thus saw themselves excluded from the confidence of the laity; for in auricular confessions and other superstitions of the times, the friars, armed with the authority of the Pope, arrogated to themselves the power which had heretofore been possessed by the clergy. The Franciscans especially undermined the secular ecclesiastics. As a proof of the overweening pride of these professors of poverty, we may name a book published in the thirteenth century by a Franciscan under the title of "Introduction to the Everlasting Gospel," in which the author exalts St. Francis above Jesus Christ, and arrogates to his order the glory and the merit of reforming mankind by a new gospel, substituted in the room of that of Jesus Christ, thus to raise the mendicant tribe to the height of divine estimation in the eyes of mankind. This impious book was however, universally condemned, and the pope, mighty as he was, was obliged to decree it to the flames. It was perfectly natural that the favour bestowed upon these orders by the popes, should render them the obsequious servants of the holy see; and they sedulously exerted themselves in exalting its merits and maintaining its supremacy, and as many of these monks became eminent, both in canon law and scholastic theology, their influence was great and extended.

The dispensing power of the popes also created much trouble and incalculable mischiefs in destroying confidence between man and man in the observance of promissory oaths. Two dangerous principles are laid down in the decretals, that an oath disadvantageous to the church is not binding, and that one extorted by force was of slight obligation, and might be annulled upon ecclesiastical authority. It has been remarked, that if the pe-

riod we are reviewing was distinguished by greater ecclesiastical pretensions than any preceding; it was also one in which the disposition to resist them, quickly required greater consistence and determination. In fact, ecclesiastical jurisdiction so encroached upon secular tribunals that the evil was working its own remedy. The incoherent medley of laws and magistrates which these innovations brought in their train, could not fail to produce a violent collision of interests and endless confusions while it tended to subvert all temporal government, till at length it powerfully excited the jealousy of sovereigns; and thus at the very period when the papal structure appeared most stately and magnificent to the beholder, its foundation was secretly undermined and ready to give way, by the imperceptible but sure operation of mutable human opinion, naturally alarmed at the Babel pride which sought to rear an earthly temple to the skies, and to grasp all temporal as well as spiritual dominion. We shall close our cursory view of ecclesiastical innovation and pretension, with the substance of the famous constitution of Boniface the eighth.\* It is denominated *Unam Sanctam*; the language is—The church is one body, and has one head. Under its command are two swords, the one spiritual, the other temporal; that to be used by the supreme pontiff himself, this by kings and soldiers by his licence and at his will. But the lesser sword must be subject to the greater, and the temporal to the spiritual authority. It concludes with the declaration that the subjection of every human being to the see of Rome, is an article of neces-

\* This pope excommunicated Philip the Fair, assumed the title of "Master of all Kings," caused two swords to be borne

before him, put two crowns on his head and instituted the Jubilee.



sary faith. Another similar document pronounces all persons of whatever rank obliged to appear when personally cited before the audience or apostolical tribunal at Rome ; “ since such is our pleasure who by divine permission rule the world.” It will appear evident that the jealousy of sovereigns was not excited without cause when we reflect upon the important consequences which this high self-constituted authority involved.

## CHAPTER VII.

*John's accession to power—Hamo de Valois dismissed from his government—His successor Meiler Fitz Henry possesses political abilities—These advantages counteracted by dissensions of Irish lords—John de Courcy and Hugh de Lacy assume independence of the crown—English lords engage in local factions—Consequences—Great superstition prevailing—Conduct of William de Burgo—Conduct and indignant feelings of de Courcy—Is summoned to the presence of John—Obeys not the mandate—Is forcibly conveyed to England and confined—Proceedings of John—Policy of Innocent the third—Litigation of John with Irish clergy—Operations of the Pope—John determines to make an expedition to Ireland—William de Braosa—Irish chiefs swear allegiance—Facile disposition of the Irish—Proceedings of the king—Politick measure—Henry de Londres invested with the government—Ireland included in the submission of John to Innocent the third—The indignant feelings of Henry de Londres—Innocent writes to the clergy of Ireland—John's quarrel with his barons—Ireland at least indirectly benefited by the great charter—Superstition greatly prevails—Religious orders abound—Mendicant orders favoured—Useful to the hierarchy—Dissensions produced—Increasing arrogance—The evil tends to effect its own remedy—Doctrine of transubstantiation pronounced—and auricular confession ranked among the duties prescribed by divine law.—Persecutions against heretics—Death of John—Henry the third accedes—Irish lords petition for new graces—Request the queen or the king's brother may reside in Ireland—The king's answer—Duplicate of charter sent to Ireland—The good defeated by local rivalry envy and disunion—Pernicious consequences—Tranquillity—Geoffry de Maurisco administers the government aided by Henry de Londres—Distinguished by his sovereign—His character—Ireland lost much by the death of earl of Pembroke—Disorders revived—Churches burned—Priests massacred—State of Society not favourable to peace and union—Henry's desire to improve the condition of Ireland—Investiture of Ireland on Prince Edward on his marriage—He undertakes a crusade and neglects Ireland—State of Ireland similar to that of England, but evils aggravated by local circumstances—Exactions of the king and the pope—The con-*

*sequences—Italian clergy encouraged—Remonstrances of Irish clergy—English clergy equally disliked—Arrogance of Irish clergy—Petition illustrative of their general conduct—Pope writes to Irish clergy—Encroachments of the clergy—Excommunication—Instances of it—Statute of Merton—Insincere policy of Henry—Pride of the clergy—Low state of moral feeling—Assumptions of the pope—They arouse the jealousies of the people—Gregory publishes his decretals.*

#### THE THIRTEENTH CENTURY.

PERHAPS Ireland had not much reason to regret that although John had obtained full royal power, yet at the very commencement of his inglorious reign he was involved in such difficulties, that he had neither leisure nor probably any inclination to attend to the settlement of an island, so oppressed and harassed by continual contests, and so torn by faction as it then was. Hamo de Valois, whose mercenary spirit had led him not only to harass the church with his exactions, but also to commit great depredations on the laity, whereby he had amassed great riches at the expence of the crown as well as of the people, was in consequence removed with disgrace, being obliged to pay the king one thousand marcs as a discharge from his accounts. His successor was Meiler Fitz-Henry, natural son of Henry the first, and one of the bravest barons who had first adventured into Ireland. This nobleman possessed abilities to have made his government effective and useful, but a want of co-operation both in the king and great lords, obliged him to confine himself to the seat of government, as he was destitute of sufficient force to make any attempt to extend the English influence. The barbarous quarrels of rival chiefs still continued to distract the country, and both John de Courcy and Hugh de Lacy entered into treaties with the neighbouring lords, and assisted in their local and provincial contests,

both of them assuming independence of the crown, and even openly impeaching the title of John to the royal dignity. The English lords thus engaging in the local factions and contentions of the natives, could not fail to produce the most mischievous consequences, as instead of softening and civilizing them, it rather tended to keep alive their fierceness of spirit, and to increase the anarchy they ought to have tranquillized.

From the shocking detail of factions, usurpations, and massacres given by the Irish annalists, they appear not to have been produced so much by any natural defect of sensibility, as a base superstition, the certain and fatal corruptor of every generous and humane affection. Thus no chief was ever slain either in war or otherwise, but was found by some means to have offended one of their renowned saints : his death was imputed to the just vengeance of heaven, and was to be distinctly noted in order to display the power of the offended saint.

William de Burgo, an English lord, encouraged by the weakness of the government, and ambitious to obtain new acquisitions, forgot his allegiance to the crown, and made war as a sovereign and independent chief, proceeding to alarm the chiefs of Desmond by a vigorous incursion. After some hostilities the authority of the clergy together with that of the pope's legate residing in Desmond, prevented the calamities of war. By their interposition a treaty was entered into, and concluded, between the Desmonds and de Burgo, who had the honour of receiving hostages from the Irish lords as a security for the due performance of their stipulations. Meiler Fitz-Henry having with difficulty raised a sufficient force, conceiving it his duty to support the authority of his royal master against his revolted English subjects,

bent his course towards Limerick, of which place de Burgo was governor, with a resolution to chastise his disloyalty. The Irish chiefs who had provoked the English government, fearing the effects of the revenge they merited, with their usual mutability offered their assistance to Meiler Fitz Henry, who accepted the welcome reinforcement. Thus for the first time was seen an English governor at the head of native Irish troops. De Burgo could not resist the force, capitulation was therefore his only course. His submission was accepted, and homage renewed. Meiler entered into a regular and formal treaty with his new associates in arms, who harassed by faction and contention, readily took shelter beneath the protection of the English government. The spirit of disaffection which had arisen among the English barons, had been excited not only by their local power, but also by that generous spirit of innate integrity which ennobles man. It was impossible to reconcile with this spirit the conduct and the character of John, the unworthy son of the high-souled Henry, the imbecile and cowardly deserter of his own cause in France; the oppressor of his country, the murderer of his nephew. The ardent and artless de Courcy was more especially unable to conceal his sentiments of abhorrence, and expressed his strong feelings in terms suitable to his unrefined integrity.

Hugh de Lacy of more flexible and temporising character, and jealous of the increasing power of the rough soldier, took instant advantage of his honest but indiscrete frankness, by delating him to the king as a dangerous and powerful subject, who not only had abjured his allegiance, but boldly and unequivocally accused his sovereign as the assassin of his nephew, the rightful heir of the throne. The unworthy John was naturally



stung by this well merited reproach, and incensed at the revolt of his baron. [1203.] He summoned him to his presence to do him homage, De Courcy treated the mandate with contempt. Upon which, De Lacy and his brother had commission to convey the refractory noble to his enraged sovereign. These rivals of John de Courcy proceeded with alacrity to the execution of their commission, we pass over the detail of their operations to effect this service, as although highly interesting yet quite irrelevant to our subject, and content ourselves with saying that De Courcy was conveyed to England and condemned to perpetual imprisonment. Upon his death, which appears to have taken place soon after this event, the earldom of Ulster was granted to De Lacy in prejudice to the right of Milo the son of De Courcy; thus it seems he was not reconciled to the king or received into favour, but on the contrary, his possessions were transferred to the family of his rival. The distress of John obliged him to summon to his assistance his most favourite barons: Hugh de Lacy and Meiler Fitz Henry were called into England, and Walter de Lacy the brother of Hugh, together with the archdeacon of Stafford were entrusted with the government. The latter was deemed a proper agent to solicit the subsidy which John demanded from the clergy of Ireland, in order to enable him to recover Normandy, and oppose the progress of Philip of France. This was the usual pretence of the mercenary and improvident John which served him to harass his subjects with continual oppressive demands exacted with merciless rapacity, and lavished without honour or advantage till roused from his scandalous apathy by the aspiring ambition of Innocent the third. This great political pontiff had a short time previous to the accession of John, been openly and

boldly opposed by a prince of Desmond, in his attempt to confer the bishopric of Ross; yet not discouraged, he with his characteristic vigilance watched his opportunity of making experiment of his power in Ireland, before he declared his designs against the church and state of England.

In the grants made to the English adventurers in Ireland, for the most part there was an express reservation of the donations of bishoprics and abbies to the lord of Ireland. Accordingly, on the decease of Thomas O'Connor, prelate of Armagh, John asserted this privilege, and in virtue of it nominated Humphrey de Tickhull, an Englishman, to the see. The suffragan bishops, however, and some of the clergy of the diocese, urged most probably by the legate residing in Ireland, proceeded, in disregard to the royal mandate, to elect Eugene, a countryman of their own. John, indignant at this contempt of his authority, addressed an appeal to the Irish legate against this irregular election; but Eugene in the meantime repaired to Rome, and his nomination was confirmed by the pope. The king, still more indignant at this usurpation of his authority, issued a peremptory mandate to the clergy of Armagh, strictly forbidding them to receive Eugene, or to acknowledge him as their prelate; and, with a resolution to defend his rights which redeems his character from utter obloquy, on the death of Tickhull, he nominated the archdeacon of Meath as his successor.

Thus was the contest protracted for a considerable time, the clergy of Armagh adhering to the pope, and receiving Eugene; the king insisting on his privileges, and withholding the temporalities of the See. The reader of history will know, that this is but one of numerous instances of papal assumption. The pretext to justify these arbitrary

proceedings was, an ardent zeal for the welfare of the church, and a paternal concern lest dangerous heresies should get a footing into the flock of Christ. The innovation was keenly opposed by the bishops, who had hitherto enjoyed the privileges of nominating to the smaller benefices; and still more by several sovereigns, who employed the force of warm remonstrance and vigorous edicts, to arrest the progress of this new pretension. None felt more the despotism of the pontiff than John of England, in which, whatever might be the unworthy character of the monarch, the conduct of Innocent III. was unjust, imperious, and cruel.

But this aspiring pontiff was not content with his usurpations of the civil power. He aimed at a substantial and real dominion over the princes of the earth, and for this end he knew it to be necessary to reduce the ecclesiastics themselves into an entire dependence on their spiritual leader. Innocent began his operations by imposing taxes, at pleasure, on the clergy. The crusades offered him a pretext. He sent collectors all over Europe, who levied, by his authority, the fortieth of all ecclesiastical revenues for the relief of the Holy Land. Many other gross invasions of ecclesiastical property followed; and although necessity obliged to submission, they produced a very natural disaffection towards the court of Rome.

The character of John and the detestation in which he was held, gave the advantage of popular favour and opinion, however, to the clergy in this dispute respecting the primacy of Armagh; and this must ever be regarded as an important advantage. The English competitors solely relied on court favours; they possessed little individual merit, and depended upon fortunate incidents or connections, to obtain preferment. Eugene, on

the contrary, had recommended himself by a long course of exemplary conduct ; which raised a prejudice at the pretensions of his rivals, and affixed odium on the opposition of John. But the length of the dispute, and the intervention of other affairs, operated in favour of Eugene, more than the superiority of his character, which, perhaps, would not have been so highly appreciated, had not his nomination been opposed by a hated power. But above all, we may attribute influence to three hundred marks of silver, and one hundred marks of gold, presented to the mercenary John in his necessities, without the apparent interference of the prelate. By the persuasive eloquence of this gift, the violence of the incensed monarch was softened. He was prevailed upon to invest Eugene with all the rights of the see. So that Innocent thus gained an advantage, which the reader of English history will see he took good care to improve and establish, in his contest respecting the see of Canterbury, in 1205. On that memorable occasion, when the Bishop of Exeter and others of his brethren declared for the pope, and abandoned his diocese, the Irish prelate of Armagh, whose election, as we have related, the king opposed, was entrusted with his pastoral charge. But the dreadful sentence of excommunication, the disaffection of his subjects, and fears of a conspiracy among his nobles, at length so far prevailed over the supineness of John, as to determine him, in order to give lustre to his government, and to intimidate his enemies, to engage in some military enterprize. Scotland and Wales, which were first threatened, averted the evil by timely submission, and there was little real occasion to carry hostilities into Ireland, the vigorous government of Meiler Fitz Henry having reduced it into some order. But a pre-

text is never wanting to justify the obstinate acts of self-will, and even the tyranny of John furnished him with one. Conscious of the general hatred with which he was regarded, he required hostages from his nobility as security for their allegiance. Amongst these noblemen was William de Braosa, who had received considerable grants in Thomond. To the king's messenger, who came for this purpose, the wife of Braosa replied with indiscreet severity, that her children should never be entrusted to a man who had murdered his own nephew. William, though innocent of the insult, was pursued by the vengeance of John; he fled with his wife and children to Ireland, where they were generously protected by de Lacy. The king, however, made this the pretext for his expedition into Ireland. The tragedy of Braosa was soon completed; his retreat was discovered, his unhappy wife and children were seized, imprisoned, and finally there starved; and the baron himself narrowly escaped by flying into France.\* On the arrival of John, we are told, upwards of twenty of the Irish chieftains swore allegiance to him, engaging to establish the English laws and customs in the kingdom: and in the same year, 1210, courts of judicature were instituted. The readiness of the Irish to enter into solemn engagements, and with the same facility to depart from them, is well known. It is probable that their consciences were quieted by penances, or some services rendered to the priesthood; for unless the taint of false principles

\* The wife of Braosa is said to have addressed herself to the queen, and attempted to purchase her mediation by an extraordinary present from

her Irish demesnes, of four hundred kine, all milk white, except the ears, which were red.



in religion had entered deep, and spread wide in the social body, it is hardly to be conceived that the moral sense should be so deadened.

The name of king seems to have acted like a prostrating spell upon the fierce and haughty chieftains, and to have brought them crouching to the feet of the base-minded John.

John, however, seems to have projected some schemes of improvement and legislation, for the more effectual information of his Irish subjects than they had hitherto obtained; he took with him some individuals versed in the laws of their country, by whose counsel and assistance a regular code and charter was ordained and appointed. The king's lands were also divided into counties, with sheriffs and other officers. John remained three months in Ireland, and on his departure the government was entrusted to John de Grey, Bishop of Norwich. This prelate is said to have administered the government with so much wisdom and vigour, that he was enabled, when England was threatened with a French invasion, in order to execute the pope's sentence of deposition, to send a company of knights, with three hundred well appointed infantry, from Ireland, to the assistance of the king. This is an honourable testimony to his loyalty and courage, as Ireland was still disturbed by local factions, which kept the English in a state of insecurity, and obliged them ever to be on the defensive.

We shall now mention an act of sound policy, which, whether it emanated from John or his ministers, is worthy of record; and as a prelate was the appointed agent, we may be excused the digression. It appears from the period of John's visit to Ireland, to have been considered as a point of sound policy, to take every method of

conciliating the affections of those chiefs who had become feudatories to the king. Together with a patent of protection to Cathal, a chieftain who had appealed to the justice of the English to support his local claims, was an order to Henry de Londres, Archbishop of Dublin, to purchase such a quantity of scarlets as he should judge sufficient to make robes, to be presented to the kings of Ireland, and others of the king's liege men, natives of the kingdom.

"It is very probable," says Leland, "these robes were made after the English fashion. If so, it was by no means a contemptible device to endeavour to habituate these chiefs to the English garb, and by their example to render it fashionable in their territories."

"Men's apparel," saith Spencer, speaking of Ireland and its manners, "is commonly made according to their conditions, and their conditions are oftentimes governed by their garments; for the person that is gowned, is by his gowne put in mind of gravitie, and also restrained from lightness by the very unaptnesse of his weed." And the gentler and less offensive method of introducing an advantageous change of apparel under the appearance of grace and favour, had it been pursued with steadiness and address, might have proved more effectual than the penal laws of later times, which by an avowed and violent opposition to the manners of the Irish, proved too odious to be reconciled."

Henry de Londres, who succeeded to John Comyn in 1213, was now, 1214, invested with the government, although it was, for the most part, administered by Geoffry Morris, an eminent English settler in Munster. Henry himself was summoned to attend his royal master in England,

the first instance recorded of a prelate of the Irish church being admitted to the councils of his sovereign, and acting as a spiritual baron of the realm. When the contest of John with Innocent III. ended in his shameful submission, the prelate of Dublin is named first of those lords, who were present at the execution of the deed, in which he barely declared, that not constrained by fear, but by his own free-will, he did for the remission of his sins and those of his family, resign England and Ireland to God, to St. Peter, and St. Paul, and to Pope Innocent, and his successors in the apostolic chair, agreeing to hold those dominions as feudatory to the see of Rome, for himself and successors, by the annual payment of seven hundred marks for England, and three hundred for Ireland, in acknowledgment of the pope's supremacy and jurisdiction. He further stipulated, that if he or his successors should presume to revoke or infringe this charter, they should instantly forfeit all right to their dominion. These were the conditions for restoring to him the privilege of communion, and the return of his regalia. Every spectator of this humiliating scene glowed with indignation, and Henry de Londres exclaimed aloud against the intolerant insolence of the legate trampling the tribute-money under his feet, in token of the utter subjection of the king. Henry is honourably distinguished on this occasion, as the only person who ventured to express indignation at the shameful transaction, and the overweening haughtiness of Pandolf. But although this legate had brought John to these base submissions, he refused to remove the excommunication and interdict, till an estimation could be taken of the losses of the clergy, whose

estates he had confiscated in consequence of their obeying the interdict,\* and of those who had exiled themselves in consequence of the sentences of excommunication. The issue of the whole was, after the most abject concessions on the part of John, that the bishops got reparation beyond what they had any title to demand, and the inferior clergy were not so fortunate. After the interdict, in consequence was taken off, the

\* The sentence of interdict was at this time the great instrument of papal vengeance and policy. It was denounced without mercy on offending sovereigns, and made the guilt of one person involve the ruin of millions even in their spiritual and eternal welfare. The execution of it was artfully calculated to strike the senses and imagination in the highest degree, and to operate with irresistible force on the superstitious minds of the people. Indeed, few minds possess strength sufficient to repel the appalling and paralyzing effect of a whole nation being suddenly deprived of all exterior exercise of its religion. To view altars despoiled of their ornaments, crosses, reliques, images, and statues of saints prostrated on the earth; and, as if the air itself was profaned, and might pollute them by its contact, the priests covering them up, even from their own approach and veneration. The use of bells forbidden, the bells being removed from their places, and with other sacred things laid

on the ground. Mass celebrated with closed doors, and none but priests admitted to the holy institution. The laity partaking of no religious rite, except baptism to new born infants, and the communion to the dying. The dead refused burial in consecrated grounds, but thrown into ditches, or interred in common fields, their obsequies unattended by any ceremony. Marriage celebrated in the church-yards; the people prohibited the use of meat, as in times of deepest penance; debarred from all pleasures and entertainments, and forbid even to salute each other, or to give any decent attention to their persons or dress.

Every circumstance indicated the deepest distress, and the most immediate apprehension of divine vengeance and indignation.—*See Hume's History. Reign of John.*

Our nature is too prone to be affected by externals, not to be powerfully influenced by such a dreadful state of society, and few are the minds sufficiently powerful to resist its terrifying effects.

king renewed in the most solemn manner, and by a new charter, sealed with gold, his professions of homage and obedience to the Romish see.

A new legate, Nicholas, Bishop of Frescati, succeeded Pandolf. He came with a letter of credence from the pope, conceived in terms of deep hypocrisy; and when John had made the second resignation of his kingdoms we have adverted to, Innocent, with an ostentation of favour and condescension to his royal vassal, addressed a letter to the prelates, princes, lords, and people of Ireland, notifying the total reconciliation made by the blessing of Heaven between the royal state of England and the holy see, expressing the tenderest concern for his beloved son in Christ, the illustrious King John, whose realms, by his grant, were rightfully invested in the Roman church. It concluded with commanding and directing them, by his apostolic mandate, to persevere in their allegiance to the king and his heirs, who were now the objects of his paternal care and favour.

This transaction was succeeded by the contest between John and his barons; Henry de Londres again appears in the councils of his monarch, attending the congress of Runcwede, taking place immediately after the Archbishop of Canterbury. In the preamble to the great Charter, he is also mentioned as one of those prelates and barons, by whose counsel it is alleged to have been granted. With other prelates, he protested on occasion of a clause of this charter, by which it was apprehended that the being of all forests would be endangered, and joined in declaring the intention of both parties. We find him likewise united with the English prelates, in a protest against the refusal of the barons to certify their submission and allegiance, by an instrument



under their seals. Yet, although this prelate, and also William, Earl Marshall, a baron of great wealth and influence in Ireland, were thus attendant on the king, it does not appear on this important occasion that any particular requisitions were made in behalf of his Irish subjects, or any measures were taken for including them specifically in the grants of the crown.

It is true, no immediate changes were made by the concession of the great charter, as far as relates to Ireland, yet doubtless it would give rise by degrees to more order and justice in the administration of government. For although, as our great historian observes, the great charter contained no establishment of new courts, magistrates, or senates, nor abolished the old—though it introduced no new distribution of the powers of the commonwealth, and no innovation in the political or public law of the kingdom, it yet guarded, by verbal clauses, against such tyrannical practices as are incompatible with civilised government. The barbarous license of kings, and of the nobles, was thereby restrained; men acquired, of course, more security for their properties and their liberties; and government approximated nearer to that end for which it was originally instituted—the distribution of justice, and the equal protection of the citizens. Acts of violence and iniquity in the crown, which before were deemed merely injurious to individuals, were now regarded, in some degree, as public injuries, and as infringements of a charter calculated to promote general security. Hence the establishment of the great charter, without seeming otherwise to innovate in the distribution of political power, became a kind of epoch in the constitution; and we may add, gradually and

imperceptibly extended its influence to the remotest parts subjected to English sway.

The superstition of this period was excessive; multitudes of religious orders abounded everywhere, and were not only tolerated, but were distinguished and enriched with various privileges and prerogatives. The number of convents increased in proportion to monasteries. The circumstances of the church had produced the mendicant orders. Innocent III. with the sagacity that distinguished him, perceived the necessity of their institution, and accordingly gave them his most cordial protection, and indications of favour. Too many of the monastic orders, beneath the corrupting influence of opulence, had lost sight of their original obligations; and on the other hand, the enemies of the church, the various sects who had left its communion, followed certain austere modes of life and conduct, which formed a strong contrast between them and the religious, not much to the credit of the latter in the public estimation. These sects maintained, with justice, that voluntary poverty was the leading and essential quality in a servant of Christ. They obliged their doctors to imitate the simplicity of the apostles—reproached the church with its overgrown opulence, and the vices and corruptions of the members of it flowing from this source. They gained so much credit from this profession of their principles, that it was deemed indispensable by the hierarchy to introduce into the church a set of men, who, by the austerity of their manners, contempt of riches, and external gravity and sanctity, might resemble those doctors who had gained such reputation to the heretical sects, and who might be so far above the allurements of worldly profit and pleasure, as not to be seduced

from the performance of their sacred duties, or from persevering in their subordination to the pontiffs.

Experience proved the policy of these societies, they proved highly useful, they were indeed the very soul of the hierarchy, the engines of state, the secret springs of the motions of the one and the other, and the authors and directors of every great and important event, both in the religious and political world. They restored the church from the decline which threatened her previous to their institution, by their zeal and activity against heretics in negotiations and embassies for the interest of the hierarchy, and in confirming the wavering multitude in their implicit obedience to the pontiff. These benefits were rewarded by privileges which soon however rendered them objects of envy, and in many instances the discipline of the church was invaded and injured in their favour, so that the most bitter dissensions were produced between them and the bishops. When it became more generally known that they possessed such a peculiar place in the esteem and protection of the church, the number of them multiplied so exorbitantly all over Europe, that they at length became a burden not only to society but even to the church itself. Supported by the pontiffs, the pride and arrogance of the Dominicans and Franciscans, the two principal of these orders increased daily. Their impious presumptions deluded and captivated the ignorant multitude by whom they were well nigh deified, divisions even between the two orders were bitter, and their mutual schemes to gain ascendancy disturbed the tranquillity of the church which fostered them. Good however certainly sprang out of those evils, for if we trace the events that occurred in the church from this period, we shall

be convinced that the mendicant orders by their assumptions gave several mortal blows to the authority of the church of Rome, and excited in the minds of the people those desires for a reformation which produced in after times such glorious and substantial effects. The pope assumed a despotic power over all the churches, their particular customs, privileges and immunities being treated with disdain; even the canons of general councils were set aside by dispensing power, and the whole administration of the church centered in the papacy.

Innocent the third published new articles of faith, and amongst other opinions, pronounced that which is held to this day, and known by the term transubstantiation. The same pontiff placed by his own authority, among the duties prescribed by the divine laws, that of auricular confession to a priest, a confession that implied not only a general acknowledgement, but a particular enumeration of the sins and follies of the penitent. By this a powerful influence was obtained over the minds of men by becoming acquainted with their secrets. At the same time the faith of the penitent received no increase of vigour, nor their hearts substantial amendment. It served rather to instil into their minds a persuasion that by a private confession of sin, and a consequent submission to penances, or to the injunctions of the clergy, the greatest crimes might be expiated, though the commission was frequent and notorious. "Absolution," says a forcible modern writer, "which adds boldness to the resolute and the profligate, becomes a fresh source of disquietude to a timid and sickly mind. Doubts innumerable disturb the unhappy sufferer, not as to the priest in granting pardon, but respecting its own fulfilment of the required conditions, without which,

to receive absolution is sacrilege." How different are these superstitions and morbid feelings to those of firm reliance and animating hope, resting on a Saviour's merits, and that grateful love which excites to good works for his sake !

The doctrine of transubstantiation we shall see produced a long series of contention and trouble in the church, and brought with it a train of ceremonies and institutions respecting the eucharist which still exist in full power to dazzle the communicants in the Romish ritual. During the period we now review, the Roman pontiffs carried on dreadful persecutions against those they branded with the denomination of heretics, that is, against all those who called in question their authority, or taught doctrines different from those adopted and propagated by the see of Rome, while the hierarchy rejected every thing that tended to remove the evil they threw over the lustre of genuine Christianity, well knowing that its authority must decline in proportion, as the mind is opened and enlarged ; and that its reserve and dissimulation must give way to the piercing glance of truth directed by enlightened intellect. Although it is equally unjust and inconclusive to pass a general censure on any principles from their individual abuse, yet we may cite the character of John, so conspicuous at this period, as an instance of the inefficacy of the religion of the age to purify the heart or correct the passions. The progress of his life was marked by the display of complicated vices, ruinous to himself, destructive to his people, and odious to all. His death, in the forty-ninth year of his age, freed the nation from his corrupt example, and the dangers to which his crimes and his follies combined to expose it. On the accession of his infant son Henry, it appears that the Irish lords who had derived no



individual advantage from the great charter, thought it a favourable period for explaining their grievances, and petitioning the throne for new graces; for this purpose they made use of the intervention of Ralph, bishop of Norwich, one of the king's chaplains. Their complaints related to the violences of John, and among their requisitions was one of infinite consequence, and which if obtained might have proved of incalculable advantage to the English interest as well as that of Ireland. It was that either the queen dowager Isabella of Angoulesme or the king's brother should take up their residence in Ireland, "The people of this land" saith Davyes "both English and Irish, out of natural pride, did ever love and desire to be governed by great persons." The answer of king Henry the third was very gracious, but the above requisition was waived in the following clause of it. "As to sending our lady mother or our brother into Ireland, our answer is, that taking the advice and assent of our faithful subjects, we shall do that which shall be expedient to our interest, and the interest of our realm." The great charter conceded by John was renewed by Henry, with such alterations and amendments as the circumstances of the times made necessary, and a duplicate of it was transmitted to Ireland under the seal of the legate and the protector William earl of Pembroke, for the benefit of the king's faithful subjects in the kingdom, and with those alterations only which the local necessities of Ireland required. Thus were the rights and privileges of the English settlers ascertained and established, and good opportunity for rising in the scale of nations was given them. They were put upon an equality of rights and privileges with their fellow subjects of England, and obtained the same grants which are to this day revered as the

basis of English liberty. But the same spirit which had hitherto disturbed still possessed them, and they in consequence still lived in a state of rivalry, envy, and dissension, and as their claims were to be supported by force of arms, their own vassals as well as the native Irish felt the severest consequences of their pride and oppression. Hence those calamities under which the nation groaned for so long a period may be traced not to the inequitable and oppressive principles in the English government, but to the vicious and impolitic conduct of individuals. The gradual progress of the English power had by the period we are now arrived at, considerably weakened that of the old Irish chieftains. It was only a very few that their annalists could extol as the terror of the Gauls (so they styled the English), and destroyers of their castles, whenever they once had paid tribute or submission to the foreigners.

The earl of Pembroke, who administered the government of the young king with ability and vigour, had large possessions in Ireland, and was in consequence attached to their interests. They were encouraged by the expectation of his support, and at the same time restrained by the authority of his station and character from all irregularities, which they were sensible he would be informed of and punish. These causes produced tranquillity throughout the island. Geoffry de Maurisco continued in the administration, and Henry de Londres was sent under the pretence of resuming his pastoral charge, but really as coadjutor to Geoffry. The king's letter, addressed to his liege barons of Ireland, expresses the reluctance with which he parted with this prelate, and how necessary his presence and counsels were to him and the realm of England, directing them to consult him and the chief governor in every thing

pertaining to the regulation of the kingdom. But although this prelate was so highly distinguished by his political conduct, yet in his ecclesiastical character he was no less eminent. Soon after his arrival he held a synod at Dublin, the constitutions of which are extant, and do honour to the principles and temper of De Londres. But the Irish relaters give a repulsive picture of his private manners and his insolence towards his dependants. They inform us that he summoned the tenants of his see to produce the instruments by which they held their lands, which he had no sooner received under pretence of examining their titles, than in an affected passion he committed them to the flames. A violent tumult succeeded the first astonishment at this treacherous act. Several of the bishop's domestics were grievously wounded, and he narrowly escaped. To allay the commotion he had raised, he found it necessary to confirm their tenures to the aggrieved parties; but he could not efface the just odium of his attempt. He was branded with the name of Burn Bill, and ever after known by that disgraceful appellation. It is mortifying to see this prelate thus departing from his principles as a man and spiritual guide, to observe the favourite and counsellor of his sovereign descending to an act which would have disgraced the most vile mercenary, but it is a striking instance of the contempt with which the rights of the subjects in Ireland were in these times treated by the more powerful of the neighbouring kingdom. Ireland, by the decease of the great earl of Pembroke in 1219, lost a powerful and useful patron, and from that period disorders again revived. English claims and Irish rivalry again filled the kingdom with confusion. Ever the secret enemies, and often the avowed adversaries of each other, the

English frequently drove the Irish into insurrections, and then punished them with redoubled cruelty for their resistance. Amongst the violences committed, disgraceful mention is made of the burning of churches and the massacre of priests.

The mixture of Irish tributaries and English subjects, which formed the community, was highly inimical both to the peace and welfare of the nation. In this state of jealousy and outrage, it will readily be imagined that the salutary institutions of law were little regarded. Equity and justice were scorned by those imperious lords, whose sole pursuit was rapine and ambition, and so entirely were they contemned, that a remonstrance appears to have been made in 1228 against this dangerous neglect and suspension of the laws, Henry finding it necessary to transmit his mandate to the chief governor for suppressing the innovation. But this would appear to have availed little or nothing, as another similar mandate was issued in 1246. The Irish who did not enjoy the privileges of English laws were particularly liable to oppression, for harassed on every side by their native chiefs, and the more powerful English lords, without enjoying the security of subjects, they felt sensibly their inferiority, and several instances occur in this reign of some of the most peaceable suing for a royal patent by which they might enjoy the privileges of English subjects, and on their plea of fidelity and good services were admitted by the king to a participation of the rights they desired. Henry indeed appears to have been sincerely interested in the amelioration and improvement of Ireland, but some counteracting cause continually opposed his views. In the year 1253 for instance, a measure was pursued which might have been attended with

most important results, had England herself been composed, or the advantages of a regular and peaceable establishment in Ireland duly considered, this was the investiture of Ireland upon the gallant Prince Edward, on his union with the Infanta of Spain. So that the lands possessed or claimed by the king's subjects in Ireland, were called the lands of Lord Edward, the officers and ministers of government were styled the officers of Edward Lord of Ireland, and the writs ran in that prince's name. Some time subsequent to these grants, Edward was directed by Henry to repair to his Irish government for the more effectual settlement and reformation of the state.

Happy in all probability would it have been for Ireland, had her government been administered by a prince of such distinguished abilities. But he found elsewhere ample employment for his active spirit, and the affairs of Ireland were conducted by deputies under every disadvantage of being narrowly watched by the envious and jealous eyes of those who ruled in the king's name, and were not without alarm at the bold and penetrating spirit of his son. By this means the acts of his government were in a great measure rendered nugatory. When general affairs became more composed, the passion for crusades interposed, and Edward in pursuing the shadows of honour in far distant climes, neglected that in which he might have gained it in permanent reality, by civilizing a disordered people, by relieving them from the weight of oppression, and converting intestine tumult into peaceful concord. But while we remark upon the violent spirit of oppression and anarchy which pervaded Ireland, we must not be supposed to assert that it was peculiarly confined to that nation. The barons who exercised the one and produced the other



did but follow the example of those of England, as a glance at the history of the period will convince the reader. Ireland, exposed to the fatal mischiefs of a feeble government, an ambitious and daring nobility, laws suspended, controuled or contemned, torn by factions the offspring of pride, domestic anarchy, injustice of invaders, local feuds and barbarous massacres, presents at this period a melancholy study for the historian, reflecting equal disgrace on all parties. Natural evils accompanied these moral disorders, dearth and disease were the consequences of national confusion, and seasons remarkably severe are stated to have aggravated the heavy misfortunes of the kingdom, but without suspending those direful animosities which had produced the former of the evils. To heighten still more these calamities, the severest exactions were made on Ireland by the weak and irresolute Henry in his real or pretended necessities, and by the pope in prosecution of his avaricious and ambitious schemes. In the year 1226, a fifteenth of all cathedral churches and religious houses, and a sixteenth of all other ecclesiastical revenues were demanded by the king with the concurrence of the pope. In many respects amiable, Henry was yet totally unfitted to sway the sceptre in the disorderly times in which he lived; his temper was too facile and his mind too feeble. The one led him to impolitic changes, the other prevented him from duly appreciating the necessity of vigour, ability, and virtue in his ministers. His quarrels with the Scots, Welsh, French, and the king of Castile, in which he equally betrayed his weakness and ill-judged liberality, if such it might be called, that was exercised at the cost of others, were severally made the occasions of his demands both on the clergy and laity. But oppressive as were

these exactions, those of the see of Rome were even more so. In England they were carried to great excess, in Ireland they were intolerable, which was less able in its distressed state to answer the demands. The wretched laity were stripped of even the necessities of life, the churches of their ornaments, to supply the rapacious demands of legates and nuncios. The papal ministers, finding a vast stock of power amassed by their predecessors, were desirous of converting it to immediate profit, to be enjoyed at home rather than of enlarging their authority in foreign countries where they never intended to reside. Every thing was now become venal in the Roman tribunals, simony was openly and shamefully practised, no favours, and even no justice could be obtained without a bribe. The merit of an individual, or a cause, were light in the balance against the highest bidder. The pope openly assumed an absolute authority of setting aside, in all the plenitude of his apostolic power, all particular rules, and privileges of patrons, churches and convents.

On pretence of remedying the abuses that had crept into the church, and upon the plea of the poverty of the Roman see having produced the grievances, Pope Honorius in 1226, demanded from every cathedral two of the best prebend's, and from every convent, two monk's portions to be set apart as a perpetual and settled revenue of the papal crown. This however was too glaring an imposition to be conceded. About three years after he however demanded, and *obtained* the tenth of all ecclesiastical revenues, which was levied in a very oppressive manner; payment being required before the clergy had drawn their rents and tythes, at the same time sending about usurers, who in the exigence of this premature de-

mand, advanced the money at exorbitant interest. These usurers took up the trade of agents for the pope, and it is asserted that in a few years he through their means, partly by levies of money, partly by the revenues of benefices, had drawn from the kingdom nine hundred and fifty thousand marks, a sum equivalent to fifteen millions of present currency.\* The legates also were active agents in this avaricious exaction; one is stated, after having in vain attempted the clergy as a body, to have obtained individually, by the aid of menace and intrigue, large sums from the prelates and convents, and on his departure, to have taken more money out of the kingdom than he left in it. The experiment was so successful, that it was renewed by a nuncio, who was vested with powers from Rome of suspending and excommunicating all clergymen who refused to comply with his demands. The king, who relied on the pope for the support of his tottering authority, never failed to countenance these exactions, indeed he sometimes shared the booty, and was indulged with the produce of taxes imposed upon his own clergy to defray the costs of his projected war against Sicily.

While these exactions were taking place, all the chief benefices of the kingdom were conferred upon Italians, great numbers of whom were sent over to be provided for. The evils of non residence and pluralities followed to an exorbitant and pernicious extent. As an instance, Mansel, the king's chaplain, is stated to have held at one time seven hundred ecclesiastical livings! Abuses of this kind became so glaring as to penetrate through the darkness of superstition itself. The

\* See Hallam's Middle Ages.

people entered into associations, rose against the Italian clergy, and with the usual impetuosity of an indignant and indiscriminating mob, pillaged the barns, wasted the lands, and insulted the persons of those foreign ecclesiastics found in the kingdom, and when the legal authorities proceeded to the investigation of these acts of violence, the agents of them were found so numerous, and those of high rank, that they passed unpunished. The public feeling was clearly indicated by these circumstances, it evidently appears that the papal power had passed its meridian, and was beginning at least, however insensibly, to decline in consequence of the inordinate avarice and unblushing extortions of the court of Rome. To the clergy it was oppressive and disgusting, and would have been resisted and resented, had not their own immunities and authority been so inseparably involved. In the laity, however, it produced an inveterate spirit, not only in reference to papal tyranny, but towards the whole system of ecclesiastical independence. These feelings were universal, and the king, however solicitous to countenance those exactions, yet sometimes found it necessary to yield to the general clamour, and to controul them, not only in England but in Ireland. Legates were sometimes refused admittance into Ireland without the royal licence. They pleaded the necessity of repairing thither, to confer absolution on those who in the public commotions had laid violent hands upon the clergy; a spiritual power not to be entrusted but to the immediate delegates of the sovereign pontiff. This pretence in that age of superstition could not be entirely rejected, but the strictest injunctions were sent to the government, that the legantine authority should be confined to this sin-

gle object; but rapacious demands, that could not be openly avowed, were successfully obtained by private and clandestine management.

In the same manner as in England, attempts were made to introduce numbers of ecclesiastics into Ireland. Strong remonstrances were made to Henry against this abuse, in thus investing proud and licentious foreigners with the dignities and revenues of the Irish church, whilst they refused to engage in the duties of their function, or to reside in the country which they pillaged by their extortion. Henry in consequence, by letter to the chief governor, directed that the pope's agents should not only be prevented from extorting money from the ecclesiastics, but from making such shameful dispositions of the benefices. But the clergy had not only the partialities of the pope, but those of Henry himself to contend with. The neglected, the worthless, or the depressed among their English brethren, sought refuge in the church of Ireland, to the utter mortification and discontent of the whole body of ecclesiastics, both of the Irish and English race, who regarded them as aliens, and deemed the invasion of what they called their own rights equally oppressive, whether Italy or England furnished the influx of emigrants. Though compelled to submit to the royal authority, strengthened by that of the pope, they yet determined to exert all the power they had left against the invasions of the foreign clergy. The Irish clergy were indeed possessed with exalted ideas of the dignity and glory of their own church. They triumphed in their long catalogue of saints, and the legendary histories of their piety, purity, rigid discipline, and stupendous miracles; affecting to scorn these new intruders and to dread their contamination. To further inflate this spiritual pride, Laurence



O'Toole, the famous archbishop of Dublin, had been canonized by pope Honorius. But how little reason they had to arrogate to themselves superiority in the peculiar graces of their function will appear in the following curious petition of a widow who had suffered from their violence and injustice, by which it is evident they were by no means exempt from the popular vices of the times.

“Margaret le Blunde, of Cashel, petitions our lord the king's grace, that she may have her inheritance which she recovered at Clonmell before the king's judges, &c. against David Macmacherwayt, bishop of Cashel. *Item.* The said Margaret petitions redress on account that her father was killed by the said bishop. *Item,* For the imprisonment of her grandfather and mother whom he shut up and detained in prison untill they perished by famine, because they attempted to seek redress for the death of their son, father of your petitioner, who had been killed by the said bishop, because he had their inheritance in his hand at the time he killed their father. And it is to be noted, that the said bishop had built an abbey in the city of Cashel on the king's lands granted for this purpose, which he hath *filled with robbers*, who murder the English and depopulate the country, and that when the council of our lord the king attempts to take cognizance of the offence, he fulminates the sentence of excommunication against them. It is to be noted also, that the aforesaid Margaret has five times crossed the Irish sea. Wherefore she petitions for God's sake that the king's grace will have compassion, and that she may be permitted to take possession of her inheritance. It is further to be noted, that the aforesaid bishop hath been guilty of the death of many other Englishmen besides that of her father. And that the aforesaid Margaret hath

been guilty of the death of many other Englishmen besides that of her father. And that the aforesaid Margaret hath many times obtained writs of our lord the king, but to no effect, by reason of the influence and bribery of the said bishop. She further petitions for God's sake that she may have costs and damages, &c." From men of this description, even supposing the picture highly drawn, violent measures might be expected. It is not a subject of wonder therefore that irritated by the invasion of their rights by Italian and English ecclesiastics, they passed a bold and violent ordinance deciding that no man of the English nation should be admitted or received into a canonicate in any one of the Irish churches, nor could Henry repress this spirit but by his usual application to the pope, who in his bull addressed in consequence to the prelates and chapters of Ireland, represents their ordinance as the effect of envy and unchristian partiality, and a design to establish hereditary right in God's sanctuary, commanding that it should be formally rescinded within the space of one month, and in case of a refusal threatening to rescind it by the plenitude of his authority, and to commission the prelates of Dublin and Ossory to declare it in his name absolutely null and void. But this is not the only instance in which the daring spirit of the Irish ecclesiastics was displayed. Indefatigable in their encroachments on the civil power in strict consistency with the spirit pervading the hierarchy, and zealous in their attempts to extend their jurisdiction, they were sedulous in seeking occasions of dispute and litigation instead of promoting peace and smoothing asperities, artfully contriving to draw every suit into their own tribunals, but where the character of the litigant parties could

not upon the broadest construction be brought within their pale, the bishops found a pretext for their jurisdiction in the nature of the dispute. Spiritual causes alone it was agreed could appertain to the spiritual tribunal. But the word was indefinite, and according to the interpreters of the age, the church was always bound to prevent or chastise the commission of sin. By this comprehensive maxim the common differences of individuals generally involving some charge of wilful injury, devolved into the hands of a clerical judge.

“Ecclesiastical tribunals took cognizance,” says Hallam, “of breaches of contract, at least where an oath had been pledged, and of personal trusts, they had not only an exclusive jurisdiction over questions immediately matrimonial, but also took the execution of testaments into their hands, on account of the legacies to pious uses which testators were advised to bequeath. They pretended a right to supply the defects, the doubts, or the negligence of temporal judges, and invented a class of mixed causes whereof the lay or ecclesiastical jurisdiction took possession according to priority. Besides this extensive authority in civil disputes, they judged of some offences which naturally belong to the criminal law as well as of some others which participate of a civil and criminal nature. Such were perjury, sacrilege, usury, &c. from the punishment of all which the secular magistrate refrained, at least in England and Ireland, after they had become the province of a separate jurisdiction. Excommunication still continued the only chastisement which the church could directly inflict. But the bishops acquired a right of having their own prisons for lay offenders, and monasteries were the appropriate prisons of clerks. Their sentences of excommunication were

enforced of necessity by the temporal magistrate with imprisonment or sequestration of effects, in some cases with confiscation or death."

An instance of the assertion of this self constituted power, presents itself in the historical annals of this reign occurring in Ireland. Stephen Songspee, the king's own *natural* brother, was excommunicated with all his train by an archbishop of Dublin, and another instance is also recorded of the assumption of a bishop of Ferns, who excommunicated the great and good earl of Pembroke on the pretence that he had disseized his church of two manors. On the decease of this earl the bishop appeared before the king to claim those manors. Henry ordered him to free the remains of the earl from the sentence and to pronounce that of absolution at his tomb. The prelate attended the king thither, and in his presence had the audacity to pronounce with affected dignity and solemnity, "O William, thou that here liest wrapped in the bonds of excommunication, if what thou hast injuriously taken away be restored by the king, or thy heir, or thy friends, with competent satisfaction, I absolve thee. Otherwise, I ratify the sentence, that being wrapped in thy sins thou mayest remain damned in hell for ever." As the heir would not give up the manors in dispute, the bishop confirmed his curse! and the superstitious vulgar were taught to believe that the earl and his four brothers died without issue by the immediate sentence of heaven, in confirmation of that pronounced by its minister. What a strong and affecting instance is this of the power of superstition to prostrate in the soul of man all that is rational, and noble and liberal! It is well known to the readers of English history that the contest respecting bastardy took place about the eighteenth year of this reign. By

the common law children born before wedlock were adjudged incapable of inheriting as illegitimate, but the canon law pronounced the contrary. In consequence of this discrepancy of opinion, when the spiritual courts were directed by writ to try the legitimacy of any suitor, their sentence was in direct opposition to that of the realm. Hence, the civil courts were compelled to alter the nature of their writs, and confined the clergy to a simple enquiry whether the party had been born before or after wedlock. The indignant prelates complained of this innovation of their rights, and imperiously demanded in a parliament held at Merton, that the common law should be reduced to a conformity with the canon, not the latter be made to give way to the former. The answer they received deserves record, as marking the spirited decision of the English nobility, and proving that the constitution had assumed a more liberal character than it possessed antecedent to granting magna charta, inducing a manly assertion of positive and national rights, a spirit which although it might be inherently possessed had at least been long in abeyance.

*Nolumus leges Angliæ mutari* marks the inflexible spirit of the noble judges of this question. In Ireland a similar contest subsisted, and an application was made to the king's courts in England, to decide the point, as well as some others, where the real nature and purport of the common law were not clearly defined. The famous statute of Merton was therefore transmitted into Ireland, for the direction of the king's subjects, and the regulation of their judicial proceedings in that kingdom. The exactions made on the Irish clergy were so far from humbling their pride, and subduing their spirit, that on the contrary, they were the means of increasing their



turbulence and presumption. To keep them in any degree of temper while he extorted sums from them, Henry found it necessary to profess the greatest zeal for the defence of their rights and liberties. With this insincere policy the civil power was directed to give the same support to their sentence of excommunication as was allowed to the clergy in England. Accordingly, this dire instrument of ecclesiastical vengeance was levelled without mercy against all who presumed to dispute their authority, or oppose their pretensions. They even carried this inordinate abuse of spiritual authority to such lengths, that the pope, probably anticipating the disgust it must occasion, was obliged to interpose to restrict it. But the oppressions they endured drove them to make reprisals on the laity, and under the specious names of oblations of the faithful, extravagant impositions were exacted. The magistrates and citizens of Dublin presumed to remonstrate, and ventured to circumscribe the revenues of their cathedral. The interference roused the indignation of the clergy, and the archbishop immediately fulminated a solemn excommunication against the sacrilegious invaders of his church, and also laid the city under an interdict; Cardinal Ottoben confirming the tremendous sentence. The citizens again remonstrated, and the cause received a formal hearing before the lord deputy and council. The clergy, however, proved triumphant, and the citizens were reduced to an abject and mortifying compromise. It was settled, that in case of any open or notorious offence, in which that of opposition to the church was of course included, a commutation for the first time should be made in money, for the second, that the offenders should be (the relater hesitates to name the humiliation) *cudgelled* round the church,

for the third, that the same discipline should be repeated publicly, at the head of a procession, and that in case of further obstinacy, they should be either disfranchised, or cudgelled round the city! What are we to think of that community, one portion of which could propose, and another submit to such a compromise?

Nothing can show in a stronger point of view the mischief of the perverted political and moral principles of the age, which made light of the validity of oaths, and allowed that a papal dispensation might annul any prior engagement, than the conduct of Henry himself on several occasions, although he was deemed a devout man, and was punctual in his observances of public worship. His well known solemn ratification of the great charter is a memorable instance of insincerity, and of the presumption to which a certainty of priestly absolution will lead an individual, as well as the inefficacy of outward ceremonies, however solemn, to produce any permanent or salutary effect upon the heart; and surely we may infer from the little influence of the Romish religion on the conduct, (of course, we speak generally,) although its splendid or solemn forms may powerfully raise and exalt the imagination, it is far from taking a strong hold of it. What can be imagined more impressive than the occurrence to which we have alluded. "All the prelates and abbots," says Hume, "were assembled, they held burning tapers in their hands; Magna Charta was read before them; they denounced sentence of excommunication against every one who should thenceforth violate that fundamental law. They threw their tapers on the ground, and exclaimed, 'May the soul of every one who incurs this sentence so stink and corrupt in hell.' The king bore a part in this

ceremony, and subjoined, ‘ So help me God, I will keep all these articles inviolate, as I am a man, as I am a Christian, as I am a knight, and as I am a king crowned and anointed.’” Yet was this tremendous ceremony no sooner finished, than the favourites of the irresolute and facile Henry made him return to the same arbitrary and irregular administration he had thus virtually renounced, and the reasonable expectations of his people were perpetually eluded and disappointed. It was in the miserable condition to which this disregard of true faith reduced the kingdom, that the aid of the commons of the realm was required. It was on January 20, 1265, that this parliament was called, forming the first outline of our present House of Commons, justly deemed the bulwark of British liberty.

While the most important transactions were taking place in the political world, the papal power yet supported itself. The pope exacted the revenues of all vacant benefices, the twentieth of all ecclesiastical revenues without exception, and the third of such as exceeded one hundred marks per annum, as well as the half of such as were possessed by non-residents. He claimed the goods of all intestate clergymen, and pretended a title to all monies obtained by usury ;\* benevolences were also levied upon the people. Although sunk in the deepest abyss of superstition and ignorance, these evils were so felt and considered, that it would appear serious thoughts began to be entertained by society to relieve it-

\* Interest had mounted to such an enormous height, instances occur of fifty per cent. paid for money. The sufferings of the Jews were dreadful, yet such was their love of

money, that they were tempted, by the exorbitant interest allowed, to remain where they were, the victims of the most grievous oppressions.

self of the yoke of papal despotism; and the Roman pontiff was obliged to devise new expedients, to fix it securely upon the Christian world. For this purpose it was that Gregory VII. published what are called his decretals. These consisted of a collection of forgeries, favourable to the usurpations of the court of Rome, a compilation of supposed decrees of popes in the first centuries. Absurd and contradictory as they were, they passed for authentic in the dark period of the thirteenth century, and men, entangled in the mazes of false literature, and the philosophy equally false then prevailing, had no internal armour to defend themselves, except some feeble rays of common sense among a few, which, however, passed for profaneness and impiety among the votaries of a religion of mere form and convenience, calling itself Christian, but destitute of the spirit which alone could entitle it to that high distinction.

## CHAPTER VIII.

*Decease of Henry III.—Accession of Edward I.—Ireland not essentially improved—Maurice Fitz-Maurice governor—Country embroiled with civil dissensions, increased by Scottish marauders—Thomas de Clare receives grants of land, passes over to Ireland—Impolicy of such grants—Contests with the new comers—Disadvantageous situation of the Irish—Petition of the Irish—The answer—Non-concurrence of those to whom final decision was submitted—Bitter jealousies and feuds prevail—Richard de Burgo, his oppressive measures—Exactions of the king—The Irish appeal to the pope—The king waives his demand—William de Vesey entrusted with the government—Dissensions not easily quieted—Vigorous government of Sir John Wogan—A more regular parliament than hitherto convened—More pacific temper prevails—Severe exactions of Edward, even the pope appears to fear him—Irish nobles join the army against the Scots—Insurrections in Ireland—Edward opposes the presumptions of the papacy—Refuses his homage to the pope—His death a calamity—The partiality of Edward II. to an individual of temporary service to Ireland—He appoints Gaveston to the government of Ireland—He is received with favour, and admired for his showy qualities—He excites the jealousy of the Irish lords—Earl of Ulster becomes his rival—They hold different courts—Frivolous subjects of dispute—Invasion by Robert Bruce—Distress and suffering occasioned by it.—Papacy takes part in the contest—Robert and Edward Bruce excommunicated—Irish send emissaries to Rome stating their distresses and oppressions of the English government—Pope exhorts Edward to leniency—The distress of the country extreme, famine and pestilence desolate it—Two archbishops administer the government, and Prelate of Armagh endeavours to rouse the spirit of his country against the invaders—And takes part with the English—Scots defeated—Effects of the war—Insufficiency of law to restrain excesses—English interest declines in Ireland—Clergy refuse to comply with the king's exactions—Edward endeavours to take refuge in Ireland—Demoralized state of the times—Clergy endeavour to check the vices and disorders of the realm, by encouragement of learning—Endeavour to establish an university—Conduct of Bishop of Ossory—*



*Charges of heresy—Attempts made to stem the torrent of papal corruption—Canons—Statute of provisos—The respect paid to the pontiff diminishes—Literature improves—Rapid march of mind—Richard Fitzraf opposes the pretensions of the friars—He is cited before the pope, and persecuted for his bold opinions—Died in exile—Considerable ardour prevails in literary pursuits—Restoration of the civil, and formation of the canon law conducive to it—Scholastic philosophy—Zeal for ancient learning—Science is encouraged by princes—Public libraries formed—Ecclesiastical corruption—Remarks of Bernard, a proof of the mental energies of men having been roused.*

At the period when Henry III., worn out by the cares of his reign, and the infirmities of age, paid the debt of nature, his gallant son, Edward, was absent in the Holy Land; and on his accession to the throne, 1272, we do not find the state of Ireland essentially improved, for he appears to have considered other arenas for the display of his political and military talents more worthy his attention, although, as lord of Ireland, he ought, at least, to have been aware of the disorders and grievances that pervaded the land, to rectify which would have been a worthy exercise of his discernment, and other eminent qualities.

The administration of the government had, some time previous to the death of Henry, been vested in Maurice Fitz-Maurice; on the demise of Henry, Fitz-Maurice received a formal letter from his successor, notifying his accession, and containing the usual commands to preserve the peace, &c., and requiring the usual oaths from the liege subjects. But these formal acts had no power to controul, or to intimidate the violent and disaffected; the very seat of government was insulted; the country was embroiled in civil dissensions, while petty factions, composed of English as well as Irish, pursued their individual schemes of in-

terest or revenge, in utter defiance to all legal restraint; and to add to the general confusion, the nation was infested by marauders from the Scottish isles, who, in the state of domestic anarchy, carried on their depredations with impunity.

In this state of things, Thomas de Clare, son of the Earl of Gloucester, who had married a daughter of the Geraldines, a young lord of martial spirit, received from Edward grants of land in Thomond, and led a powerful train of followers into Ireland to support his claim. Such grants, in the unquiet and jealous state of Ireland, were impolitic, as they greatly provoked the pride, and roused the resentment of the native Irish, who were, by these colonists, driven from their possessions. Contests followed the arrival of de Clare and his warlike train, and the result of fierce hostilities was the defeat and overthrow of De Clare. This young noble represented his situation, and Edward issued his mandate to the prelates of Ireland, to interpose their spiritual authority to allay and compose the animosities which existed. He had scarcely done this, when intelligence of civil war in Munster, and insurrections in Connaught reached him. Provoked by these multiplied aggressions, he indignantly recalled to England the chief governor, who had succeeded Fitz-Maurice. The government was entrusted, during his absence, to the inefficient hands of a friar; the disaffected took advantage of it to renew their outrages. Having succeeded, however, in satisfying the king, who, intent upon what he deemed more important designs, readily listened to any thing which tended to divest his mind of Irish disturbances, the recalled governor was again remanded to his post, to repress the commotions created by his absence.

This unhappy state of affairs was most sensibly felt by those Irish, who by their local situation held constant intercourse with the English, as they laboured under the manifold disadvantages of being confined to their ancient legal institutions, and hence the security of their lives and properties was more precarious than that of their English neighbours, while at the same time they were destitute of similar remedies. All hope of expelling the invaders had been long resigned, and the only alternative of security against their lawless oppressions appeared to be the acquisition of the rights and privileges, enjoyed by those with whom they were necessarily connected; and to convert their state of vassals and tributaries to the King of England, into that of subjects, amenable to his laws, and claimants of its privileges. An application was accordingly made to Ufford, the chief governor, and eight thousand marks were offered to the king, provided he would grant the enjoyment of the laws of England to the Irish inhabitants, (meaning those within what is called the English pale.) A petition thus drawn from an oppressed people was favourably received by Edward, who, where his aspiring ambition did not fatally interpose, was a friend to justice.

We extract the answer to this petition from the pages of Leland.

“ Edward, by the grace of God, King of England, Lord of Ireland, and Duke of Aquitaine, to our trusty and well-beloved Robert de Ufford, Justiciary of Ireland, greeting. The improvement of the state and peace of our land of Ireland, signified to us by your letter, gives us exceeding joy and pleasure. We entirely commend your diligence in this matter, hoping (by the divine assistance) that the things there so happily

begun by you, shall, as far as in you lieth, be prosecuted with the greater vigour and success.

“And whereas the community of Ireland hath made a tender to us of eight thousand marks, on condition that we grant to them the laws of England, to be used in the aforesaid land; we will you to know, that inasmuch as the laws used by the Irish are hateful to God, and repugnant to justice, and having held diligent conference, and full deliberation with our council on this matter; it seems sufficiently expedient to us and our council to grant to them the English laws; provided always that the general consent of our people, or at least of the prelates and nobles of that land well affected to us, shall uniformly concur in this behalf.

“We therefore command you, that having entered into treaty with these Irish people, and examined diligently into the wills of our commons, prelates, and nobles, well affected to us in this behalf, and having agreed between you and them, on the highest fine of money that you can obtain, to be paid us on this account, you do with the consent of all, at least of the greater and sounder part thereof, make such composition with the said people in the premises, as you shall judge in your diligence to be most expedient for our honour and interest. Provided however, that these people should hold in readiness a body of good and stout footmen, amounting to such a number as you shall agree upon with them for one turn, only to repair to us when we shall think fit to demand them.”

We may remark upon the first clause of this document, how difficult it is for a monarch to learn a correct state of affairs, through the medium of official channels; and in the last, we have an evidence of the oppressive nature of

ambition, and the facility with which it renders circumstances subservient to its desires. The Irish were to pay dear for their privileges. Still, however, the rectitude and policy of Edward appear in his granting the prayer of the petition, and had his permission been seconded by those to whom he left the decision, the benefits resulting might, in all probability, have been great and permanent. Yet, notwithstanding the application was renewed, and the king used every just means to effect it; his royal mandate was evaded by the more insidious artifices and mean subterfuges of those, who should have eagerly seconded a measure obviously calculated to effect the most pacific ends. But the selfish principle interposed. The measure, if carried into effect, would have circumscribed their rapacious views, and controuled their violence and oppression; hence it was denounced as visionary and impracticable.

Thus disappointed in their wishes of becoming peaceable and useful British subjects, it was natural that the Irish should become irritated to a high degree, that their resentments should become more bitter, their jealousies and contests more fierce. They assumed arms, but destitute of power, union, and discretion, to form any effectual confederacy, their insurrections only served to ravage the districts exposed, to raise direful but temporary confusion, or to cover some act of individual revenge.

In the lust of power and possessions, the English lords and principal settlers had become bitter enemies to each other, evidenced by continual acts of bloodshed. These civil broils were multiplied, and for some years remained even unnoticed by the government. The death of three great English lords, however, nearly at the same period, 1286, left Richard de Burgo, Earl of



Ulster, in an undisputed rank of eminence. The power, thus devolved as it were upon one who could have exercised it for good, produced no salutary effect, as it was fatally employed in oppressing and destroying all those who stood in the way of an insatiable ambition, and presuming upon the various engagements of his royal master, he pursued his aspiring course uncontrolled.

The confusion in Ireland little corresponded with the good intentions in which we will believe Edward sincere towards that disturbed country, still less were they favourable to the necessities produced by his love of power, and extended dominion. He had already, by the assistance and interposition of the pope, obtained a tenth of their revenues from the Irish clergy, on the fashionable pretence of providing for an expedition to the Holy Land. But he now resolved, by his own sole authority, to try raising a further supply, before he ventured the experiment in England. In his own name, therefore, he demanded an additional fifteenth of all the spiritualities in Ireland. The clergy were neither disposed to meet this demand, nor indeed were they able to comply. They appealed to Rome for protection, pleading to the pontiff against this royal encroachment on his supreme authority. At the same time, they humbly represented to Edward their total inability to meet his demand ; peremptorily refusing compliance with the requisition. The king did not go to the extremities he subsequently did with his English clergy ; he waived for the present his demand, and applied to the Irish laity of Ireland, and from them, after some altercation and delay, obtained a fifteenth of their effects.

Upon the pretext of quieting the commotions of the kingdom, but really to enforce these demands, William de Vesey, an English lord, was

entrusted with the government of Ireland. Endowed with a fearless spirit, and great activity, united with an inflexible and rigid temper, this noble seemed admirably fitted to administer the government of such a disordered state. He succeeded in composing the fierce spirits of the Irish insurgents; but when he attempted to strike at the root of the public evils, by endeavouring to repress the violences of the great English lords, he provoked their animosity, which was followed by accusation and recrimination, one party alleging that the other had departed from allegiance, and the other accusing his adversary of sedition and disloyalty. According to the martial spirit of the age, the combat was demanded and accepted, the day appointed; but before it arrived, the king, informed of the contest, summoned the parties to appear before him at Westminster, where, after various pleadings and adjournments, the whole process was annulled as informal, and Vesey resigned his possessions to the king. Thus was the public interest disregarded in the asperities of individual jealousies, and malignant quarrels.

Had not the violence of passion and the corruption of manners been at this time irresistibly adverse to wise and judicious institutions, advantages of a high nature must have been derived to Ireland by the government of Sir John Wogan, who was appointed 1295. Possessing a temper and discretion, of which his predecessors had been destitute, his first care was to endeavour to compose the dissensions which existed, by conciliation and leniency. Two of the principal contending nobles consented, by his earnest conciliation, and powerful arguments, to enter into a truce during two years. This gave the governor some little time to attend to the general disorders. For this purpose, a parliament was more regularly

and effectually summoned than had hitherto been convened in Ireland. Many salutary ordinances of this assembly were devised with equity and propriety, tending to promote peace, unanimity, and concord. Just and proper as they were, they had but a partial influence on a people so degenerate and depraved, yet they undoubtedly gave a check to many disorders of the nation, and a more generally pacific disposition prevailed. The king, encouraged by this national improvement, ventured to repeat his application to the Irish clergy for a subsidy, but history is silent as to the result. The tenths formerly granted for the service of the Holy Land, and which the pope took upon him to collect, were seized by order of the king, in the hands of the Romish agents; and without scruple applied to the purposes of his government. This however, was not the first or only instance in which the lofty and enterprising Boniface had experienced the peremptory and inflexible temper of Edward. He attempted not to resist his resolution in the present case, venturing no further than a gentle expostulation, and declaring he made him a free present of the revenue of the tenths of which the king had possessed himself.

The renewed Scotch war obliged the aspiring Edward to have recourse to every expedient to strengthen and support himself; and in consequence of his Irish subjects being enjoined to assist him, several Irish nobles and their followers joined his standard, and distinguished themselves in the field. But the absence of these lords produced a bad effect in their fickle countrymen; a licentious spirit of insurrection again manifested itself, and some of the finest and most valuable of the English settlements were desolated by incursions. The disorder reached even the seat of

government, and the most vigorous measures could scarcely preserve its security.

Although Edward oppressed the church with grievous extortions, he was resolute in his opposition to the usurpations of the Romish see, and even the lofty minded Boniface seems to have stood in awe of him. Edward had always paid with reluctance the tribute of one thousand marks, stipulated by John for himself and successors, suffering the arrears to run on for several successive years; but the stipulated homage he never would yield, and the pope, it would appear, somewhat afraid to contend the point with his spirited vassal, did not insist upon the performance of this humiliating ceremony. There were many occasions during the reign of Edward I., in which his arbitrary principles and impetuous temper pushed him to the brink of danger, but he likewise saw his error in time to retrieve it, and by his vigour and abilities saved himself and the nation, and kept every one in awe; converting materials which, perhaps, under any other monarch, would have ignited the beacon of war, into measures of individual and national advantage.

The loss, therefore, of this prince was sensibly felt, and men looked anxiously towards his successor, that he might be found possessed of some of the popular qualities of his father. But weak in understanding, and infirm in will, Edward II. was equally incapable of giving honour to his throne, or to promote or secure the welfare and prosperity of his dominions. The partiality however of the young king to an individual, who proved unworthy of the distinction, proved of some momentary service to Ireland. When a powerful combination of the nobility peremptorily required the banishment of the unworthy Gaves-

ton, a demand even enforced by parliament, the king, obliged to yield, instead of dismissing his minion to France, his native land, gave dignity to his exile, by appointing him vicegerent of Ireland, vested with power to give eclat to his government. The exterior graces of Gaveston attracted the attention and won the regards of a people, among whom his native pride had as yet made no personal enemies. The princely port and magnificent retinue of the new governor, captivated the eyes of those who loved display, and the vigour and high spirit of his actions, his gallant appearance, and engaging manners, seconded by his liberalities, perfectly won the hearts of the soldiers, and he proceeded successfully in the affairs of his high station. But the consequence and dignity he thus gave to his government, excited the jealousy of the Irish lords; Gaveston, therefore, soon found he was surrounded by rivals, amongst the proudest of whom was Richard, Earl of Ulster. The insolent pride which had rendered Gaveston so hateful to the English barons, was instantly aroused, when he found an individual affecting a state equal to his own. Each with a paltry rivalry, unworthy of men, and particularly statesmen, attempted to excel the other in parade and splendour. The earl held a court at *Trim* with great ostentation, and even so far affected royalty, as to confer knighthood on two young noblemen, and it is asserted that he even threatened Gaveston with open hostilities.

However, before these ill-timed jealousies could produce any serious effects, the favourite was recalled, and the government was again left in imbecility and confusion. Sir John Wogan succeeded to the administration, but the laws he ordained he had no power to enforce upon a people become so corrupt. We may form some



judgment of the perverted principles of the times, and the frivolous things which they dignified as essentials in religion, by the fact, that the Irish parliaments judged it a subject of great moment to agitate seriously, a contest for precedence between the prelates of Armagh and Dublin, and to deliberate whether a bishop should have his crosier borne erect or depressed in some particular districts. This affair had been deemed of such importance, that it was contested in the usual manner, with violence and bloodshed; nor was it determined till the King of England moderated between the parties.

It is not the province of this work to enter into the detail of the invasion of Ireland by Robert Bruce, which, at a period when some degree of tranquillity was restored to the nation, by the union of two illustrious hostile families, again reduced it to the extremities of distress and suffering. It is necessary, however, to state; that the success which had attended the arms of Bruce in Scotland, had by no means passed unnoticed by those Irish, who considered themselves allied to the Albanian Scots. Despising and hating the sovereign power in England, they felt mortified that the Scots should have anticipated them in throwing off the yoke, and that they had not availed themselves of the weakness and indolence of Edward the second, as a period fit for self emancipation. They applied to Robert Bruce, and the result was his sending to Ireland his brother Edward, who found many of the Irish toparchs ready to welcome him. Treachery and revolt pervaded the army, even among the English, and destruction marked the course of the invader, while secret disloyalty weakened the resisting power. In this state of things, the governor had ample employ to repress the Irish

insurgents in the very seat of government, and to apply the most effectual remedies in his power to the manifold distresses which the English had so long experienced as well as the Irish natives. His administration at this critical period was spirited, and so far effective, that the fortune of the invaders appeared to have received a check. The papacy took part in the contest, and a sentence of excommunication was thundered from Rome, against all the enemies of King Edward, in which sentence Robert and Edward Bruce were severally excommunicated by name. The same tremendous sentence was denounced against the Irish clergy of every order, who had preached with zeal to excite their countrymen to insurrection.

This interposition of the pontiff had been anticipated, and to guard against it, those Irish who had united with the invaders had taken the precaution to send emissaries to Rome with an affecting statement of the distress of their nation, and the oppressions of the English government. They recited the conditions on which Adrian had first permitted Henry the second to enter Ireland, but far from their having been fulfilled, they alleged that both Henry and his successors had loaded the unhappy victims of their power with continual oppressions and reduced them into such a miserable state of slavery that they were no longer able to endure their sufferings, and had been forced to withdraw themselves from such a cruel dominion, to invite another power to redress their wrongs and take the government of the kingdom. This remonstrance had so powerful an effect upon the holy father, that soon after his sentence of excommunication was promulged he transmitted it to king Edward accompanied with an earnest exhortation to weigh well the complaint and to re-

dress the grievances which had urged it. This application however, whatever might be the inclination of the king could not be attended with any immediate change. The distresses of the country and the invaders were horrible, famine pestilence and war raged throughout the wretched country: these calamities resulting from the evil passions of men, and forming their punishment, were with the true spirit of the times imputed as a judgment for the heinous sin of eating flesh in lent! At this period two archbishops namely of Cashel and of Dublin, successively administered the government, and when the English, well provided and appointed, and conducted by an able general, were sent to exterminate the invaders who had so severely harassed and distressed the nation, we find the prelate of Armagh a zealous partizan of the English interests, going through the ranks exhorting the men to behave valourously against the enemies of their nation, distributing his benedictions, and pronouncing absolution on all those who should fall in a cause so just and honourable. This zeal animated to fresh vigour the fearless bravery of the English, the conflict was tremendous and sustained by both parties with equal valour, it terminated in the defeat of the Scots whose leader fell. The English leader Sir John Birmingham first expelled from his territory the chief Irish support of the Scots, and led back his victorious troops receiving for the reward of his high services the earldom of Louth and manor of Athendee. But unhappily for Ireland, although the invader had thus fallen a victim to his rash enterprize, the effects of the war he had enkindled died not with him. In periods of such general commotion, however wisely laws may be framed or equitably administered, they are little effective to restrain

the violences or vindicate the injuries of society. But even could they have this salutary power in periods of anarchy like that we have noticed, Ireland enjoyed it not, the very source of public justice was poisoned by the distinction maintained between the Irish feudary and the English subject. The different modes of jurisdiction by which each was governed, every succeeding day lamentably demonstrated (by the most miserable effects), as well as the baseness and wickedness of those who had favoured this evil and infatuated policy. The evil was most severely felt during the Scottish invasion, and an ordinance was made to relieve it in some degree, as it was enacted that all the Irish who had received, or should receive charters of denization were for the future to be strictly obedient to, and protected by, the English laws which ordained felony to be punished capitally.

The English interest however from various concurring causes, into an explanation of which we cannot enter, sensibly declined in Ireland during the disorderly reign of Edward the second, and in the state of distress to which the nation was reduced, it may be imagined few resources could be found, or would have been sought, to minister to the necessities of England. Yet the attempt on Scotland in 1322, was made the pretext for calling off those forces from Ireland, for which there was there so much need against domestic enemies. The pope also apparently forgetful of the pathetic remonstrances of his Irish children, granted to the king a tenth of all the English revenues in Ireland for two years. To the first order the laity were obedient, and the troops proceeded to Scotland. But the clergy were refractory yet well knowing that they had to contend with those who were not to be influenced by reasons of

equity and humanity, they neither pleaded distress nor inability, they had recourse to evasion, demanding the pope's original bull, and as this was not produced they refused to pay the subsidy. This act of disobedience however would not have been ventured upon, had not the wretched state of England at the time encouraged the refusers. The horrible scenes that passed there we know ended in the ruin and barbarous death of the unhappy Edward; to whom was unjustly imputed the misfortunes which afflicted his kingdom.

Edward in the extremity of his distress made a fruitless effort to throw himself into the arms of his Irish subjects. But the triumph of his enemies was complete. Among the articles of accusation urged against the king, they insulted him with the loss of his dominions in Ireland. In delineating the manners of this unhappy period of history we must be sensible that the odious vices and lawless violences which disgraced Ireland also equally disgraced England. They were in fact vices of the times, not mere individual excesses. Perhaps of the two the Irish state of morals was the more pardonable, as temptations were frequent and government less respectable. The church was not inactive in this deplorable order of things. Some prelates of Ireland laboured with a spirit perfectly consistent with their sacred function, to give a check to the vices and disorders of the realm, by the encouragement of learning. Two successive archbishops of Dublin, had in the reign of Edward the second, laboured to establish an university in Dublin, not only for the study of theology, but that of the civil and canon law, the then fashionable part of literature in Europe. The pontificate, to which they applied, readily granted its sanction, and in 1320 archbishop Brick-



nor proceeded to erect and model an academical body in Dublin, in which degrees were conferred and studies so long continued that Edward the third enlarged the original endowment, and by special writ granted his protection and safe conduct to the students thirty eight years after the first establishment of this seminary. The period of distress and anarchy however was most unfavourable to the laudable undertaking. The institution languished for some years in the midst of dissension and disorder and at length expired.

“ And at the very time ” says the historian of whose pages we so largely avail ourselves “ when this upright and ingenuous prelate was exerting himself for the improvement and refinement of his country, the cause of ignorance and barbarism was not without its abettors, and that even among his own order.” Richard Ledred Bishop of Ossory, an individual possessing violent passions, and a proud vindictive spirit raised by an extraordinary act of persecution a scene of confusion in his diocese which soon created a great sensation throughout the Island.

A person of some distinction called Alice Ketler, with her son and some of her dependents were accused of witchcraft in the spiritual court of Ossory. One of these dependents was condemned and executed, the son imprisoned, and Alice herself though no charge could be clearly established against her, yet on an accusation of heresy, was tried convicted and condemned to the flames. Arnold de la Poer one of the magistrates of Kilkenny who espoused the cause of these unhappy culprits was also charged with heresy by the Bishop, he appealed to the chief justice, the prior of Kilmainham who countenanced and protected him. The prelate instantly extended his accusation to the justice who now found it diffi-

cult to secure himself, and left his wretched client de la Poer to expire in prison. Thus was a new weapon found to execute the private revenge of individuals, a new and horrid evil added to those already experienced in unhappy Ireland. Heresy that undefined term of horror involving every sin, struck awe even into the hearts of those who were continually breaking through every sacred bond of honour, outraging every feeling of humanity. The oppressor, the ravager, the murderer, each were zealous to approve themselves true sons of the church, and ready to execute her vengeance on all her enemies. A person of considerable family in Leinster named Adam Duff was violently seized and burnt for heresy. His offence was aggravated by a charge of horrid and senseless blasphemy: just as Ketler had her sacramental wafer impressed with the devil's name, and an ointment to convert her staff into a witch's vehicle. At length the mischief thus spread abroad, reverted upon its author. The bishop of Ossory himself was by his metropolitan formally accused of heresy and obliged to make a precipitate retreat. He appealed to the apostolic see, and freed his country from the consequences of his folly and superstition, called into operation to favour personal animosity and revenge, but it is to be feared that he had awakened a spark which was ready to flame when circumstances afforded fuel to cherish it. Many attempts were made at the period of which we now speak to stem the torrent of papal corruption, even so early as the conclusion of the thirteenth century a national synod had been held at London which undertook to reform the ecclesiastical abuses which prevailed. This synod in which the Welsh, Scotch and Irish clergymen were present as well as those of England was regarded as a great authority for

subsequent measures, and for a just rule of discipline in the church. Several of its canons are even still in use forming part of the canon law. The ninth canon provides against the evil of non-residence, obliging the incumbent presented to a benefice to resign other preferment and to reside. The twentieth provides against commutations for offences, and forbids the archdeacon even to receive money on such accounts; for "such practices," say the synod, "amount in effect to the grant of a licence for sin." The principal European nations indeed appeared although with different degrees of energy to make a stand against the despotism of Rome. In this resistance England was not only the first engaged but the most consistent. Edward the third by his statute of provisos secured the rights of patrons and electors of livings against the claims of the papal see, and with his usual vigour outlawed those who should dare to appeal to Rome; further measures tending to repress the interference of Rome were also adopted, especially the great statute of præmunire, which subjects all persons bringing papal bulls for translation of bishops and other enumerated purposes into the kingdom, to the penalties of forfeiture and perpetual imprisonment.

This act combined with the statute of provisos put a stop to the pope's usurpation of patronage, which had impoverished the church and state for the space of two centuries. The laity appear at this time greatly prejudiced against the papal power, this growing dislike, and opening conviction, was evidenced in endless complaints. "The parliament pretended" says Hume, "that the usurpations of the pope were the cause of all the plagues, injuries, famine and poverty of the realm, were more destructive to it than all the wars, and were the reason why it contained not a third of the inhabi-

tants and commodities which it formerly possessed. That the taxes paid to him exceeded five times those which were paid to the king, that every thing was venal in that sinful city of Rome, and that even the patrons in England had thence learned to practice simony without remorse or scruple. At another time they petition the king to employ no churchman in any office of state, and they even speak in plain terms of expelling by force the papal authority and thereby providing against oppressions which they neither could nor would any longer endure." Men in fact began to despise the pontiffs on account of their disputes about dominion, and thought of committing the keeping of their souls to God alone, and even to admit it as a maxim that the prosperity of the church and the interests of religion might be maintained, secured and promoted without a visible head, crowned with spiritual supremacy. This was effecting a great march in mental decision, in that dark age, and here we may clearly trace the germs of reformation beginning to vegetate. That they appeared perhaps more vigorous in England than elsewhere may be attributed to the hostility to the clergy, arising from the dissemination of the principles of Wickliffe. Some of the popes sensible of the depravity of the monks endeavoured to reform them, but disorders were become too inveterate to admit of much remedy. The two principal orders of the mendicants, viz. the Dominicans and Franciscans were at the head of the monastic orders and were indeed become the heads of the church, so extensive was the influence they had acquired that all matters of consequence, both in the court of Rome and in the cabinets of princes, were carried on under their influence and dominion. The multitude over whom they sedulously used every art

to fix their empire had such an exalted notion of these monks, and of their credit with the Supreme Being that numbers of both sexes, some in health, others infirm, earnestly desired to be admitted into the mendicant order, which they regarded as a sure and infallible method of rendering them acceptable to Heaven. They suffered therefore apparently but little from these various attacks, being resolutely protected against all opposition whether secret or open by the pontiffs, who justly regarded them as their best friends and most effectual supports. But while that ardent desire for temporal sway which prompted the papal measures of usurpation, seemed for a time to reap its gratification, it insensibly but surely impaired the essential constituents of papal authority. The overweening anxiety of the popes respecting the mere politics of the world and their own territory degraded, their dignity in the eyes of men. The veil woven by religious awe was gradually removed, and the common features of ordinary ambition appeared without disguise. And as the cupidity of the clergy in regard to worldly estate, had lessened every where the reverence in which they had been held, so the similar conduct of their head undermined the respect felt for him, and that even in the immediate seat of his power. The censures of the church, those direful excommunications and tremendous interdicts which had kept Europe in trembling awe, became gradually little regarded when they were found to be fulminated in every petty contention for territory. "The papal interdicts of the fourteenth century" observes Hallam, "wore a different complexion from those of former times." Though tremendous to the imagination they had hitherto been confined to spiritual effects, or to such as were connected with religion, such as the prohibition of marriage



and sepulture, but were now extended to secular things. Literature, long the passive handmaid of spiritual despotism began to assert her nobler energies by ministering to truth: mankind were taught to investigate and scrutinize what had hitherto been received with implicit respect; and such was the ardour for study, that we are informed the universities were crowded with students; thirty thousand are stated in that of Oxford alone. "What was the occupation of all these young men?" enquires Hume, "to learn very bad Latin and still worse logic," but that there were very many exceptions to this sweeping assertion, no candid mind can doubt. Among the most eminent professors of this age was Richard Fitzraf, an Irishman. He was educated at Oxford, and promoted by Edward the third to the see of Armagh. He greatly distinguished himself by opposing the pretensions of the mendicant orders, who armed with papal authority encroached on the rites observed by the secular clergy, and prevented them from the exercise of godly discipline. "I have" this eminent prelate observes "in my diocese of Armagh about two thousand persons who stand condemned by the censures of the church, denounced every year against murderers, thieves, and such like malefactors, of all which number scarcely fourteen have applied to me or my clergy for absolution, yet all receive the sacraments as others do, because they are *absolved* or pretend to be *absolved by friars*." Nor was this the only point in which Fitzraf opposed the mendicants, he condemned and withstood their practice of begging, and maintained it was every man's duty to support himself by honest labour, that it forms no part of Christian wisdom and holiness for men to profess themselves mendicants. That to subsist by begging ought to be matter of

necessity, not choice. That the Son of God as he never taught such doctrines, so he never practised them in his own person, and that although he was always poor when on earth, he never was a beggar.

Do we not see in these sentiments vigorous germs of that reformation, which was silently maturing itself in the hearts and opinions of men? Striking as they did at the very root of the pretended sanctity of the friars, they aroused every vindictive feeling against the bold individual who dared to promulgate them. Enraged to find the very practice they gloried in as exemplifying their extraordinary virtue, represented as in its own nature even unlawful, the prelate who had dared to utter such opinions was cited by the friars to appear before Innocent the sixth, and to give an account of his doctrine. The archbishop obeyed the summons, and in the presence of the pope defended at large, and with ability, the rights of parochial ministers against the intrusions of the mendicants, exposing the various enormities of the latter. What effect his defence and arguments had upon the mind of the pontiff, we are not informed. It is certain, however, that this bold professor of a doctrine so unpalatable to the holy see, was persecuted both by the civil and ecclesiastical powers, and underwent a variety of hardships.

In a certain meditation or prayer Fitzraf describes the outline of his own life, and particularly declares how the Lord had instructed him, and brought him out of the vain subtilties of Aristotle to the study of the holy scriptures. The beginning of this prayer is given by Fox, and is as follows: "To thee be praise, glory and thanksgiving, O Jesus, most holy, most powerful, most amiable, who hast said, 'I am the way

the truth and the life,' a way without observation, truth without a cloud, and a life without end. For thou hast shewn me the way, thou hast taught me thy truth, and thou hast promised me life. Thou wast my way in exile, thou wast my truth in council, and thou wilt be my life in reward." This eminent Irish prelate was seven or eight years in exile and died in that state, having defended his tenets with fidelity and firmness, both by his discourses and writings, till the period which robbed the world of his virtuous example. Of his refutation of the reigning abuses the account is ample, of his Christian spirit, doctrine and sufferings the account is brief, but sufficiently diffuse to prove that the materials were ample, had it been consistent with the religious prejudices and genius of the age to have moulded them into form.

In regard to the literature of this period a considerable ardour prevailed: from the latter part of the eleventh century, intellectual pursuits seem gradually to have acquired estimation. In the reign of our second Henry, Oxford became a flourishing university, and we have seen that Dublin was also a seat of learning which under happier national auspices might have rivalled its English sister. A large proportion of the students in most of these institutions were drawn from foreign countries by the love of science, the universities being each distinguished for their peculiar line of study. Endowments and privileges were liberally bestowed upon these institutions particularly in the three last of the middle ages, hence the spirit which had first led to their establishment was kept alive and gained continual accession of ardour. "This almost sudden (in the first instance) transition from an almost total indifference to all intellectual pursuits cannot'

says Hallam, "be ascribed to any general causes. Yet the restoration of the civil, and the formation of the canon law, were certainly eminently conducive to it, and a large proportion of the students confined themselves to jurisprudence. But the chief attraction was the scholastic theology." The love of disputation is natural to an acute understanding. Mystery and speculation seem congenial to the human mind, and are an evidence of its eternal essence. It is foreign to our plan, and far beyond our ability to enter into a discussion of this philosophy, or even to name those distinguished scholars who professed and taught it. It was ultimately proved really to be a waste of the faculties which were "in endless mazes lost;" wisdom was promised to reward the research but it eluded the eager inquirer. "After three or four hundred years," says the interesting historian we have quoted above, "the scholastics had not untied a single knot, nor added one unequivocal truth to the domain of philosophy. As this became evident the enthusiasm for that kind of learning declined, and after the middle of the fourteenth century few distinguished teachers arose among the schoolmen, and at the revival of letters, their pretended science had few advocates left, but among the prejudiced or ignorant adherents of established systems." It cannot be doubted however that the exercise of the understanding necessary in these researches after truth, however futile the attempt to arrive at it by that intricate path, strengthened the intellectual powers of men and prepared them for a wider range, the very futility of their attempts stimulated the intellect to search for a more secure anchorage, and about the period which we now review, that anchorage appears at least to be in some degree found. An ardent zeal for the restoration of

ancient learning began to display itself. Princes and nobles became more attentive and attached to literature as it became less confined to metaphysical theories, and dry canons of jurisprudence. Public libraries began to be formed on a more extended plan. A diligent search for manuscripts occupied the time and attention of eminent scholars, and Grecian learning revived. In fact, although the sun of science was not yet above the horizon, his refracted beams were becoming visible, promising to appear in radiance above the hovering clouds which yet concealed its glorious orb. We shall see it did appear, and by its genial warmth cherished into existence those pure gems of truth which were bursting their way through the indurated soil of ignorance and superstition, but while we thus gratefully and joyfully anticipate the fruition of the hopes raised by the circumstances we have so cursorily remarked upon, let us not too severely judge the corruptions both civil and ecclesiastical, which history, with due faithfulness records. Amongst those who only confessed with their lips, there were doubtless many who also felt in the heart. Let us recollect that while our judgment is shocked and our minds revolt from a religion of mere ceremony and parade, that they detract not from the loveliness and purity of true religion, and that many a vital spring of real godliness probably wound its peaceful and quiet way, fertilizing many a soul, though hidden from observation by the rocks of error.

The excess of ecclesiastical corruption, and the bold spirit it originated in the observers may be inferred from the remarks of Bernard a French Abbot in a sermon preached before a council. He told the great assembly, that with very few exceptions they were an assembly of Pharisees who made a farce of religion and the church un-



der the mask of processions and other external marks of devotion. "I am sorry to say" he added "that in our days the Catholic faith is reduced to nothing, hope is turned into a rash presumption, and the love of God and our neighbour is extinct. Among the laity falsehood bears the chief sway, and avarice predominates among the clergy. Among the prelates there is nothing but malice and iniquity. At the pope's court there is no sanctity, lawsuits and quarrels being the felicity of that court, and imposture its delight." When men dared to utter such sentiments in open council, the papal power must be thought tottering beneath the weight of its own corruptions. They breathe a spirit of inflexible truth and strong good sense, not the fruit of scholastic theology, but derived from the purer fountain of Christian study and that firm bearing of soul which it induces when truth is the object to be attained.

## CHAPTER IX.

*Subject resumed—Disappointment of the Irish—Consequences—Sir Anthony Lucy nominated governor—His vigorous proceedings—The king declares his intention of visiting Ireland—His insincerity, neglect of Ireland—Injudicious measures—Ecclesiastics frequently employed in official affairs, reasons why—Edward's displeasure and severity—Jealousy and dissension created—Parliament summoned at Dublin—Did not obey—One convened by the Lords at Kilkenny—Prepare a remonstrance to the king—King's answer gracious—Ralph d'Ufford appointed chief governor—His vigorous measures—His death unfortunate—Irritated lords repair to England, two of them appointed to attend the king to France—Proceedings of the parliament in Ireland—Ralph Kelly, bishop of Cashel refuses to levy a subsidy—Consequences—Tranquillity at length obtained—Sir Thomas Rokeby's meritorious government—Insurrections renewed—Earl of Desmond made governor, his speedy death—Useful ordinances of parliament and salutary regulations—Strong and obnoxious measures against the Irish—Impatience of the king—Sends his second son Lord Lionel to Ireland—Prejudices counteract every expected advantage—Endeavours to repair his error—Created Duke of Clarence—Recalled to England—Things revert to their former state—Clarence again sent—A parliament assembled at Kilkenny—Statute of Kilkenny—Clarence again leaves Ireland—Earl of Desmond made governor—Dissension and war—Parliament convened—Repugnance of nobles to repair to Ireland—Sir William Winsore appointed governor—Hires the Irish chieftains to oppose the incursions of their countrymen—The king complains of the deficiencies of the Irish revenue—Commands a parliament to be summoned—It refuses supplies—Displeasure of the king—His passionate conduct—Controversy with the parliament—The military genius of Edward inimical to Ireland, to be lamented—English interest declines in Ireland—English clergy, their conduct—Religious opinions an interesting study—The progress of intellectual improvement uniform—Literature encouraged—Circumstances progressively favourable to freedom of discussion and mental emancipation—Infallibility of the pope questioned by many—Wickliffe—Sacerdotal orders quarrel*

among themselves—Persecution renders men more zealous—Great schism in the church contributes to weaken it—Digression—Death of Edward the third—Accession of Richard the second—Complaints of the English parliament—Those of Irish subjects as to absentees—Objects of the English government—Parliament convened—De Vere the king's favourite created Marquis of Dublin—He is sent to Ireland with extensive powers—Richard hesitates and withdraws his consent to part from his favourite—Distresses of the Irish—Gloucester proposes to pass over to still the disturbances—He is prevented by the king, who resolves to go himself—He is assisted by his parliament—Lands at Waterford—Pride of the English, and assumption of superiority defeat the good which might have resulted—Narrow minded measures—Irish chiefs do homage—Elation of the king—Chieftains invested with knighthood—Magnificent display of the king—Writes to his uncle York—The reply—Richard is requested to return to England—The Lollards—The king besought to protect the church from this heresy—Richard's proceedings before departure from Ireland—Earl of Marche appointed his vicegerent—War is soon resumed—A pretence for a second royal expedition—Unmindful of the storm brooding in England decreed to overwhelm him, Richard lands at Waterford—Distresses the army encountered—Intelligence from England—Panic of the king—His deposition and death—Confusion of Ireland—A subsidy granted by the English parliament for the service of Ireland—Duke of Lancaster appointed vicegerent—Invasion of the Scots—Arrival of the duke—Art Mac Murchad—Little effected by Lancaster—He returns to England—Butler prior of St. John left deputy—Proceedings in Ireland—Black rent—Penal acts passed against heresy—The king advised to seize the temporalities of the church—Henry the sixth disregards Ireland—Sir John Stanley, governor, short continuance—Crawley, archbishop of Dublin succeeds—War and faction distress the kingdom—Lord Furnival, governor—Decisive measures, but partial—Prejudices of the English against the Irish—causes of them—Narrow policy of the English government on the point—The king memorialized—The chancellor refuses to sanction it with his seal—Indignant feelings roused—Earl of Ormond succeeds Furnival—Petition sent to the king—The prayer of it—Satisfaction of Ormond's government—Litigation of the clergy—Want of amity among the Irish—Accession of Henry the fourth has no effect in Ireland—Earl of March and Ulster appointed to the government—Deputes the bishop of Meath—Altercations in consequence—State of the church and literature—Learning flourishes—Arts and science cultivated and

*encouraged—Pontiff's patrons of letters, Nicholas the fifth—Invention of printing—Favouring causes of improvement—The church corrupt—John Huss—Jerome of Prague—Council of Constance—Monastic orders, their degeneracy—Diminution of the papal power—Causes—Fraternalists, their sufferings—Brethren of common life, their rule—Schools of the Lollards—Religion debased—The scriptures studied by many—Reflections.*

WE now return to the period from which the foregoing general observations have in some degree led us, as referring to Ireland, after having related the execution of Alice Ketler on a charge of heresy. The prior of Kilmainham appears in that unfeeling affair as an unsuccessful mediator. He subsequently became Lord Chancellor, and finally the government was entrusted to him. His administration was honourably distinguished by an office peculiarly consistent with his sacred function, as well as that justice which should ever mark the conduct of a chief magistrate. He effected by his mediation a reconciliation between several great contending lords, which greatly strengthened the English interest and consequently tended to awe the Irish insurgents, who smarting under the effects of their own turbulence, and dreading the existing state of union among the English, again addressed themselves to the throne of England petitioning for a removal of those legal distinctions which increased so much the anarchy of the land, praying that they might be abolished, and the Irish be admitted to the state and privileges of English subjects, without obliging individuals to sue for special charters. (There are many instances recorded of this having been done during the reign of Henry the third.)

The petition as on former occasions was remitted to the chief governor Darcy, who had succeeded to the prior. He was directed to refer it to the

Irish parliament; and it was with the same narrow and iniquitous policy, which had operated in former instances, either clandestinely defeated, or openly rejected. Thus did pride and self interest prevail over that generous conciliating system which might have effected the greatest national changes, have composed the turbulence of faction, struck at the root of pernicious prejudices, and diffused with the enjoyment of equal rights and privileges an union of action, and connection of interests, which would have equally promoted the happiness and prosperity of all. Their reasonable petition thus contemned, the naturally violent and impetuous spirit of the Irish again burst forth in an insurrection more simultaneous than had hitherto occurred. The flame of war soon raged in Meath, in Munster, and the fairest of the English settlements. The first successes of the insurgents encouraged them to proceed in their devastating course. We are told that in their triumphant and impetuous progress they surrounded a church, in which there were about eighty persons of English race, assembled at their devotions. These unhappy persons, well aware they had no mercy to expect from a furious and cruel enemy, petitioned only that their priest might be suffered to depart unmolested. This generous and affecting supplication, however, only urged the merciless ravagers to make the priest the first object of their vengeance. He held the host elevated before them, in the hope that the view of that awful object might have some influence upon their minds; but so far from the sacred image having this desired effect, the sight of it seemed to render them more furious. They tore it from the enfeebled grasp of the terrified priest, and spurning it to the ground, trampled upon it in impious mockery. They then plunged



their weapons into the body of the holy man, who had endeavoured to deprecate their fury, and the church, together with all the miserable people within it, was destroyed by fire. The horror conceived by these desperate acts demanded the most prompt and vigorous measures to arrest them. Deliberations were held, and armaments prepared; but their leaders were divided, and their troops employed with little honour or advantage.

In this state of anarchy and inefficiency, Sir Anthony Lucy, an English knight, was appointed to the government. Astonished and indignant at the insolence of the Irish, he justly suspected they were secretly instigated and abetted by some factious nobles. He entered on his administration with a determined purpose to support the interests of his king, by a vigorous opposition to the Irish insurgents, and a spirited investigation of the insidious practices of his insincere adherents. With this view he summoned a parliament at Dublin, but his order was little regarded, and the assembly was inconsiderable. It was adjourned to Kilkenny, and the numbers were still less. Disaffection, the governor supposed to be the cause of this disregard of his authority; and he determined to strike at the root of the evil, which he believed to be the disloyalty of some English lords. He caused six of them to be seized; the evidence against one of them, named William Bermingham, was conclusive and forcible; he was condemned and executed, and his brother escaped only by his privilege as an ecclesiastic.

But even the activity and power of Sir Anthony Lucy could not have proved equal to the vigorous opposition required, had not Edward at this period discovered an unusual attention to Ireland,

even to declaring his design of visiting that portion of his realm. He summoned some Irish lords to his court, and also all those barons of the realm of England, who enjoyed lands in Ireland. This and many other preparative measures seemed to indicate a settled purpose of complying with the desires of his parliament, and engaging in the effectual reduction of Ireland, where the English power, we have amply seen, had as yet obtained but a precarious and disputed settlement.

Still Ireland was fated to be but the secondary concern of its monarchs. All the preparations of Edward proved but a specious pretence for demanding supplies from his parliament, a veil to conceal those designs, which, though less honourable and justifiable, were better suited to the ambitious spirit of the young monarch. To recover the kingdom of Scotland was his aim, therefore when every thing was prepared for the pretended expedition to Ireland, the king removed the mask, and ordered the forces to march to the frontiers of Scotland. The only course, therefore, now left for the regulation of Ireland, was that of treating with the adversaries of the government. Accordingly, the prior of Kilmainham was commissioned to enter into such conventions with all the insurgents, both Irish and of English race, as he should judge most expedient. "Thus," remarks Leland, "were the turbulent and disaffected taught their own power, and the weakness and inefficiency of the government which attempted to controul them. Insidious accommodations were readily concluded, and a number of secret enemies admitted to the royal grace and favour, whose perverse dispositions were thus cherished, instead of being broken by a steady, firm, and vigorous authority."

We frequently find that ecclesiastics were employed in state affairs, several instances of which we have related, strong as were the reasons against this custom, entrenched as they were in privileges and immunities, exempted from secular jurisdiction, so as to escape with impunity upon any malversation in office, treason itself not being deemed a canonical offence—in fact, unbound by any political law or statute. Yet, on the contrary, there were many strong and peculiar causes, which rendered their employment desirable, and favoured their promotion to the highest political offices. Possessing almost all the learning of the age, and those qualities essential to the due discharge of civil responsibilities; the prelates enjoyed an equal degree of dignity with the barons, and gave weight, by their individual authority, to the powers entrusted to them, while at the same time, they were restrained by the proprieties of their character, from the practice of that *open* rapine and violence, too often practised by the nobles. Nor, from their celibacy, were they so likely to endanger the crown, by accumulating wealth, and with it influence in their families. These reasons induced the English monarchs generally to employ ecclesiastics in official affairs, and thus was their influence every way extended.

But the evils of a distracted, discontented state, were not to be remedied or removed by an injudicious condescension to the enemies of the English interest. Feuds, insurrections, violence, ravage, revolt, could not but produce a deficient revenue, and therefore proved extremely displeasing to the ambitious Edward, meditating his vast designs against France. Obligated to seek every resource to supply his finances, he depended upon Ireland as one channel from which he might draw,

But here he was altogether disappointed. Forgetting that the causes of this disappointment originated in his own neglect of Ireland, he accused his servants and ministers of neglect and corruption, and passionately denounced the terrors of his resentment against the government in that kingdom, and he at once determined on the most arbitrary and offensive measures. After the most oppressive ordinances, the king, with a want of just feeling, and an intemperance unworthy of him, concluded his requisitions, or rather peremptory commands, with one which could not fail further to irritate a people conscious of their own merits, and those of their ancestors. The ordinance we here insert at large from Leland, as a proof of the absorbing nature of ambition, and the facility with which it prostrates to its purposes every sentiment of justice and humanity, and even of generous and wise policy.

“ The king, to his trusty and well-beloved John Darcy, Justiciary of Ireland, greeting : Whereas it appeareth to us and our council, for many reasons, that our service shall be better and more profitably conducted in the said land by English officers, having revenues and possessions in England, than by Irishmen, or Englishmen married and estated in Ireland, and without any possessions in our realm of England, we enjoin you, that you diligently inform yourself of all our officers, greater or lesser, within our land of Ireland aforesaid, and that all such officers beneficed, married, or estated in the said land, and having nothing in England, be removed from their offices ; that you place and substitute in their room other fit Englishmen, having lands, tenements, and benefices in England, and that you cause the said offices in future to be executed by such English-

men, and none other, any order of ours to you made in contrariwise notwithstanding."

The liberal and just mind will at once see the iniquitous and impolitic severity of this ordinance, which, by one general sentence of disqualification, pronounces the descendants of those who had originally gained the English possessions in Ireland—who had endured so much to establish and maintain them—who had shed their blood in the service of their king—to be indiscriminately dangerous to the state, and to be declared incapable of filling any of its offices; shutting them out even from the meanest department of that government they were bound to obey, and introducing those who, without local interests or attachments, were too likely to oppress others, and attend only to their own narrow and selfish interests; drawing their incomes from a country, which they gladly left, to enjoy them in their native land; and laying the foundation for all those multiplied evils of *absenteeism*, felt with so much force even at this very day. Thus essentially injured, and even wantonly insulted, the old English inhabitants determined not to yield their rights with an abject resignation. The new comers insolently triumphed. Jealousy and dissension pervaded every part of the government, and soon proved the impolicy of the measures taken.

A common cause was made, and a formidable combination of the different classes was formed, to resist the fulfilment of an ordinance so unjust. So great was the irritation, that the chief governor deemed it necessary to summon a parliament at Dublin, on the critical emergence. This governor was of no higher rank than an English knight, nor was he distinguished either by



fortune or abilities. It was considered not the least of the insults which the great lords he was to govern had to sustain, that the royal authority should be vested in an individual so inferior in rank. They determined not to obey his summons, but when the parliament was to meet at Dublin, the governor received intelligence that another assembly, far more numerous and respectable, had been convened by the lords at Kilkenny, styling themselves the prelates, nobles, and commons of the land. They might be deemed more truly formidable to the royal authority, as they affected to assemble peaceably, in order to prepare a remonstrance to be transmitted to the king. This remonstrance urged plainly and forcibly the just ground of the petitioners' complaints, as to the various instances of corruption, oppression, and extortion, which disgraced the government, and with particular energy represented to the king, that his Irish subjects had been traduced and vilified to the throne, by those sent to govern them—men who came into the kingdom without any knowledge of its state, circumstances, or interests, whose sole intent was to repair their shattered fortunes; who were unable from their poverty to support their state, and minister to their passions, until they had supplied themselves by extortion, at the expense of the people for whom they had no kindred feeling, or national sympathy. Yet, notwithstanding this great oppression and continual evil, the English subjects of Ireland had ever adhered with loyalty and due allegiance to the crown of England, &c.

To the several grievances alleged, the answers of the king were now gracious and condescending, which he found necessary, as he was preparing for his grand expedition to France. He accord-

ingly, having promised to the petitioners that the grants of his progenitors should be restored to them without diminution, and that those made in his own reign should also be ratified, on sufficient surety that they should be again surrendered if found to have been granted without just cause,—sent his letters to the officers of state in Ireland, intimating that he had already applied to the principal lords, and directing them immediately to treat with those lords, in order to prevail upon them to send their respective vassals into Brittany with all possible expedition. It does not appear whether the royal intentions for the redress of grievances were defeated, but it is certain that jealousies and dissensions still continued. Sir Ralph d'Ufford possessing an active and vigorous spirit, was appointed chief governor, and not only executed his delegated power with zeal, but rigour, he ordained that the king's lands should have but *one war and one peace*, that wherever the attack was made, whether a large or small portion, it should be considered as an universal injury, and that all were to unite, as in common cause, to repel one common danger. He took the most vigorous measures against the turbulent and disaffected lords, and compelled them to submit to his authority; and although the principle of fear and terror is the most objectionable engine of a generous government, yet it is probable the system might have proved useful in the then state of Ireland, had not the sudden death of the governor left the result in doubt, his work unfulfilled, and deprived his sovereign of an active and meritorious servant.

His successor, Sir John Morris, acted with greater leniency and condescension. Several of the irritated lords were advised to repair to England, and seek redress from the throne. Their

visit was well-timed. Two of them, Desmond and Kildare, were appointed to attend Edward in his glorious expedition to France. The king was well pleased to engage Desmond in his service; his complaints were listened to with the most gracious attention, redress of all wrongs promised, and he was in the meantime taken into the king's pay, to attend him with a considerable train into France. Kildare, won by the gracious reception of the monarch, also joined the royal standard, and was so distinguished by his valour at the siege of Calais, that he received the honour of knighthood from the king, and returned to his country with that consequence derived from being the object of royal favour, and from the brilliancy of high military service.

Ireland had in the meantime two chief governors, who were employed as usual in the means of defence against the perpetual incursions of the Irish. In order to remedy the abuse of coyne and livery, and to relieve the subject from the heavy pressure of such demands, a parliament resolved to grant a subsidy for maintenance of the Irish war, of two shillings from every carucate of land, and two shillings in the pound from every person whose fortune amounted to six pounds. We mention this grant, as out of it arose an incident which marks the state of the country, and in which the conduct of an ecclesiastic is involved. The see of Cashel was at the time occupied by Ralph Kelly, an Irishman, who though he had sworn allegiance, and received his temporalities from the king, yet was so strongly imbued with the prejudices of his country against the English government, that to impede its operations, and to question and resist its acts, was deemed by him even meritorious. He therefore resolved vigorously to oppose the levying of the

above-named subsidy through his province. By which it would appear, that the grant extended to ecclesiastical persons, and the tenants of ecclesiastical lands. His suffragans of Limerick, Emly, and Lismore were summoned to confer with him, and with their concurrence, he issued an ordinance, that all beneficed clergymen who should presume to pay their allotted share of the subsidy, should immediately be deprived, and declared to be incapable of holding any ecclesiastical benefice within the province; and that all lay tenants who should comply with the requisition were to be excommunicated, and their children disqualified for any ecclesiastical preferment, even to the third generation.

Even this bold and severe edict did not satisfy the indignant feelings and violent zeal of the archbishop. He repaired to Clonmel in all the state of his high sacerdotal office, robed in the habit and with the attendance suited to the most solemn exercise of his holy function, so as to strike the minds of the populace with awe and reverence. He publicly and solemnly denounced the sentence of excommunication on all those who paid, imposed, procured, or in any manner contributed to the exacting of this subsidy from any of the persons or lands belonging to his church, and on William Epworth, by name, the king's commissioner, in the county of Tipperary, for receiving it from the different collectors. An information was exhibited against the prelate for this offence, and resistance of the laws. He denied the charge, pleading, that by the great charter, granted by the crown to England and Ireland, it was provided, that the church, both of England and Ireland, should be free; that by the same charter it was ordained, that those who infringed the immunities of the church should be

*ipso facto* excommunicated, therefore he had but exercised his just spiritual power against those who violated the king's peace, or levied money on the subject without his knowledge and consent; and that Epworth in particular had been excommunicated, for refusing canonical obedience to his ordinary. Notwithstanding these arguments, the archbishop and his suffragans were found guilty; but though they repeatedly refused to appear in arrest of judgment, their cause was too popular, and their influence too powerful for punishment to be awarded for the offence, in which, however objectionable may be deemed the means he resorted to, he seems to have been actuated by a just sense of right, and a lawful resistance of its violation.

By the favour which had been shown to the Earls of Desmond and Kildare, and by several judicious regulations, the peace of the English territories appears to have been preserved for a longer period than had before occurred.

1353. Sir Thomas Rokeby, an English knight, conducted the government with an equity and integrity which too seldom had distinguished his predecessors, and by his own noble and disinterested moderation, set the laudable example to those lords who had ministered to their luxurious passions by pillage and extortion. "I am served," said this genuine Englishman, "without parade or splendour, but let my dishes be wooden rather than my creditors unpaid." A sentiment which should immortalize his memory, and raise the suffusion of shame on the front of many, his equals in power and rank, but destitute of his noble spirit of independence. Unhappy was it for Ireland, that his integrity and disinterested zeal, eminent as they were, could not give weight and due consequence to his authority in a coun-



try, to the local situation of which he was a stranger, and where the interests and passions of those he was to govern were in continual, violent, and pernicious collision.

Insurrections of the Irish were renewed, and the king determined to appoint the Earl of Desmond (now in perfect reconciliation to the crown) to the government of the disordered kingdom, rightly judging, that his warlike qualities, extensive connexions and dependencies, rendered him peculiarly calculated for the dignity. What effects might have resulted from his administration were not, however, proved, as the earl died soon after his appointment. Rokeby resumed the reins, and some useful ordinances of parliament distinguish the period. Amongst them may be ranked the privilege of Irish subjects to refer to their own parliaments to obtain redress, in any erroneous proceedings of their courts, which they had hitherto been obliged to seek in England at a great expense and trouble. Some salutary regulations respecting the instruction of the people, also mark the increasing expansion of mind distinguishing the period. An ordinance, to prevent the evil and inconvenience arising from the non-residence of pastors, was followed by one for the due regulation both of church and state, and the more effectual execution of the English laws.

They begin with a declaration, that the liberties and immunities of the church shall be preserved inviolate, and then proceed to point out the regular and legal method for adjusting the general interests and concerns of the state. Among several provisions for the execution of justice, and the protection of the subject, according to the great charter, one which evidences the temper of the English subjects in Ireland deserves mention. “ *Item.* Although the English born in Ire-

land, as well as those born in England, be true Englishmen, living under our dominion and sovereignty, and bound by the same rights, customs, and laws, yet various dissensions have arisen among those of both races, on account of national distinction, from whence some evils have arisen, and greater are to be apprehended, unless a remedy be speedily applied. Our pleasure is, and we strictly enjoin that our Lord Justice, calling unto him our chancellor and treasurer of Ireland, and such nobles as he shall think proper from the districts in which such dissensions have arisen, shall frequently as need may be, diligently inquire into such dissensions, maintainances, and factions, and the names of those by whom they are supported, and causing due process to be made against the delinquents, shall, when convicted, punish them by fine, imprisonment, or any just method, as such dissensions manifestly tend to lead our liege people into sedition and treason." Thus while legal inflictions were ordained for overt acts, of which, indeed, they could only take cognizance, the origin of the streams of error and of guilt from which they inevitably flowed, were disregarded or not appreciated.

The governors of Ireland appear to have forgotten that it constitutes the very essence of crime, to be unmindful of its consequences. Few culprits who violate and suffer the vengeance of the law, are the dupes of their own ignorance, they are rather the slaves of passion, the victims of inveterate habit, or of a supposed or real necessity. In a divided and discontented population, circumstances must be of continual recurrence, which would rouse the passions, outrage the habits, and *make the necessity* of dissension, and faction, and competition, as a remedy was

applied to one evil, another presented itself eluding every endeavour of even a vigilant government to ensure any permanency of tranquillity.

Thus to guard against the treacherous subtilty of the Irish, and to discover that pernicious correspondence which the increasing degeneracy of the English had encouraged, it was enjoined by royal mandate, that no mere Irishman should be admitted into any office or trust, in any city, borough, or castle, in the king's land; that no bishop or prior, under the king's dominion and allegiance, should admit any of this race to an ecclesiastical benefice, or into any religious house, on account of consanguinity, or other pretence whatever. This severe deprivation of compatriot privileges, malice, and self-interest, were ready to extend far beyond its original intention. The denized Irish were excluded from ecclesiastical preferments, by virtue of the clause which directed that these should be bestowed upon English clerks. Thus one evil produced many. The clergy, however, with becoming spirit, applied to parliament for relief, and succeeded in obtaining an explanation in favour of their rights.

It certainly would appear, by the strong and obnoxious measures against the Irish, that they were regarded in a very degraded light—even a race irreclaimable. The resistance of the oppressed, and the irritations of national pride, were imputed as natural defects to cruelty and barbarism. No measures seem to have been taken to conciliate the affections, but all seemed ready in endeavours to subdue the persons, and invade the possessions of the Irish. The English appear not to us as the protectors and benefactors of the people whose land they invaded, but anxious to prove themselves their lords. We, perhaps, should expect too much in the then

state of society, to observe those who considered themselves conquerors of a barbarous people, following up that conquest, by a generous zeal for general happiness, and by liberal sentiments and extensive views of national welfare, gradually converting "the rudeness, the disorders, and distresses of anarchy, into the peace, dignity, and the multifarious advantages and comforts of social and civil life."

Our third Edward, whose course had been that of success and glory, impatiently regarded the complicated and continued disorders of Ireland, and once more directed his attention to that portion of his dominions. Lord Lionel, his second son, had in his very childhood been affianced to Elizabeth, daughter to the deceased Earl of Ulster, and inherited that earldom in right of his wife, as well as the lordship of Connaught, and extensive annexed domains. The interest of his son, and the welfare of his Irish dominions, combined to determine Edward to consign the government to him, with the highest powers to give weight and authority to it. After various formalities and exertions, indicating great designs, about fifteen hundred men were collected, headed by Lord Lionel, and attended by several knights and leaders of distinction.

Much might have been effected with this inconsiderable force, if duly supported by the great lords of Ireland. But unfortunately for that ill-fated land, the royal governor passed to his high station fraught with all those unhappy prejudices and false ideas, which had prevailed respecting the character of those he was appointed to govern. Hence, with a folly which only his youth could excuse, he regarded the whole race, without discrimination, as utterly beneath his regard, unwor-

thy his confidence, and disaffected to his father's interests. Surrounding himself by the faction of English birth, he with equal injustice and credulity listened to their envious suggestions, adopted their unjust prejudices, and by a proclamation breathing pride, passion and prejudice, peremptorily forbade all the old English or any of the king's subjects of Irish birth to approach his camp. This surely was not the mode to conciliate the affection, to win the confidence, to allay the passions, to remove the prejudices, to silence the tumults, or heal the dissensions of a high spirited people, writhing under oppression and indignant of the yoke.

By this injudicious and insulting conduct the prince naturally offended the most powerful party in the realm, who while they resented this ungenerous return to the services of their ancestors could not forbear at the same time to regard with sovereign contempt that infatuated policy by which their new governor deprived himself of the only efficient assistance to give a prospect of success in his operations. The result proved what might be expected, the prince soon found himself surrounded with difficulties. Imminent dangers roused him from his error, and his circumstances were too urgent to allow him a moment of delay in the correction of it. The old English were invited by proclamation to attend his standard, a second proclamation from the king gave force to that of the prince, and ordered all those nobles of the English nation who had not obeyed former commands to repair to Ireland without delay on pain of forfeiture of all their lands and possessions. The invitation to the subjects of Ireland of the old English race was obeyed speedily. They resorted in great numbers to the prince's standard



(the title of duke of Clarence having been conferred upon him) and by their assistance a revolution of affairs in his favour was effected.

On his return from his expeditions he conferred the honour of knighthood on several of his followers, and such favourable sentiments of his administration were entertained, and such sanguine expectations of his ultimate success in his warlike operations against the Irish, that the king's subjects, both clergy and laity, granted him two years value of their revenues to maintain the war. This liberality appears to have been more cheerfully conceded as his forces had been retained within the strictest rules of discipline, and no arbitrary exactions had been made. It seems however, that as soon as Ireland began for a moment to breathe freely, and partially to recover from the debility consequent on over wrought exertion, she was ever left to her own enfeebled energies, and the disorders of the political body returned with renewed force. The duke at the period when he began to acquire some influence was recalled to England, and every thing reverted to its former wretched state; mandates were issued, punishments were threatened, but were of little consequence to repress the dissensions of the English, much less to unite them. English by birth and English by race became terms of odious distinction, keeping alive prejudices, and daily adding to the bitterness of animosity. Several changes of government took place, till in 1367 the duke of Clarence was once more sent to stem the torrent of disorder. He was now well acquainted with the circumstances of the country, and well knew that the first object of his care must be the reformation of the English settlers, nor was he deficient in zeal and diligence in this important work. A parliament was summoned at Kilkenny,

and presented a more numerous and august assembly than had hitherto been convened in Ireland. The prelates of Dublin, Cashel, Tuam, Lismore, Waterford, Killaloe, Ossory, Leighlin, Cloyne obeyed the summons of the prince. Temporal peers and commons also attended with alacrity, both estates sat together, and the result of their deliberations was the ordinance known in Ireland by the designation of the statute of Kilkenny.

This statute, which provided for the reformation and security of the king's subjects in Ireland, was promulged with particular solemnity, and the spiritual lords, in conformity to the usages of the times, the better to enforce obedience to its enactments, denounced an excommunication on those who should presume to violate it in any instance. The solemnity with which these laws were made and promulged, the severe penalties attached to their infringement, the presence of a royal governor so pleasing to the pride of the governed, his attention to preserve discipline and to rectify evils coming within the range of his authority, had no inconsiderable effect in producing the desired results. But the wisest institutions could have no permanent good effect under a versatile and uncertain government. Accordingly, on the departure of the Duke of Clarence, when the young Earl of Desmond was entrusted with the administration, the state became once more embroiled by domestic dissensions, and war again raged through the country. A parliament was convened and voted a subsidy of three thousand pounds, and another of two thousand in a following session to support the expenses of hostilities against the Irish. Such conceptions had been formed of the miserable and dangerous state of Ireland from these disorders of the people, that even those who had received Irish grants could

neither be persuaded to repair thither, nor to send any person to the custody of their lands, notwithstanding the reiterated edicts of the king. And so great was the repugnance of going to Ireland, that when Sir R. Pembridge was appointed to the government, he is said to have shuddered at the very idea of residing in a country overspread with barbarous and malignant savages. He refused to execute his commission and it was adjudged that this refusal was strictly legal, for that a residence in Ireland was but an honourable exile, and that no man could by law be forced to abandon his country, except in case of abjuration for felony or by act of parliament. Sir William Windsore was appointed, he adopted the plan of hiring the Irish chieftains to oppose the incursions of their countrymen into the English settlements. But this narrow and shortsighted policy aggravated rather than relieved the evil. If the stipulated payment was at any time delayed, they rose to arms with double fury and forced a prompt payment from the king's exchequer. Yet the system was continued in the government of the Duke of Ormond and a precarious peace purchased, which was perpetually violated by their fickleness and precipitance. The king was not pleased to find that any part of the supplies destined for his grand military designs should be appropriated to purposes he deemed so inferior. He impatiently dispatched an agent to Ireland, with instructions to represent the necessities of the crown, and to complain of the deficiencies of the Irish revenue. He was directed to command that a parliament should be convened without delay for the purpose of granting such a liberal subsidy as should not only provide for the exigencies of Ireland, but also for the king's assistance in his foreign wars. The parliament was

convened, pleaded the extreme poverty of the realm and refused supplies. The indignant Edward issued his writs of summons to clergy and laity. The bishops were commanded to chuse two of the clergy in each diocese, the commons two laymen of each county to represent the lords and commons of that county. In like manner the cities and boroughs were to elect two citizens and burgesses. The assembly was directed to repair to the king, to treat, consult and agree with him and his council, as well on the government of the land of Ireland, as the aid and support of the king's war.

The answers of the archbishop of Armagh, and of the county of Dublin to this summons are worthy of record, "We are not bound," observes the prelate, "agreeably to the liberties, privileges, rights, laws and customs of the church and land of Ireland, to elect any of our clergy, and to send them to any part of England, for the purpose of holding parliament or council in England. Yet on account of our reverence to our lord the king of England, and the now imminent necessity of the land aforesaid, saving to us and to the lords and commons of the said land, all rights, privileges, liberties, laws and customs aforesaid, we have elected representatives to repair to the king in England to treat and consult with him and his council, except however, that we by no means grant to our said representatives any power of assenting to any burdens or subsidies to be imposed on us or our clergy, to which we cannot yield by reason of our poverty and daily expense in defending the land against the Irish enemy." This guarded permission did not well suit the exigences and wishes of Edward, but it does not appear that he noticed it. The city of Dublin however at first elected their representatives with-

out power or authority to consent to any impositions. In this instance the king complained that the election was insufficient and irregular, and the sheriff was directed to make another return. It was attempted to be evaded. At length the nobles and commons "unanimously declare that according to the rights, privileges, liberties, laws and customs of the land of Ireland, they were not bound to accede to the requisitions of the writ. Notwithstanding, on account of their reverence, &c. they have elected representatives to treat and consult with the king and his council, reserving to themselves the power of yielding or agreeing to any subsidies. At the same time protesting that the present compliance was not to be taken as precedent, or to prejudice the rights enjoyed since the conquest of Ireland." The result of this controversy does not clearly appear; the Irish representatives assembled at Westminster, and their wages were levied on the dioceses, counties and boroughs which had chosen them. It may be regarded as a misfortune to Ireland that the high capacity of our third Edward was occupied in schemes of foreign conquest rather than in the wise and salutary administration of his own Irish territory. He possessed abilities to have applied the proper remedies to the many and complicated disorders which distracted it, and penetration sufficient to trace them to their source. But he falsely thought the work beneath the dignity of his genius, and borne away by the military passion of the times, attended little to those measures which might have contributed to the comfort and refinement of a people assuredly possessed of qualities which would have well repaid the trouble of cultivation.

Towards the close of Edward's brilliant career, the English interest appears to have declined in



Ireland, and the government still to be disordered. The perpetual succession of new adventurers from England, some led by necessity, others by interest, served only to keep alive jealousy and dissension instead of introducing any useful improvement. Lawyers sent from England we are informed were notoriously insufficient, if not corrupt. The meanness of the English clergy was only redeemed by their implicit attachment to the crown. Even prelates were made the inferior agents of government in collecting forces, and raising war against the Irish enemy; yet were not to be enticed into a service so disgraceful to their character, unless by remittances from the exchequer. They dreaded attendance in parliament as the greatest hardship, so destitute were they of all patriotic feeling, and either recurred to mean excuses to avert the penalty of absence, or sued the king to be exempted by patent from contributing or assenting to those laws by which they were to be governed.

Amongst the most interesting studies of the progress of European society we must certainly reckon the religious opinions as operating upon the moral character of man, and gradually elevating him from the debasements of superstition and causing a revolution in manners as well as of thinking. When men begin to feel the influence of those great truths in which their eternal well-being is involved; when they impress minds keen and acute in their perceptions, they give a power and energy to those minds of no common character, and the fervour which is thus enkindled communicates its vivifying influence far and wide. For in the lowest grades of the human race there are feelings mingled with man's nature, which when called into action give the first spring to moral improvement, and which a master spirit directing his attention may render subservient

to the greatest good. We are arrived at a period when such an impulse was given to the popular feeling.

The progress of intellectual improvement had for a considerable period been uniform though silent, libraries became more numerous, and many plans were formed for promoting the study of letters, improving taste, and dispelling the pedantic spirit which had pervaded literature. Colleges were formed on liberal plans, and men of learning were animated to aspire to fame and glory by a prospect of honourable reward. And though the historian is obliged to confess that too general ecclesiastical corruption prevailed, yet justice and truth equally allow him to observe that in the midst of much prevailing depravity, there were many pious and worthy men who ardently desired a reformation of the church both in its head and members. Laudable as were these desires, circumstances were however not yet sufficiently mature to produce their accomplishment. The exorbitant power of the popes had been too long confirmed to yield without some mighty effort, the enslaving superstition of the multitude could not be dispelled by a feeble breath of opposition, the wretched ignorance that prevailed, by which as it were every spark of truth was extinguished ere it could well be lighted, could not be removed and the beam of truth made clear to the mental view without a master hand to act under an influence not of earth. Yet all these obstacles were gradually and imperceptibly giving way, and the evils mighty as they were, forming their own remedy. Great schisms arose in the Romish church, which brought in their train serious inquiry. This was a severe test; and happy had it been for the Romish religion, that men in general seldom go beyond a certain link in the chain of thought,

or look deeply into the sources of traditionary doctrines. Although the state of morals and religion were at low ebb, yet many of the least degraded amongst the people, had the courage to despise and disregard the popes, and to call in question their infallibility. An entrance thus opened to the ray of truth, we shall see that its light gradually diffused itself, and as the sun in his might disperses the lowering vapours of the night, so the benign ray of Christian truth gradually dispelled the mists of papal superstition. It was towards the close of Edward's reign that the aversion rising against the established religion, openly manifested itself and was boldly justified and supported. Wickliffe, the reader of English history well knows, at that period spread the doctrine of reformation by his discourses, sermons, and writings, and made many converts among those of all ranks and stations. The propagation of his principles gave great alarm to the clergy. Wickliffe had been animated to his display of zeal, by the writings and example of Richard of Armagh, to whom we have before alluded, and following his steps he first in 1360 defended the privileges and statutes of the university at Oxford against the orders of the mendicants, and even had the courage to throw out some reproofs against the popes, their principal patrons. Subsequently he was deprived of the wardenship of Canterbury hall in the university, by Simon Langham, archbishop of Canterbury, who instituted a monk in his place. Upon which Wickliffe appealed to Urban the fifth, who as might be expected confirmed the sentence against him, on the ground of the unwarrantable freedom with which he had inveighed against the monastic orders. Exasperated at the injustice, Wickliffe threw off restraint, and not only attacked all the monks and their

irregularities, but even the pontifical power itself, and other ecclesiastical abuses. He proceeded to still further lengths, boldly refuting both in his sermons and writings with equal acuteness and spirit the absurd notions that were generally received in religious matters. He exhorted the laity to study the scriptures, and in order to render his exhortations more universally practicable he translated the sacred volume. The monks whom he had irritated, of course commenced a violent persecution against the reformer, for the result of which we refer our readers to English history, contenting ourselves by observing here, that although the doctrine of Wickliffe was far from being free from error, yet it is certain that the changes he attempted to introduce both in the faith, and discipline of the church, were in many respects wise, useful and salutary, and that the promulgation of it produced an extensive reformation. Wickliffe thus began to break up the rugged soil, to the cultivation of which he had been directed and animated by the example of Richard Fitzraf, the Irish archbishop. It is interesting and pleasing to trace the causes which give a bias to the intellectual powers of man, and to mark the concatenation of events and circumstances, with the endless influence of mind upon mind. The attacks and endeavours of the reformer and his disciples did not however perceptibly abate the pride, or materially affect the influence of the mendicants. They of course rather quickened their zeal and renewed their diligence in propagating their opinions, become so highly detrimental to the purity of Christianity, and increasing in absurdity even to an impious extent.

But there were internal causes which were operating in sapping the foundations of their power and influence, quarrels amongst them-

selves, and with their head, disgraced the professors of a religion of concord, and accelerated the prostration of their ambitious and overgrown authority. Neither edicts nor inquisitors could reconcile the continual discords which occurred, and disturbed with endless contentions the period of which we now speak. Some new monastic societies were yet formed in the fourteenth century, some were of short duration, and none arose to celebrity. The corruption of religion was indeed so great in this age, its forms so adulterated and deformed, that not a single branch of genuine Christian doctrine retained a trace of its primitive lustre and beauty. Hence it may easily be imagined that those who eagerly desired a reformation, and had separated themselves from the jurisdiction of the bishop of Rome, though every where exposed to violent persecutions, yet increased and flourished day by day in the fiery soil, baffling all attempts made to extirpate them. As an instance that Rome still increased in absurdity and in art to favour its cupidity, we name two new ceremonies instituted at this period, one a festival sacred to the honour of the *lance* with which the Saviour's side was pierced, the nails which fastened his sacred form to the cross, and the crown of thorns which in mocking he wore. What serious Christian but must turn with disgust and indignation from this impious mockery of a scene and circumstances which to contemplate, should fill the soul with deep, grateful and affecting awe. What occasion was there for visible emblems of that mysterious sacrifice, when the inspired volume places a graphic description before us sufficiently impressive to rouse the feelings of any one not totally hardened? But to open the sacred volume to the inquiring mind, would not have ministered to the cupidity of the



spiritual guides, and it was more safe for the pontifical power to command Christians to add to their prayers the salutation of the angel Gabriel to the holy Mary, than to teach them to search the scriptures, and to trace from beginning to end man's primeval dignity, unhappy fall, and means for final restoration.

There can be little doubt that the papacy was considerably weakened by the schism which took place in this century respecting the election of Urban the sixth, and Clement the seventh,\* of which we have made mention in our illustrative note, a dispute which distracted Europe during a long period, the different kingdoms being divided, as was Galway, according to their several interests between the two pontiffs. Each party condemned the other as schismatics, and as rebels to the true vicar of Christ. Thus the appellation of Clementines and Urbanists were respective terms of reproach, and each regarded the other with all the bitterness of party spirit. Two or three of the pontiffs who flourished in this century, offer such strong moral contrasts that we may be permitted to digress a little by sketching some circumstances relating to them. The most pleasing and remarkable was Clement the sixth, who not only was one of the most profound scholars of the age, but a wise and beneficent prince, for the ten years of his pontificate were marked by many brilliant and glorious actions. The most generous of men, nothing was so painful to him as to be obliged to a refusal. Not content with bestowing the treasures of the church in great profusion, he expended considerable sums in the foundation of useful establishments, in giving marriage portions to orphans, and in relieving

\* This schism continued from 1378—1417.

noble families who had fallen into indigence. Petrarch observes "none ever better merited the name of Clement, which was well deserved by his actions." An instance most honourable to his heart is related. A person who had very deeply offended him ventured to ask a favour from him. He was tempted to seize this fair opportunity of revenging himself, but he resisted the impulse and granted the favour. Endued with a commanding and natural eloquence, he spoke with energy and without premeditation, with equal dignity and fluency. Possessed of the essential requisites for a true orator, he transfused with singular facility his own sentiments into the minds of others, directing the impulses of the heart as he chose, but ever breathing peace and union; wherever he saw the sparks of war, he hastened with the true spirit of a minister of peace to smother them ere they could rise into a flame. Avignon, which was the seat of the papal court during his pontificate, 1342, presented at that time a mixture of splendour and poverty, very striking and indicative of the manners and character of the age. The houses of the native inhabitants were low and ill built, and in many instances in a state of dilapidation caused by the war against the Albigenses, when the place was devastated by orders of the papal legate sent on a crusade against the Count of Toulouse, in 1226. It is at all times a delightful exercise of the rational and pious mind to trace in the circumstances of life, the moral compensations of an overruling providence.

The long continued residence of the papal court at Avignon, was, as it were, an involuntary reparation for the cruel and unjust vengeance it had exercised within its walls, and that residence was one of the most efficient causes of the abase-

ment of a power then so cruelly abused. Whatever might have been the poverty of the original inhabitants, the pope and the cardinals vied with each other in erecting stately towers and palaces, not only within the city, but beyond its precincts, on the delightful banks of the Rhone.

During the pontificate of Clement VI. the papal court at Avignon assumed a splendour and magnificence till then unknown. Clement, born of an illustrious race, was affable, noble, and generous, having from his birth acquired the habits and manners of a man of rank, who had lived only in the courts of princes, amidst regal magnificence and state. No sovereign exceeded him in expenditure, nor bestowed his favours with more generous grace. The sumptuousness of his furniture, the delicacy of his table, the splendour of his court, filled with knights and esquires of the ancient nobility, was unequalled. Delighting in the chase and in horses, his stud consisted of the finest that could be procured. Accustomed to the society of ladies, he continued to associate with them when pope. But here our praise must cease on this point. Morality must condemn his attachment to the Viscountess de Turenne, who, as is usual when the affections are thus engaged by an illicit object, was the channel of favour, and possessed a pernicious influence over his mind. This circumstance, however, proved no obstacle to other ladies resorting to the papal court of Avignon; the rival beauties of every country formed the circle there, some to follow the fortunes of their husbands, some to partake of the pleasures and fetes which a brilliant court afforded, and others to procure alliances for their daughters. Avignon was, also, at this period, the residence of ambassadors from every state in Europe, and was frequently visited by

their respective sovereigns, many of whom had even fixed residences there. It was also the resort of people of talent and learning, whom the urbanity and munificence of Clement attracted to his court. He had, immediately on his accession, promulgated a bull, inviting all the scholars of Europe to his court. It is said that more than a hundred thousand obeyed the welcome call, and that of the number not one of them departed without some favour.

But it was not only in regal state and splendour, nor as a patron of learning, that Clement VI. was eminent. His charities were equally upon a broad and princely scale.

At the period of the dreadful plague that desolated Europe during the pontificate of Clement, and from which Avignon suffered so terribly, he adopted the wisest and most humane measures, in order not only to relieve the sufferers, but to prevent the spreading of the infection. Many during the plague left their estates to the mendicant friars, who attended the sick while others deserted them. The parish priests and other clergy, envying the riches thus honourably acquired, applied to Clement to suppress the order, or at least to prevent the members from preaching, hearing confession, or burying the dead. The petition for this purpose was presented in full consistory, supported by cardinals and bishops. The answer of Clement illustrates in a lively manner the character of the speaker, and the manners of the generality of the clergy at this period; hence we deem it not inconsistent with this portion of our work to introduce it.

“The mendicants,” he observed with his usual easy dignity, “have exposed their lives by attending dying persons, and administering the sacraments to them, whilst you, consulting your own

safety, fled from the danger and abandoned your flocks. You have therefore no reason to complain of what they have got by performing the duty which you have neglected, though incumbent upon you. They employ the little they have gained in new building, repairing, and embellishing their churches, but you perhaps would have applied it to very different uses. You advise me to silence them, and leave the preaching of the word entirely to you. And what would you preach? surely not humility, as you are known to be the most haughty and proud set of men on earth, and the most pompous in your attendants and equipages. Would you recommend poverty and contempt of worldly wealth, you whom no benefices can satisfy however accumulated! Would you urge fasting, abstinence and a mortified life, while you fare sumptuously, and indulge yourselves in the most delicate meats? As for your charity, I leave it to yourselves to consider whether you could with a good grace recommend that virtue to others. The mendicants preach nothing but what by their example they prove practicable, whereas many among you preach one thing and practise the contrary."—*See Bower's History of the Popes.*

The popular faction which placed Urban in the papal chair, and caused the great schism in the western church had soon reason to repent their credulity. He was a lively instance of the corrupting nature of power, and the influence of circumstances in drawing forth the latent depravity of the heart. This pontiff was of a noble Neapolitan family, and at the period of his elevation was about sixty years of age, of gigantic stature, strong and robust of frame, saturnine complexion, and his eyes bright, with fiery expression. Such was the exterior of this vicar of the God of peace and love. His conduct previous to his elevation



had not accorded with the impression that unpleasing exterior was calculated to make on the beholder, for he had appeared humble, modest, devout, and prudent; of austere manners, punctual in the ceremonies of his vocation, rarely appearing in public, and then riding upon a mule attended only by one servant on horseback, although holding the high dignity of archbishop of Bari. He was eminent in all the scholastic learning of the time, and had shown himself a patron of men of worth and genius, but from the moment of his elevation, his nature seemed changed. Arrogant, imprudent, inexorable and vindictive, his excesses were too open, his actions too furious, even to allow those who espoused his cause in the schism with all the violence of religious zeal, to deny or palliate them. Immediately on his accession he wrote to all the princes of Europe that his election had been caused by an immediate inspiration of the Holy Ghost, which had prompted the cardinals to choose a pope not even a member of the sacred college. Such was the intemperate folly of his conduct, his insulting manners, his inordinate ambition, that the sacred college elected the count and cardinal of Geneva, who took the name of Clement the seventh, who was enthroned at Fondi 1379. This pontiff was chosen by the French cardinals because allied to many of the crowned heads in Europe, and highly distinguished for his various accomplishments, but unfortunately his abilities were by no means adapted to the exigencies of the perilous situation he was called to fill. He was eminent as a profound and elegant scholar, endued with a commanding eloquence, speaking fluently the French, Italian, German and Latin languages, but deficient in that political sagacity so essentially indispensable in his critical situation.

Princely in his habits and disposition, generous, magnificent and prodigal, he greatly resembled Clement the sixth. He was in the prime of manhood when he was elected pope, being in his thirty-sixth year, and in person as unlike his rival as his character was dissimilar. His height scarcely rose to the middle stature, yet his air was majestic.

The rival popes soon divided Europe between them. The emperor, the kings of England, Denmark, Sweden, Hungary, Bohemia, and most of the states of Italy and Flanders espoused the cause of the ferocious Urban. Whilst France, Spain, Naples, Scotland, Cyprus, Savoy, the dukedom of Austria, some of the Italian and German states adhered to Clement. Each published crusades and fulminated anathemas against the other, and under pretence of punishing schismatics and heretics, all Europe was disturbed by the cruelties, the quarrels, and the oppressions of their adherents, and the plains of Romagna soon witnessed what never before had been beheld in the various schisms which had split the church, rival armies bearing the banner and the keys of St. Peter. The final result would have been favourable to Clement had he not with a culpable timidity abandoned his own cause. Destitute of decision of character and political sagacity, he resolved to retire to Avignon and leave Italy to his rival. In the meantime the licentious populace of Rome were become weary of the fierce idol they had raised, and considered that it would be better to have a pope at Avignon than to endure the tyranny of the furious Urban, whose death they determined to accomplish either by secret poison or open violence. The first not succeeding, they surrounded the pontifical palace to effect the latter, but were prevented accomplishing their

purpose by that undaunted resolution which forms one of the requisites of greatness, and which distinguished Urban, combined with that inflexible constancy of purpose which forces its way to its object unchecked by the feeble opposition of an ever vacillating multitude. When these qualities are found combined in an individual, it must be subject of regret to a reflecting mind, that they are not directed to virtuous aims, and exercised to effect good, not to extend evil. The firmness of Urban at this critical moment saved his life. He arrayed himself in his pontifical robes, the triple crown and the other insignia of the rank to which the transient favour of the fickle multitude had raised him, by the same tumultuous impulse they now sought to hurl him from his elevation. Seating himself on his throne, Urban commanded the doors of the palace to be thrown open. The multitude rushed in with unsheathed swords, but such was the sudden effect of his towering figure, eagle eye, and awe inspiring voice, that every step was arrested when he asked in the words of his divine master, "Whom seek ye?" The unmoved calmness he displayed, seemed to the awe struck superstitious mob the effect of immediate divine inspiration, and not presuming to violate what they considered the majesty of heaven visibly presented to them in his commanding person, they simultaneously retired in silence, impressed with shame and horror at the crime they had meditated. We shall not digress further to trace the enormities and cruelties of this furious pontiff, only adding that becoming daily more odious to those around him his death was hastened by poison administered to him by his domestic servants. As soon as his life was pronounced in danger he was deserted by all his family, who feared the vengeance of the Romans

would be wreaked on them the moment he breathed his last. *See Life of Joanna Queen of Naples.*

Such was the general state of affairs about the period when Edward the third was succeeded by his grandson Richard the second, at the early age of eleven years. The change from a sovereign such as Edward to that of a child was not immediately felt, and seems not to have affected Ireland, where affairs still continued disordered, and continual insurrections devastated and impoverished the nation. The English parliament complained much of the expense attending the maintenance of the king's Irish dominions, and the subjects of Ireland repeated their complaints that the nobility and gentry of England abandoned their Irish lands, and left the residents unequal to the charge and labour necessary for the public welfare. Thus early were the evils of *absenteeism* felt. The grievance was represented to the king, and by law it was ordained that such absentees should repair to their lands, or send sufficient deputies to provide for their defence, in default of doing this they were to be taxed to the amount of two thirds of their Irish revenues, to be applied to the service of the kingdom, excepting those only immediately engaged in the king's service, students of the universities, and those absent by licence, who were to be taxed only one third of their revenues. The present object of the English government was evidently to make Ireland contribute to the exigencies of state, and a grand parliament was directed to be convened to consult on the best modes of effecting the desired purpose. Things were in this train under several successive governors, when the situation of Richard and the restraints against which his violent spirit revolted, produced a change in the government of Ireland. "Extreme pride and violence,"

says an interesting historian, "with an inordinate partiality for the most worthless favourites were the predominant characteristics of Richard, who was moreover by no means deficient in capacity, as has been imagined." Certainly the decisive promptitude in seizing the critical moment for action, which he displayed in several instances during the period of his power, indicates a considerable portion of mental energy, although it was frequently weakened by vicious counsel, and by his own inexperienced folly and obstinacy. It is known that with an infatuation very common to inexperience and a consciousness of power, Richard resigned himself implicitly to his favourite Robert de Vere, earl of Oxford, whose gay and captivating deportment recommended him to the young monarch, and whose corrupt morals sullied those of his royal patron. With a prodigality of favour Richard hardly knew how sufficiently to prove it to his beloved companion. He loaded him with honours, one of which has immediate reference to the land of Hibernia, De Vere was created marquis of Dublin, and in order to raise him to as high a degree of sovereignty as in his power, Richard by the same patent granted to him and his heirs the entire dominion of Ireland to be held of the crown by liege homage. Those lands and cities formerly reserved to the crown were only excepted, and the earl was bound, as soon as he should complete the conquest of the kingdom to pay into the English exchequer annually during his life the sum of five thousand marks. In every other particular the entire government and dominion of the kingdom was vested in him. The parliament, not displeased at the removal of the favourite, readily consented to the important grant, and every fair promise of a permanent government appeared for Ireland.



Splendid preparations were made to give dignity to the new viceroy, and the king even accompanied him to Wales. The moment of separation arrived, the policy of the monarch gave place to the feelings of the youth, which though indiscreet were at least of amiable source, and Richard declared he could not part from his friend. The marquis returned with his royal master, and ill-fated Ireland was committed to his deputies. But his parade of sovereignty was short lived. He was with his friends shortly after denounced as enemies to the state, and when the marquis was driven into the low countries by the triumphant faction, every thing in Ireland reverted to the king and was conducted by his authority. Affairs there assumed nearly the same aspect that they had previously borne, and the monarch was frequently roused from his voluptuous ease by affecting representations of the distresses of his Irish subjects. Gloucester the king's uncle, a nobleman turbulent, popular and ambitious, made a tender of his services to pass over to Ireland. His offer was accepted and forces prepared. The enemies of the English government in Ireland were alarmed at the anticipated government of a prince of royal blood, of high abilities, active, enterprising, rigid and inflexible, and the expectations of all men were prepared for a strong and vigorous administration. The hopes of the well affected were naturally elevated by the same considerations, when at the very moment of embarkation the duke received a letter from his royal nephew arresting his departure as he was himself resolved to make an expedition into Ireland, and to take that part of his dominions into his own immediate care. Whatever were the motives which urged a change apparently so capricious, the design once conceived it

was necessary to gain supplies. A parliament readily granted money for this royal service, the clergy gave a tenth of their revenues if Richard should repair to Ireland in person, otherwise but half that sum. Levies and preparations were carried on with spirit, but in the midst of them the death of his beloved queen, who had justly acquired the title of the "good Queen Anne," plunged Richard into the deepest anguish, and, of course, suspended for a while his Irish designs, but they were resumed as the best antidote against the melancholy, which the scene of his departed joys continually cherished and increased. It was in October 1394 that Richard landed at Waterford with a royal army, attended by his uncle Gloucester, and other distinguished personages. It appeared a critical period for Ireland. An army of four thousand men at arms, and thirty thousand archers, commanded by some of the prime nobility of England, with a young monarch at their head, seemed to ensure a termination to the disorders, the rebellions, and the distresses of the Irish. Numberless advantages presented themselves, if duly improved, to have united in a liberal and equitable spirit of policy, the authority of the English government, and the general civility and pacification of the kingdom. But, unfortunately, the pride of the English, regarding in a degraded estimation the people whom they would subdue, forbade them to propose the generous scheme of receiving all the inhabitants into the great body of British subjects, and conferring equally upon all the benefits of a free and equitable constitution.

"Men had not at that time," observes Leland, "acquired that extended and comprehensive benevolence, which is the effect of refinement and deep moral reflection," and however they

might estimate the blessing of liberty they wished to confine it to themselves. With these narrow views, to receive homage and tribute, to accept insincere and forced submissions, to require the peace to be kept inviolate, were sufficient to gratify the pride and vanity of a prince, from whom, perhaps, we should judge inconsistently of the influences of the age, were we to expect exalted sentiments, or penetrating political views. The Irish chieftains, with an abject submission, forming a strange and forcible contrast to their generally assuming pride, did homage and fealty in all the forms of amplest humility. On bended knees, with heads uncovered, arms laid aside, and girdles loosed, they received the kiss of peace, to which each was admitted by the lord marshal, in confirmation of their reconciliation. Each was also, by indenture, bound in a large penalty, payable to the apostolic chamber, to adhere to his present engagements with true faith and loyalty. We may form some judgment of the dismembered and distracted state of Ireland, when we find that the number of Irish chiefs who submitted to Richard was no less than seventy-six, all of whom exercised a petty royalty within their respective districts, governed their subjects, led forth their little armies, were jealous of their dignity, and blindly attached to their own unrefined customs and manners.

Richard was highly elated at what he deemed the reduction of Ireland; he led his new vassals to Dublin, and entertained them with that pomp and splendour he so much loved, and of which he had prepared for the display, by transporting all the regalia to Ireland. Unlike the Duke of Clarence, he treated the Irish chiefs with particular condescension. Not so the courtiers; regarding them as of inferior race, they rudely importuned

the haughty chieftains with such questions as argued the meanest opinion of their understandings and manners, and were answered with indignation and affected dignity. Four of the chieftains were made especial objects of favour. They were told that the king was willing to confer the honour of knighthood upon them. They declared themselves astonished that this should be considered as any accession to their dignity. It was an honour they had received in their earliest years, and now stood in no need of a new creation. The ceremonial, however, was described minutely to the chiefs, with the honours it conferred, and they consented to submit to its formalities. Accordingly, they with some others received knighthood in the cathedral of Dublin. The ceremony was succeeded by a magnificent feast, at which the four Irish princes appeared in robes of state, seated at the king's table.\* The degenerate English, who had united with the enemy, kept at a distance from the court, employing agents to effect their pardon. Oppression, they said, had driven them from their allegiance, and as their other extenuating allegations were not entirely destitute of ground, Richard, in his present state of elated vanity and luxurious ease and gaiety, was well disposed to admit their excuses. He hastily granted them a truce for some months, and continued his magnificent display of sovereign power and dignity in the capital. In the meantime, vain of what he considered

\* Richard lived in a more sumptuous manner than, perhaps, any of his predecessors. His household consisted of 10,000 persons. He had 300 in his kitchen, and other offices were in proportion. This enormous train had tables sup-

plied them at the king's expense, according to the mode of the age. Such prodigality was doubtless the fruitful source of popular discontents, as exactions must have been made to supply the wants of these court retainers.

the almost perfect success of his expedition, he communicated his achievements in due form to his uncle of York, whom he had left regent in England. He pointed out three distinctive classes in Ireland: the Irish enemies, the rebels of both races, and the English subjects. The first, he declared had submitted—the rebels, he apprehended, had received just provocation, and he was therefore disposed to grant them a general pardon; but in this point he desired the advice of his uncle. York, although far from possessing an active spirit, or comprehensive understanding, plainly discovered the vanity of his royal nephew, and the indolence which had caused him, with a precipitant facility, to wish to conclude a deceitful and precarious accommodation with those, who, to be completely subdued to a peaceable and dutiful obedience, required a vigorous prosecution. He qualified his reply, however, by attributing the incautious ease of Richard to the superior opportunities he had of judging of the circumstances and affairs of Ireland, merely recommending the exaction of proper fines from all those to whom the royal mercy was extended. Soon after this, Richard was earnestly requested to return to England. This request was enforced by the presence of the Archbishop of York, and Bishop of London, who were deputed to attend the king in Ireland, to represent to him the danger of the church, from the increasing influence of the Lollards, or followers of Wickliffe. The late queen had greatly favoured these reformers, and they were secretly, not avowedly countenanced, by many of the nobility, excepting the Duke of Lancaster, who scrupled not to avow his encouragement of the new principles, even appearing openly in court, in order to give countenance to Wickliffe during his trial. The prelates of York



and London earnestly besought the king to defend their church from the dangerous innovations of this heresy, affecting to place their reliance on his piety and authority, as the only human means of preserving the purity of the faith from ruin, concluding their arguments by pathetically entreating his return to England without delay.

The king was not deficient in zeal for the established religion, nor insensible of the honour of extirpating heretical depravity. He hastened some regulations relative to Ireland, revived and ratified ordinances deemed salutary, appointed Roger Mortimer, Earl of March, his vicegerent, and embarked for England, after a residence of nine months in Ireland, where he had, in fact, effected nothing. The only stipulation of any real consequence which had been made, was that whereby the Irish of Leinster were bound to evacuate the province; when the royal army withdrew, an infraction of this treaty quickly followed. In consequence, the flame of war, smothered for a while, once more broke out; into the details of which we shall not enter, though it was deemed a sufficient pretence for Richard to propose a second Irish expedition. The discontents in England flowing from a vicious government, had prepared the way for a violent revolution; and in that moment of apparent tranquillity, which, like the awful stillness that precedes a conflict of the elements in the natural world, is the usual portent of a dangerous hurricane in the moral or political system:—in that deceitful moment of calm, Richard, vainly relying on an established power, formed his resolution of revisiting Ireland.

In the spring of the year, 1399, his preparations were completed, the sums extorted to raise which, afforded a fair pretence for inflaming the

irritated passions of his people. York was left regent, and the Duke of Aumerle, his son, was instructed to follow Richard with a reinforcement. When arrived at Bristol, reports of secret conspiracies and intended insurrections were afloat. They reached the king, and determined him to send a peremptory mandate to the Earl of Northumberland, instantly to join his standard. This suspected noble refused to obey, but in gentle and dutiful terms, pleading various plausible reasons. Richard, with infatuated credulity, felt little alarm at the evasion, and contenting himself with proclaiming the earl a traitor, and declaring his lands forfeited, proceeded in his embarkation, and shortly arrived with his train at Waterford. Six days were here wasted in vain parade. Fourteen more in Kilkenny, expecting the Duke of Aumerle. The inconsiderate Richard recollected not that Leinster, which was to be the seat of war, was already wasted by hostilities, and was utterly incapable of supporting the army he brought. The enemy, well aware of the difficulties into which he was hurrying himself, secretly exulted and affected to rejoice that the period was quickly approaching, when English usurpation should be overthrown. The whole process of this futile expedition demonstrated the weakness of the leader, and the treachery and ill faith of those he could not conquer. After enduring great hardships he arrived at Dublin with a suffering and enfeebled army. He was here joined by Aumerle, in whom he placed a blind confidence, and whose excuses for delay he readily admitted. Richard resided six weeks at Dublin, while a part of his forces were detached against the enemy. Tempestuous weather and contrary winds had cut off intelligence from England during this period of rest, when at

length a bark arrived, bearing the tremendous intelligence of his utter ruin. Dismayed at the news of the invasion and successful progress of his rival, Richard became nearly paralyzed with the magnitude of the shock. His council advised that he should instantly return to England; Aumerle prevailed on him to stay until his whole army could be at once transported; Salisbury was dispatched to collect the Welshmen, who hastened to his standard, impatient for Richard's arrival; but disappointed at the delay, and shocked at his infatuated apathy, dispersed. When the king did arrive, the desperation of his affairs was complete. He was abandoned by his friends, and deserted by his subjects. Artifice was employed to prevent his seeking refuge, either by returning to Ireland or passing to France. But betrayed into the power of his rival, the result was his deposition and death.

Many insuperable obstacles arose to the settlement and reformation of Ireland, from the bloody factions, the foundation of which was laid by the accession of Henry of Lancaster to the throne of England. A reign of security there, could alone render it probable that the monarch could attend to the distant part of his dominions, or give him leisure to appreciate its importance, or be mindful of its improvement. Among the fair professions of Henry, however, on his accession, the affairs of Ireland were declared to be the particular object of his attention. A subsidy was granted by the English parliament for its service, and an order was issued for reviving and enforcing the statute against absentees. The archbishops of Armagh and Dublin, deputed by the Irish parliament to repair to the king, were graciously received. Thomas, Duke of Lancaster, Henry's second son, was appointed vicegerent of Ireland,

where the domestic disorders had been aggravated by invasions of the Scots, who were welcomed by the native Irish as auxiliaries against the English.

1402. The arrival of the duke promised relief. Complaints were graciously received, and redress promised. Every thing seemed to augur well of the government; but one fierce Irish insurgent, Art M'Murchad, effectually disturbed the returning tranquillity; and although many salutary provisions were made to avert the consequences of a state of rebellion and warfare, the administration of Lancaster was not marked by any important results. When he endeavoured to contend with the insurgents, he was vigorously opposed. Even under the very walls of Dublin he was wounded, his forces repelled, and although many preparations were made to retrieve his fortune, he soon after returned to England, leaving the public defence to his deputy, Butler, prior of St. John of Jerusalem.

The English thus in effect abandoned to their own resources and expedients, were subjected to the perpetual incursions of the Irish, who daily advanced their power, and enlarged their borders, while the restless factions of the English lords deprived the government of its necessary support. The active prior of Kilmainham marched against the enemies of the public peace, at the head of some Irish who professed themselves well affected, but in a moment of peril abandoned their leader, and exposed his life to imminent danger. The borderers were at length driven to secure themselves against the Irish by bribes and pensions. This dishonourable concession was subsequently reduced into an annual stipend, known by the name of Black Rent, payable to the powerful Irish chieftains, to ensure their protection. This

was a high gratification of their pride, as it seemed like a recognition of their ancient sovereignty.

Such was the wretched state of Ireland, during the turbulent and distracted reign of Henry IV., during which penal acts were for the first time enacted against heresy. It was enacted, that when any heretic who relapsed, or refused to abjure his opinions, was delivered over to the secular arm by the bishop or his commissaries, he should be committed to the flames by the civil magistrate, before the whole people. It will readily be believed that this law did not remain a dead letter among the clergy. The commons who had been required to grant supplies, proposed in an early part of this reign, and that in very plain terms to the king, that he should seize all the temporalities of the church, and employ them as a perpetual fund for the exigencies of the state. The king, however, discouraged the suggestion, but the commons returned to the charge a few years after. They insisted that the clergy possessed a third of the lands of the kingdom, and that their riches disqualified them for performing their ministerial functions with proper zeal and attention. This bold application was accompanied with an address for mitigating the statutes against the Lollards, a plain indication from what source the application emanated. The commons were answered with severity by the king; and further to approve his zeal for the church, which his policy dictated, he ordered a Lollard to be burned before the dissolution of the parliament. These transactions certainly breathe a portion of the struggling spirit which suddenly burst forth in the Reformation.

If the care which Henry found necessary in defending a crown, which he had obtained by



very equivocal means, gave him little opportunity to look beyond the immediate seat of his government, the military genius and the circumstances of France calling them into action, equally prevented his high-spirited successor from attending to unhappy Ireland. Amidst the dazzling objects of his ambition, Henry totally disregarded a part of his dominions, which might have furnished objects worthy a patriot king to pursue. Sir John Stanley was appointed governor, and the period of his power was marked with cruel exactions, extorted with obdurate violence during its short continuance ; it began in October, 1413, and ended in January ensuing, by his decease.

The election of the Irish council appointed Crawley, Archbishop of Dublin, as his successor. Eminent for piety and knowledge, this virtuous prelate was neither by his disposition nor profession fitted to govern a discontented people, rendered irritable by sufferings, or to repel a violent and proud enemy. The realm seemed at the point of sinking into ruin, under the complicated pressure of war and faction, when Lord Furnival, distinguished for military abilities, assumed the reins of government. His measures were decisive, and in a degree successful. The English pale was not enlarged, but it was defended ; yet he seems, like too many of his predecessors, to have governed with partiality,—injustice, and oppression ; evils which the English vicegerents were aware could not be closely investigated, and which their remoteness from the supreme seat of government enabled them to impose with impunity on those subjected to their temporary sway.

The prejudices of the English against the Irish, appear at this period to have assumed a highly mischievous excess, so as totally to preclude all idea of conciliation or improvement. To in-

crease the prejudices, we find several causes contributed, amongst which may be ranked the practice of the meanest and most degraded of the Irish resorting to England, in order to seek relief from their wants, or a refuge from the consequences of their crimes. From the conduct of these outcasts, a judgment equally marked by folly and cruelty was formed of the whole race. So great was the number of these emigrants, that the English parliament enacted that all such should be obliged to depart, and this law was executed with such severity and folly, that the most reputable of English race were included in the dishonour of the prohibition. Students resorting to England for education, though expressly exempted from the penalties of the statute, were disdainfully excluded from the inns of court, a narrow and cruel policy, which effectually precluded them from such intercourse as would have removed prejudices, and conciliated interests and affections, and also most flagrantly unjust, as denying them the opportunity of studying those laws to which they were expected to pay obedience. An accumulation of these oppressive and unjust causes at length determined the old English race in Ireland to lay their grievances at the feet of the sovereign ; and on his return from the glorious victory of Agincourt they determined to do so. Their petition, fully prepared, was presented to the chancellor, in order to have the great seal of Ireland affixed to it. The chancellor, however, refused to do so, and, of course, the petition could not be transmitted. The refusal naturally tended to inflame that spirit which had given occasion for such a display of contempt. The resentment of the disappointed party brooded in secret, though the governor kept the Irish in awe, and the English province appeared so free from danger, that Botteler, the warlike prior of

Kilmainham, marched into France to the assistance of the king, with fifteen hundred men ; but whether he performed this incongruous service voluntarily or as a vassal does not appear. The oppressive and unjust Furnival was succeeded in the government by the Earl of Ormond, who was invested with such ample powers as indicated the confidence of the crown, and promised to be highly acceptable to the English race.

The answer of the new governor to the address of his parliament, was fraught with assurances of a just, equitable, and impartial administration. The petition to the throne was revived, and conducted through the requisite forms without question. The archbishop of Armagh was one of the appointed agents to present it to the king. This petition is extant, and contains a strong and pathetic representation of the miserable state of the petitioners, entreats the presence of the king, to save his people from destruction, as the Irish who had done homage to King Richard, had long since taken up arms against the English ; notwithstanding their recognizances to the apostolic see, they beseech his highness to lay their conduct before the pope, and prevail on the holy father to publish a crusade against them. While they freely condemn the conduct of many, they make honourable mention of Crawley, Archbishop of Dublin, as well as their then governor. They pray that their churches may be supplied with faithful pastors, without such delays as they had experienced from selfish and designing governors.

It does not appear what particular attention was paid to the several prayers preferred in this petition, but we infer that it was not left unnoticed by the king, as soon after, Merbury, the odious chancellor, of whom it had strongly complained, - was removed, and Fitz-Thomas,

prior of the hospital of St. John of Jerusalem, substituted in his place.

The Earl of Ormond continued in his government, and gave satisfaction, which, in the existing state of society, was attended with no little difficulty. The infection of party and jealousy pervaded all ranks and degrees, even the clergy, who should have allayed its virulence, and arrested its extension, themselves caught the infection. An English bishop of Lismore accused O'Hedian of Cashel of heinous offences, of which while he accused him, he discovered the true source of his zeal, by adding, that O'Hedian was an enemy to the English nation, never conferred a benefice on any Englishman, and always recommended his brethren to observe the same conduct. On a like ill-grounded or aggravated charge was a bishop of Cork prosecuted by the neighbouring prelate of Cloyne. These ecclesiastic contentions afforded too much encouragement to the narrow-minded jealousies of the laity. Had there been any unity or concert among the Irish race, such was the weakness of the English that they might easily have destroyed them. But as it was, although surrounded by enemies on all sides, yet these enemies were so divided amongst themselves, that they had no idea of being bound by one general permanent interest, and their hatred and jealousy of the English was not superior to that with which they regarded a rival sept.

The accession of the infant Henry VI., and the affairs of France occupying the full attention of his guardians, necessarily prevented any progress of reformation in Ireland, its disorders, on the contrary, if possible, increased. To remedy, if possible, the insufferable evils which pressed upon that unhappy country, the regency of England appointed Edmond, Earl of March and

Ulster, to the government. This earl disdained to administer in his own person, but entertaining the most degraded ideas of the Irish, thought he sufficiently discharged his duty towards such inferior beings, by deputing the Bishop of Meath to govern. This prelate, respectable and venerable in his peculiar station, was yet, both in consequence and rank, inferior to the lords of the old English race. But what was deemed more objectionable by those he was to govern, he was of English race, and strongly imbued with the anti-Irish prejudices of his countrymen. The nobles provoked at this appointment assembled in council, when it was discovered that the prelate's commission was sealed only with his patron's private seal. They demanded a commission under the great seal of either England or Ireland, and great altercations ensued between the English and Irish members of the council. The deputy peremptorily demanded his seat; the archbishop of Dublin, then chancellor, protested against the mode of his appointment, and refused to administer the oaths, or receive him as governor. The nomination of the earl was as warmly supported by some Englishmen of consequence recently arrived. To one of those who demanded that the bishop should be admitted to the exercise of his office, in a haughty and peremptory tone, the archbishop replied with dignity and temper, "Sir, you are a soldier; the borders are harassed, go and repel the enemy; you will thus serve the state more effectually than in this place." After some delay, the council consented to receive the deputy, but with the express declaration that they did so receive him, not from any conviction of the legality of his commission, but from the necessity of public affairs, and to prevent the manifold evils of the suspension of government.



Some idea may be formed of the violence of faction, and the odium which fell unjustly upon the Bishop of Meath, whose private character and conduct were exemplary, that some time subsequent, by infamous confederacy and bribery, he was accused of purloining a chalice from a church in his diocese. A bill of indictment found against him was removed to parliament by certiorari; and the bishop, with a spirit and dignity worthy his high station and sacred function, pleaded his innocence, but demanded that his privileges as an ecclesiastic and lord of parliament should be preserved inviolate. He was referred to his metropolitan, who received his compurgation, and pronounced him innocent. Yet his enemies might still have dared to question it, had not his triumph been made complete by one of the party in the robbery, being seized with remorse, discovered the real perpetrators, and confessed his participation in the crime.

This clerical governor summoned a parliament, which enacted severe penalties against defacers of the king's coin, and other laws. [1423.] The Earl of Ormond, however, soon succeeded him as lord deputy, on account of some alarming commotions. It was during the administration of this nobleman, and of Talbot, Lord Furnival, that the Irish enemy appears to have had a considerable check, and many submissions were made to the English power. It would appear that nothing liberal or refined, nothing virtuous and honourable, could be tolerated in the corrupted society of Ireland, for Ormond, whose character was of that high grade as to have the most beneficial consequences from his example and influence found envy and malevolence surrounded him, and the representations dictated by those hateful passions had so great an effect on the king, that

Ormond was summoned to his presence to answer to charges reflecting severely on his government. Ormond, indignant at the injurious malice of his enemies, like Samuel of old, summoned the nobility and gentry of the pale to attend him at Drogheda, when he boldly appealed to them to point out one single instance in which he had departed from his integrity. "The magnanimity of conscious innocence," says Leland, "could not fail of its effect; honourable testimonies were given of his integrity, the king was addressed in his favour, and his removal was suspended." But his enemies had laid deep their plans, and finally brought them to bear. The virtuous Ormond was removed, and Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury, constituted Earl of Waterford, was sent to assume the reins of government, attended by a troop of seven hundred chosen men, [1445.]

The first care of the new vicegerent was to suppress the prevailing commotions. The Irish chieftains were reduced, the degenerate English intimidated, and some of the most daring seized, condemned, and executed. Having quieted the public disorders, the Earl convened a parliament at Trim, to deliberate on the reformation of the state, and the due regulation of the executive government. The government of Talbot was conducted in direct opposition to that of Ormond, as he resigned himself entirely to the faction which had removed that nobleman. At this period, the jealousies and factions existing in England, produced an appointment to the government of Ireland, which had an important and permanent influence upon the affairs of the nation. Ere we enter upon this, however, we will take a rapid and *general* view of the state of the church and of literature;—nothing specifically referring to Ireland is recorded.

Learning which had gradually extended itself for the three last centuries flourished during the fifteenth with considerable luxuriance. Arts and sciences were cultivated with ardour, under the most auspicious encouragements, and recovered a portion of that lustre which had appeared dimmed for ever. Several of the pontiffs became the zealous patrons and protectors of the arts, among whom Nicholas the fifth ranks eminent. The munificence and authority of kings, princes and nobles were also liberally exercised in the civilizing cause, and men of genius were animated to the exercise of their talents, by the honours and rewards promised to the aspirings of genius or the labours of industry. To these happy circumstances the invention of the incomparable art of printing, powerfully contributed, for by it the treasures of wisdom were laid open to the enquiring, and many noble compositions purified the taste, excited the emulation, and animated with a lively and noble ambition men of genius and learning. Amongst the favouring causes of the advancement of literature throughout the western world, we may rank the downfall of the Grecian empire, which lay prostrate beneath Mohammedan ignorance; many exiles were driven from that land of genius and elegance, and bore with them to distant lands the love of learning, and the advantages of true and elegant taste. The precious remains of Grecian antiquity were displayed and illustrated by commentaries possessing degrees of excellence, which perhaps will be rarely surpassed or even equalled. The study of oriental learning and antiquities in general was pursued with ardour and success. But while learning thus rose from its ruins, the Christian church by the corruption, art, and ignorance of its ministers was in a deplorable state, apparently portentous of its

ruin. The most eminent writers of the age, severe as they are, seem not to have exaggerated the causes of their censures, nor had the corrupt advocates of the clergy the courage to call them to account for the boldness of those censures, or even to question the justice and truth of their complaints. Nay, they even virtually acknowledged the justice of their assertions that there was nothing sound even in the visible head or in its members, and that the aid of the secular arm was imperiously demanded to sever the infected parts from those that were more sound, adding that those were justly deemed the best Christians and most useful members of society, who braving the terrors of persecution, and triumphing over the fear of man, boldly inveighed against the Roman pontiff, his venal court, and the whole train of his followers and votaries. These remonstrances and the abuses which called them forth agitated Europe, John Huss and his friend Jerome of Prague were evidences of zeal on one part, and of cruel persecution on the other. The former of these eminent men declaimed against the vices that had corrupted all the orders and ranks of the clergy, nor was he singular, such remonstrances were become common, and were generally approved by the thinking and the wise.

Although the famous council of Constance met with the declared intention of devising means for the reformation of the church, yet did the individual and selfish passions and interests of the several members of the great assembly so clash, and prove obstacles to the salutary work, that the assembly after deliberating three years and a half broke up without effecting any thing. Five years elapsed before another council was assembled at Basle, when some plan of reform was again in vain attempted. The pope sought much to dis-

solve this council but was ultimately obliged to submit to its decisions, and when he persevered in opposition, was pronounced by it in a state of contumacy, for having refused the summons to appear before the assembly. The indignant pontiff opened a rival council and from thence thundered out his sentence of excommunication against that held at Basle, which, exasperated in its turn, solemnly deposed the daring Eugenius from the papacy. Again the furious pope retorted, devoting all the members of this inflexible council to eternal condemnation, declaring all the acts of it null, and proceedings unlawful. These fulminations were derided by the council, the members persisting in their purpose, elected a new pope. This election produced a deplorable schism between two rival pontiffs and councils, and of course all Europe felt the effects of the bitter party spirit created, nor were the dissensions composed until the decease of Eugenius in 1447. A house thus divided against itself, indicated its approaching ruin. It received a temporary apparent stability during the pontificate of Nicholas the fifth who succeeded, eminently qualified as he was for his elevated station. Equally distinguished by his erudition and genius, he was a zealous patron of learned men. Remarkable for his moderation and for the meek and pacific spirit which adorned his conduct and actions, this pontiff evinced to the world a beautiful example of what the head of the church should be. Under his auspicious pontificate the European princes sanctioned and aided by him exerted all their endeavours to restore peace and tranquillity to the divided church.\* (He made the concordat with the Empire.)

\* Nicholas the fifth. This fell the victim of his own keen eminent and virtuous pontiff sensibility and sincere religious



The monastic orders were at this period sunk into deplorable degeneracy, and while the more opulent monks drew upon themselves the public odium by unblushing depravity, the mendicants were chargeable with irregularities of another kind. Arrogance, a quarrelsome and litigious spirit, an ambitious desire of encroaching upon the rights and privileges of others; and a disputatious spirit perpetuating the controversies that subsisted between them and the sacerdotal orders; these were among the faults which rendered them very troublesome to society, while their inordinate passion for innovation and novelty caused them to introduce many dangerous and destructive errors into religion. But what contributed greatly to the diminution of the papal power was the separation of these mendicant orders from the church of which they had been such zealous supporters. The more austere and rebellious Franciscans who thus separated themselves, and at the same time renounced their allegiance to the pontiff, were distinguished by the appellation of the *fratercelli* or *minorites*, and as misguided zeal generally passes to extremes, they carried on open war against the court of Rome. They were persecuted with severe excess, but remained unmoved under all the violent means of conversion which marked the spirit of the times. Hunted by inquisitors, many parties of these wretched men took refuge in England, and especially in Ireland. But the series of calamities and persecutions which pursued the miserable sect, did not extirpate it entirely. A few of its votaries remained in Ger-

feelings. The principal cause of his death was the fatal revolution in the Grecian empire, which placed Constantinople in the hands of the Infidels.

This melancholy event preyed upon his spirits and at length ended his valuable life, March 1455.

many untill the reformation, the cause of which they were prepared to adopt, and readily embraced the doctrines and discipline of Luther.

Among the religious fraternities founded in the fifteenth century, we must not omit to mention that of the brethren of the common life who deserve honourable notice from their eminent usefulness. They lived under the rule of St. Augustine, and greatly contributed to promote the cause of religion, learning, and virtue. This society had been formed during the preceding century by Gerade de Groote, a man eminent for his fervent piety, and extensive erudition, but it was not until the fifteenth century that it was completely organized. It was divided into two classes, the lettered brethren, and the illiterate, who though they occupied separate habitations, lived in the firmest bonds of fraternal union. The clerks applied themselves with zeal and ardour to the study of polite literature, and the education of youth. They composed learned works for the instruction of their contemporaries, and erected seminaries of learning wherever they resided. The illiterate brethren on the other hand were employed in manual labour, and exercised with success the mechanic arts. Neither were under the restraint of religious vows, yet they had all things in common, this community forming the bond of their union. The sisters of this virtuous society lived much in the same manner, employing the hours not consecrated to prayer and reading, in the education of female youth, and in branches of industry suitable to their sex. The schools erected by this fraternity acquired a great and illustrious reputation in this century. From them issued many great men, those immortal restorers of learning and taste, such as Erasmus, Alexander Hegius, and many others. From the

period of the institution of the Jesuits these admirable schools began to decline, so prone are men to change and so caught by novelty. The brethren of the common life were greatly hated by the clergy, who opposed every thing which possessed any tendency to promote learning and taste.

We find mention in this century of schools erected by the Lollards; that term was given to the members of the fraternity we speak of, as a general one of reproach, similar to that of Methodist among us, and to which the prejudiced can affix no definite ideas, though it is used in a tone of contempt or derision. The brethren of the common life were however so distinguished for their industry, virtue, and learning, that they were invited by the authorities of many towns to reside amongst them and to undertake the education of their youth. Religion, generally speaking, was so debased that it was destitute of any thing that could attract the esteem of the virtuous or the wise, those only were called true sons of the church, those only were thought worthy the reputation of possessing Christian knowledge, who professed a profound veneration for the pontiff and his ministers, who studied to render each propitious by frequent and rich donations, who were regular and exact in the use of appointed ceremonies, and who had wealth sufficient to pay the fines of omission, or which were annexed to the commission of different degrees of transgression. Such were the necessary constituents of an ordinary piety; but when was added to those a certain degree of austerity and bodily mortification, such were placed in the higher order of worthies, and considered as the peculiar favourites of heaven. In regard to the ceremonials of religion, it is only necessary to say that it was reduced to a mere show, composed of pompous ab-

surditities and splendid trifles. But if this view of religion, appears as it must, unpleasing and unattractive, it cannot be destitute of instruction, it will teach us to draw a grateful comparison, and to rejoice that the mists have cleared away and left the illuminating glory open to our view. If we but fix our steadfast view upon it, will but open our souls to its heavenly beam, it will console and enliven ~~our~~ onward path, and ensure our eternal felicity. Many were the individuals who, losing their long accustomed dependence upon human writings, took the Bible in their hands, and studied its divine precepts until fervour possessed their whole souls, and the majesty of the divine word was revered and acknowledged as the only guide in all cases of doubt. Thus while the supporters of ecclesiastical domination attained a height of wickedness in theory, and an audaciousness of practice which justly called forth the voice of censure and abhorrence from the reflecting, a light was beginning to beam on the nations of Europe which disclosed to men the lustre of scripture truths, and their vital importance to the well being of man, leading the way to a revolution in religion, the consequences of which reached, and shall continue to affect millions of rational and immortal beings till time shall be no more.

## CHAPTER X.

*Weakness and incapacity of Henry—Richard, Earl of March and Ulster appointed to the government of Ireland—Accepts it conditionally—His designs—Returns to England—Ormond his deputy is summoned to England, appoints the archbishop of Armagh—Is remanded to Ireland, does not long survive—Edward Fitz Eustace obtains the government—Reconciliation of the King and Duke of York, he is restored to his Irish government—Obtains possession of the king's person, and determines to strengthen his own interest in Ireland—Government entrusted to Earl of Kildare—Duke driven for refuge to Ireland, received with ardour—His cause warmly espoused—Is declared Henry's successor—Falls at the Battle of Wakefield—English interest in Ireland declines—Corrupt government—Battle of Wakefield—Earl of Kildare chosen governor—Accession of Edward the fourth—Duke of Clarence appointed to the lieutenancy of Ireland for life—Change of parties in consequence—Earl of Ormond attainted and executed—Earl of Desmond, governor—Earl of Worcester appointed Lord Deputy—Intrigues against Desmond—Is condemned and executed on false and frivolous charges—Kildare appointed lord deputy—Accession of Henry VII.—Earl of Pembroke appointed Lord Lieutenant of Ireland—Kildare appointed his deputy—Receives the king at Dublin—Earl of Warwick—Irish desire to invade England—Poverty of the government—Henry prepares for resistance—Hostile armies meet at Northampton—Defeat of the Pretender—Papal Bull—Henry pursues pacific measures. Extends his royal grace to Kildare and others—Keating, prior of Kilmainham declared unpardonable—Contests among the Irish—Perkin Warbeck—His proceedings—Consequences—Archbishop of Dublin summoned to attend the king—Received with high consideration—Sir Edward Poyning's is sent to Ireland—His measures—English Chancellor and other civil officers appointed—Conduct of the Irish—Poyning's Law—Act of attainder passed against Earl of Kildare—Interview between the King and Earl of Kildare—Triumph of Kildare—Execution of Warbeck and two of his Irish adherents—Henry has recourse to papal authority—Proceed-*



*ings of Kildare's government—English power revives in Ireland—The dawn of the reformation—Monastic orders instituted—Jesuits—Attachment of Ireland to Rome.*

THE weakness and incapacity of Henry the sixth rendered him a mere cypher under the controul of those by whom he was surrounded, and awakened the ambition of the House of York, whose claims to the throne had not been forgotten during the reign of two Lancastrian princes. Edmund, Earl of March and Ulster, who died suddenly in Ireland, was descended by the female line from Lionel Duke of Clarence, second son of Edward the third, and of course possessed a superior right to the throne, to that of the descendants of the Duke of Lancaster, the third son of that monarch. On the decease of Edmund, the rights of the family devolved on his brother Richard, who was endowed with all the qualities necessary to support them. Valour and great abilities, prudence in conduct, and benignity of disposition distinguished this nobleman. On the death of the Duke of Bedford he had been appointed regent in France, and there for some years supported the interests of England. He had enjoyed an opportunity of displaying his talents for government and the virtues of his character, during the period of his regency in France, and although recalled from that command by intrigue, he was soon sent to suppress a rebellion in Ireland. He accepted the appointment but made his conditions, which he determined should be such as to confer honour and authority most ample upon himself. He stipulated to hold the government for ten years, to receive the entire revenue of Ireland without obligation of accounting for disbursement, with an immediate advance of two thousand

marks, and an annual pension of two thousand more from England, to be empowered to let the king's lands, to dispose of all offices, to levy such forces as he should judge necessary, to name his deputy, and to return at his pleasure. His government opened with all the splendour which these conditions indicated, and in such a manner as to recommend him to popular favour, and to increase the number of his adherents in the design he meditated, to assert his claim to the crown of England. In the meantime the partizans of his family in that kingdom were vigilant in watching opportunities to favour his interests. The insurrection of Cade was supposed to have originated in the duke, who is said to have employed and encouraged him to excite the discontents of the people. It was so strongly rumoured that York had raised this insurrection, that he was forming designs against the king, and intended to conduct an Irish army into England, that orders were dispatched along the coasts intimating his traitorous designs, and directing that his landing should be opposed. The announcement of these fears injured the royal cause, as it led people to examine into the claims of the duke. They also formed a fair pretence for him to return to England to justify his conduct and to guard against the designs of his enemies. He accordingly embarked, eluded the opposition on the coast of Wales, and soon made his appearance in London, but without any army, and with such a train as could give no fair or plausible cause of complaint. The pretensions of this nobleman it is unnecessary to add led to the bloody civil wars between the rival houses of York and Lancaster, which during forty years deluged the unhappy kingdom in blood, and occasioned the ruin of most of the ancient nobility, who perished either

on the scaffold or in the field. It does not distinctly appear what particular provisions this prince made at his departure, for the administration of Ireland, where he had succeeded in attaching to his person the whole of the nation. But it appears singular that he should constitute the duke of Ormond, a zealous Lancastrian, his deputy. Ormond summoned a parliament at Drogheda under the title of deputy to the duke, and was soon after created Lord Lieutenant of Ireland by the king, but his presence being necessary in England he appointed the archbishop of Armagh his deputy. The appointment of an Ecclesiastic to a government which required military abilities, either encouraged disorders or awakened apprehensions of them, and the earl was remanded to Ireland. He did not long survive the resumption of his power, and the administration devolved on Sir Edward Fitz Eustace a martial character well fitted for the station. On the apparent reconciliation of the king and Duke of York, and the retiring of the latter into Wales, he was restored to his Irish government, or at least acknowledged as vicegerent. The absence of the Duke of York had encouraged the native Irish to several petty quarrels. Innumerable incursions and expeditions in different quarters of the island took place, but are unworthy of notice or detail. In the meantime, the victory of St. Albans giving the duke possession of the king's person, and the whole authority of the crown, he determined to strengthen his interest in Ireland. Fitz Eustace was removed and the government entrusted to the earl of Kildare, whose family had formed a strict connection with the Duke of York during his residence in Ireland. Various causes contributed to render the period of his power more tranquil than usual.

The spirit of Margaret in 1452, renewed the contests with the Yorkists, and the duke was betrayed, defeated, and driven for refuge into Ireland. He was received with ardour and affection, and notwithstanding his adherents were deemed rebels and traitors, and he himself attainted, the Irish espoused his cause and resolved to support it with their lives, and although it would lead us too far to detail them, numerous instances occur to prove that this zeal was genuine, and manifested in essential acts of service to the duke. Some attempts made by the royal party to seize the person of the duke, and some of his adherents only served to rouse the indignation of his partizans in the Irish parliament, and to expose the agents to their vengeance. By thus mingling in the contests of England, the Irish were flattered into an opinion of their own consequence, and even their vanity seemed to increase their zeal.

Edward, the son of Duke Richard, had accompanied his father to Ireland, and to him the attachment of the people was also displayed. When the victory gained at Northampton by the Yorkists, once more called the duke from Ireland, his adherents attended him in great numbers with the strongest professions of resolution and fidelity. The district of Meath in particular was almost exhausted of its inhabitants, enabling the duke to appear at the head of a gallant and formidable troop. After having been declared Henry's successor by a parliament surrounded and intimidated by his forces, he with five thousand followers, mostly Irish, was encountered at Wakefield by the queen's forces amounting to twenty thousand men. Unable to resist a force so superior, the termination was fatal to the duke, who with numbers of his adherents fell in the bloody contest. The diminution of the English interest in Ireland,

the result of these affairs, was quickly perceived by the vigilant eyes of the old natives, and the usual disturbances were renewed. The contest for the crown of England principally affected Ireland by giving the opportunity to those entrusted with the government to exercise their authority severely and intemperately, for amidst the national disorders in England, little attention was given to the conduct of those to whom authority was delegated in Ireland. The fatal action of Wakefield created a great sensation, however, in a country to which the Duke of York was much endeared. When the feelings of public sorrow for his loss had somewhat subsided, the council proceeded to exercise their ancient rights of electing a governor until the royal pleasure should be known, and on this occasion demonstrated their attachment to the house of York, for Thomas Earl of Kildare was chosen. He summoned a parliament, and it was prorogued when intelligence arrived of the deposition of Henry the sixth, and that Edward the fourth was seated on the throne. Kildare was confirmed in his appointment, but was quickly superseded by the appointment of George Duke of Clarence to the lieutenancy of Ireland for life, and of course parties changed. The Earl of Ormond, who had been one of the first victims to the revenge of the triumphant Yorkists, was attainted and executed upon a scaffold. We cannot enter into the various circumstances which marked the government of the Earl of Desmond, who had marched against the insurgents; after many fluctuations in his power it appeared to be gaining stability, when the affairs in England once more shook his authority, by giving free course to the virulence of his enemies, and thereby precipitating his ruin. In consequence of the union of Edward with Elizabeth



Grey, the interests of her family were objects of his attention. He created her father Earl of Rivers, and further dignified him with the appointment of lord high constable of England. Tiptoft, Earl of Worcester, had filled that eminent station, but resigned it in favour of Rivers, and to compensate for the relinquishment, the office of lord deputy of Ireland was conferred upon him, with honourable and extensive powers. This appointment created much satisfaction to the enemies of the Geraldine family. All those who had, or imagined they had been oppressed by their power, or insulted by their pride, crowded to the new governor with various malicious and false charges against Desmond, whom they accused of an intention of renouncing his allegiance, and to make himself independent sovereign of Ireland. It is stated that the queen had been offended at some disrespectful expression of Desmond in regard to her family, and that the new governor was directed by her, to execute the most severe measures towards him should any thing be found against him to justify the penalties of the law. Tiptoft was disposed to treat with rigour and severity the individual thus marked for his vindictive attention, and to second the designs of Desmond's enemies. He with some others were charged with "alliance, fostering and alterage with the king's Irish enemies, for furnishing them with horses, harness and arms, and supporting them against the king's subjects, declaring their goods and lands forfeit, and that whoever shall not discover their goods to the Earl of Worcester within fourteen days after the rising of the parliament shall be attainted of felony." Desmond was condemned and executed on these charges. The laws on which he was condemned had neither been uniformly obeyed nor strictly executed, and

he doubtless fell the victim of a factious animosity. Some ineffectual attempts were made to revenge his death by a surviving branch of the family, but an attainder followed the manifestation of zeal. Yet the triumph of the enemies of this illustrious house was short lived. The earl of Kildare hastened to the king, related the injuries done to his family, was favourably heard, and received his pardon. His attainder was reversed and his estate and dignity restored. To complete his triumph he was constituted lord deputy in the place of Tiptoft, who was called away by the disorders of England, and by a just retribution suffered by a similar sentence to that which he had executed upon Desmond.

It is evident from even the single incident we have named, that the most violent and worst passions of the human heart were continually kept alive and exasperated in this state of fluctuating and jealous government. It would be tedious to follow the changes of this distempered state, it must be sufficient to say that such alarming accounts were communicated to Edward of the situation of his Irish dominions, that he deemed it necessary to summon to his presence the earl of Kildare, the archbishop of Dublin, and others, in order to be distinctly informed of the nature and causes of such disorders, and to devise means whereby they might be obviated, or removed. The result was the government being vested in Kildare during the space of four years, many privileges being conferred to favour its tranquility and just authority. Kildare enjoyed his administration, unrivalled and prosecuted the usual authority without any considerable difficulty or interruption. To increase his influence and improve the friendly dispositions of the Irish, the sister of Kildare was united to Con O'Nial, son to

the chieftain of the north, distinguished as the first in pride and power of the Hibernian lords. The earl continued to exercise his power during the remainder of Edward's reign, the succession of Edward the fifth and the usurpation of Richard ; a period in which Ireland presented no new aspect. The contests of the old natives with each other, and the necessary provisions for the defence and security of the English settlements, still continuing as heretofore. Some Irish septs lived peaceably in the English countries, and some even received pensions in reward of their services in repelling invaders. Others maintained an independent state even in the neighbourhood of Dublin, so that the earl deputy found it expedient to relax the severity of former statutes, and to empower the Archbishop of Dublin to present *Irish* clerks to benefices within their respective districts for the space of two years. The Irish so zealously attached to the house of York, heard the intelligence of the revolution which placed Henry the seventh on the throne with great discontent, naturally expecting great changes in the government. The new king elevated his uncle Jasper Earl of Pembroke, to the dukedom of Bedford, and appointed him lord lieutenant of Ireland. But as this station had been for a considerable time conferred on princes of the blood royal, who acted by deputy, it continued to be so in the present instance, and to the astonishment of all, Kildare was appointed, and the other offices of state also continued without change or addition. Whatever might be the motives of Henry for this measure, whether a generous confidence, or a fear of sudden changes in a political state, already weak and disordered, it certainly gave his enemies a dangerous power, the disquieting effects of which, he subsequently too amply experienced.

The influence of the deputy, and his firm attachment to his party very soon appeared in the violence of one of his adherents.

An individual named Keating, who was prior of Kilmainham, having much intermeddled in the political contests of Ireland, had in the assurance of party support, alienated the revenues, and even had the audacity to sell the ornaments and reliques of his house. He was for this sacrilegious offence deprived by his principal, the grand master of Rhodes, and an Englishman of distinguished family named Lomley, was appointed to succeed him. Immediately on his landing, however, to take possession, he was assailed by the furious Keating with a band of armed men, and compelled to resign the instruments of his election. Lomley in consequence appealed both to the king and the grand master; the result was the excommunication of Keating, which so highly exasperated him, that he caused his rival once more to be seized, cast him into prison, where he languished without redress, and at length died, nor could Keating be dispossessed, notwithstanding his great and repeated offences. This instance offers but a gloomy picture of oppression, and the utter degeneracy of religion.

Although nothing appears during the period we are now reviewing, which is pertinent to the design of this work, yet in order to preserve its connection, we must take a cursory glance at the political events which agitated the government of our seventh Henry, in which Ireland bore no inconsiderable share, and in which it will be apparent that although the rival houses of York and Lancaster were united under one head, yet that the revenge which had influenced the passions of the opposite faction was by no means extinct. The severe and impolitic severity which

Henry betrayed for every individual of the house of York, the attention he gave to exalt the Lancastrian party, and to depress the opponents of it, very naturally fomented discontents, and rendered him extremely unpopular, which was increased by the reserve and stateliness of his demeanour, tending as it did to promote fear rather than affection and good-will. The effects of this want of popularity soon appeared by incidents of a curious nature. The jealousy of the king respecting the family of York, was evinced by his retaining a prisoner, Edward Plantagenet Earl of Warwick, son of the Duke of Clarence. A rumour of this young prince's escape filled the nation with joy, and betrayed the latent disaffection towards the king. This manifestation of public feeling induced a designing priest in Oxford named Richard Simon to take the extraordinary measure of raising up a pretender to the throne. For this purpose he fixed upon Lambert Simnel, a baker's son, about fifteen years of age, and endowed with a capacity and superior manners which well calculated him for the part he was to perform, Simon determined to try the effect of his imposture first in Ireland, knowing that country was zealously attached to the house of York, and bore an affectionate regard to the memory of Clarence. In his designs, Simon was zealously, though secretly encouraged and abetted by the queen dowager, the widow of Edward, whose spirit, restless and enterprising, could not well brook the insignificance into which she had fallen, while it was constantly irritated by perceiving her daughter treated with coldness and contempt by her royal consort, all her friends objects of his suspicion and kept in subjection. A hatred deep and powerful filled her breast against the king, and she was active in any means likely to disturb



his government, or to occasion popular discontents, hence the scheme of Simon met with her ready concurrence and zealous assistance. Simnel and his subtle tutor arrived in Dublin, was introduced to Kildare in all the dignity of the character he assumed, claiming his protection as the unfortunate Warwick; Kildare, who was perhaps prepared for the application, communicated the circumstances to his brother and some other zealous Yorkists, they received the adventurer with every mark of respect and affection, and at once resolved to devote themselves to his service. But in order to make experiment of the popular feeling before they publicly declared themselves, they contrived to have the report circulated, that the Earl of Warwick was arrived in Dublin, without any other circumstance or hint of the intentions of the chief governor. The citizens however quickly caught the flame of party zeal, they unanimously declared in favour of Warwick. In a frenzy of faction, and fond of novelty which flattered their vanity, they overlooked the daughters of Edward the fourth, who stood before Warwick in the right of succession, paid the pretended prince attendance as their sovereign, lodged him in the castle of Dublin, crowned him with a diadem taken from the statue of the virgin, and publicly proclaimed him king under the appellation of Edward the sixth. The whole island followed the example of the capital, and not a sword was any where unsheathed in Henry's quarrel. Octavian de Palatio, primate of Armagh, though a foreigner and unconnected with the Irish factions, seems first to have joined in the confederacy, but to have speedily repented and receded. The citizens of Waterford, the prelates of Cashel, Tuam, Clogher, and Ossory, the family of Butler and the Baron of Hoath were the only persons

who joined not in the popular credulity, but utterly unable to defend the interests of their sovereign, they could but dispatch their emissaries to inform him of the commotions that had been excited. Henry's fears were ever ready to take alarm, and the events in Ireland were important enough to justify them. The queen dowager, who was believed to be a considerable agent in the conspiracy, was seized and confined in a nunnery, while to prove the falsity of the pretender in Ireland, Warwick was taken from the tower, and exhibited in a procession to St. Paul's cross. This produced the effect designed in London, but the Yorkists of Ireland had gone too far to be restrained by such devices. The charge of artifice and imposture was retorted upon the king, and the Warwick who had been exhibited was stated to be an impostor, whom the king had tricked out, and profanely abused the awful ceremony of a religious procession in order to give colour to his traitorous falsehood. Emissaries were sent to England, and it soon became known that notwithstanding all the precautions of Henry, the cause of the pretender was likely to receive powerful support, and it was espoused in a quarter little expected. Margaret of York, aunt to Warwick, and widow of Charles, Duke of Burgundy, a princess of ardent and sanguine spirit, detesting Henry as the oppressor of her family, gave her zealous support to the supposed Warwick. After consulting with Richard, Lord Lovel, and John, Earl of Lincoln, who had both engaged in the insurrection, the dutchess hired a body of two thousand veteran Germans and sent them to Ireland, headed by a brave and experienced officer named Martin Swart, and accompanied by these two noblemen. The countenance given by persons of such high rank, and the accession of this

military force flattered the vanity and raised the courage of the Irish. Uncontrolled in Ireland, except by the impotent dissent of some individuals, they imagined that no great difficulties could be experienced in England, and fancied themselves already possessed of sovereign authority, and invested with all the advantages to be expected from a revolution. The pretender having been crowned as we have related, issued his writs of summons, convened a parliament, in which laws were enacted, and subsidies granted, vengeance denounced against those who presumed to resist him, and particularly against Waterford, whose possessions and franchises were declared forfeit, on account of perverse opposition. The clergy voted a subsidy to the pope to *soften his resentment*, and to procure absolution from the sentence denounced against the opposers of Henry. In short, the whole machinery of government moved under the name of Edward the sixth. When men of sanguine tempers enter on the career of ambition and enterprise, they easily possess their imaginations with the vast advantages they shall derive from success. The impulse thus given to a few, soon extends itself to many who are too inexperienced or too unthinking to reflect upon obstacles. Thus was it with the adherents of the pageant king in Ireland, they pressed clamorously to be led into England. The resolution suited the necessities of the state, for all the resources which could be extorted from the new king's Irish subjects, were unequal to the support of his establishment, and the maintenance of his household.

Necessity thus according with the excited passions of the people, the measure was soon adopted, and the embarkation for England prepared. Henry, not ignorant of the motions of his

enemies, prepared himself for defence; and to gratify the people by an appearance of piety, he visited the shrine of our Lady of Walsingham, a great scene of popular devotion, where he offered his prayers and vows for deliverance. On his return to London, he was informed that Simnel was landed at Foudrey in Lancashire. The hostile armies met at Stoke, in the county of Northampton, a bloody battle ensued; the king's victory, although purchased by loss, was entirely decisive; Lincoln, Lovel, Broughton, and Swart perished in the field of battle, with four thousand of their followers. Simnel, with his tutor Simon, was taken prisoner. Simon, being a priest, was not tried at law, but was committed to close custody. Simnel was pardoned, made a scullion in the king's kitchen, and subsequently advanced to the rank of falconer. Kildare remained in Ireland, but his brothers, Lords Thomas and Maurice Fitz Gerald, followed the fortunes of Simnel, and fell in his cause. Thus passed away the golden dreams of the credulous Irish; nothing now was reserved to them but the resentment of the severe monarch they had offended. Letters arrived from Henry to the citizens of Waterford, commending their conduct, and encouraging them to persevere in a brave and loyal opposition to the Earl of Kildare and the citizens of Dublin. A papal bull was directed to those prelates who had not been accused of the rebellion, the Archbishops of Cashel and Tuam, the Bishops of Clogher and Ossory, to inflict the usual ecclesiastical censures on the delinquent clergy, in which number were involved the primate of Armagh, though he had refused to assist at the coronation of Simnel, the Archbishop of Dublin, and the prelates of Meath and Kildare. The storm of vengeance thus collecting, to avert its violence

the lord governor and other lords hastened to acknowledge their error, and to propitiate by promises the anger of Henry. Many circumstances rendered pacific measures the best course of policy. Henry, therefore, contented himself for the present with answering the submissions of his subjects by declarations of pardon, attended, however, with severe reflections on their folly and disloyalty. Kildare, in particular, was assured that the royal grace must entirely depend upon his future loyal and dutiful conduct, was strictly enjoined to support the king's interest, and under these conditions was not removed from his government. To ensure the fulfilment of the pledged promises, an officer of Henry's household, in whom he placed great confidence, was sent into Ireland with a troop of five hundred men, to oblige the subjects to renew their oaths of allegiance, and to tender the royal pardon upon such conditions as might assure the king of their future loyalty.

After some hesitation on the part of the high-spirited Kildare, who persisted in dictating the terms on which he would accept his pardon, homage and fealty were performed in a solemn and public manner by all the nobles who had joined the insurrection, they were absolved from the pope's anathema. The prelates of Dublin, Meath, and Kildare, with many abbots and priors submitted in like manner, and received a similar absolution; and such were the general prevarications respecting promises and obligations, and so various were the devices for violating the most awful sanctions, that the oaths were administered with every circumstance that could strike the mind with terror and veneration. Many of these circumstances would appear perfectly ridiculous to us, and strongly mark the height of supersti-



tion, which was dignified with the name of religion. For instance, Sir R. Edgcombe, the king's commissioner, in his account of the ceremony, is exact in specifying, that the host on which the Irish lords were sworn, had, by stipulation, been consecrated by a chaplain of his own, on whom he had particular reliance. With his patent of pardon, Kildare was presented with a chain of gold, in token of grace and reconciliation from the king. The citizens of Dublin, Drogheda, and Trim, the primate of Armagh, and other offending clergy, were received into favour, and swore allegiance. The royal favour, however, was denied to Plunket, chief justice, and to the infamous prior of Kilmainham, who had warmly espoused the cause of Simnel. Plunket was subsequently pardoned at the intercession of many, but Keating was declared unpardonable. He was ejected from his office of constable of Dublin castle, obliged to save himself by flight, and ended a life disgraced by faction, contention, and crime, in the most abject poverty and contempt.

Historians have not always the pleasure thus to mark moral retribution, as it is not always to be expected to take place in the present state of human existence, but when it does occur, how much it heightens the interest of the narrative, and satisfies the indignant feelings which have been aroused by the detail of criminal conduct. But this general pardon did not at once allay the jealousies and animosities of rival lords, or extinguish the heated spirit of party. Those few who had remained loyal, rating their services highly, incessantly solicited for favours and preferments, inveighed against their recent oppressors, and represented to the king that they themselves were alone worthy of his confidence. Octavian, the primate of Armagh, was assiduous

in his efforts to supplant Kildare, representing the necessity of being appointed chancellor, in order to form a balance against the enormous power of the deputy. Kildare was equally vigilant to defeat the purposes of the primate, and employed Payne, the Bishop of Meath, to represent the state of things to the king. Henry, with his characteristic caution and reserve, listened to these representations. He rejected the petition of Octavian, deeming it dangerous to make any present innovations in the Irish government, yet suspicion and fear were excited in his mind, and he summoned Kildare and other lords to his presence. They attended him at Greenwich, and after explanations and expostulations, received a confirmation of the royal grace; all were dismissed with marks of confidence, and gracious assurances of being honoured and distinguished according to their future loyal services. Kildare accordingly resumed his government with full power and consequence, and for some time exercised it in peace and splendour, although the Irish chieftains still continued their usual quarrels. In one of these contests between the kinsman of the deputy and a neighbouring chieftain, Kildare attempted to mediate, but without effect, as it continued till the death of O'Nial, who demanded that his adversary should recognise his superiority by paying him tribute. We name this contest, in order to introduce the laconic determination with which the demand was made and rejected, as it strikingly illustrates the proud and daring spirits of the Irish chieftains. "Send me tribute, or else—," was the message of O'Nial: "I owe you none; and if—," was the brief reply.

These continual contests among themselves kept the English free from any serious incursion,

but the affairs of England were preparing new occasion for the revival of faction. The restless resentment of the Duchess of Burgundy raised up another pretender, one Perkin Warbec, whom she acknowledged as her nephew, Richard Plantagenet, youngest son of Edward IV. The real character, progress, and fortunes of this youth do not properly belong to the present retrospect, but the whole forms a lively instance of the restless nature of resentment, when it gains possession of an ardent heart, and of its dangerous influence on the principles of even the most virtuous. All that is necessary for us to refer to, respecting this adventurer, is that Ireland was fixed upon as the first scene of his pretensions. He landed on the southern coast, without troops or revenue, [1493,] appeared at Cork, in the character of Richard Plantagenet, who had escaped from the Tower, and was received and entertained by the chief magistrate with due honour. Hence he sent letters to the Earls of Kildare and Desmond, acknowledging their loyal attachment to the family of York, notifying his arrival in their country, and entreating their assistance for the recovery of his rights. But before his appearance could produce any effect in Ireland, he was recalled into France, to answer some political purposes of the French monarch, in forcing Henry VII. to a peace. His short residence in Ireland, was, however, sufficient to inflame the combustible spirit of faction, which generally existed there, to excite rumours and jealousies, and to afford occasion for interested reports and accusations at the court of England, ever ready to listen. Henry, harassed by the perpetual complaints, and impatient of the contradictory reports that reached him respecting his Irish dominions, suddenly required the Archbishop of Dublin to attend him,

and to lay before him a full and clear detail of all the circumstances of his Irish government, which he had administered since the removal of Kildare, effected by the intrigues of his enemies. Lord Gormanston was appointed deputy, during the absence of the archbishop in England, where he was received with favour by the king. The aspect of the venerable Walter commanded respect, but his piety and gravity were more conspicuous than his penetration and abilities. Henry was not deceived by the superficial political knowledge of the archbishop; but his apparent goodness of heart, sincerity, and unaffected integrity, attracted him and won his attention. Walter was entertained at his court in a manner to prove the high consideration with which the monarch regarded him. The interesting historian, Leland, has given us a pleasing anecdote respecting this venerable ecclesiastic, equally marking his simplicity and the king's familiar respect. Walter being present when a foreign ambassador was introduced to Henry, and in a florid harangue expatiated on the glory and renown of the English monarch, Henry turning to the archbishop, desired his opinion of this oration, which his courtiers so applauded. "It pleaseth me well," said Walter, with an undesigning ease and sincerity, "but methinks it flattered your highness too much." "In sooth," replied the king, with great composure, "the very same fault, good father of Dublin, occurred to us, and we were minded to observe it."

Kildare dreaded the representations of this estimable prelate, and on learning his favourable reception, he resolved also to repair to England. The king, who had become convinced of his turbulent disposition, if not absolute disaffection, caused him to be informed, that the articles of accusation brought against him could only be

properly discussed in Ireland, and for this purpose he was to attend a new lord deputy, preparing to embark. This individual was Sir Edward Poynings, an English knight, in whom the king placed great confidence. Ireland had proved such a fit scene for commotion and conspiracy, that Henry found his personal security, as well as the interests of his crown, necessarily rendered the affairs of that country an especial object of his vigilant attention. His first step was to form an entire new administration of the government, composed of men of tried loyalty, and totally unconnected with any of the different factions which had so long raised commotions in Ireland. Sir Edward it was resolved should be attended to his government with a force consisting of about a thousand men. An English chancellor also accompanied him, Dean, Bishop of Bangor, and Prior of Lanthony; Sir Hugh Conway, an English knight, was nominated lord treasurer. The former judges were removed, and English lawyers of repute substituted in their place, and on their arrival were sworn of the privy council.

Though the intention of Henry, in sending Sir E. Poynings thus attended to Ireland, was to quell the commotions of the partizans of the house of York, and to reduce the natives to subjection, yet his forces were not sufficient to accomplish these purposes. The Irish eluded his efforts by flying for refuge to their woods and morasses. The new deputy, however, summoned a parliament at Dublin, in order to enact laws for the reformation of the pale, and to effect salutary restraints of order and polity, to be strengthened and invigorated by proper discipline. In this parliament was passed the memorable statute, still bearing the name of Poynings, which establishes the authority of the English government



in Ireland. "By this statute," says Sir John Davis, "all the former laws of England were made to be of force in Ireland, and no bill can be introduced into the Irish parliament unless it previously receive the sanction of the council of England." This latter law seemed calculated to ensure the dominion of England, but was in fact granted at the desire of the Irish commons, who proposed by that means to secure themselves from the tyranny of their lords, particularly of such lieutenants or deputies as were of Irish birth. Besides some statutes relative to individuals, an act of attainder was passed by this parliament, against Gerald Fitz-Thomas, Earl of Kildare, for treason and rebellion; this was extended to his adherents and kinsmen; thus reducing this noble family, which had so long maintained the first rank in Ireland, to the lowest state of depression and disgrace. The turbulent and seditious conduct of Prior Keating, suggested also a statute, whereby an Englishman alone was to be invested with the priory of St. John of Jerusalem. Sir Edward, however, aware of the unpopularity of the measure, declined taking any cognizance of the accusations against Kildare, when he was subsequently charged with aiding the second attempt of Warbec on Ireland, but sent him prisoner to Henry, to answer for his supposed offences before the throne.

The administration of Sir Edward was so satisfactory to Henry, that he conferred upon him the honour of the Garter, for his distinguished services. Kildare in the meantime was a close prisoner in London, without being heard or confronted with his accusers, while his unhappy wife sunk under the weight of the disgrace attached to him, and her anxiety respecting his ultimate fate. Kildare, thus treated as a close, designing,

and dangerous traitor, was in reality of a character and disposition remarkable for open undesigning simplicity, frequently and easily excited into passion, which rendered him an easy tool to cooler spirits and deeper politicians. The interval he passed in confinement, though so deeply affecting his domestic comforts as to produce the death of a wife whom he tenderly loved, yet was probably favourable to his own cause, as it gave the cautious Henry an opportunity of being informed of his real character, as well as to examine the motives which had actuated his enemies to accuse him of traitorous designs and attempts.

From the historian we have followed, and in so many instances nearly transcribed our illustrations, we now extract the account of the interesting interview of the king with his noble prisoner, as it places in a striking point of view the character of the latter, and also, that Henry was not altogether unsusceptible of those feelings which distinguish ardent and generous minds, and urge them to indulgences not entirely warranted by cautious policy and political prudence. When Kildare was first admitted to the presence of Henry, he was somewhat surprised to see, instead of a dark subtle and desperate conspirator, a man of unrefined, artless, and even awkward simplicity, of a demeanor so easy, so confident, and unrestrained, as seemed to indicate a perfect consciousness of his own innocence. Henry directed him to prepare for his defence, and to provide himself with able counsel, as he feared his cause would require it. "Yea," replied the Earl, "the ablest in the realm," seizing Henry by the hand with an uncourtly familiarity, "Your highness I take for my counsel against these false knaves." The king smiled at the novelty of this address, and the uncouth compliment to his equity

and discernment. He heard his accusers, and found their charges unsupported in every point of moment, to the interests of the crown, and in other matters frivolous and futile. The king soon perceived that the allegations were dictated by private resentment and factious malignity, and was even not displeased to see the culprit treat them with the severity of a superior, as if still in Ireland, and in the fullness of power. As their charges of treason were soon found to amount to nothing more than surmise and suspicion, as the Irish lords, with whom he was said to have conspired against Poynings, gave solemn and satisfactory evidence to exculpate him, the accusers were obliged to recur to his violences, and the injuries they had sustained from him in Ireland, matters in which Henry was not nearly interested. Among other accusations, it was urged, that the earl in one of his lawless excursions, had sacrilegiously burned the church of Cashel to the ground; "Spare your evidence," said Kildare, "I did set fire to the church, for I thought the bishop had been in it," this undesigning manner of pleading the aggravation in excuse of his offence, contributed to cast an air of ridicule upon the prosecutors, not unfavourable to the culprit. They closed their charge with a warm and passionate declaration, "that all Ireland could not govern this earl;" "Well," replied Henry, "this earl shall then govern all Ireland." The triumph of Kildare thus complete, he was restored to his honours and estates, and consulted respecting the affairs of his country. None of the Irish subjects were excluded from the royal grace, except Walter the magistrate of Cork, who had been the first to receive Warbec, and Lord Barry, who had been particularly zealous in his service. The first suffered at Tyburn with the unfortunate youth whose

cause he had espoused, the latter was murdered by an unnatural brother. The commotions of the Irish chieftains still continued, however, notwithstanding the pacific measures of the king. The quelling such insurgents had ever been a burdensome service, exhausting the revenue, and employing the strength of the royal territory; and as they seemed to resist all secular means of subjection, Henry determined to have recourse to papal authority, from which the crown of England still affected to derive the right of sovereignty in Ireland. He hoped this measure would restrain a people, who amidst all their violences were powerfully attached to the Roman Pontiff. By his earnest solicitation, Pope Alexander addressed his commission to the primate of Canterbury, the bishops of London, Durham, Bath and Wells, empowering them to appoint such prelates of Ireland as they should choose, to convene the clergy and laity of Ireland, to inquire into the disorders particularly subsisting in the remoter and less populous parts of the country, to apply effectual remedies to those, both of the clergy and the laity, and to execute all ecclesiastical censures on the refractory and rebellious, for the effectual restoration of order and tranquillity. Kildare, whose generous disposition was won by the confidence and attention of Henry, entered upon his government with a sincere and zealous solicitude to further the interests of the crown, and became more attached to English politics by having formed a marriage union with the family of St. John. He made himself feared and dreaded by the Irish insurgents, and formed some judicious political alliances with chieftains calculated to increase and extend his power.

From this reign it appears indeed, that we may date the revival of the English power in Ireland,

which, from the Scottish war in the reign of Edward the second had gradually declined into a state of weakness and imbecility. The English and the Irish became more assimilated, for although the laws forbade intermarrying with the latter, the influences of intercourse and consequent affection were superior to statutes. Thus the Irish manners and language became very general, even in the very seat of government. We are now quickly approximating to a period, when important and mighty innovations were made in religion, not only affecting the states in which different opinions were agitated, but even those that adhered firmly to the ancient faith and worship. The bond of union among Christians, which had been formed by a blind obedience to the Roman pontiffs, had been gradually relaxing, and seemed now rapidly separating. The happy revolution in the republic of letters had dispelled some of the mists of ignorance, and had enkindled in the minds of men the love of truth and sacred liberty. From the cloud that had so long impended over Europe strong rays beamed forth, with promise of more perfect effulgence. The divines of this century freely disputed upon religious subjects, even calling in question the validity of those doctrines which had hitherto been regarded as essential to salvation. Men could not but perceive from the disregard of the pontiffs and their ministers to every moral obligation that the religion they professed and taught was degenerated into little more than a round of external ceremonies, adapted to dazzle the eye, but little capable of affecting the heart. The authority of the holy mother church, the obligation of implicit obedience to her decisions, the virtues and merits of the saints, and their credit in the court of heaven, the love of the virgin, the efficacy of



relics, the duty of adorning churches, and endowing monasteries, the necessity of good works, (as the phrase was then understood) the intolerable pains of purgatory, and the utility of indulgences were the subjects of declamation among the more serious Romanists. The darkness and superstition of the people may be inferred, for those who presided over the rights and ceremonies of the church, far from evincing the most remote wish or disposition to enlighten the ignorant, cast an additional obscurity around them and rendered more impervious, rather than sought to dispel, the clouds of superstition. Such was the state of religion; hence, to those who possessed any portion of sense or piety, a reformation was ardently desired, nor was the number which possessed those qualities inconsiderable. In their expectations and demands they were moderate, extending not their views to a change of ecclesiastical government, or a suppression of those doctrines rendered venerable by their antiquity, nor even to an abrogation of those rites and ceremonies which had multiplied to such an extravagant height. Their only aim seemed to be to set bounds to the power of the pontiff, to reform the manners of the clergy, and to prevent arts called pious frauds, by which they imposed on the credulous; to dispel the ignorance and correct the errors of the blinded multitude, and to deliver them from the heavy burdens that were imposed upon them on religious pretexts. Even Luther says, "I reject not the authority of the pontiff, provided it is regulated by wholesome laws."

The dawn of the Reformation arose unexpectedly, although, as we have seen, the causes which produced it had been long operating. While the pontiff slumbered in luxurious security

at the head of the church, and saw nothing throughout the vast extent of his dominion but submission, and while the worthy and genuine professors of Christianity almost despaired of their desires being realized, a glimmering ray appeared, from which proceeded a flood of light, destined to illuminate the world, and which shed a high and peculiar interest on the events of history, inseparable from the revolution it created in the mental and moral condition of men.

The period to which we have arrived is, indeed, fraught with circumstances of interest and instruction; men gradually attained that elevated situation with regard to commerce, science, government, police, and cultivation, in which they have since progressively advanced. The arts and sciences were carried in this age to a perfection hitherto unknown. From this renovation of learning, doubtless the church derived signal advantages. Great sums were expended, and much zeal and industry employed in promoting the progress of knowledge, by founding and encouraging literary societies, protecting and exciting a spirit of emulation, and annexing distinguished honours and advantages to the culture of the sciences.

It is particularly worthy of observation, that it was about this period that the wise and salutary law, which excludes ignorant and illiterate persons from the sacred functions of the Christian ministry, acquired that force which it retains. It has not unaptly been remarked, in reply to those who depreciate human learning, as referring to religion, that literature is the key by which we often open the treasures of learning, human and divine. Thus, by cultivating it, the methods of teaching theology at this time were greatly

improved, and the genius and spirit of the Christian religion better explained, and more pleasingly enforced.

Nor were the civilizing effects of the reformation less conspicuous: it greatly contributed to soften and to ameliorate the manners of many nations, who, before that period, were sunk in stupidity, rude and unsocial. The disputes which arose on the important subject, had a great tendency to eradicate from the minds of men that ferocity which had so long been favoured, and even nourished by the barbarous suggestions of a debasing superstition. It is also certain, that from the very dawn of this happy revolution in Christianity, and even before its salutary influences were manifested to their extent, pure religion had many sincere and fervent votaries, though they were much concealed from public view by the multitudes of fanatics which surrounded them. Many attempts were made by persons of eminent piety to restore the institutions of public worship to their primitive simplicity, but the effort was for the present premature, and therefore vain. A multitude of useless and frivolous ceremonies yet remained; nor did the pontiffs, of course, think it expedient to diminish aught of that pomp and show that gave the ministers of religion so great an influence over the multitude.

Many monastic orders were instituted in this age, amongst the principal of which we must rank that of the Jesuits.\* Many were also reformed.

\* The Jesuits hold a middle rank, between the monks and the secular clerks, and, with regard to the nature of their institute, approach nearer to the regular canons than any

other order; for though they resemble the monks in living separate from the multitude, and are bound by certain religious vows, yet are they exempt from stated hours of

We have thus given a general view of the state of religion and learning, and shall shortly remark

worship, and other similar services that attach to monastic orders, that they may have more time to employ in the education of youth, in directing the consciences of the faithful, and in the transactions of other things relating to the prosperity of the papal hierarchy. This order is divided into three classes: professed members, who reside in what are termed the professed houses; the scholars, who instruct the youth; and novices, who live in the houses of probation. The first class, besides the usual monastic vows, solemnly engage to go, without deliberation or delay, wherever the pope shall think fit to send them. The scholars are possessed of large revenues, and in case of urgent necessity are obliged to contribute to the support of the professed members. These latter, who are comparatively few in number, are, generally speaking, men of prudence and learning, deeply skilled in the human heart, and dexterous in transacting worldly affairs, from their natural penetration and sagacity, improved by experience. It is well known, that they conducted almost universally the education of youth, hence the springs of human conduct became apparent to them, and they were enabled to direct the passions and the

principles of those among whom they mingled.

The most accurate division of labour was observed in the allotment of their various employments. Their candidates, who by a refinement of ecclesiastical policy, after an unusually long probation, were bound by laws, that deprived them of liberty, yet left a discretionary power of ejection in the order, were incessantly watched by the penetrating eye of the master of novices; a minute description of their character and peculiar talent was forwarded to the superiors: at the end of the noviciate they were employed to the advantage of the community, the natural bent of the individual being accurately marked, and never suffered to be diverted by a multiplicity of employments, but solely devoted to that for which his mind had a bias, to favour and cultivate which, no trouble nor expense was spared. The secrets of the society were not revealed, even to all the professed members; it was only a small number of this class, whom old age had enriched with experience, and long trial declared worthy of such important trust, that were instructed in the mysteries of the order.

The church and court of Rome, since the remarkable period when so many king-

the influence of the causes suggested, as more immediately referring to Ireland, where it will be

doms withdrew from their jurisdiction, derived more influence and support from the labours of this order, than from all their other emissaries and ministers; for by the gentle and complying spirit that marked their demeanour, by their consummate skill and prudence in civil affairs, by their general and extended knowledge and accomplishments, they insinuated themselves into the peculiar favour and protection of the great; nor did any thing tend more to give them that ascendancy they universally acquired, than the dexterity with which they relaxed and modified their system of morality, accommodating it artfully to the propensities of those they desired to govern, and depriving it on certain occasions of that severity which rendered it troublesome and irksome to the sensual and voluptuous, although as far as referred to their individual conduct, whatever might be their political delinquencies, they were not chargeable with moral irregularities, the internal police of their institute precluding the possibility of gross misconduct.

By the qualities and influence we have named, the members of this order supplanted in the palaces of the great those who had previously directed the consciences of princes, particularly the Do-

minicans. Indeed, it may be truly said in regard to this order, that "knowledge is power." That their ascendancy was injurious to the cause of virtue has been alleged, and it is to be feared not without reason. That the members of it employed all the force of their subtle distinctions, to sap the foundations of morality, and opened a door to all sorts of licentiousness and iniquity, by the relaxed and dissolute maxims of conduct they propagated, as far as their influence extended, appears too evident from those very maxims so indulgently favourable to the depraved propensities of man. The two following points of doctrine are amongst many, to prove the justness of the assertion as to their pernicious influence. They represented it as a matter of perfect indifference, from what motive men obey the laws of God, provided those laws are really obeyed; and maintain that those who obey from the fear of punishment are as agreeable to the Deity, as those actions which proceed from a love of Him and his laws. Thus they made the Almighty a vindictive tyrant, rejoicing in the trembling, dread, and terror of his creatures. They maintained further, that a man never sins, properly speaking, but when he transgresses a divine law which is fully known to him,



found that the attachment to Rome was very strong, as were likewise the causes which prevented that mental emancipation so conspicuous in the nations of Europe at this period.

and which is *present to his mind when he acts*, and of which he understands the true meaning and intent; and they concluded from thence, that in strict justice the conduct of that transgressor cannot be looked vpon as criminal, who is either ignorant of the law, or is in *doubt* about its true meaning, or *loses sight of it through forgetfulness* at the time he violates it.

We have spoken in the past tense of the Jesuits, and their doctrines; but we shall do well to remember, that after having for a long period been universally suppressed from the experience of its dangerous influence, this order is *again revived*, that it is permitted to send its congregations into the *very centre of our island*;

that in Ireland it has extensive institutions, daily increasing in riches and influence. We pretend not to question the policy of this measure, but the friends of religious liberty cannot but weigh the indulgence, since popery is certainly not a system of innocent speculative opinions, but a heavy yoke of mental and civil despotism, tending to enslave the consciences, to debase the principles, and to destroy the most sacred rights of men. Of course, we speak as to its general effect on the mass, that there are innumerable instances of individuals rising superior to its vitiating power, is readily acknowledged; but these must be among the *thinking* class, comparatively few in a community.

## CHAPTER XI

*Accession of Henry the eighth—Kildare continues in administration—His sudden death produces commotion—His son Gerald elected—Is obliged to take the field—Hatred of Wolsey towards him—Duke of Norfolk created Lord Lieutenant—Vigorous administration of the Duke—Earl of Ormond succeeds him—Kildare resumes his government—His proceedings on the death of Wolsey—Alan, archbishop of Dublin—Kildare receives the royal mandate to repair to the presence—Leaves the government to his son Thomas—Rash conduct of the young governor—Result of the rebellion is the ruin of Kildare—Dawning of the reformation—Henry desires to extend the Reformation to Ireland—George Browne employed—Is advanced to the see of Dublin—Ireland is considered as a fief of the pope—Prepossession in favour of the ancient establishments—The people refuse to acknowledge Henry's supremacy—Browne's life exposed to danger—King declared supreme head of the church in Ireland—Authority of the Bishop of Rome renounced—Refusal of the oath of supremacy declared high treason. Intrigues of the Romish party—Conduct of Lord Grey—Difficult situation of archbishop Browne—Emissaries sent to Rome—The intrigues of the Romanists—Letter of Bishop of Metz to the chieftain O'Nial—Confederacy formed for the suppression of heresy.—O'Nial acknowledged lord and leader of the Northern Irish—His hostile proceedings—Lord Deputy disperses the insurgents—Lord Grey recalled to England—He suffers—The Irish are defeated by Sir William Brereton—Sir Anthony St. Leger assumes the government—Title of Lord of Ireland changed for that of King of Ireland—Parliament assembled to confer the new title on Henry—Conciliatory measures of the king—O'Nial visits the English court—His concessions—Is created a peer of the realm by the title of Earl of Tirowen—Progress of reformation—Irish forces attend Henry to Calais—Invasions of ecclesiastical privileges—A military force sent to Ireland—Bellingham made governor—Assiduity of the Romanists—Bellingham's conduct towards the Earl of Desmond—Anecdote—Barbarous zeal of Somerset—Liturgy to be introduced into Ireland—Neglect of moral improvement*

*in Ireland—Pernicious consequences—Proclamation transmitted enjoining the acceptance of the new liturgy—It is opposed—Proceedings of the clergy—Dowdal archbishop of Armagh and his clergy—Sir James Crofts supersedes St. Leger in the government—Writes a conciliatory letter to Dowdal—Desires a conference—Interview—Superiority of the primacy changed from Armagh to Dublin—John Ball, his conduct—In what injudicious—Earl of Tirowen's ambition—Domestic dissensions in his family—Death of Edward the sixth has a powerful effect on the ecclesiastical system—Accession of Mary—Her proceedings respecting Ireland—Kildare's family restored—Sir Anthony St. Leger governor—Fitzwalter—A papal bull recited—State of religious feeling—Paul the fourth—His policy—Personal sketch of Archbishop Browne—Extract from a sermon of his.*

HENRY the eighth ascended the throne in all the pride of popular favour. (1509.) In the vigour of youth, lively, animated, spirited, active, and well informed, he soon became the idol of his subjects. In the midst of the magnificence, pleasure, and dissipation of his court, and the plans of glory and ambition in foreign countries, Henry had little leisure to attend to the affairs of Ireland, and it was not until a long series of useless expeditions had somewhat subdued his passion for military glory, that he directed his attention to that part of his dominions, where indeed he might do much good, but in which there was nothing to contribute to his vanity, or to favour his love of ostentation. Ireland had been therefore left to the guidance of those ministers who had been appointed by Henry the seventh. Kildare continued his administration with vigour till his sudden death threw things again into commotion. The council and nobles elected Gerald his son to be lord deputy, which nomination was subsequently approved and confirmed in England. Gerald inherited the spirit of his father, and his name served to check the outrages which had

succeeded the decease of Kildare. He visited England on his return, convened a parliament, receiving a formal confirmation of the honours, privileges and possessions enjoyed by his ancestors. From the senate, the young Lord Deputy was summoned to the field. The superstitious Irish had been persuaded by some prophecy that the present time was appointed by providence for the restoration of their ancient power and splendour, and with this ignorant prepossession they grew violent and tumultuous. They rose in arms even in the neighbourhood of Dublin, and by the vigour of Kildare suffered their due punishment, he vigorously spread the terror of his arms, and enforced the authority of government.

This successful opening of his administration was too soon clouded by those family feuds which had so long rent the kingdom, and divided into malignant and violent factions. The success of Kildare aroused the evil passions of envy, hatred and revenge in his enemies, and his pride and inexperience gave them too great an advantage over him. They succeeded in having him removed from the government and detained in England upon various frivolous pretences. Wolsey had conceived a strong prejudice against Kildare because he had not received from him that obsequious attention to which he was accustomed from all. When, therefore, Henry's foreign affairs were somewhat settled, Wolsey suggested to him the impropriety of suffering his government of Ireland to be committed to any person of Irish race, and certainly with justice, (though his actuating motive was unworthy,) represented that the administration would be far more properly intrusted to an upright statesman unconnected with the factions and intrigues of the country he was to govern. The suggestion was of course ap-

proved by Henry, and Thomas, Earl of Surrey, son to him who had conquered at Flowden and been rewarded with the dukedom of Norfolk, was created lord lieutenant of Ireland, and sent to his government with one hundred guards and a thousand forces of inferior rank. Kildare was pronounced clear of every disloyal imputation, but did not return to Ireland, he attended the king to Calais, where he contributed to the parade and splendour of that memorable interview which took place between Henry and the French monarch. In the meantime, Surrey proceeded in a vigorous administration of his government, which was almost one continued course of military service, except a short interval of holding a parliament. He succeeded in reconciling contending lords, and in repelling insurgents, but the detail is possessed of too little interest, and is too little connected with our retrospect to render it necessary to dwell upon the particulars. On the removal of Surrey, Pierce Earl of Ormond succeeded him to the prejudice of Kildare, but the latter subsequently succeeded in resuming his government, yet was again nearly involved in disgrace by the ambition of his kinsman Desmond, whose cause he was supposed to favour to the injury of the king's interests.

When the intelligence of the disgrace and death of Wolsey was brought into Ireland, Kildare received it with the utmost joy, as such a powerful enemy removed, he could pursue his ambitious plans without reserve, and in order if possible to ensure to himself the full power, he contrived to have Alan, archbishop of Dublin, and a favourite of the deceased cardinal deprived of his office of chancellor, and the seals committed to Cromer, primate of Armagh, who was devoted to his interests.



In the march of mind which as we have seen had been so rapidly progressive, the science of government and politics had for some time become an interesting subject of disquisition, and indeed one of the first studies on the revival of letters. Hence, those Englishmen who had left their native country, and by being officially employed, had acquired some interest in Ireland, soon found a pleasure as well as a necessity in pursuing these subjects of speculation, and it naturally followed that the more acute and penetrating were led by the disorders continually before their view, to trace minutely the rise and progress of English power in an island so distracted, the exciting causes of disorder, the sources of civil prosperity, and the correction of public evils. Many evidences yet remain in repositories of curious papers, that such disquisitions occupied several writers of that period resident in Ireland. Such men looking with sagacity to the result of present measures, observed with suspicion the growing power and aspiring ambition of Kildare. They considered the disorders of the realm minutely, and unanimously resolved to lay them before the throne. Alan, the deprived archbishop of Dublin and chancellor, took the lead in these secret consultations. He had been trained in the school of political intrigue by his patron Wolsey. This prelate had been educated at Oxford, removed thence to Cambridge, where he took the degree of bachelor of laws. He was sent by Wareham, archbishop of Canterbury to the pope respecting certain matters relating to the church. He continued at the Romish court nine years, and was created doctor of laws. After his return he was appointed chaplain to Wolsey, and was nominated commissary or judge of his legantine court,

as *legate a latere*,\* the duties of which he executed with an assiduity and attention neither upright nor honourable. Though accused of misdemeanor and dismissed from the office, he was still protected by the cardinal, and proved a useful and active agent to him in his favourite scheme of suppressing the monasteries, of which forty of the smaller ones he first visited, and subsequently suppressed for the erection of his colleges at Oxford and Ipswich. Wolsey procured for this his favourite chaplain the living of Dalby in Leicestershire, though it belonged to the master and brethren of the hospital at Barton Lazars. About the latter end of 1525 he was incorporated doctor of laws in the University of Oxford. March 1528 he was consecrated archbishop of Dublin, and about the same time was made chancellor of Ireland. The jealousy which Gardiner conceived of this favourite is said to have been the occasion of his removal into Ireland, where he of course adopted the prejudices of his patron against the Geraldines. In the present instance, himself and his colleagues were as much actuated by pique and animosity as by a regard to the public welfare in the measure they were concerting. The

\* Legates a latere were a kind of Legates who possessed the full powers of the popes in all the provinces committed to their charge, and were very active in extending as well as exercising it. They nominated to all vacant benefices, assembled synods, and were studious to maintain all ecclesiastical privileges which never could be fully protected without encroachment on the civil power. If there was any want

of concurrence or opposition, it was always expected that the civil power must give way. Every deed which had the least pretence of holding any thing spiritual, was brought into the spiritual court; and could not be canvassed before a civil court. These were the established laws of the church, and where a legate was sent immediately from Rome, he was sure to maintain the papal claims with the utmost vigour.

application was too well supported to be received with indifference by Henry, and his violence of temper readily affixed to Kildare offences, of which he was in reality innocent. He received the royal mandate to commit the government to a responsible person, and to repair to the presence without delay. The earl, conscious that his conduct would not bear strict inquisition, endeavoured to evade the order, but Henry was inflexible, and he had no course left but to obey, and he took the impolitic and dangerous step of entrusting the government to his son Thomas, a youth scarcely arrived at his majority,

Great personal beauty rendered the young governor generally attractive, nor were the rashness of youth and the violence of temper which he displayed, combined with an excess of family pride, regarded severely, although they exposed him to the artifice of his enemies, and the adulation of his pretended friends. His father, it was rumoured, had been committed to the Tower, and the enemies of his family easily spread abroad subsequent reports of his execution, and the threatened royal vengeance against the whole of his family. Lord Thomas, in consequence of letters to him being intercepted, became confirmed in his belief, that his father had been put to death. He consulted with his Irish associates, who further irritated his inflamed spirit by advising him to revenge the injuries of his family, and promised him assistance. The too credulous Thomas listened to their passionate arguments, and plunged into a desperate rebellion ere he gave himself time to think upon the fatal results which might follow.

Attended by his troop, he rushed tumultuously into the council assembled in St. Mary's Abbey, Dublin. The Lords were naturally alarmed, he desired them not to be so, declaring his intention

to act with the open generosity of a soldier. He resigned his sword of state, determined he said to depend on his own weapon. He warned them to avoid him as an enemy, for that he was no longer the deputy of King Henry, but his mortal foe. The lords were confounded and astonished at the daring courage of the youthful warrior and avenger. Cromer the primate and chancellor appears at this moment of interest in that amiable point of view which endears to us a religion of peace, and confers veneration on its ministers. He with dignified composure took the young Kildare by the hand, and mildly requested to be heard a few words. He then pathetically represented the rashness, weakness, and iniquity of his present attempt, grounded on an uncertain rumour, and if assured, unwarrantable, the ruin in which it would involve his family, the misery it would spread through his country, and the guilt into which it would plunge his own soul. He besought him to consider the duty he owed to himself, to his family, to his country, to his king, and above all to his God, and to desist from his purpose. His speech delivered with the animation of genuine feeling, and the emotion of sincerity, was interpreted by the rude Irish followers of Lord Thomas according to their own ideas, for they understood not the language of the speaker. They conceived that the venerable man was encouraging the enterprise of their young leader, and one of their native bands who attended in the train, unwilling to be outdone in what he believed his own profession, instantly began to chaunt the praises of young Thomas, the gallant *silken* lord as he stiled him, (from the richness of his dress, &c.) extolling his greatness and valour, chiding his delay and calling him to the field. Unhappily the effusions of the rhapsodist prevailed over

the sage counsels of the venerable prelate. The young Kildare rushed forth at the head of his Irish train, bent on revenge for the blood of his father, and a formidable insurrection quickly ensued. The devastation of the district called Fingal, the granary of Dublin, obliged the citizens to make some effort to oppose the insurgents. Lord Thomas appeared before the gates of the city threatening to destroy with fire and sword unless his men were permitted without molestation to lay siege to the castle. Kildare was doubtless apprised that to this place his known enemy, Alan, the archbishop and other lords and officers of state had fled for safety. Alan reflecting that he was certainly obnoxious to the rebels, determined without waiting the precarious event of war, to seek refuge in England. A vessel was secretly provided, and he embarked, but whether by the perfidy or unskilfulness of the pilot, who was a Fitzgerald, the ship was stranded near Clontarf, and Alan soon discovered by his enemies in the adjacent village. He was dragged from his bed with barbarous triumph, and led naked as he was to their captain. The prelate fell on his knees before him, imploring mercy for a Christian and a churchman. The young lord without deigning to reply, turned his horse, exclaiming in the Irish language, "Away with the churl!" His caitiffs interpreting the expression according to their own malignant ideas, while the wretched suppliant yet lifted up his hands for mercy, assailed and literally hewed him to pieces. The place where this barbarous murder was committed, was afterwards hedged in, and unfrequented in horror and detestation of the act. Thus ended in the fifty-eighth year of his age, the earthly career of one of those deep sacerdotal politicians, with which the courts of princes then



abounded. The final result of this desperate rebellion was the utter ruin of Kildare and his family, even those individuals who had entirely disapproved it. The rash Kildare on being sent to the Tower, discovered that his father, whose supposed death he had been avenging, had lived to learn the rebellion of his son, and had sunk under the severe mental anguish which the intelligence had occasioned. A younger brother of Kildare, a youth about twelve years of age, though pursued by the vengeance of the king, was saved by the generous stratagem of his aunt. The various fortunes of this noble youth were highly interesting, and he was wonderfully preserved to regain the honours of his family.

While these events were passing in Ireland, Europe beheld the glorious dawning of the reformation. We have seen that the manifold and increasing evils of the Romish church had gradually prepared the minds of men for a great religious revolution, and a concurrence of incidents contributed to the crisis to which we are arrived. Both the heads and the hearts of nations were in a state of preparation for the reception of a purer doctrine than had filled the European world. Amongst the principal of these concurring causes, we may certainly rank that bold invention of Leo the tenth, which he justly styled a very profitable trade, viz. the sale of indulgences, and by which fraud and injustice became honourable when it contributed to the riches of the see, and the glory of the papacy; while they aggravated the passions of men, and lulled most effectually their consciences by inspiring them with a confidence in their meritorious sacrifices. The licentious and depraved lives of the individuals who retailed this papal stock of merits, could not fail to strike the view even of the most superficial and the most bigoted,

and prepared them readily for the exposition of the abuses, when the fearless spirit of Luther burst forth to inform the credulous multitude, as he gradually proceeded to attack the various errors which had obscured the lustre of religion. After deep reflection, he had undauntedly entered the lists against the hierarchy, and boldly striking at the foundation of the pernicious system which had so long prevailed, he taught his disciples to renounce all human authority, to resort to the word of God, as the only true standard of Christian faith and duty. His doctrines were embraced with ardour, propagated with zeal, and a deadly wound was given to the papal power, ere it well had time to consider its danger.\*

All Europe in a little time resounded with the name of the daring innovator, and men, roused from the lethal slumber which had so long pressed upon their faculties, began to *think*, and to call in question the most ancient and received opinions. The rumour of these innovations soon reached England, which having tasted the bitterness of clerical usurpation, was not unprepared for the new doctrine, bearing, as it did, a resemblance to that of the Lollards. It gained, therefore, many partisans among all ranks and conditions. A minute detail of the progress of this mental revolution seems unnecessary here, as the circumstances are so familiar to the reader of English history. It is only necessary to say, that the passions of Henry were made the secondary means of effecting the great work, and that a way was opened for restraining the enormities of popular superstition, and communicating the Scriptures to the laity in the vulgar tongue.

\* Leo X. was a lover and patroniser of the arts, magnificent and voluptuous in his habits.

While the imperious Henry was elated at the general and ready compliance of his people with his scheme of reformation in England, he naturally desired to extend it yet further, by gaining a reception for the new doctrines in Ireland, and he fixed upon a fit instrument to effect his purpose ; George Browne, provincial of the friars of St. Augustine, was eminent in London for sincerity and simplicity of conduct, for charity and benevolence, as well as a freedom and liberality of religious sentiment. He frequently preached against the futility of pilgrimages and penances, dissuaded his hearers from a vain dependence on the merits and intercession of departed saints, exhorting them to rely solely on the mediation of our Lord, and to address their prayers immediately to God.

Lord Cromwell, who on the death of Wolsey had become the king's favourite, and exercised all the rights annexed to his supremacy, under the title of Vicar-General of England, easily procured the zealous preacher of such doctrines to be promoted in Ireland. Cromwell had favoured the cause of the reformers secretly, and as he possessed prudence and ability, he was able, from his responsible station, very effectually, though covertly, to promote the new doctrines. On the death of the unhappy Archbishop Alan, the Augustine provincial, Browne, was advanced to the see of Dublin, and with commissioners, was appointed to confer with the clergy and nobility, and to procure a general acknowledgment of the king's supremacy. This, however, was found a more difficult task than had been anticipated by the impetuous Henry and his politic minister, who very erroneously imagined a people, whom they regarded with feelings at least bordering on contempt, would be easily led to imitate the ex-

ample of those of England, and would not dare presume to question the monarch's will.

The spirit of religious disquisition had in a degree been introduced into Ireland, with the constant succession of English settlers—indeed, to such an extent as to cause the revival of a law, during the parliament of the tenth year of Henry VII., to prevent the growth of the Lollard heresy. But Ireland was an ungenial soil for the seeds of the reformation; nor was it a place in which the causes which had produced it in other countries, could find a field of operation. Unconnected in polity, strangers to the advantages of national union, ever engaged in petty contests, a prey to perpetual jealousies, and even the most civilised living in continual alarm, and obliged to hold themselves ready to repel some foe—they had little leisure or inclination to employ themselves in speculation, and were naturally destitute of that disposition which would lead to inquiries that had been pursued with such earnestness and avidity in other countries, inquiries which had burst the bonds of mental thralldom, and were tending to make men “free indeed.” The people had, it is true, most severely experienced the oppression of the clergy, but that which in other countries seemed the capital and almost universal grievance, was but one, and perhaps the lesser of the many that weighed upon Ireland. Thus when almost all Europe had declared against the yoke of ecclesiastical tyranny, a slight attempt made in one province of Ireland, [1529,] to circumscribe the privileges of the clergy, raised a most violent and insolent clamour against the order, although it amounted to nothing more than empowering the civil magistrate to imprison ecclesiastical debtors. Now was the period to prove the pernicious policy of excluding any part of the

population of Ireland from the privilege of forming one body of British subjects; for among the evil consequences of excluding the old natives from the pale of English laws, dark superstition and blind bigotry proved the natural concomitants of a disquieted, ignorant, uncivilised, and dissolute mode of life. From the impolitic and absurd distinction of inhabitants, naturally resulted great irregularities in the ecclesiastical constitution of the nation, which had a direct tendency to confirm the people in the grossest ignorance, and, of consequence, in the most abject superstition. In those dioceses where law and civility were most prevalent, the prelates found it impossible to extend their pastoral care or jurisdiction to those districts occupied by the old natives. Their synods were held, (as the records express it,) *inter Anglicos*; and the Irish clergy, hating the English power, when summoned to obey their ordinary, were refractory and contumacious, and were excluded from the assemblies where they claimed a right to be present as assessors and coadjutors, a refusal which kept alive prejudice, and fostered hatred.

In the districts more remote from the seat of government, where war and confusion generally reigned, the appointment of prelates and pastors was frequently altogether neglected. It cannot be surprising, that bishops intruding surreptitiously, or seizing the sees by violence, both which sometimes occurred, should be little sought, revered, or obeyed. They sometimes only enjoyed an empty title, sometimes were driven by the prevailing public disorders to the discharge of some inferior pastoral function, in places of security and seclusion. Prelates of the more eminent dioceses reposed in monastic indolence and tranquillity, while all Europe was engaged



in the tumult of theological dispute; as a proof of which, we find an Irish bishop renowned among his countrymen for the composition of a hymn in barbarous Latin rhymes, in praise of a St. Macartin, while his brethren in other countries were engaged in discussion on the most important points of religion.

A clergy without knowledge or discipline, and a laity destitute of instruction, were, in proportion to their ignorance, abjectly attached to papal authority, the only authority which they had been habituated to reverence. It was perfectly natural that they should now with astonishment and horror hear it impeached, and be peremptorily required to throw it off. There was one peculiar prejudice in favour of the see of Rome, which operated equally on the Irish and the English, and even on the more enlightened of the latter. Ireland had been for ages considered, and always industriously represented as a fief of the pope, in right of the church of St. Peter. By virtue of this imaginary right, the seignory of the kingdom, it is known, was granted to Henry II. The Irish parliament had, from time to time, acknowledged this to be the only legitimate foundation of the authority of the crown of England. It was therefore considered more especially profane and wicked to deny the authority of the pope, even in his own rightful inheritance, and that a prince entrusted with this inheritance, for the furtherance and protection of religion, should disclaim his spiritual father and sovereign, and impiously violate the stipulations of his ancestors, by which alone he was entitled to any authority or pre-eminence in Ireland. With this general prepossession in favour of the ancient establishments, the people expressed their opinions with little

restraint, removed as they were from the immediate effects of Henry's inflexible severity. Hence, when the commissioners appointed, explained their instructions, and demanded an acknowledgment of the king's supremacy, Cromer, primate of Armagh, English by birth, and who had some time held the office of chancellor, openly and boldly declared against an attempt so odious, and a presumption so haughty. He summoned the suffragans and clergy of his province, and pathetically represented the danger threatened to the religion of their ancestors, exhorting them vehemently to adhere inviolably to the apostolic chair, suiting his arguments to the range of their understandings. He reminded them, that their country had, from the earliest ages, been called the Holy Island, a convincing proof that it ever was, and is the peculiar property of the holy see, from which the monarchs of England derive their lordship. He further enjoined them, by his spiritual authority, to resist all innovation, as they hoped for everlasting felicity, and pronounced a tremendous curse on all those who should sacrilegiously acknowledge the king's supremacy. In the meantime, he dispatched two emissaries to Rome, to represent the danger of the church, and to entreat the interposition of the pontiff in defence of his own rights and interests in Ireland. It may readily be supposed, that this spirited and zealous conduct of one of the most eminent of the Irish prelates created a great sensation, and enlivened the opposition of the friends of Rome, against the innovation of her discipline.

To the utter mortification of the English agents, the king's commission was treated with indifference and neglect, and his vicar, on account of the inferiority of his birth, became even a subject

of popular ridicule.\* Archbishop Browne, with the assistance of some of his suffragans, laboured in support of the commission, but he was treated not only with disdain but outrage, his life being even exposed to danger. This, however, cannot be subject of surprise, when we recollect the injudicious means resorted to of effecting the proposed reformation. It was not the prostrating images, the destroying relics, the abolishing absurd and idolatrous rites, which could impart any salutary influence to the minds, or break the strong bonds of fanaticism which bound a people totally unprepared, either by mental cultivation, or the peculiarities of polity and situation, for the reception of doctrines so diametrically opposite to those which had grown with their growth, and strengthened with their strength. And such, perhaps, was the opinion of Browne himself, although the violent means he used were those which marked the spirit of the times. He informed Lord Cromwell of his ill success, and represented in their true light the melancholy state of Irish ecclesiastical affairs; as well as the extreme ignorance of the clergy, incapable of performing even the common offices of their function, and utter strangers even to the language in which they celebrated their mass. He depicted the furious and obstinate zeal of the people, whose blind attachment to Rome, he said, was as determined as the constancy of the most enlightened martyrs to true religion. He added, that they exulted in expectation of effectual support from the pope, and seemed confident that his holiness would engage some of the old Irish chieftains, and parti-

\* Browne, in a letter to Cromwell, tells him, with a simplicity characterising the age: "The country folk here much hate your lordship, and despitefully call you in their Irish tongue, the blacksmith's son."

cularly O'Nial, the great dynast of the north, to rise in defence of religion. Considering all these circumstances, the archbishop earnestly recommended, as the most effectual method of procedure, that an Irish parliament should be assembled without delay, which, like the English legislature, might by law enforce a general acknowledgment of the king's supremacy, so as to terrify the refractory, and silence their opposition.

This advice was approved, and a parliament was convened at Dublin, May 1536. The transactions of a late parliament at Westminster, sufficiently intimated to the Irish what acts would be most acceptable to the king, and it was accordingly made the model of their present ordinances. Left to the direction of their own loyal zeal, (the act of transmission having been waived,) they proceeded not only to provide for the internal regulation and local necessities of the pale, but to decide on points equally pertaining to the realm of England, and to the land of Ireland, as they express it, appending and belonging to the imperial crown of that realm, and to the *unity, peace,* and *wealth* of both lands. With respect to the reformation, the king was declared supreme head on earth of the church in Ireland, all appeals to Rome in spiritual causes were taken away, the English laws against slandering the king, in consequence of these innovations, were enacted and confirmed in Ireland, together with the provisions made in England for the payment of first-fruits to the king; by another act he was invested not only with the first-fruits of bishoprics, and other secular promotions in the church of Ireland, but also with those of abbies, priories, colleges, and hospitals; by another, the authority of the Bishop of Rome was more solemnly renounced, and the maintainers of it in Ireland made subject

to premunire. All officers of every kind and degree were directed to take the oath of supremacy, and every person who should refuse it, declared as in England to be guilty of high treason. All payment of pensions, and suing for dispensations and faculties to Rome were utterly prohibited, by adopting the law made for this purpose in England, and accommodating it to Ireland. By one act, twelve religious houses were suppressed, the priory of St. Wolstan's in particular, and the demesnes of all vested for ever in the crown. It cannot be necessary to remark on the slavish submission of the parliaments of this period, nor to dwell upon this Irish echo to the English subservient one. All the laws which it enacted were received without opposition, except those relative to ecclesiastical jurisdiction; these had all the violence of bigotry to encounter. The Romish party, prepared for the agitation of a subject so important, had collected all their adherents, and were ready for a vigorous contention. Two proctors from each diocese, who had usually been summoned to parliament, composed a formidable body of ecclesiastics, avowed adherents to the holy see. They claimed to be a part of the legislative body, and to have a full right of suffrage in every public question; it therefore became necessary, before the act of supremacy could be proposed, to define their rights. It was declared by a previous act that their claim was groundless and presumptuous; that they were summoned merely as assistants and counsellors, and that from the first day of the present parliament, they should be accepted and taken as counsellors and assistants only, whose consent and concurrence was by no means necessary to any parliamentary transaction. Although the partizans of Rome were thus unexpectedly de-



prived of the suffrages of so powerful a body, still when the act of supremacy came to be proposed, both lords and commons united in expressing their unqualified abhorrence of the spiritual authority assumed by the king, while the royal party were equally determined in defence of it. Archbishop Browne took a prominent part in supporting the propriety of the act, using such arguments which it is fair to suppose had weight upon his own judgment, and which were, in fact, more likely to influence his auditors, than those of greater solidity and real force. He pleaded the authority of the pontiffs themselves against the usurpations of Rome; he observed, that they had acknowledged emperors, kings, and princes to be supreme in their own dominions, and even Christ's own vicars. He therefore declared that he freely and conscientiously accepted the king's highness as supreme in both realms, in ecclesiastical as well as in civil affairs. He concluded his arguments with one calculated to work upon the fears of his hearers, pronouncing those who made any difficulty in concurring with him to have no right to be considered or treated as loyal subjects. Apprehension softened the violence of those who failed to be persuaded, and the friends of Rome were compelled to reserve themselves for a clandestine opposition to the execution of a law which they possessed no power to prevent being enacted, but which, in despite of legislative authority, they determined to oppose with indefatigable zeal.

With an ingenuity and craft, (machinery, with the motions of which they were well acquainted,) they devised a pretence for impeaching the authority of the parliament, and persuading the people that the laws enacted in the first session were utterly invalid. But the zeal of these ob-

jectors was so precipitate, that they defeated their purposes, for by advancing their objections during the prorogations of the parliament, instead of waiting for its dissolution, they gave it an opportunity, in the latter session, to explain the supposed ambiguity upon which they had grounded the invalidity of its enactments, and to declare the validity of all acts of the present parliament, denouncing those guilty of felony who should attempt to invalidate any of its laws. To these legislative measures, it was at this time also necessary to add extraordinary vigilance and activity in the field.

It was naturally to be expected, that religious controversy must greatly aggravate the disorders which had so long pervaded the country, that such controversies would have a tendency to separate those who had heretofore been united ; the king's subjects who disapproved the recent regulations, were in danger of being seduced from their allegiance, while at the same time a new bond of union seemed formed among the old Irish. Their temporal interests were indeed separate, and their enmities deep and rancorous, but the defence of the ancient religion was regarded as a common cause, in which they were bound to unite, while it furnished a fair plea for insurrection. The chief governor, Lord Leonard Grey, was aware of these consequences, and was not inattentive to prevent them if possible. He traversed the country, and obtained from the chieftains formal indentures of peace and submission, receiving hostages as a security of their fidelity. But the faithful services of Lord Grey could not preserve him from that popular odium which his vigilant, envious, and powerful enemies found various occasions of exciting and inflaming. The friends of Rome, in particular, had an implacable

resentment towards him, from his zeal in removing and destroying the instruments of superstition, as the demolition of the churches was termed. His government was perpetually subjected to new inquietudes from religious controversy. [1536.] Archbishop Browne, the master spirit and principal agent in Irish reformation, found the utmost difficulty, even in the very seat of government, to counteract the insidious and secret intrigues of Cromer and his party. The clergy of his cathedrals resolutely opposed his attempt to remove their images and reliques, and sent a special emissary to Rome, to express their devotion to the holy father, and to implore his interposition in the support of his authority in the holy island.

Adrian VI.\* now occupied the papal chair, as successor to Leo X. His character and purity of manners were very superior to those who had preceded him; and while he candidly acknowledged the abuses of the court of Rome, he appears sincerely desirous to effect a reform. It is related of him, as a proof of his frankness, (for which he was, of course, much blamed by papal supporters,) that he maintained, *a pope might err*, even in a matter of faith. Still he was a warm anti-Lutheran; hence in his brieve against this reformer and his doctrines, he deals out his threatenings in language as haughty as any used by his less candid predecessors. It will, therefore, be readily supposed that the Irish emissaries were well received at the court of Rome, and that Cromer and his associates were enjoined to persevere boldly in support of the papal authority. They were fully empowered to absolve those

\* Preceptor to Charles V.; hated by the Romans, because a stranger. At his death, a placard was found on his physician's door, "*To the deliverer of his country.*"

from their oath who had been persuaded to acknowledge the king's supremacy, and were directed to command them, under the penalty of the severest ecclesiastical censures, to make confession of their guilt within forty days, and to enter into a new engagement, composed with great solemnity, to maintain the authority of the holy see, to oppose heretics, to resist all edicts issued against the church of Rome, and to declare those accursed who should hold any power, either ecclesiastical or civil, superior to that of the mother church.

Thus was religious controversy, and all the multiplied bitter feelings of contending opinions, added to the evils which pervaded unhappy Ireland. Several of the incumbents in the diocese of Dublin resigned their benefices rather than acknowledge the supremacy of Henry; and so considerable was the opposing party, that the zealous Browne would not even venture to fill up these benefices until he had consulted his patron Cromwell. In his letters he expresses in very strong terms his apprehensions of the agents from Rome, and their powerful influence: "Ever since the first settlement of the English in Ireland," he remarks, "the old natives have been desirous of some foreign power to support and govern them, and now both English and Irish sacrifice their private animosities to the general cause of religion, and seem on the point of forming a dangerous confederacy, which some foreigner may be soon invited to lead against the English government." Nor were these fears groundless, as far as referred to the activity and influence of Romish agents; for while Cromer employed himself indefatigably in discharge of the pontifical commission, Romish agents were equally active in exciting the Irish chieftains of the north to as-

sume arms in defence of the ancient religion. A Franciscan friar employed in this agency was detected and seized in Dublin, his papers fully proving the intent and purpose of his commission. He was first exposed on a pillory, but on orders being received from Lord Cromwell to send him prisoner to England, the wretched man, terrified with apprehensions of what he was likely to suffer from the king's vengeance, put an end to his existence. Amongst his papers was the following letter of the Bishop of Metz, in the name of the council of cardinals, to O'Nial. We give it entire from the historian Leland, as a proof of the assiduity with which individuals were excited to unsheath the sword against the opposers of the pope, and of the art used to apply the argument to the peculiar prejudices and passions of the man addressed.

My son O'Nial,

Thou and thy fathers were ever faithful to the mother church of Rome. His holiness the present pope, and his council of holy fathers, have lately found an ancient prophecy of one Lazerianus, an Irish archbishop of Cashel. It saith, that the church of Rome shall surely fall when the Catholic faith is once overthrown in Ireland. Therefore, for the glory of the mother church, the honour of St. Peter, and your own security, suppress heresy, and oppose the enemies of his holiness. You see that when the Roman faith perisheth in Ireland, the see of Rome is fated to utter destruction; the council of cardinals have, therefore, thought it necessary to animate the people of the holy island in this pious cause, being assured, that while the mother church hath sons of such worth as you, and those who shall unite with you, she shall not fall, but prevail for



ever, in some degree at least, in Britain. Having thus obeyed the orders of the sacred council, we recommend your princely person to the protection of the Holy Trinity, of the Blessed Virgin, of St. Peter, St. Paul, and all the host of heaven. Amen.

The detection of the unhappy friar could be of little consequence in checking the activity of the Romish party, for he was but one of a host on the alert, well furnished with legends and prophecies, and similar agents of seduction, accommodated to the ignorance and the credulity of some, and the pride and vanity of others. The chieftain O'Nial, for instance, readily yielded to the flattering persuasion, that the defence of the holy church rested on his prowess, and eagerly embraced the fair occasion of resuming the ancient consequence of his family. Throughout the northern province, the clergy actively employed themselves in haranguing the fiery chieftains, raising their enthusiasm and zeal to the utmost height, by conjuring and commanding them to waive all individual contentions, and firmly to unite in the glorious cause of religion. The latent spark in the bosom of these chieftains was speedily ignited, and a powerful confederacy formed for the suppression of heresy, while the pride of O'Nial was further exalted by his being acknowledged lord and leader of the northern Irish.

1539. Such were the papal champions among the native Irish. O'Nial declared war against the invaders of papal rights, led his forces through the territory of Meath, denouncing the terrors of his princely vengeance against all the enemies of religion, committing in his course various excesses uncontrolled. But this vain-glorious zeal was productive of no fruits: without any concerted

scheme of effective hostilities, O'Nial seemed contented with the havoc he had made, and after reviewing his troops, he marched them back with the prey they had made in triumph to their own settlements.

The lord deputy had foreseen the storm; he obtained a reinforcement of troops from Cheshire, and uniting them with his own, hastened to repel the insurgents; the result was the dispersion of the Irish, who fled before the vigorous arms of the English with precipitation, taking refuge in their remote haunts. This victory of Bellahoc, which broke the power of the northern Irish, and struck terror into the boldest chieftains, closed the services of Lord Grey. He was recalled to England, where the machinations of his enemies prevailed. Various articles of impeachment were brought against him, and he was upon the most frivolous charges accused of high treason. Overcome by apprehensions of the king's rigour and severity, he failed to take steps to exonerate himself from the charges brought against him; he pleaded guilty to his indictment, and suffered.

The enemies of government, and the partisans of Rome were equally gratified by the fatal catastrophe of this unhappy nobleman, who had served a merciless master so faithfully. The event revived the courage of the chieftains, who once more resolved to unsheath their swords against heresy. But their ill-concerted plans were defeated by the prompt measures of Sir William Brereton, to whom the unfortunate Grey had committed the government on his departure for England. These repeated checks created a general despondency among the disaffected Irish, and the papal cause grew daily more desperate. Numerous monasteries and other religious houses were resigned to the king, and even the refractory

prior of Christchurch, Dublin, losing his hopes of deriving advantage from his secret practices with Rome, submitted to a change of his community into that of a dean and chapter. In short, a complete revolution of sentiment appeared to take place, and when Sir Anthony St. Leger assumed the government, the fairest presages of tranquillity seemed to attend the change. A regulation of good policy was made at this time, well calculated to suit the present pacific dispositions of the Irish, and to give weight to the English government. It was judiciously resolved to change the style of Lord of Ireland, hitherto borne by the English monarchs, to that of King, and when we reflect on the force with which names and titles operate on the multitude, we shall perceive the good policy of this change at this peculiar period. It was resolved in the English cabinet, that an Irish parliament should confer the title of King of Ireland upon Henry and his heirs.\* A parliament was accordingly summoned without delay, and immediately enacted "that forasmuch as the king and his progenitors ever rightfully enjoyed all authority royal by the name of lords of Ireland, but for lack of the title of king had not been duly obeyed, his highness and his heirs for ever shall have the style and honour of King of Ireland, and that it shall be deemed high treason to impeach this title, or to oppose the royal authority." The act was announced with every demonstration of joy and

\* Henry was fond of illustrious distinctions, and ambitious of fame of every kind. "We learn from the papal archives," says Milner, "that this prince, before his contest with the Saxon divine, had been soliciting the pope to be-

stow on him some honourable title similar to the Catholic or Most Christian King. It is even said that the title of Most Christian Majesty had been intended for Henry, but that the design was prevented by political considerations.

solemnity as an event highly interesting to the people, and honourable to the monarch. A general pardon, except for capital crimes, attended its promulgation, and after acknowledging the general satisfaction the measure produced, and the benefits likely to result, the document concludes, "And God save the King's Majesty, King Henry the eighth, king of England, Ireland, and France, defender of the faith, and on earth, supreme head of the church of England and Ireland."

Although we cannot attribute it solely to this measure, but doubtless to a concurrence of causes, it is certain, a general submission immediately ensued. Even the aspiring O'Nial made his peace by a full renunciation of the papal authority, and his example was universally followed. Great effect was produced by well timed graces shown to some loyal Irish and English subjects. Peerages and promotions were granted, and it was declared in parliament to be the king's intention to confer more. They who hoped to obtain, were of course anxious to deserve the promised distinctions, thus a spirit of emulation was excited which had the happiest effects. It grew fashionable to be loyal, and numbers actuated by various motives and various causes, were eager to receive law from the fountain of royalty. Amongst the laws enacted for the regulation of the new subjects, we find some tending to a gradual reformation of abuses in the church. It was ordained that bishops should be allowed to exercise their jurisdiction. That laymen and boys should not be admitted to ecclesiastical preferments. That tythes be duly paid, and no molestation be given to any ecclesiastical officers. The Earl of Ormond, the Earl of Desmond, and the Archbishop of Cashel were constituted guardians and executors of these and other ordinances of state.

It was also the judicious policy of the English government at this period to break if possible the dependencies of inferior chieftains and their septs, and thus gradually to introduce freedom and civility among the Irish districts. For this purpose they were encouraged to submit their complaints of whatever kind to the lord deputy, to resort to his government as their certain resource, they were industriously taught to depend on the king, and assured that their effectual defence and protection would be ever found in his equity, and in their own peaceable and faithful attachment. Henry prided himself upon this progress of the reformation in Ireland, regarding it as the effect of his own political sagacity and wise policy, and certainly he resorted to the most conciliating measures to effect a change of habits and opinions among his Irish subjects. Many of them won by his grace and favour, visited the English court, where they were received and entertained with due consideration and honour, and their renewed submission received with courtly grace, many titles being conferred. O'Nial was among these Irish visitors, and repeated his submissions and engagements. He consented to renounce the style and name of O'Nial, and promised for himself, his family and followers to assume the English habit, language and manners, and to obey English law. He was created a peer of the realm of Ireland by the title of Earl of Tirowen; and his son, to whom the title was to descend, was by the same patent made Baron of Dungannon. The honour of knighthood was also conferred on two gentlemen of his retinue, and a clergyman who was of his train, and had been appointed by the pope to the see of Clogher, was confirmed in his see on resigning his papal credentials and renouncing the authority of Rome. Presents were



lavished upon all ; and a gold chain received by the new earl from the royal hand, was the pledge of favour and conciliation. Thus did all “bear with the time,” and notwithstanding the plausibility of the measures, they were far from meeting the evils of the system prevailing in Ireland, and too superficial to affect the deep seated errors of the government ; they were fair as far as they went, but they left many things essential to effect any radical change, at an immeasurable distance, and little zeal and solid advantage was the result of this brilliant exterior appearance of policy. However, progress was certainly made in reformation, proved by an unusual degree of peace and tranquillity throughout the country, although the French monarch, against whom Henry had declared war, endeavoured by his emissaries to seduce the Irish into a revolt. Henry was attended to Calais by a considerable body of Irish forces, who distinguished themselves by their undaunted spirit. A few contests between the chieftains were the only causes of commotion, and the governor employed himself in arbitrating between the parties with good effect. We cannot but suppose that among the late submissions, the parties were actuated by various motives, that many were insincere, and that their aversion to Henry, and their attachment to Rome remained unshaken, although openly renounced. But a defect of union among themselves obviated any mischievous effect against the English government, while their secret discontent had no opportunity to manifest itself. Yet as a proof of the violent spirit of loyalty in some, it is stated that when the son of the Baron of Upper Ossory had committed some treasonable offence he was actually delivered up to public justice by his own father.

We have thus seen the reformation established

in Ireland, which was attended by a similar suppression of monasteries as took place in England, upon which determined scheme of the rapacious monarch we have no occasion to dwell, merely remarking that it is not the least of the inconsistencies which marked the character and conduct of Henry, that although he did thus determine to destroy all religious houses, he left money by his will for masses to be said for delivering his soul from purgatory.

“The abolition of the ancient religion much contributed,” says Hume, “to the regular execution of justice.” While the Catholic superstition subsisted in full force, there was no possibility of punishing any crime in the clergy. The church permitted not the magistrate to try the offences of her members, and she could not herself inflict any penalties upon them, the power of excommunication only resting with her. Henry restrained these pernicious immunities, the privilege of clergy was abolished for the crimes of petty treason, murder, and felony, to all under the degree of subdeacon. The former superstition also favoured crime in the laity as well as clergy, by affording them sanctuaries in the churches. The parliament abridged these privileges. It was at first declared that no sanctuaries were allowed in cases of high treason, next in those of murder, felony, burglary, rapes, and petty treason; and it limited them in other particulars. It belongs not to this history to attempt any delineation of Henry’s complicated character, which has been pourtrayed by so many able pens, and is to be traced in the various actions of his life and reign. His extensive authority and imperious will had retained the partisans of both the Catholic and reformed religion in subjection, but upon his demise the hopes of the protestants, and

the fears of the Catholics began to revive, and the zeal of these parties produced disputes and animosities indicating more fatal divisions, as Somerset the protector was now the avowed friend of the reformers.

Among many other invasions of ecclesiastical privileges and property which took place at this period, we must remark the irregular practice of bestowing spiritual benefices on laymen, even the Duke of Somerset was endowed with spiritual preferments, deaneries and prebends. The civil affairs of Ireland during the brief reign of the amiable Edward, afford little subject of record. The government of Sir Anthony St. Leger, although honourable to himself, and of essential service to the crown, could not preserve him from the malicious cabals of enemies, but on the accession of Edward he was confirmed in his administration. As the turbulence of the Irish was well known, and their readiness to assume arms on the slightest occasions, it was deemed necessary to send a force to the support of the government in the island headed by Bellingham, a brave and experienced commander. Nor was the precaution found unnecessary, employment was soon found for the troops in repelling several rebellious lords, who on pretence of injuries received, had taken up arms, and spread disorder through the province of Leinster. Bellingham had the military honour of gaining two considerable districts to the English territories, and was said to be the first who for several ages had enlarged the borders of the pale. As his reward, he received the honour of knighthood, and the government of Ireland which he discharged faithfully and vigilantly with a strict attention to the interests of the crown. The secret practices of the friends of Rome were in the mean time un-

remitted; alarmed at the prospect of further innovations in religion, they redoubled their assiduity, and even within the English pale were extremely successful in fomenting and propagating discontent. The vigilance of the governor, however, discovered their intrigues before they effected any serious disturbance.

Bellingham appears to have acted upon that generous and liberal policy which at that period was at least rare, that of preventing, rather than punishing the crime of rebellion. Of this we have a pleasing and amiable instance in his conduct towards the haughty Earl of Desmond. This chieftain had retired to his territory, resuming his rude magnificence and proud independence. Bellingham, who wished all suspected nobles to be under his own immediate vigilance, summoned Desmond to Dublin, and on his refusal, instantly entered Munster with a small train and surprised the chieftain at his residence. He won upon his pride by some gentle and well adapted expostulations, and the haughty Desmond yielded to his wishes, accompanied him to Dublin, where he continued subsequently to reside, and where the judicious Bellingham laboured to train him to civility, and to impress his mind both by his example and delicate instructions with the duties of social and political life. The soil was grateful, the generous zeal of the worthy Bellingham had its full effect upon the Earl. Touched with the happy change in his moral and mental condition he firmly adhered to the precepts he had received, and affectingly expressed his gratitude in daily prayers for his benefactor, by the name of *the good Bellingham*. We must be pardoned for relating this anecdote, but although not relevant to our subject, it exhibits such pleasing portraits of two

eminent individuals that we could not resist the pleasure of sketching them.

The Protector, Somerset, had successfully proceeded in the English reformation where his zeal was marked by the most barbarous violences. Books and manuscripts were destroyed without distinction, volumes of divinity suffered for their rich and costly ornaments, those of literature were with Vandal ignorance condemned as useless. Those treating of the sciences, were supposed to contain only necromancy. The libraries of Westminster and Oxford were ransacked and ordered to be cleared of the Romish missals, legends, and other superstitious volumes, in which search little discrimination was made. Severities were however not confined to the destruction of books, ornaments, and relics, but extended to the discovery of heretics and contemners of the new doctrines, so little is zeal generally tempered by judgment or humanity. But whatever were the means used, and however little they were distinguished by a generous indulgence to long established customs, the reformation extended itself rapidly in England where the dispositions of the mass of the people corresponded with those of the crown, and even it may be said preceded their rulers in the revolt from popery. It was resolved therefore by the government, that the liturgy which had lately been established by the legislature with other ordinances relative to religion should be immediately introduced into Ireland. The abilities and experience of Sir Anthony St. Leger pointed him out as an individual well calculated for this service. He was accordingly appointed lord deputy with a commission to convene a parliament on his arrival. In regard to the reformation there, the case was very different



to what it was in England ; in the latter it had as it were been met half-way, in Ireland, on the contrary it was tendered, nay even forced on a deeply prejudiced and reluctant people. Factionous opposers of every thing emanating from an English government naturally regarded every innovation, especially those in the affairs of religion as oppressive, arbitrary and injurious, and questioned every act of so offensive an authority, making it a plea for open discontent and secret intrigue. Those who possessed more peaceable dispositions, quite unskilled in the serious discussion of the great points in controversy rested indolently upon the antiquity of the former establishment, and were terrified with the dread of the denunciations of divine vengeance thundered loudly by the friends of Rome against all innovation and heresy. Under those different but equally opposing impressions, it was soon evident that although the rigour of Henry's government, and the terror of his despotic will had driven many to formal concessions and submissions, yet few had been produced by serious conviction, and of course were as easily recanted as made.

No one can call in question that our virtue and our happiness depend upon the exercise of our reason and affections, and therefore that it is of the utmost importance to give their tendencies a right direction, and by culture to cherish their growth. Neglected and untilled, what will even the richest soil produce? Yet obvious as is this necessity no measures appear to have been taken in the infancy of the reformation in Ireland, to enlighten the ignorance of the inferior orders, nor any attempt to correct, to soften, or to remove their prejudices. "Hard is it," observes a chancellor of Ireland at this time, "that men should know their duties to God and to the king when

they shall not hear preaching or teaching throughout the year," and he further says "preaching we have none, which is our lack, without which the ignorant can have no knowledge," and when we recollect that these complaints were made, when the lower orders in England were instructed and habituated to religious inquiry, we are struck with the impolicy and injustice which regulated this direct means of preparing the minds and hearts of men to admit opinions which are at once so consonant to right reason and so calculated to improve it, consequently to affect their moral and political obligations. Removing images, and destroying reliques tended rather to terrify and disgust those who had been taught to reverence them, and to strengthen those prejudices which the measure was intended to destroy. Opinions never can be changed by rash and violent means, they yield only to those that are cautious, slow, and mild. But the cruel and absurd attempt to inspire men with faith in any peculiar mode of doctrine by acts of rigour, violence or severity has been so often and so ably combated, that it is quite unnecessary to dwell on a principle the truth of which common sense must discover and experience has demonstrated. It is equally obvious that any such attacks against religious opinions and customs never fail to engage men more strenuously to adhere to them, to exalt their respect, to augment their attachment, and to add ardency to their zeal to preserve them inviolate. The reforming zeal of archbishop Browne seems however not to have extended to the simple means of general instruction for promoting the knowledge of the reformed religion, and refining the popular mind from the gross errors of the ancient mode of faith. The causes of this impolitic omission may probably be referred to the

circumstances of so many of his clergy having abandoned their benefices rather than disdain the papal authority, and the impossibility of filling up those benefices at once with zealous and able reformers. Among his suffragans were, it is true, many Englishmen favourers of the reformation, still none are distinguished by any commendable services or laborious zeal. In fact the circumstances of the nation were unfavourable to the salutary exertions of those individuals, for the Irish language had become so universal and predominant notwithstanding the repeated laws to restrain it, that the people were inaccessible to the instructions of those strangers who had become their pastors. In the meantime the partisans of Rome found ready admission into the heart of those districts where the reformed clergy, if such there were, could neither be regarded nor understood. Speaking to their countrymen in their own language, and well acquainted with the best modes of persuasion, they were heard with attention, favour, and affection, and a contrast was naturally formed in the most uncultured minds, prejudicial to the views of the reformers. Such was the state of things in the pale, and those tracts of Irish territory which intersected the English settlements, and the prospect appears still more gloomy in regard to the moral and spiritual darkness of the people, as we penetrate into the remote provinces. In these, many of the prelates still continued to be nominated by the pope, enjoying their sees by his provision, independent of the crown of England, others, though appointed by the king, had yet a rival sent from Rome to contend with, hence continual jealousies and divisions ensued. The people removed beyond the sphere of English law, had scarcely known, and not in any way regarded the

recent ordinances respecting religion, nor considered themselves at all interested in any regulations regarding it, conceiving themselves only bound to the English government to abstain from taking up arms and invading the king's subjects. Added to these circumstances, it was believed that the lord deputy was more attentive to fulfil his duty as a statesman taking the term in an abstracted meaning, than to engage in any controversies about the modes of faith and worship or the dissemination of the new doctrines. A parliament was not convened, but a royal proclamation was transmitted addressed to the Irish clergy, enjoining the acceptance of the new liturgy. The proclamation was cautiously worded, in order that the innovation might not shock the prejudices of those enjoined to obey it. It expressed that the prayers of the church had been *translated* into the mother tongue for the edification of the people. Saint Leger assembled the prelates and clergy, submitting the document to their inspection as the royal will and pleasure, concurring with the mature and grave opinions of the reverend clergy of England, and as the result of their wise and pious deliberations for the welfare of Ireland.

On the decease of the zealous partisan of Rome, Cromer, archbishop of Armagh, Robert Waucop had been nominated to that see by the pontiff. But Henry determined not to compromise his assumed rights, in defiance of this papal nomination, transmitted his mandate to St. Leger for the appointment of John Dowdal, a native of Ireland, to the primacy. This prelate now proved that his attachment to Rome was superior to his gratitude either to the throne or his patron the lord deputy, by whose instance he had been elevated to the see. He now stood forth at the

head of his clergy, a bold and determined opposer of the royal proclamation, treating the new liturgy with the utmost scorn, by which he remarked, every illiterate fellow might be enabled to read *mass*. St. Leger replied, that there were indeed too many illiterate priests, as ignorant of the language in which divine service had hitherto been performed as the people who attended, for that reason the present was calculated for the edification of both. He was interrupted in the midst of his address by Dowdal, with a stern and haughty admonition to beware of the clergy's curse, and after some further altercation, the enraged primate arose, and departing from the assembly, was followed by almost all of his obsequious clergy.

Archbishop Browne, who now remained the first in dignity among the prelates, declared his ready acceptance of the king's order. The Bishops of Meath, Kildare, Leighlin, and Limerick concurred and the liturgy was soon after read in the cathedral of Christchurch, Dublin, Easter day, 1551, in the presence of the lord deputy, magistrates and clergy.

Men bold enough to oppose the will of their superiors, are naturally presumed to act from pure and conscientious motives, and a sincere conviction of the truth of their own principles, and of course their mental hardihood is respected. Hence, the opposition of the archbishop of Armagh and his seceding clergy created them great popularity, and tended to confirm the affection of the people for the ancient worship. Of course, the most invidious motives were attributed to the reforming party, they were accused of worldly and temporizing views, and as men who scrupled not to sacrifice their consciences to the favour of a court. These prejudices were incalculably increased by the injudicious violence



of those commissioned to remove the objects and instruments of popular superstition. Under the pretence of obeying the orders of state, this violence of party feeling was cruelly displayed. The most valuable furniture of the churches was seized and exposed to sale without reserve or reverence. The Irish annalists describe with religious horror, (of which, however ill directed, we are not to doubt the sincerity, or to regard with contempt as the source is honourable to the feelings of the soul,) the garrison of Athlone issuing forth with a barbarous and heathen fury, and pillaging the famous church of Clonmacnoise, tearing away the most inoffensive ornaments, books, bells, plate, windows, furniture of every kind, so as to leave the shrine of their favourite Saint Kienan a hideous monument of sacrilege.

The removal of St. Leger from the government was sudden, and attributed to the representations of archbishop Browne to the court, that the opposition of the northern clergy might be traced to the indifference and remissness of St. Leger in the cause of reformation. Sir James Crofts succeeded him, and his first care was to labour by address and persuasion to soften the opposition of Dowdal and endeavour to reconcile him to the new regulations of public worship. The violent and uncompromising spirit of the prelate, rendered the task of the new deputy a difficult one. To yield an iota of his pretensions or of his opinions, he thought would betray a cowardly acknowledgment of the superiority of those he opposed, and that his supposed weakness and impotence had obliged him to listen to conciliation. The primate was in fact universally regarded as the principal and leader of the friends of Rome, his self-love and pride were flattered by the distinction. To be the object of popular attention,

the oracle to be consulted upon a subject of such vital and extensive importance has a natural tendency to elevate the pride of man, and to give force and spirit to those prepossessions of mind which have placed him in such a commanding situation. The prelate had retired with an affected dignity of resentment from the assembly he had so indignantly quitted to the abbey of St. Mary in the suburbs of Dublin, declining all intercourse with his conforming brethren, and taking no part in the public councils. In this monastic retirement he received the conciliating letter of the deputy by the hands of his suffragan of Meath. He was reminded by this letter, of the obedience due to the sovereign which Christ himself had recommended by his example, and which the bishops of Rome had not scrupled to acknowledge, the writer expressed in terms of great sincerity, his desire of being the instrument of reconciling and uniting the primate with all his brethren, and requested him, that for this good purpose, he should appoint a place of conference, that the order and discipline of the church of Ireland might be amicably adjusted by the clergy, that any further severity on the part of the throne might be obviated. The pride of the primate was flattered by this application, and he determined to preserve his stateliness. He replied with a frigid civility, that he had good reason to fear that it would be vain for him to enter into any conference with a number of obstinate churchmen, or to hope that the differences which had occasioned his secession could be easily adjusted, the judgments and consciences of the contending parties being so entirely opposed. He, however, accepted the friendly offers of the lord deputy, and should rejoice to see him, if he would visit him in his retirement. But he did not think it

meet for him to appear at his lordship's palace. Sir James Crofts sincerely desiring to reconcile the entire body of the clergy to the royal ordinance, passed over this provoking affectation of state, and resolved to visit the abbey. It was agreed that the primate should be attended by his brethren. The conference was held in the great hall of the abbey, and was opened in the form of a theological dispute, in which the primate defended the Romish mass, and the Bishop of Meath was advocate for the reformed mode of worship. This method of decision had its natural and usual effect, for in religious controversies each one tries to support his own opinions, and practical religion is too often forgotten by both parties in the heat of argument. Each party in the present instance claimed the victory, and each retired with greater acerbity of disposition against the other. No law had as yet established the new liturgy in Ireland, therefore the archbishop persevered in his opposition with the greater confidence, as he was not obnoxious to any penalty. The authority of the court was contemned and insulted without any present power of self vindication, and the influence of the archbishop and his clergy was unrestrained. A punishment however was devised and inflicted upon the contumacious primate, which however puerile it may appear to us, was considered both grievous and mortifying at the period we are reviewing, when contests respecting ecclesiastical dignities were deemed of high importance.

The question of precedence between the sees of Armagh and Dublin, had been, as we have before remarked, agitated with violence; popes and councils had been consulted, their decisions pleaded, and even the authority of England had frequently interposed to allay their acrimony.

But the superiority of ecclesiastical privileges appeared to these contending prelates, not of such moment as whether the primate of Armagh should have his crosier borne erect within the jurisdiction of his rival. An opposition to this external mark of superiority had been deemed a sufficient reason for declining attendance in parliament, and produced strong remonstrances against the injurious violation of his dignity. The contending parties were however apparently reconciled by the decision that each prelate should be entitled to primatial dignity, and be suffered to erect his crosier in the diocese of the other, while the archbishop of Dublin should have the title of primate of Ireland, and the archbishop of Armagh was to be distinguished by that of primate of all Ireland. He had now however offended so highly, and the services of Browne had been so important, that this arrangement was entirely reversed. By the king's patent, Armagh was deprived of the superior title, and it was conferred on Browne and his successors for ever in the see of Dublin. Nothing could be imagined more mortifying than this measure to the haughty and inflexible spirit of Dowdal. And in fact it wounded the pride of the primate so much, and so roused his apprehensions of further severities, that he abandoned his see, and retired to the continent. This retreat, however, was rash and highly impolitic, as it referred to the support of the Catholic cause, while it proved that the archbishop was by no means endued with the spirit of a martyr in its defence. He abandoned the field when the popular opinion was in his favour, and deprived his party of a leader, who from his station commanded respect and reverence, and by his abandonment left his opponents to improve the opportunity of weakening his influence and under-

mining his cause. His enemies failed not to represent his retirement as a renunciation of his pastoral charge, and a successor was accordingly appointed to the see of Armagh. At the same time, John Ball was nominated to the see of Ossory. The rigid and uncomplying spirit of this acrimonious impugner of popery, manifested itself immediately upon his consecration. The dean of Christ-church on that occasion proposed that the Romish ritual should be observed, as the people were not well inclined to the reformed liturgy, and the new order of consecration had not yet been established by a parliament in Ireland. All the clergy, and even the new archbishop of Armagh, seemed willing to accede to this proposal. But Ball resolutely opposed all such condescensions. He obstinately refused to be consecrated by any but the reformed ritual, and by his firmness even terrified the clergy into a compliance. He observed the wafer prepared for the communion. He suspended the whole office until it was removed, and common bread placed on the table. The weak among the new reformed, were terrified with the inflexible resolution of the new bishop, and the Romish party beheld him with dismay and horror. His vehemence of temper was not however ill suited to the circumstances and place of his mission, and his learning, which was eminently superior to that of his Irish brethren, might have done considerable service to the protestant cause, had he regulated his conduct judiciously. But he showed no indulgence to the deep seated prejudices of his flock, and sought not to reconcile them by kindness. Bent upon the purpose of making his flock yield to the reform he had introduced, he was unmindful of that reserve and caution which were essentially necessary with a people so pow-



erfully prejudiced and bigoted. During the short period of this prelate's residence in Ireland, his life was a continued series of fear and persecution. On his first preaching the reformed doctrines his clergy forsook him or opposed him; once in particular, five of his domestics were assassinated while peaceably making hay in a meadow near his house, and the same fate would probably have awaited himself had not the chief of Kilkenny hastened to protect him with one hundred horse, and three hundred foot. This prelate was born at Cove, near Dunwich, in Suffolk, in 1495. At twelve he entered into a monastery of Carmelites at Norwich, he was thence sent to Jesus College, Oxford. He was educated in the Romish faith, but converted to the Protestant by Thomas, Lord Wentworth. On the death of Lord Cromwell, who had protected him from the persecution of the Romish clergy, he was obliged to retire into the low countries, the general refuge, where he continued during the period of eight years. Soon after the accession of Edward the sixth, he was, as we have seen, recalled, and at first presented to the living of Bishop's Stooke, in Hants, and in 1552, nominated to the see of Ossory. We shall anticipate time a little to finish the brief sketch of this prelate's life. On the accession of Mary, the tide of opposition became so strong and powerful, that to avoid assassination he embarked for Holland, but was unfortunate in his escape. First he was taken by a Dutch man of war, and robbed by the captain of all his effects. Then being forced by stress of weather into St. Ives, Cornwall, he was confined on suspicion of treason. Being however released after some days confinement, the ship anchored in Dover road, where he was again seized on a false accusation. After his arrival in Holland, he was retained a prisoner

three weeks, and at length obtained his liberty by engaging to pay thirty pounds. From Holland he travelled to Basle in Switzerland, where he continued till Elizabeth ascended the throne. After his return to England, he was made prebendary of Canterbury, probably not choosing to return to his Irish flock. He died, November, 1565, at Canterbury, in the sixty-eighth year of his age. He was so severe a writer against the church of Rome, that his books were particularly prohibited in the expurgatory index, published at Madrid in folio, in 1667.

To return to the transactions from which this sketch has diverted our attention; the apprehensions of disorder from religious controversy, and the general attachment manifested by the people to their ancient mode of faith and worship, rendered a cautious and vigilant attention to civil affairs essentially necessary. But an inveterate adherence to the manners and institutions of former ages was the great obstacle in every attempt to preserve the different inhabitants within the bounds of peace and submission, and the Irish appeared particularly tenacious of their grandeur and independence, at this period when England was gradually regaining that extent of influence and dominion, which had from various causes been diminished. So rooted appeared the determination not to permit any innovation, that an Irish annalist of the period mentions an attempt to break in upon the ancient institutions which a long series of ages had established among his countrymen as a fair and justifiable cause of taking up arms, and the factious and turbulent septs were ready to avail themselves of any fair plea to justify their restless animosities.

Although not immediately connected with our principal subject, it is necessary to advert to the

factional disorders of the great northern family of O'Nial, as they were particularly distressing to the English government at this period. The Earl of Tirowen, notwithstanding the amplitude of his submission, had by no means lost sight of the greatness and regal splendour of his family, and was little disposed to forego the proud distinction. He had once pronounced a curse on those of his posterity who should ever conform to the English manners, or associate with any of the Saxon race. Returned to an intercourse with his kinsmen and followers, after having tendered his submission to Henry at his court, the impressions there received were soon lost, and his long cherished and favourite ideas of individual nobility, or rather regality, revived in all their original force. His son Matthew, whom he had declared his heir, and who in consequence it will be remembered, was created Baron of Dungannon, was really illegitimate, and this extraordinary favour shewn by him to the youth, could not fail to arouse the jealousy of his legitimate children. This domestic dissension was inflamed by treachery, which ultimately spread its devastating power through the fairest and most flourishing district of the whole island, and though the flame of discord subsided in some degree at intervals, it was many years ere it was quite extinguished. Nor was the turbulence of the ambitious family of the O'Nial suppressed, until it had operated most injuriously upon the affairs of Ireland.

1553. In the meantime, the premature death of the amiable Edward had a powerful effect in the ecclesiastical system, threatening destruction to the weak efforts which had been made to introduce the reformation into Ireland. When Mary was proclaimed in London, directions were given that a like proclamation should be made to

all her loving subjects in Ireland. The officers of state were confirmed in their several departments, and particular grants were conferred on various persons who pleaded their services and sufferings, among whom John Dowdal was restored to the dignity of primate of *all* Ireland, and invested with the priory of Athirdee. With a similar clemency as was observed in England by Mary on her accession, a general pardon was granted to her subjects in Ireland, and no violent changes in religion were attempted. A license only was published for the celebration of mass, unattended with penalty or compulsion, and among the royal titles, that of the supreme head of the church on earth was retained in the acts of state. Mary granted many conciliating marks of favour to her Irish subjects, amongst which graces we may mention the complete restoration of the noble family of Kildare, a young scion of which, it will be recollected, was saved by the interposition of an aunt, and sent to the continent for protection. This accomplished young noble had returned to England in the reign of Edward, and by an union with the daughter of Sir Anthony Browne, formed an interest which soon gained him the royal favour. He was knighted and restored to a considerable portion of the possessions of his family. To these were now added by Mary the honours of his ancestry, and she soon after vested him with all the honours forfeited by the attainder of his father.

Sir Anthony St. Leger, who had been entrusted with the government of Ireland, when the new regulations of divine worship were to be established in the reign of Edward, was again made the deputy under whose auspices they were to be abolished. The reformed clergy naturally anticipated the rising storm, when they saw

Dowdal invested with the primacy. Ball, Bishop of Ossory, we have seen, was obliged to flee before its force should overwhelm him; others were less alive to the danger, or more determined to meet it manfully. Many of them, on renouncing the authority of Rome, had used the liberty allowed by the change, and taken wives, and were therefore now obnoxious to the popish canons. The Archbishop of Armagh received a commission to inquire into this offence, and in conjunction with the new Bishop of Meath, to deprive the married clergy. Staples, the former Bishop of Meath, was first removed, to make way for his judge; Browne of Dublin, whose zeal had rendered him perfectly unpardonable, Lancaster of Kildare, and Traverse of Leighlin, were successively ejected, and their sees filled with ecclesiastics devoted, of course, to Rome. Several of the inferior clergy were treated with a like severity, and the violent Dowdal, in his synods, outran the zeal of government, proceeding indefatigably to re-establish the whole popish system. All other ordinances with respect to religion were as yet suspended, and St. Leger and his successor, Fitzwalter, Earl of Sussex, were left at leisure to repress the disorders perpetually arising in different quarters of the island, between the old and new settlers, and the local quarrels of the chiefs. But Sussex was at length diverted from a warfare conferring little honour, by affairs occurring of greater moment.

Mary's fiery zeal had kindled the flame of persecution in England; and she now projected to extend her tender mercies to Ireland, and there, as in England, to tear up every root of heresy. With this view, Sussex was directed to convene a parliament, in order that the great business of the re-establishment of the ancient



faith and discipline might, without delay, be effected. Accordingly, lords and commons assembled June 1, 1556; a bull from Cardinal Pole was delivered by the lord deputy to the chancellor, to be read in the assembly. It recited the fatal separation of Ireland from the see of Rome, attributed it to fear rather than to free-will, as proved by the readiness of the whole island to return to the obedience of the sovereign pontiff, on the accession of Mary, that immaculate princess, who had with such firmness and constancy preserved herself pure from the pollution of heresy. It pronounced a plenary absolution on all the inhabitants from this their offence, ratifying at the same time all dispositions of benefices, confirming marriages, dispensations, and other ecclesiastical proceedings during the late schism; securing the possession of church lands to those who had been vested with them, and enjoining parliament to abrogate all laws enacted against the supremacy of Rome. The bull was read aloud by the chancellor kneeling, and received by the whole assembly in the same humble posture, in token of reverence and contrition. After this ceremony, they adjourned to the cathedral, where *Te Deum* was solemnly chaunted, and public thanksgivings offered in the most affecting forms of worship, for the present happy restoration of the realm to the unity of the holy church. It is almost unnecessary to advert to the powerful effects of the splendid and striking system of Romish worship, so calculated to affect the senses, and raise the imagination. And although protestants, in the simplicity of their forms, endeavour to worship in spirit and in truth, few will deny the influence of external circumstances, of time, place, and manner, in awakening devotional associations, and feelings of piety.

The bended knee, the supplicating attitude, the responses of prayer, the harmonious swell of praise, the organ's peal, the elevated host, the fragrant incense, and the adoration of the sacerdotal ministers, altogether awaken an enthusiasm, a degree of mental excitement, which must be felt to be understood. Hence it may easily be imagined, that this devout preparation served to strike the people who crowded to share in it, with a double abhorrence of the late heretical innovations.

Amongst other acts, the parliament proceeded to revive all statutes made in Ireland for the punishment of heresy, solemnly ratified and established all the provisions of the bull, transmitted by the legate Pole, repealing all acts made against the holy see. They also re-established the jurisdiction of the pope, discharging the payment of first-fruits to the crown, and restoring to the church the rectories, glebes, and other ecclesiastical emoluments vested in the crown since the 28th of Henry VIII. so as to reserve only the lands granted to the laity. With the acts of this parliament, relative to civil affairs, we shall not weary our readers, but shall advert to one of a private nature, as connected with our subject. The successor to George Browne in the see of Dublin, presented a petition to the parliament, complaining of devastations made in the archiepiscopal right during the late schism. His application, as may be supposed, was favourably received, and it was enacted, that all conveyances made of the lands and possessions belonging to the see, by Archbishop Browne, without a royal license, all demises of any parcel of the archbishopric to his own use, or to that of any bastard of his, should be utterly void. Thus we see the fiery spirit of popish zeal, which in Eng-

land was glutting its vengeance with the tortures of individuals of both sexes, and all ranks, was happily in Ireland confined to reversing the acts of an obnoxious prelate, and affixing an opprobrious name to his offspring. The few assertors of the reformation, who had not from apprehended danger fled from the kingdom, were leniently allowed by the Irish government to sink into obscurity and neglect. There were no zealous adversaries of popery, rendering themselves conspicuous, and provoking the severity of persecution; but the whole nation seemed to have relapsed into that lethargy of ignorance and superstition from which they had partially been awakened.

As Ireland thus escaped the effects of Mary's rancorous and cruel bigotry, several English families of the reformed religion fled into Ireland, enjoying there their opinions and their worship in privacy, without notice or molestation. A popular story prevailed in the subsequent reign, which offers an instance of important events hinging upon trifling incidents, and informs us, that Mary fully intended to extend her bloody zeal to Ireland, as she had displayed it in England. She appointed Dr. Cole, Dean of St. Paul's, one of the commissioners, to execute her commands. On the doctor's arrival at Chester, the mayor of that city being a zealous churchman, waited on the dean in order to pay his respects, and in the course of the interview, the reasons of his passing over to Ireland being adverted to, the doctor showed his visitor the queen's commission, saying, "here is a commission which shall lash the heretics in Ireland." The landlady of the inn where the dean was accommodated, was well affected towards the protestants, and having a brother professing similar sentiments

residing at Dublin, was exceedingly troubled at the words of the dean, which she had accidentally heard during her attendance upon him. She resolved if possible to possess herself of this persecuting commission, and watching the opportunity when the mayor took his leave, the dean attending him down the stairs, she opened the box containing the dangerous paper, and introduced in lieu of it a pack of cards, folded in paper, the knave of clubs being placed uppermost. The dean returning to his apartment, put by his box, little suspecting the ingenuity which had been executed. The following day he embarked for Ireland, and landed at Dublin. Eager to execute the commands of his royal mistress, he immediately repaired to the castle, the Lord Fitzwalter being deputy. Without delay he requested a conference with him and the privy council, which being granted, he opened the subject of his commission, and presented the box to the lord deputy to examine the document, conferring upon him the authority of proceeding vigorously against the heretics. The lord deputy caused the box to be opened, and directed the secretary should read the royal commission in due form; the packet was accordingly unfolded, when lo! the cards appeared. The lord deputy and the council regarded each other with surprise, and the doctor's confusion may be imagined; he declared he had a commission, but knew not where it was gone; the lord deputy remarked with well-affected gravity, "Let us have another commission, and we will shuffle the cards the meanwhile." The poor doctor being troubled in his mind at the unaccountable loss, retired from the council in confusion, and returning to England as quickly as possible, he actually did obtain a second commission, and again hastened to sail for Ireland,

but was prevented by a contrary wind. While waiting in momentary expectation of a favouring breeze, the intelligence reached him of Mary's decease; "and thus the providence of God," observes the narrator of this anecdote, "preserved the protestants of Ireland." Our authority adds, that Queen Elizabeth was so pleased with this story related to her by Lord Fitzwalter on his return to England, that she sent for the ingenious female, and granted her a pension of forty pounds per annum during her life. (*See Cox Hibernia Anglicana, or History of Ireland*, vol. ii. p. 308. Also *Harleian Misc.*)

We pass over the local war which desolated several districts of the country at this period, and in which the English government had neither power nor authority to interpose.

Sussex had been recalled to England, and Sir Henry Sydney, who administered the government in his absence, in conjunction with the Archbishop of Dublin, found ample employment in regulating the affairs of the pale. Synods were held by the clergy, in which they formed their constitutions for the re-establishment of the ancient rites and ceremonies. Various ornaments of the churches, which had been conveyed away, were assiduously sought, recovered, and replaced. The priory of Kilmainham was, however, in exception to the general regulation of ecclesiastical affairs, restored to the church.\*

Several Irish chieftains of inferior note were reconciled to a government so zealously attached to the Romish communion, and consented to swear allegiance. Sussex, however, on his return, had several violences of the contending

\* Kilmainham. A priory for knights hospitallers of St. John of Jerusalem. was founded here, and a house



chiefs to repress, amongst the most powerful and troublesome of whom was Daniel O'Brien, who had endeavoured to dispossess his nephew of the sovereignty of Thomond. The nephew consented to hold the lands annexed to the title, (preserved to him by the assistance of Sussex,) as an English subject, swore allegiance to the king and queen, together with all his retainers, in the most solemn form, renouncing also the name of O'Brien, to the utter mortification of his followers. The annalists thus speak of his renunciation: "He accepted the title of earl, but gave up the dignity of Daleais, to the astonishment and indignation of all the descendants of Heber, Ucremon, and Ith."

During part of the reign of the cruel bigot Mary, Paul IV. filled the papal chair.\* He was the most haughty pontiff who had for several ages been elevated to the dignity. He was highly offended that Mary should presume to retain among her titles that of Queen of Ireland, affirming that it belonged to him alone, as he saw meet and proper either to erect new kingdoms, or to abolish the old. But to avoid disputes with the new converts, he did think proper to erect Ireland into a kingdom, and then he admitted the title, as if it had been assumed from his own concession. This was not an unfrequent artifice of the popes, to give allowance to what they could not prevent, and afterwards pretend that princes, while they exercised their own powers, were only acting by authority from the papacy. Paul had at first intended to oblige Mary formally to recede from this title, before he would

\* He was elected after the age of eighty; his nephews governed every thing. The inquisitions were violent at

Rome, and after his death the people burned the prisons of that tribunal.

condescend to bestow it upon her, but circumstances made him determine to proceed in a less haughty manner.

Before we close our review of the changes which took place in the ecclesiastical polity in Ireland at this period, we will give the personal sketch of Archbishop Browne from Usher, who thus describes this zealous friend and promoter of protestantism. "George Browne was a plain man with a cheerful countenance, in his acts and deeds plain and downright, to the poor merciful and compassionate, pitying the state and conduct of the souls of the people, and advising them when he was provincial of the Augustine order in England, to make their application only to Christ, which advice, coming to the ears of Henry VIII. he became a favourite, and was made Archbishop of Dublin." The biographer then proceeds to describe the zeal of the archbishop; the character of the Jesuits was admirably described, and their transactions and fate foretold with a sagacity almost prophetic, by Archbishop Browne, so early as 1551, in a sermon preached by him at Dublin. The sermon is to be found in the fifth volume of the Harleian Misc.; the passage referring to the Jesuits is: "But there is a new fraternity of late sprung up, who call themselves Jesuits, which will deceive many, who are much after the Scribes and Pharisees' manner amongst the Jews. They shall strive to abolish the truth, and come very near to do it. For these sorts will turn themselves into many different forms; with the heathens, a heathenist; with the atheists, an atheist; with the Jews, a Jew; with the reformers, a reformade;—purposely to know your intentions, your minds, your hearts, and your inclinations, and thereby bring you at last to be like the fool, who

said in his heart *There is no God*. These shall spread over the whole world, shall be admitted into the councils of princes, and they never the wiser, charming of them; yea, making your princes reveal their hearts, and the secrets therein, and yet they not perceive it; which will happen from falling from the laws of God, by neglecting to fulfil the law of God, and by winking at their sins; yet in the end, God, to justify his law, shall suddenly cut off this society, even by the hands of those who had most succoured them, and made use of them; so that at the end they shall become odious to all nations. They shall be worse than Jews, having no resting-place upon earth; and then shall a Jew have more favour than a Jesuit." (*See Note in Mosheim, vol. iv. p. 191.*)

## CHAPTER XII.

*Accession of Elizabeth—Earl of Sussex governor of Ireland—Commutations—Inflamed by religious antipathy—Severe measures—Rebellion of John O’Nial—Parliament convened to establish the reformed religion—Ecclesiastical system of Mary reversed—Penal statutes enacted—Sussex returns to England, appoints Sir William Fitz William—Statutes evaded and neglected—Indulgence of the queen—Difficulties of Sir Henry Sydney’s government—Feuds of the houses of Desmond and Ormond—Intrigues of the enemies of the reformed religion—Acts of the parliament—Attaints John O’Nial—Prejudices against Elizabeth—Government of Sir John Perrot—His vigorous government—A colony from England to people the Ulster lands—Earl of Essex, his expedition to colonise—Unfortunate result—Designs of Philip II. upon Ireland—Thomas Stukeley—Intrigues with the papists—Pope Gregory XIII. encourages him—James Fitzmaurice a tool of the Romanists—His design of invading Ireland—Catastrophe of Stukeley—Fitzmaurice lands in Kerry—Insincerity of the Earl of Desmond—Disappointment of the invader—Catastrophe of Fitzmaurice—Lord Grey recalled—Loftus, Archbishop of Dublin, appointed lord justice, in conjunction with Sir Henry Wallop—Miserable death of Saunders—Sir John Perrot governor—His extensive plans of improvement—His enemies falsely represent him to the queen—Her unjust suspicions—Scheme of re-peopling Munster with an English colony—Rebellion of De Burgho—Hugh O’Nial, his character—He goes to the English court—His insinuating arguments—His petition granted—He returns elated to Ireland—His deep designs—Tirowen repairs to England—His duplicity—He is charged with having entered into treaty with Spain—He artfully evades the charge, and the restrictions he had agreed to—Foundation of the University of Dublin—Opposition of Loftus and Sir John Perrot—Tirowen discloses his ambitious designs—Spain sends assistance to the insurgents—The war justly to be regarded as religious—Sir John Norris removed from power—Lord Burgh succeeds him—His vigorous measures—His sudden death—Tirowen recurs to his former dissimulation to*

*gain time—He succeeds in procuring pardon—Unfortunate affair of Blackwater, favourable to the rebels—Distresses of the country—Essex accepts the government of Ireland, with the title of Lord Marshal—Resistance of the insurgent Irish—Incaution of Essex lays him open to his enemies—Oviedo named by the pope archbishop of Dublin—Elevation of Tir-owen—Publishes a manifesto—Makes a pilgrimage—Letters to the pope—Bull granting indulgencies to Irish insurgents—Extracts from manifesto—Royalists act on defensive.*

1558. ON the accession of Elizabeth, the Earl of Sussex was considered as an able and meritorious governor of Ireland, who, with a small force had retained that turbulent people in peace and regularity. We must be understood to speak comparatively, for the provinces were never free from disorder. The Irish princes and nobles, always divided amongst themselves, were ready enough to pay exterior obeisance to powers they were unable to resist; but as no durable force or permanent government was maintained to retain them in subjection; they were for ever relapsing into disorder and independence. But insufficient as was the English authority to establish order and obedience among the people, it was yet sufficient to check the growth of any enterprise among the natives, and though it failed in bestowing a general, true, and salutary form of government, it was able to prevent the rise of any such form from the internal policy or combination of the Irish. Thus, although the dominion of the English over Ireland had been established above four centuries, it yet might still be regarded as little more than nominal.

Slight as our sketch has been, it must have apprised the reader that the conduct of England towards Ireland was, from the beginning of what is termed the conquest, impolitic and absurd. “Instead of inviting,” says Hume, “the Irish



to adopt the more civilised customs of their conquerors, they refused, though earnestly solicited, to communicate to them the privilege of their laws, and every where marked them out as aliens and enemies. By this and other instances of imprudent policy, the Irish remained in the same wretched and abject state as when first invaded." At a period when every Christian nation was cultivating with ardour every civil art of life, the rudeness and ignorance of the Irish were extreme. The ancient superstition, the practices and observances of their progenitors, mingled and corrupted by many wild opinions, still maintained an unshaken empire over them, and the reformation, as we have seen, was odious to them not only as it affected those deep-seated prejudices, but also because it emanated from a people whom they had never ceased to hate, although sometimes obliged to submit. At the period at which we are now arrived, the ancient opposition of manners, laws, and interests was inflamed by religious antipathy, and the subduing and civilising the country seemed to be even more impracticable than ever. A series of commotions disturbed the nation, and the most severe measures were deemed necessary to restore order. From a passage in a letter from the primate Dowdal, on the state of Ireland, written in the last year of Mary's reign, although it is cautiously expressed, yet it is sufficiently evident that the contending chieftains were severely treated. Two whom he names, O'Moore and O'Connor, he advises may be restored to grace, and invested with some part of their old territory, from which they had been ejected. "But peradventure," he remarks, "some men will reckon this way to be not for the queen's honour, to make peace with that people that hath so many times digressed from

their promise and orders taken with them, as it is said. And whether it be so or not I do not know it; but admit it be, men must consider the rudeness of such people, and the *occasion* of such war, &c."

It is unnecessary to enter into the detail of the rebellion raised by John O'Nial, of his subsequent submission, reception into the queen's favour, and promises of duty and obedience, the subsequent violation of those promises and his tragical end, as these particulars are all narrated in histories well known. The Earl of Sussex returned to his government supplied with special instructions for establishing the reformed religion. For this purpose he was commissioned to convene a parliament for enacting statutes similar to those already made in England. The sentiments of Elizabeth with respect to religion were well known, and lords and commons met on January 11, 1560, fully aware of the purpose of their convocation, but far from being universally well disposed towards the projected regulations. So various and so continual had been the changes and the reverses in respect to religion during the three preceding reigns, that the partizans of Rome affected to lament those distractions, as the mischievous result of the revolt from the ancient system, and urged that to give rest and tranquillity to the disturbed consciences and minds of men, it was absolutely necessary to resist all further innovation. From the catalogue of this parliament, it appears that most of the temporal lords were those whose descendants even to the present time continued firmly attached to the Romish communion, but that the greatest number of prelates were such as quietly enjoyed their sees, by conforming occasionally to different modes of religion, nor does it appear that of the number (amounting to nineteen,)

more than two, viz. of Meath and Kildare, were strong and determined adherents to the ancient religion. The representatives of ten counties were only summoned in the commons, the rest which made up the number seventy six, were citizens and burgesses of those towns where the royal authority was predominant, and therefore, it can be no subject of surprise, that after a session of a few weeks, the entire ecclesiastical system of Mary was reversed by a series of statutes conformable to those already enacted by the English legislature. The ecclesiastical jurisdiction was restored to the crown, and of consequence a new oath of supremacy, the laws against heresy repealed, the use of the common prayer enforced with such alterations as had been already made in England, and all subjects were commanded to attend the public service of the church. The first fruits, and twentieth parts of all church revenues were restored to the crown, and the form of electing prelates by deans and chapters, by virtue of the writ called Congé d'Elire was entirely abolished in Ireland as being attended with unnecessary delays and costs, and derogatory to the royal prerogative. The queen was styled *governess*, not *head* of the church, but it comprised the same extensive power, which under the latter title had been exercised by her father and brother. This act was strenuously opposed by the bishops, but it passed; by it the crown, without the concurrence either of the parliament or of the convocation, was vested with the whole spiritual power, might repress all heresies, establish or repeal all canons, alter every point of discipline, ordain or abolish any rite or ceremony. Whoever refused to take the oath, acknowledging the queen's supremacy, was incapacitated from holding any office. Whoever denied this supremacy, or at-

tempted to deprive the queen of that prerogative, forfeited for the first offence all his goods and chattels; for the second, was subjected to a penalty of a premunire; but the third offence was deemed treason. As the nomination of the bishops rested with the queen, she was empowered on the vacancy of any see to seize all the temporalities, and to bestow on the bishop elect an equivalent in the impropriations belonging to the crown. This equivalent was however much inferior in value. The bishops and all incumbents were prohibited from alienating their revenues, and from granting leases for a longer term than twenty-one years, or three lives. But an exception was made in favour of the crown, therefore great abuses still prevailed on this point, it being usual for the courtiers to make an agreement with a bishop or incumbent, and to procure a fictitious alienation to the queen, who subsequently transferred the lands to the persons agreed on. It was provided by letters patent, under the great seal of England and Ireland, that the chief governor duly authorised, shall by his letters patent, collate to all vacant sees, that persons so collated shall be consecrated and invested with their rights, and that the prelates directed to consecrate them shall pay due obedience to the royal mandate, within twenty days under the penalties of the statute of premunire. Penalties were enacted against those who departed from the reformed mode of worship as well as against those who absented themselves from the church and the sacraments. But as a proof that Elizabeth proceeded with gradual steps, and made no hasty innovations on the prejudices of her Irish subjects, it was provided in the act enforcing attendance on public worship, that as in most places of the realm, there cannot be found English ministers, and as the Irish language is

difficult to be printed, and that few can read the Irish letters, the queen is humbly prayed that it may be enacted that in every church where the minister hath no knowledge of the Irish tongue, it may be lawful for him to officiate in Latin. Although this did not of course effectually provide for the edification of the people, it had certainly a tendency to soften the acrimony of prejudice against the reformed worship, by allowing it to be performed in the usual language of their devotions to which they had been accustomed; those who have to guide minds will not, and ought not to despise those habits to which time has given a sanction, and from which the mind must be gradually disengaged, not violently rent. Another act of the parliament restored the priory of St. John of Jerusalem to the crown, by revoking all dispositions made of the revenues by Missingbund the late prior, a zealous partisan of Rome, who had been suspected of fomenting insurrections. Either from a consciousness of guilt or a dread of power the prior fled, and it was enacted by this parliament, that he should be required by proclamation to surrender within forty days, or be attainted of high treason. So powerful had been the opposition in this parliament, that Sussex dissolved it in a few weeks, and repaired to England, entrusting his government to Sir William Fitz William, who possessed too little consideration to manage a people now particularly irritated by the violence offered to their religious prejudices. All was clamour and confusion, the Romish partizans loudly inveighed against the heretical queen and her impious ministers. Those of the clergy who refused to conform, abandoned their cures, and no reformed ministers could be found to supply their places, the people were consequently left without religious worship or in-



struction, and the churches fell to ruin in many places. Even in places more civilized, the recently made statutes were evaded and neglected with impunity, while the ignorant were assiduously taught to despise and abhor a government which they heard consigned to all the terrors of divine vengeance: They were vehemently exhorted to stand prepared for a glorious opportunity of asserting the cause of religion whose authority had been profaned, and they were encouraged by assurances of support in their resistance, both from the pope and also the king of Spain, who was highly offended with Elizabeth.

The reluctance with which the late statutes were received, and the indulgence which Elizabeth, notwithstanding her spirit and firmness, was obliged to manifest towards her Irish subjects at this time, is evidenced in the following letter to the privy council. “And whereas by other your letters of the second of September, ye declare, that by reason of the absence of sundry of the chapter of Armagh, the dean there cannot conveniently proceed to the election of Mr. Adam Softhowse to that archbishopricke according to the aucthority lately received from us, and for supplie thereof, doo devise to make unto hym in the mean season, a commission for the ordering of ecclesiastical causes within that diocese; moving further, that the rents growing out of the possessions of that archbishopricke might be bestowed upon hym by warrant from us, and the same to be holden without accompte from the date of our letters of nomination. We do very well allow your said devise, and doo gyve aucthority unto youe, oure said deputy chancellor, and everie other our officers to whom it shall appertaine as well to make out under our great seale, and otherwise as the case may move, and as many

writings as shall be conveniente for the performance thereof towards hym, as alsoe to give due allowance of the saide revenues by way of accompte as of money by us speciallie granted unto hym, by warrante hereof, and so to continue until he may receive his establishment in the bishopricke by such ordinary means, as in semblable cases has been accustomed." It would appear from this document, that the statute for abolishing the writ of Congé d'Elire was either already forgotten, or that it was not intended to be executed strictly and generally. That these epochs marked the progress of thought in the eternal career of time is a truth, the student of history will not question; the reformation was doubtless an era of inquiry, and of that enlightened conviction, which sincere inquiry produces.

Though the catholic faith adapting itself as it does to the senses, and enjoining various ceremonious observances, is calculated to fix the mind, and exalt the imagination more than the reformed which is more spiritual, and resting upon internal belief, yet the proportion of zeal as well as, undoubtedly, of knowledge, during the first ages of the reformation, was on the side of the protestants; they united a lively faith with a keen spirit of enquiry, their belief was invigorated by their reason, and their reason expanded under the influence of their belief, each giving a salutary impulse to the other. "Examination," says an eminent writer and deep investigator of human nature, "may weaken that habitual faith which men do well to preserve as much as they can, but when man comes out of his enquiries more religious than when he entered into them, it is then religion is built upon an immutable basis, it is then that harmony exists between her and knowledge, and that they mutually assist

each other." The intelligent mind will readily apply this to that examination which has truth for its object, and seeks for it in the sacred page unadulterated with the jarring opinions of men. But it is to be feared that borrowed convictions too often satisfy the mind, which is too indolent to search sincerely in that mine where alone the jewel is found in genuine lustre. It was internal conviction which was the aim and pursuit of the reformers, the religion from which they endeavoured to emancipate themselves and their fellow-men was become little more than a political power, devoted to, and resting in temporal interests. Ignorance, secrecy, and darkness, were its ministering spirits, the human mind was fettered by its essential principles, and in order to support its power, it encouraged men supinely to rest in external rites, absurd ceremonies, and unmeaning forms, to which the mass of the people were incapable of affixing any definite ideas.\*

To follow the detail of our history through the difficulties which during eleven years Sir Henry Sydney, one of the most active governors which Ireland had enjoyed for a long period had to struggle with, in repressing the disorders which agitated the kingdom, would lead us too far from our subject. It must suffice to say, in order to preserve the thread of our retrospect, that the Earl of Desmond, in 1569, gave him great disturbance from the hereditary animosity prevailing between this haughty chief and the Earl of Ormond, descended from the only family which had undeviatingly preserved its fidelity to the

\* Hence, when we reflect upon the extreme ignorance of the Irish, and the violence of their passions we must cease

to be surprised at the opposition they made to a religion of *thought*.

crown. The war between these chiefs ended in the defeat of Desmond, who was wounded and taken prisoner. His bitter enmity to his adversary, or rather the hereditary hatred of his family was evinced at the moment when the Ormondians conveyed him wounded from the field of warfare stretched on a bier. His supporters exclaimed with a triumph well suited to their barbarous ignorance, "Where is now the great Earl of Desmond!" "Where, but in his proper place? still upon the necks of the Butlers," was the spirited reply of the chief, who in the language of the queen's letters, "had not been brought up where law and justice had been frequented." This and other similar contests and disaffection continued to harass the country, till Sydney in the midst of faction and discontent obeyed the mandate of his royal mistress, and convened a parliament, in order to make the necessary provisions both for the civil and ecclesiastical reformation of the kingdom. Public peace and tranquillity are so inseparably connected with the interests of the crown, that to support the one, the welfare of the other must be favoured. But the numerous party of the enemies of the reformed religion, actuated by various motives very distinct from religious zeal, attended parliament with a determined resolution to oppose every measure emanating from the throne; Sydney was well aware of their secret practices long continued, and the disaffection of many was glaring; these intentions, therefore, were foreseen, and every effort had been made to strengthen the interest of administration, even to the committing of great irregularities in the elections and returns of the commons; numbers of Englishmen having been elected and returned as burgesses for towns, which they had never seen or known, much less been residents of as directed

by law. Four days passed in clamourous altercation, the discontented members violently refusing to receive any bill or proceed to any business. The lord deputy was informed by the speaker of the objections, the judges were consulted, at length the opposing party were reluctantly obliged to concede, but determined to oppose most decidedly every measure of those they called the English and court faction. And in fact, so violent was the flame, and so great the confusion, that the assembly was obliged to be adjourned, till the violence of the contending parties was in some degree allayed. In a few days, by the aid of some temperate advisers, they consented to resume their places, and enter upon public business. The most remarkable provision made by this parliament in respect to religion, was that whereby the governor was authorised to present to the dignities of Munster and Connaught for ten years, in consequence of the abuses observed to have taken place in those provinces; "in admitting unworthy persons to ecclesiastical dignities without lawfulness of birth, learning, English habit, or English language, descended of unchaste and unmarried abbots, priests, deans, and chaunters, and obtaining their dignities by force, simony, or other corrupt means."

Among the bills transmitted under the great seal of England previous to the convention of this parliament, we find one for the reparation of parochial churches, and one for the erection of free schools. The latter was not obtained till the fifth session, and the former was either not received or rejected, a proof of the strength of prejudice yet existing, and the determined opposition to the propagation of the reformed religion. This parliament also passed an act of attainder against the turbulent and haughty chieftain John O'Nial,



ordaining that the name of the O'Nial, with all the ceremonies of his creation shall be extinguished and abolished, and that whoever shall assume the title, shall suffer the penalties of high treason. It declares Ulster to be exempt from the rule and authority of O'Nial, and vests the lands for ever in the crown, with a particular provision for a branch, in consequence of dutiful submission. By this attainder a large part of Ulster was vested in the queen, to be by her disposed of, as it should be deemed most conducive to the interest and security of her government. But although thus declared to be forfeited to the crown, no immediate seizure was made of the lands, the Irish being still permitted to enjoy them, without duty or acknowledgment, even the abbey lands and houses were possessed by the clergy, and three northern bishoprics, those of Clogher, Derry, and Raphoe, were still granted by the pope without controul. This is not the only defect in the execution of the laws which occur in the history of Ireland, which perhaps may not be so much attributed to the want of attention and vigour in the government, as to the commotions continually agitating the country preventing its being reduced to that degree of civility and national polity, which from the long period which it had been subjected to English power, might lead us to imagine it would.

The natives having been injudiciously excluded with contemptuous insolence from every situation of trust and honour, it was natural for them not to be well affected towards a government which thus regarded them as aliens and enemies. It was also perfectly natural that they should regard with jealousy and hatred those English adventurers who thus treated them. What now added to the prejudices of the people, was also

the circumstance of the pope having fulminated his sentence of excommunication against Elizabeth, whom the ignorant, in consequence, readily regarded as an usurper, deposed by her spiritual sovereign, and consigned by him to perdition; and it would appear, that the malignant operation of these prejudices was not counteracted by any equitable and conciliating measures on the part of those entrusted with the inferior offices of government. During a series of years, nothing but commotion and rebellion occupies the page of Irish history; and it appears to have been an unhappy and dangerous expedient of Sir John Perrot, when he, in 1585, during the period he administered the government, put arms into the hands of the Irish inhabitants of Ulster, in order to enable them, without the aid of government, to repress the incursions of the Scottish invaders, by which those parts were much infested. At the same time, the invitations of the King of Spain, joined to their religious zeal, engaged many of the Irish to serve in the Low Country wars, and thus Ireland, being provided both with officers and soldiers, disciplined and armed, became formidable to the English, as she was able to maintain a more regular warfare against her ancient foes. Sir John Perrot was a severe, spirited, and vigorous officer; he was supposed to be the natural son of Henry VIII., and inherited a full portion of the pride, fire, and inflexibility of his reputed royal father. He subdued the rebels, and so effectually suppressed commotions, that projects were formed in England for the improvement of the state of Ireland, and more especially for establishing a plantation of English settlers in those parts of Ulster which had been forfeited to the crown. One colony was transported with the fairest hopes of success,

which, however, were soon blasted, by the assassination of the principal colonists, through the treachery of one of the O'Nials. The next adventurer was Walter Devereux, lately created Earl of Essex, who tendered his services for reducing the district of Clan-hu-boy, in Ulster. With ardent expectation, and sanguine in his hopes, Essex mortgaged his estate to the queen for ten thousand pounds, in order to carry into effect the purposes of his expedition. Several Englishmen of distinction imbibed his ardour, and determined to accompany him. But jealousy of his independent authority created him enemies from the moment of his arrival, as it had also operated in encouraging him to the enterprise, for his enemies at the English court, especially Leicester, were glad of the opportunity of removing him. Disappointment, difficulty, and distress attended Essex throughout; his friends forsook him, and he himself died of a distemper, occasioned, it was supposed, by vexation and disappointment in an enterprise of which he had formed such sanguine hopes.

During the progress of these events, the lord deputy Fitzwilliam intercepted by his vigilance letters from Rome, addressed to the Irish natives, wherein the pope earnestly exhorted them to persevere in their opposition to the queen's government, with assurance of being supplied with money and troops, and promise of absolution to themselves and posterity to the third generation. Thus was the flame continually fanned by the insidious practices of a power which felt its empire tottering. In the mean time, Elizabeth was obliged to make many concessions, as her foreign enemies created apprehensions. The mutual jealousies and suspicions between her and the King of Spain, in consequence of the assistance she

gave to the Netherlands, had nearly arisen to a confirmed enmity, and the confused and turbulent situation of Ireland pointed out to Philip an obvious method of retaliation, that of fomenting and aiding the insurrectionary spirit in that kingdom. At Rome, the heretical Elizabeth was regarded with horror and detestation, and every desperate fugitive, who could suggest any scheme of annoying her, was there received with favour. Such an adventurer was Thomas Stukely, an Englishman, whose nefarious conduct during the reign of Edward VI. had rendered him obnoxious to the laws, and he fled to Ireland. His enterprise and plausibility elevated him there to some notice, and he even succeeded in ingratiating himself with Sir Henry Sydney; but disappointed in some ambitious plan he had formed, he passed over to the continent with his heart filled with aversion to the English government, and hatred to the queen. At Rome these feelings assured him a favourable reception; he was caressed by the Irish ecclesiastics, and by them introduced to his holiness, as a warm and distinguished friend to the Irish Catholic cause. Stukely magnified to the pope the strength and determined spirit of the Catholics in Ireland, and engaged with the aid of three thousand Italians to exterminate the English from the country. By his address and insinuation, he gained great credit with Gregory XIII. and flattered him with the prospect of making his nephew, Buon Compagno, King of Ireland, which he represented as being so certain, that he even accepted the title of Marquis of Leinster from the sovereign elect. The pope delighted with the overture, practised with Spain; Philip listened to the representations of Stukely, desiring to employ him against Elizabeth. A body of eight hundred Italians

was raised for the service, which Philip engaged to pay, and Stukely, their leader, embarked on his adventure, laden with honours by the pope and the Spanish monarch.\*

About the same time, there was another fugitive, an Irishman, who threatened the country with invasion, as a tool of the Romanists. This was James Fitz Maurice, whose turbulence had been reduced by Sir John Perrot, but had obtained the queen's pardon, together with the Butlers, brothers of the Duke of Ormond. The haughty and revengeful Fitz Maurice, unmoved by the lenity shown him, had retired to the continent, eager to create new disorders, and to satisfy his deep hatred of Elizabeth. He applied repeatedly to the King of France, representing the invasion of Ireland as easy ; but after two years' unsuccessful application, he was dismissed from the French court. He proceeded to Spain, where he was received with more attention. Philip dispatched him to the pope, who was readily prevailed on by Saunders, an English ecclesiastic, and Allen, an Irish priest, to favour the design of an invasion. A bull was prepared, addressed to the prelates, princes, nobles, and people of Ireland, exhorting them by the authority of the holy see to aid and assist Fitz Maurice, for the recovery of their liberty, and the defence of the holy church, and promising to all his adherents the same spiritual indulgences granted to those who fought against the infidels. A banner was solemnly consecrated, and delivered to Fitz Maurice, as a champion of the faith ; and as Saunders and Allen both consented to accompany him, the

\* Was this Stukely any connection of the infamous individual of the same name who

so treacherously betrayed Sir Walter Raleigh?



former was invested with the dignity of legate. Strengthened with the authority and benediction of the holy father, and supplied with money sent by Philip, the *crusaders* were ready for their expedition.

Elizabeth, whose vigilance and that of her ministers never slumbered, was soon informed of these schemes, and took her measures to defeat their accomplishment. But in respect to the first adventurer, Stukely, her apprehensions were soon dispelled; he had embarked, and arrived at the mouth of the Tagus, just at the time of Don Sebastian's romantic expedition against the Moors. On explaining the object of *his* expedition, Stukely was prevailed on by Sebastian to accompany him to Africa, promising on his return to join the Irish expedition. Philip, by this time aware of the self-interested policy of the pope, consented to this diversion of the troops. Stukely and his Italians accompanied the gallant Sebastian, and had the honour of falling with him.

The death of the Portuguese monarch diverted Philip from his design against Elizabeth, to the conquest of Portugal, and the fears of foreign invasion no longer agitated the Irish government. But Philip, though he had relinquished the thought of making a conquest of Ireland, was yet determined to encourage a spirit of rebellion among her subjects. He therefore so far encouraged Fitz Maurice, that he obtained a troop of Spaniards; some English and Irish fugitives joined him also, and in full expectation of the glad co-operation of his countrymen, he embarked his feeble force in three ships, and landed in Kerry, at a bay called Smerwick. The ecclesiastics, Saunders and Allen, solemnly hallowed the place, assuring the invaders of success and victory in the glorious cause of the church. An inauspicious

incident however occurred at the first moment of their enterprise: a ship of war, apprised of their arrival, doubled a point of land, and cut off their transports, thus depriving them of all power of retreat. As their arrival was not unexpected, John and James, brothers of the Earl of Desmond, joined them with their followers. The earl himself, although equally ready, thought it best to act with caution and reserve, and in the meanwhile pretended to assemble his forces for the service of government, even carrying his duplicity so far as to summon the Earl of Clancarthy to his assistance for that avowed purpose; Clancarthy, however, soon perceived his insincerity, and retired.

The invaders were little satisfied with this dissimulation; they had expected an open declaration in their favour, and Fitz Maurice could not suppress his feelings at a disappointment so fatal to his cause. The foreigners grew discontented with the coldness and apathy of Desmond, and were impatient for the arrival of that vast concourse of disaffected Irish, which they were assured would immediately join their standard. Fitz Maurice, as well as possible dissembling his mortification and chagrin, persuaded his troops to maintain their station, with firm assurances of being supported, while he himself made a journey to a favourite seat of Irish devotion, called the Holy Cross of Tipperary, in order to perform a vow he had made in Spain. Under this pretence, so calculated to awaken the superstitious reverence of his followers, and to make them patiently await the result of such a meritorious service; Fitz Maurice politically concealed his design of enticing, by his personal persuasion, the disaffected of Connaught and Ulster to unite with him. But his visit to the shrine was fated

to be the concluding scene of his life. A violent altercation ensued between him and a son of Sir William de Burgho, whom he had endeavoured to win over to rebellion, and in a skirmish which ensued, each fell by the hand of his antagonist. In the mean time, Sir William Drury, the governor, collected as good a force as he was able, and even the deceitful Desmond attended his summons with a well appointed troop; his duplicity, however, was suspected, and he was imprisoned; but making the most solemn protestations of fidelity, he was freed, and retired from the camp, refusing to attend the deputy; although he still continued to profess an attachment to the crown. The Spaniards now found their disappointment of a general rising of the southern provinces, aggravated by the death of their leader. They were cut off from escape by sea, and were to be encountered by the united forces of the state. They had no alternative but to submit to the command of Sir John Desmond. They quitted their station at Smerwick, and adopted the desultory mode of Irish warfare, by which the deputy's forces were obliged to pursue them into their concealed haunts. Many weeks passed in this fatiguing and hazardous service, during which the invaders gained some advantages, and their numbers augmented. The ecclesiastics were assiduously employed in preaching the glorious cause of the church. The pope by a new bull invested Sir John Desmond with the plenitude of his authority, and renewed his indulgences profusely to all those who should assist the cause. The health of the lord deputy being unequal to the military fatigue, the command of the army was given to Sir Nicholas Malby, who receiving intelligence that the rebels were near Limerick,

determined to attack them. In a plain adjoining an abbey, called Monaster Neva, he found them in array, about two thousand strong, prepared to give him battle. Every expedient had been resorted to, to exalt the enthusiasm of the troops. The papal standard was displayed, and Allen the Irish Jesuit passed solemnly through the ranks, distributing his benedictions, and assuring them of victory in the field, and heaven in reversion. Under the direction of Spanish officers, the dispositions of the troops were made with more regularity than was usual to the Irish, and the attack was vigorous and well maintained. Victory long remained doubtful, but the English at length prevailed. The rebels were routed with considerable slaughter, and among the slain was found the body of Allen, who had drawn the sword in the cause of Rome, as well as exhorted others to fight for it. After a series of base duplicity, to which he appears in some degree to have been instigated by Saunders, and other Romish agents, the infatuated Earl of Desmond avowed his traitorous designs.

To trace the wretchedness which he brought upon himself and his family by his disaffection, and to detail the calamities of the war which his rebellion protracted, is not the plan of our work : it must be sufficient to say, that the cruelties practised and encouraged are horrid in detail, and disgraceful to humanity. Repeated complaints were made to the queen of the rigour practised by Arthur Lord Grey, the governor, and his officers. She was assured that he tyrannised with such barbarity, that little was left in Ireland for her majesty to reign over but ashes and carcases. These representations were followed by an offer of pardon to those rebels who would accept it.

Grey was recalled, and Loftus, Archbishop of Dublin, and Sir Henry Wallop, treasurer at war, were appointed lords justices.

As an instance of the severities practised against the Irish at this period, we find O'Sullivan Beare, one of the bravest and noblest chiefs of Kerry, and lord of part of Killarney, in writing to the Spanish minister an account of his sufferings, urges him to the speedy sending of a ship to receive him, his wife, and children, to save him from the hands of their most merciless enemies: "Making choice," he pathetically adds, "rather to forsake my ancient inheritance, friends, followers, and goods, than any way trust to their graceless pardon or promises."

The government of an ecclesiastic seemed rather incompatible with a state of war and commotion, but, in fact, the elements of contention were nearly exhausted. Saunders, the fiery incendiary of the south, completely worn out with the effects of want and toil he had endured, died in a miserable retreat, so solitary and remote, that his remains were not discovered and interred, until they had been mangled by beasts. The end of the desperate and unhappy Desmond was yet more affecting. He had not been received into the granted pardon, although he entreated for mercy, but was hunted from one retreat to another, (it being the great object of the English commanders to seize him.) He was frequently in the most imminent danger of being taken, although disguised among the meanest of his followers, lurking with them in the woods and bogs, and depending upon them for the bare support of nature; one of his captains actually lost his life in endeavouring to support his master. After this in an extreme of necessity, two horsemen and a few huns ventured to seize some cattle for his sub-



sistence. The owner, indignant at the violence, made it known, and a few soldiers of an English garrison engaged to reclaim the booty. They arrived in their pursuit at the opening of a valley in which was a small grove, and fatigued with their chase, they determined to repose in this favourable spot. While doing this, they observed a light at a distance ; their leader, Kelly, of Monerta, a man of Irish race, ordered one of his men to advance cautiously to the spot, to find how many of the rebels were posted, (for he concluded the light proceeded from a party of them.) The man obeyed his orders, and discovered it to issue from a miserable hut, in which he discovered six persons ; he informed Kelly, who with his party rushed forward, but on entering the hut, found that the rebels had fled at his approach, except one man of venerable aspect, stretched languidly before a few lighted embers. The furious leader assailed and wounded the unarmed man, who exclaimed, " Spare me, for I am the Earl of Desmond." Kelly exultingly smote off his head, and brought it to the Earl of Ormond, by whom it was conveyed to the queen, and impaled on London Bridge. " Thus," says Leland, " was a family extinguished, which had flourished for four centuries in rude splendour and magnificence, and had frequently proved too powerful to be governed." The pride of this last Desmond, inflamed by bigoted ecclesiastics, met its punishment in those distresses in which he involved himself by his insurrection. Without being able to serve the cause he espoused, his misfortunes began with rebellion, and his affecting death closed the scene of his infatuation. His domains were now, of course, forfeited to Elizabeth, to be appropriated by her as should be most expedient for the reformation of her

Irish dominions. Two ecclesiastics, agents of the earl in Spain, arrived with arms and ammunition to support his rebellion, just at the time when the fatal catastrophe occurred. They learnt the sad intelligence and precipitately retired.

We should be happy to be able to say, that the suppression of disorders in Ireland, which gave a fair occasion for regulating the country upon a generous and enlightened policy, was most improved for that purpose, but a cruel and odious jealousy appears to have pervaded the English councils, urging them to oppose every improvement with reference to Ireland. In these ungenerous sentiments, however, Sir Henry Sydney and Sir John Perrot had no part, but on the contrary, considered with just indignation the cruelty of this horrid policy. All, however, concurred in the necessity of an active and prudent government, and Sir John Perrot was appointed. He assumed the administration at a time when the spirit of insurrection seemed extinct, the last remaining rebel of any consequence having retired to Spain.

The first act of his power was the publication of a general amnesty to all who should return to their allegiance. The son of the deceased Earl of Desmond, who had been delivered up to the deputy, he sent to England to be educated so as to render him worthy of any favours the royal bounty might think it right to bestow. Sir John was highly successful in his negotiations with the Irish chieftains, and in promoting the general tranquillity. Such was the activity and intelligence of this able governor, that he formed the most extensive and comprehensive plans for the improvement and reformation of Ireland. But he could not engage either the crown or legisla-

ture of England, to forward his patriotic views. For alarmed by intestine dangers, and apprehensions of foreign invasions, Elizabeth was impatient of her Irish expenses, and instead of augmenting them, expected Ireland to supply her with forces for the Low Countries. Therefore with many common-place commendations of his good services, the active and enlightened deputy was left to the ordinary course of administration.

In 1585, he convened a parliament at Dublin. Among the spiritual lords, were the Bishops of Clogher and Raphoe, two sees which never were bestowed by Elizabeth; though the fact is trifling, it marks the progress of reformation. Indeed it appears to have been the laudable and generous pride of Sir John Perrot to prevail on the old Irish leaders to exchange their savage state for the condition of English subjects. Accordingly we find among the temporal barons of this parliament the old chieftain of Tirone, Tirlaugh Lyrnagh. The old man, encumbered in his English costume, expressed with pleasing simplicity his consciousness of being open to ridicule, "Prithee, my lord," he said to the lord deputy, "let my chaplain attend me in his Irish mantle, thus shall your English rabble be diverted from my uncouth figure, and laugh at him." Soon after the prorogation of this parliament, Sir John Perrot received intelligence that schemes were forming by the popish clergy to introduce a foreign army into Ulster, and that an incipient dangerous faction appeared in that district, fomented by the sons of the late John O'Nial, who were preparing to assert their independence of the English government. Perfectly knowing the inconstancy of the Irish, aware how easily their bigotry might be affected by the artful, he immediately marched into Ulster, to prevent the insurrection from sub-

verting the arrangements he had established therein. He succeeded in his intentions, and returned to Dublin to resume his active cares for the settlement and reformation of the kingdom.

But neither merit nor success could guard this patriotic governor from the attacks of malice, envy, and discontent. The attention he invariably gave to the rights of the old native Irish, and to correct those abuses of government that affected them, created a number of secret enemies, and an occasion soon occurred for a display of the latent enmity. The establishment of an university at Dublin was now become a favourite object of government, and Perrot had projected the design of dissolving the cathedral of St. Patrick, and converting its revenues to the proposed plan. But by this measure he kindled the implacable hatred of Loftus, Archbishop of Dublin, and Chancellor of Ireland, whose interest would, of course, be greatly affected by the fulfilment of the design. His enemies represented him in the most false and opprobrious terms to the queen, who too readily gave credence to the calumnies reported. A person was sent from England as a sort of spy upon the conduct of Perrot, and by the instructions which he brought, it was evident that Elizabeth had an unfavourable opinion of the administration of her lord deputy. Mortified at this unworthy idea of him, Perrot wrote to the queen, humbly requesting to be allowed personally to justify his conduct. It does not appear that the queen complied, but he remained in his government, which he continued to administer with fidelity and zeal. Elizabeth renewed her favourite scheme of re-peopling Munster with an English colony; and every enticement was offered, and many English gentlemen of distinction received grants of different portions, but

those grants, by the injudicious and in many instances unjust modes of settlement, contributed to the subsequent disorders into which the kingdom was plunged, rather than served to tranquillize and settle it.

The rebellion of the de Burghos soon after followed, occasioned by the endeavours of Sir John Bingham, to repress the tyranny of the haughty chiefs over their vassals. The great Irish lords, although they formally acknowledged an allegiance to the crown, were still proudly conscious of their ancient independence, and upon the least appearance of weakness in the government, were ready to prove their abhorrence of it. The turbulence of their spirits, and the animation of their hopes were incessantly augmented by the popish ecclesiastics, who at this period, more especially elevated their expectations by intelligence of the vast and terrible preparations of Spain, to annihilate England by an irresistible invasion, and they were encouraged to regard Philip as their patron and deliverer, should they hold themselves ready for the fair occasion of asserting the glorious cause of religion, and their own emancipation, from the bondage of heretics. Among these great lords, Hugh O'Nial, nephew of Shane O'Nial, had acquired weight and consequence by the favours he had received from government. He had entered early into the service of the English, and possessed a vigour of constitution which well fitted him for a military life. In the rebellion of Desmond, he had acquired honour by his activity and valour. By his constant intercourse with the English, he had added a great degree of polish to a temper and manners naturally subtile and insinuating, a refinement he well dissembled before his own people, but which he as well knew how to bring into play when it favoured his designs.



He had petitioned that by virtue of the grant to his grandfather, Earl Conn, he might be admitted to the place and title of Earl of Tirowen, as well as the annexed inheritance. He so far prevailed by his insinuating manners with Sir John Perrot that he sent him into England, that he might himself prefer his petition to the queen. There is an intuitive penetration possessed by some individuals which admirably aids their designs and views. It would appear that O'Nial was fully imbued with this acuteness, combined with his accommodating spirit which fitted itself with facility to the "times that be." All his powers of obsequiousness and flattery were lavished on the maiden queen, whose vanity he raised, so as to sun into vigour the hopes he had formed. With a well feigned ingenuousness, he lamented the unnatural reluctance of his countrymen to order and civility, their national prepossessions, and concluded many similar arguments, by imploring her majesty to take effectual measures for suppressing the name of O'Nial as the most essential step to break the prejudices of those of his own district, and opening to them the blessings of English laws and English manners. His artifice entirely succeeded even with the acute Elizabeth, so apt is vanity to cloud the most correct judgment. She granted to the insinuating petitioner the earldom and the inheritance annexed to it, without any reservation of rent. Hugh returned triumphantly to Ireland. In Tirowen he was regarded as a high favourite of Elizabeth, as he took care to recount the graces he had received, well aware, that in the eyes of his rude followers the circumstance would highly exalt him. Government found it necessary to look to him for assistance against the disaffected of his province, and he, under the fair semblance of at-

tachment to the crown, well knew how to increase his power and consequence. He insidiously proposed to keep six companies constantly in readiness to encounter any insurgents who might disturb the northern provinces. His proposal was in full faith of his loyalty accepted, and by artfully changing these men, he soon trained to arms a considerable force, while at the same time under pretence of building a mansion, he collected a great quantity of lead in readiness for military service. In the mean time, on the defeat of the Spanish armada seventeen ships containing a force of upward of four thousand men were driven on the coasts of Ireland. They were received by the Irish as allies and kinsmen. The Spaniards on their part listened with interest to the account of their hospitable entertainers of their oppressions, and desire to throw off the English yoke. They were encouraged in these sentiments of independence, the greatness and goodness of the Spanish monarch was dilated upon, and above all his unwearied zeal in the Catholic cause, which united him in the bonds of fraternal affection to all true sons of the holy church. From him, it was added, the faithful Irish catholics might be assured of receiving protection and support, and they were exhorted to persevere in their laudable disaffection to an heretical government.

The Earl of Tirowen was suspected of having entered into a formal treaty with the Spaniards, and concerting dangerous schemes for effecting a future invasion. These suspicions were in a degree confirmed by subsequent reports conveyed to the lord deputy, that treasures and stores of various kinds had been brought by the Spaniards into Ireland, and were secreted in the places where they had been received. Fitzwilliam the then governor, issued a commission for searching

and securing this treasure for the queen, his commission proved ineffectual, as did his individual search, no treasure was to be found, but it was represented that the father-in-law of the Earl of Tirowen, and Sir John O'Dougherty had possessed themselves of it. Fitzwilliam had them seized, and without any proof they were committed to the castle of Dublin; the first was not enlarged till the severities of his confinement reduced him to the verge of the grave, the other, after a lapse of two years, purchased his emancipation by a considerable douceur. This ill-judged and arbitrary exercise of power towards two individuals who were well affected to government, who had rendered it much service, and were revered by their countrymen, created a great sensation and much dissatisfaction. Many of the disaffected became more inveterate, while those that had submitted repented having done so.

The Earl of Tirowen, whose consciousness might increase his alarm, determined to withdraw himself from the apprehended violence of Fitzwilliam, and with his usual affectation of loyalty and submission, hastened to cast himself at the feet of Elizabeth to renew his assurances of fidelity. As he had departed without licence from the deputy, his liberty was for a time restrained but his humble submissions soon obtained for him the royal pardon, and he was admitted before the privy council to give such assurances of his future loyalty as should be demanded. Among the numerous articles to which he agreed, were "to hold no correspondence with foreign traitors, to maintain no monks nor friars, not to meddle with spiritual livings." He readily acquiesced in these and a number of other restraints, and the Earl of Ormond and Sir Christopher Hatton were his sureties for the performance. This accommo-

dation was scarcely effected, when the sons of John O'Nial envying the power of Tirowen, boldly attempted to effect his ruin. One of these chiefs repaired to the court of Elizabeth, and there charged the earl with traitorous designs, and with having entered into secret negotiations with Spain. Tirowen affected to treat these accusations with contempt, referring them artfully to the revenge of his accuser, observing that it was natural that he who had advised the total suppression of the name of O'Nial should never be forgiven by that haughty sept. The accuser was neglected in consequence of this artful insinuation, and Tirowen permitted to return to Ireland. Here he artfully evaded the execution of his indentures, pleading that as the neighbouring lords were engaged in them equally with himself, he was ready when they were to fulfil his engagements, but for him to execute them while they continued free, would only expose himself to their depredations, and deprive him of the power of defence. Actuated by that restless spirit which urged him to every mode whereby the English government might be weakened and overturned, this insidious chieftain secretly fomented the discontents of several septs, while with his usual duplicity he professed the greatest attachment to the queen's authority, and to give his professions a greater air of sincerity even admitted his country to be formed into a shire and divided into baronies after the English model, and for a time some degree of tranquillity existed in the country. This period was distinguished by an event which was fraught with salutary consequences to Ireland, opening to it a source of refinement and civility, bringing it in some degree upon a level with other nations in intellectual acquirements and improvements. It was the foundation of the University of Dublin.

So early as 1311, an attempt to establish an academical society had been made by an archbishop of Dublin, who had procured a bull from Rome for the erection of a university, but the plan ended with the life of the projector. We have already adverted to a similar attempt made by Archbishop Bricknor in the reign of Edward the second, which was supported with great difficulty for the term of thirty-eight years. In the reign of Edward the fourth, it was enacted by an Irish parliament, [1465.] that a university should be erected at Drogheda, but this act like many others of the Irish legislature became a dead letter, being totally disregarded in the tumult of civil war. From the very infancy of the reformation so great was the difficulty of finding pastors, so supine the negligence of the governors in regard to religious affairs, and so determined the opposition against any attempt to provide for the instruction of the people, and the establishment of the reformed faith and worship, that the church of Ireland was gradually reduced almost to a state of desolation. Under these circumstances, men who seriously and sincerely desired the good of their country, so essentially connected with the well being of the church, could not but direct their thoughts towards the most effectual means of remedying so great an evil. It is obvious, that to render the streams salutary, the fountain must be purified, it was also necessary that those who thirsted should not be far from the waters of refreshment; but to quit metaphor, the most effectual and natural means of disseminating and providing for national instruction, was certainly to qualify some of the inhabitants to become ministers of the gospel, so as not to depend upon the precarious supply from other countries. Every one who thought upon the subject, and it



was a period of thought and examination in theological subjects, felt the conviction that the spiritual wants of Ireland were great and pressing, calling for special provision and assistance, and that the only adequate and appropriate provision for the supply of the remedies for the diseased moral sense of the community, was the establishment of an institution on the spot in which natives might be prepared for the important work of the ministry, among a population deeply tainted with the false principles of religion. In proportion as the English power became more extended and more firmly grounded in Ireland, these necessities became apparent, to which the impulse which had been given to the thinking faculties of mankind of course gave additional force. In the parliament of 1569, it was moved to re-establish the university once erected in the church of St. Patrick, and to support it by voluntary contributions. Sir Henry Sydney who was a man of exemplary piety, and sincerely zealous for the reformation, greatly favoured the design, and offered ample assistance, but either from the public disorders then existing, or the want of funds, the design was not prosecuted. The patriotic and enterprising Sir John Perrot was the promoter of the next attempt. It was his purpose to erect two colleges both in Dublin, on the dissolution of the cathedral of St. Patrick. He proposed to convert the building into courts of law, and to appropriate part of the annual revenues as an endowment for each seminary, the residue to be employed in reparation of the church, or augmentation of the revenues of the other cathedral. This scheme was violently opposed by Loftus archbishop of Dublin, whose interests it too nearly affected. Two high spirits thus encountering each other, produced a bitter animosity, but the

prelate determined to prove that although he disapproved the particular scheme of Perrot, yet that he was a zealous friend to the establishment of a seminary of learning in the kingdom, suggested that the monastery of All Hallows would be a proper situation for the purpose. This monastery had been erected by Dermot Mac Murchad, king of Leinster, in the neighbourhood of Dublin, and on the dissolution of religious houses, the scite had been vested in the mayor and citizens of Dublin. When therefore Perrot was recalled from his government, the prelate applied himself to these proprietors with zeal and assiduity. In two elaborate speeches he informed them it was the queen's gracious intention to erect a university of good literature in Ireland, he expatiated eloquently on the high advantages they could not fail to derive from such an institution in their vicinity, and exhorted them to grant the ground for the laudable purpose. "An act," added the prelate, "of good acceptance with God, of great reward hereafter, and of honour and advantage to yourselves, and more to your learned offspring in the future, where by the help of learning, they may build your families some stories higher than they are by their advancement either in the church or commonwealth." The prelate certainly proved his knowledge of human nature in thus bringing to his aid that ambition so natural to parents; that their offspring should be eminent. Men who have raised themselves either by genius or industry to a state of opulence, seldom desire that their sons should tread the same path, but that they should be provided with distinguished situations in the state, the church, or in the army, and under the fair plea of duty to provide for their children, eagerly embrace the most remote means of pushing their fortunes. Whether the good

citizens of Dublin shared in these parental prospects of eminence for their children or not, it is immaterial to ascertain, suffice it to say the archbishop's eloquence prevailed, the proposal was embraced, and the monastery with its precincts freely granted. Elizabeth was then solicited for her royal charter, and a mortmain licence for the land granted by the city. The two agents of this solicitation were Henry Usher, and Lucas Challoner, destined to be members of the new institution. They soon returned with a warrant for a licence to pass the seals, dated December 29, 1591, for the incorporation of an university, with a power of holding the granted lands, and others that might be obtained to the amount of four hundred pounds annual value. This was succeeded by a regular charter, by which the college was erected as mother of a university, by the style of the college of the Holy and Undivided Trinity of Queen Elizabeth, near Dublin, to consist of a provost, (Adam Loftus, archbishop of Dublin,) three fellows in the name of more, three scholars also in the name of more, Cecil Lord Burleigh was named in the charter first chancellor, and all future elections to this office vested in the provost and fellows. The fellows were empowered to elect their provost, who was to hold his station for seven years only; and it was provided that the society was to be visited by the Archbishop of Dublin, Bishop of Meath, vice treasurer, treasurer at war, chief justice and mayor of Dublin. A fund was now to be provided for buildings and other charges attending this infant society. Accordingly, March, 1591, the lord deputy Fitzwilliam and the privy council, issued a circular to the principal gentlemen of every barony in the kingdom soliciting their aid, and although the design had to struggle with the po-

verty of the kingdom, and the great reluctance of the popish party, yet the first stone of the buildings was speedily laid, and in January, 1593, the students were admitted.

The oppressions of the times and the frustration of its grants by the wars of Ulster, threatened the dissolution of the institution. It languished in weakness for some time, but by the bounty and care of its royal patroness, and some efficient friends, it was at length enabled to strike its roots securely amidst the storms that assailed it, and in time rose into consequence and splendour.\* Having thus noticed the formation of the cradle of Irish literature, and her ecclesiastic

\* This college is a most beautiful structure, consisting of two spacious squares, the first of which contains the refectory, the old hall and chapel, and the new theatre for lectures and examinations. The front of two of these buildings is finely decorated with Corinthian columns, supporting pediments; and over the front of the old hall, on the east side of this square rises a handsome steeple crowned with a cupola. In the other square, which consists principally of brick buildings for the students, there is a superb library extending through its whole length on the south side; behind this square there is a walled park. The west side of the first square, which is built with Portland stone, forms the grand front, three hundred feet in length, ornamented with Corinthian pillars, and other decorations, in very fine

taste. At a small distance to the south side of this front is an elegant edifice, where the provost resides. The printing office is a neat structure on the north side of the park; opposite to it is the anatomy house. The college of Dublin is an university in itself, consisting of a provost, vice-provost, seven senior, and fifteen junior fellows, and seventeen scholars of the house. The number of students is generally about four hundred. It has also professors in divinity, common and civil law, physic, Greek, modern languages, mathematics, oriental languages, history and oratory, modern history, natural philosophy, anatomy and surgery, chemistry and botany. His Royal Highness the Duke of Gloucester is chancellor, the Lord Primate of Ireland vice-chancellor.

children, we return to the general retrospect of affairs, as they are more or less connected with the ecclesiastic polity of the country. Although the disaffection and turbulence of the Irish lords certainly received a great accession from being mingled with the bigotry sedulously cherished by Romish emissaries, it is not our intention to dwell upon the acts of violence and revolt they occasioned, or to follow the insidious Tirowen through the mazes of his wily policy, ere he threw off the mask he had so long effectually worn, and thereby deceived even the penetrating Elizabeth. But as his actions greatly affected the general weal of his country, in which was necessarily involved her ecclesiastical progress and state, it is necessary to take a cursory view of them. Cautiously as he had hitherto avoided any premature disclosure of his real sentiments respecting the English government, a period now approached when his interest and security obliged him no longer to dissemble, and Elizabeth was to prove that all her cares to attach him permanently to her interest were abortive. The old chief Tirlaugh, who had so long enjoyed the Irish chieftainry of Tirowen by permission of the state, was approaching to the period of his dissolution. The wily and ambitious Earl was perfectly aware of the importance attached to the succeeding to a title, commanding an habitual reverence and obedience in his country. The sons of John O'Nial, who had been confined in the castle of Dublin, but had effected their escape, were the only rivals to this desired title. He rested not till he secured them in his power, and on the death of the aged chieftain, he assumed the important title of the O'Nial, although it will be recollected that he had solemnly abjured it, and advised its total suppression. With the plausibility which had ever marked his



conduct, he was at no loss for pretences to palliate the daring outrage he had committed, and his own perfidy. He artfully pleaded that he had possessed himself of the chieftainry, to prevent its being assumed by some other of his sept less favourably disposed to the English government than himself, declaring himself ready to resign it whenever a regular course of law and polity should be established in his territory. The government was in too feeble a state to call in question his sincerity, or to refuse admittance to his pleas. Trusting to the oft experienced influence of his deceitful oaths and professions with an affected confidence in the English, he put himself in the power of Sir William Russel, who in 1594, was appointed governor. Russel totally unacquainted with his character, was beguiled by his apparent warmth and sincerity, and contrary to the advice and assurances of his dangerous influence given by Sir Henry Bagnal who knew him better than the new governor, the latter dismissed him, to the utter dissatisfaction of the queen's ministers.

Commotions now filled the north, of which Tirowen was believed to be the secret spring. Determined no longer to rely on the lenity and inexperience of a government he hated and despised, Tirowen now resolved to rise into open rebellion. He entered into correspondence with Spain, and having united all the Irish chieftains in dependance on himself, he justly began to be regarded as a formidable enemy. Thus for years he persevered in a resistance to the government, which the most strenuous and indefatigable efforts of the civil and military governors were inadequate to overcome. Sir John Norris, as eminent for military talent as for the liberality of his sentiments, and the conciliating dispositions of his heart, found it necessary to grant terms to the

rebel, whom he would gladly have brought in bonds to the footstool of his sovereign, whose favours had been so ungratefully and perfidiously requited. At a period when fortune appeared unfavourable to his cause, and his Spanish succours did not appear, Tirowen wrote letters of penitence and submission to the queen, and also the most pathetic addresses to Sir John Norris, lamenting that the cruelty and injustice he had suffered had driven him to extremities, and expressing the most ardent wishes to return to peace and allegiance. So effectually did he plead his own cause, that the queen empowered her officers to grant pardon to all rebels who should with due humility seek her royal mercy. A congress was appointed at Dundalk, where Tirowen renewed his professions, imploring the queen's pardon, (as he expressed it,) "upon the knees of his heart." Other great concessions followed, and peace seemed again in prospect, when the perfidious Tirowen once more plunged into anarchy and revolt, making it appear that his duplicity had been merely to gain time, and to divert his enemies from immediate hostile steps. The hopes of the insurgents were animated, and their submissions entirely forgotten, when three pinnaces from Spain arrived on the northern coasts, with stores, ammunition, and letters from Philip to the Irish chieftains, exhorting them to persevere in their laudable opposition to the heretical English power, and assuring them of immediate support. The turbulent and proud Irish, elated with this intelligence, reproached themselves for their recent concessions, and in proportion to their sense of weakness, felt their present resolutions of opposition increased and invigorated. They quickly circulated the intelligence with eagerness and triumph through

their different septs, and grew impatient of some pretext to violate their treaty. Tirowen, with his accustomed dissimulation, affected to transmit his letter to the lord deputy and council, to demonstrate the sincerity of his submission, but at the very same time he sent his assurances of a speedy invasion to the chieftain O'Birne, and principal insurgents of Leinster, as well as the disaffected in Munster, all of whom were exhorted to assume arms, and unite with their northern countrymen, *for the assistance of Christ's Catholic religion*. Thus this warfare may be regarded, ostensibly at least, a religious one, whatever were the secret and various motives of the promoters of, and actors in it.

For several years the war was protracted by Tirowen's artifices, and the credulity of government; he alternately aggressing and submitting, and the queen listening and pardoning, because she was averse to the expense requisite to make the effectual resistance to the wily rebel.

Sir John Norris at length found that he had been deceived by treacherous promises, and that the Irish field of warfare was not one in which he could either display his military genius, or perform any thing consistent with his ancient reputation. He was further disgusted by being removed from a government, the duties of which he had faithfully fulfilled. Disappointment preyed on the sensibility of this gallant leader and admirable man; and within two months after his removal from his power, he died without apparent malady, one of the many victims to disappointed hopes, and the vicissitudes of state favour.

Lord Burgh, possessing great military abilities, succeeded with full powers civil and military. He determined to admit no conferences, nor listen to any concessions of the insurgents, but resolved

to prosecute them vigorously. He proceeded without delay to do so, and experienced the obstinate resistance of the enemy. He still, however, persevered; but all military operations were suspended by his sudden death. The council on this event committed the government to Sir Thomas Norris, lord president of Munster; but at his own request the queen immediately appointed a new administration. The chief government was committed to Loftus, primate of Dublin, and chancellor; and such was the vigour which the new government evinced, that Tirowen resolved to recur to his former artifices to gain time. He recounted a long list of grievances to palliate his conduct, and in consequence a truce of eight weeks was agreed upon, in order that an opportunity might be given to all to state their complaints, that they might be transmitted to the royal consideration.

In perusing the recital of these pusillanimous concessions to this arch rebel, we are astonished and disgusted at the weakness of the English government, and their blind credulity, in suffering themselves to believe that faith and sincerity existed in the bosom of Tirowen, or to expect that he was guided by any principle of honour with a government which he abhorred, and roused as was his haughty spirit with the elevating idea of being the deliverer of his country, and the patron of Irish liberty. He doubtless considered his very perfidiousness and art as meritorious, and as entitling him to the gratitude and reverence of his country. By his artifices he procured his pardon, and even dictated the terms upon which he would accept it. But having by the readiness of his enemies to yield to his pleas, discovered their weakness, he resolved without delay to re-commence hostilities, without paying

the slightest regard to the promises he had solemnly made, the treaties he had entered into, or the submissions he had yielded, which, with the true policy of a barbarian, he considered as mere temporary expedients, perfectly justifiable in a state of warfare. Indeed, situated as was this Irish chieftain, it would be absurd to expect in him a lively moral sense; we must not judge him by the refined notions of the nineteenth century, although we may abhor his perfidy, and regard with contempt the weakness which gave him so many opportunities of practising it.

Sir Henry Bagnal, who had succeeded Sir John Norris in the military command, was directed to relieve the fort of Blackwater, which Tirowen had invested with a determination to reduce by famine. Bagnal in his advance was surrounded in disadvantageous ground, and his soldiers, dismayed by an accidental explosion of gunpowder, were put to flight; this disorder was immediately succeeded by the death of Bagnal, who in raising his beaver received a fatal shot in the forehead. The pursuit was arrested by Montacute, who commanded the English horse. Fifteen hundred of the royal army, however, with thirteen gallant officers, and the general, were the victims of the day. The triumph of the rebels was complete, for they became masters of all the artillery, ammunition, and provisions of the royal army, as well as a quantity of arms. The fort of Blackwater was immediately surrendered, and the remnant of the royalists, who had fled to Armagh, were soon obliged, by the victorious insurgents, to evacuate that city. In this encounter, the generals on each side were inflamed with a mortal enmity against each other; for Bagnal had always opposed Tirowen, and endeavoured to open the eyes of others to his de-



ceit and perfidy, of which he was perfectly aware. The superstitious Irish were also on this occasion excited to the highest religious frenzy by their priests, who assured them, on the faith of some old prophecies, that the day would prove fatal to heresy. The assault was violent in proportion to the high-wrought zeal thus artfully inspired.

We are not to measure the importance of this victory by the standard of modern conquests; situated as Ireland then was, it was great and momentous; it excited the full fury of rebellion, and urged even hitherto passive septs to defiance of the English government. [1598.] The flame of insurrection spread from north to south—the rebels every where committed with impunity the most desperate outrages, particularly on the English settlers, who fled, or became victims to the vindictive hatred of their semi-barbarous enemies.

The state of the country was now indeed deplorable. The whole province of Ulster was in open rebellion under Tirowen, and the other parts of the country ready to unite in the revolt, when aided by expected succours from the pope and Spain, and in the mean time were reduced nearly to a state of despair by innumerable oppressions, and by the rumour of meditated severities of the English government, which the country was prepared to oppose in the most obstinate manner.

The English council were become sensible that the rebellion had now attained height and strength, which imperiously demanded the promptest and most decisive measures to reduce and weaken, and were sensible that the many temporizing plans which had hitherto guided their policy, served only to encourage the spirit of insurrection, and to augment rather than allay disorder. It was

therefore resolved to push the war vigorously. They were probably further urged to these decisive measures, by the intelligence that Philip of Spain was preparing for a powerful invasion of the dominions of Elizabeth, twelve thousand men being destined to assist the rebel forces in Ireland. The most popular lord in England, and the highest in the queen's grace at this momentous period, was Lord Essex. On the deliberations respecting Ireland, Elizabeth had proposed to commit the government to Blount, Lord Mountjoy, but Essex opposed this nomination, representing Mountjoy too little acquainted with military service for such an appointment, at such a period. In fact, in describing a fit person for so high and important a service, he so distinctly traced out his own character that the likeness could not be mistaken, and both his friends and enemies concurred in rendering his apparent wishes effectual, for by the united instances of all, he accepted the government of Ireland. His patent was granted with the title of lord lieutenant, and with the most extensive powers, and he was furnished with an army of twenty thousand men, greatly superior to any heretofore sent to Ireland.

We cannot follow the open-hearted Essex in all the details of his government; the faults he committed were those natural to a generous, unsuspecting, and indiscreet character, and he had deeply artful insidious enemies to encounter in the cabinet, as well as determined, irritated, and powerful foes in the field. The insurgents, nothing dismayed by the great preparations against them, rather rejoiced in the opportunity it gave them of confirming the inveteracy of the bigoted and disaffected, and to persuade the wavering that their very existence depended upon their union

in the approaching crisis. Amongst the arguments used to promote this union and resistance, were those of having "their consciences enslaved," and that "their religion was and ought to be the common cause of all." Tirowen was indefatigable in confirming his adherents, and defeating every attempt to seduce them. Every instance of ill-fortune and impolitic conduct of the ardent Essex in his difficult situation, was eagerly reported at the English court, and received with delight by those who had envied him the royal favour. His letters to the queen held a different language to that which his inexperience and rash judgment had dictated in England respecting Irish affairs. In these his dispatches he expatiated on the superiority and even discipline of the enemy, represented the disaffection as general, arising from an utter aversion both from the *religion* and government of England. He also broadly hinted, that it would be most expedient to break the power of the rebels by secret practices, rather than by open opposition, urged the absolute necessity of exterminating their priests, as the chief agents in fomenting disorders, and cementing the rebel interests, recommending it strongly to his royal mistress, if she would form a strong party among the Irish, to hide carefully from them every purpose of establishing among them English government, until their strength should be gradually completely broken. He concluded by pointing out on the other side the royal advantages, and his assurances of ultimate victory, although it must be a work of time, expense, and care.

We must refer our readers to other histories to trace the vicissitudes in the life of the unfortunate Essex, both during his government and unguarded conduct in Ireland, as well as subsequent to his

rash and precipitate return to the presence of his indignant sovereign; and at once hasten to mark the effect of his departure on the disorders of the country he had quitted. Tirowen, who felt his pride flattered, and his consequence increased, by having been admitted to a conference with the royal general, and obtaining from him favourable terms of accommodation, and above all, time, now extended his views, and indefatigably pressed forward in what he judged his honourable career. Essex had scarcely returned to England, when fresh supplies of money and ammunition arrived from Spain, attended with reiterated assurances that the northern Irish might expect a powerful reinforcement from a monarch greatly interested in their honourable struggle, to throw off the heretical dominion which enslaved them. Don Matteo Oviedo, a Spanish ecclesiastic, on whom the pope had conferred the title of Archbishop of Dublin, accompanied these supplies, and was also the bearer of a present from the pontiff to the Prince of Ulster, (so Tirowen was designated,) of a hallowed plume, which the holy father declared to be formed of the feathers of a phoenix, and bestowed as a token of the paternal affection and sincere reverence of the pontiff for the Irish champion of the most holy faith. It is difficult for us to appreciate aright the powerful influence of such a gift upon a character like that of Tirowen, and the eagerness with which he would convert the reverence it obtained for him among his rude followers, to the furtherance of his own lofty designs. Elevated to the utmost height of pride and popularity, by this flattering evidence of papal favour and attention, the haughty chieftain openly assumed the high-sounding title bestowed upon him by the holy father. As the champion of the holy faith, in full confidence of

the success it would insure him, he re-commenced hostilities soon after the expiration of the six weeks agreed upon for the period of a truce, but of which he ought to have given fourteen days' notice previous to the infraction. Finding, however, the lord lieutenant proceeding against him, he thought it politic to parley, and after some menaces retorted with due spirit, a cessation was agreed upon for the period of a month. In this interval, Tirowen published a manifesto addressed to his countrymen, exhorting them to forsake the shameful cause of heresy, which they had so long abetted, or at least not opposed, urging them to assume arms in defence of liberty and their country, and chiefly the Catholic religion, which was so precious and dear to him as its champion, that no narrow and personal dangers should induce him to abandon its sacred interests. In order to impress the people with an idea of his exalted piety, this deep politician made a pilgrimage to the Holy Cross of Tipperary, availing himself of the opportunity of concerting measures with his southern associates. Among these associates was the titular Earl of Desmond, who addressed a letter to the monarch of Spain, inveighing in violent terms against the tyranny of Elizabeth, boasting of his own meritorious services and gallant exploits, in exterminating the English settlers from the southern province, and praying to be furnished with men and ammunition, that he might invest and reduce those places where the enemies of the church had taken refuge. Another letter, bearing the signature of Tirowen, or rather O'Nial, Desmond, Macarthy-More, and Dermond-Macarthy, was addressed to Pope Clement, evidently dictated by an ecclesiastic. In terms of high-wrought zeal and piety they profess to prostrate themselves before the *father of spirits upon*



*earth*, imploring his compassionate relief for his spiritual sons, so as to enable them to subdue those who are enemies to their *Sion*, and oppose the building of the walls of their *Jerusalem*. They earnestly solicit the holy father to provide pious and learned pastors for their afflicted church, whom they faithfully promise to cherish and protect, and they earnestly beseech him to renew the sentence of excommunication fulminated by his predecessors against the heretical Elizabeth, which would enable them *his* faithful subjects to act with greater success in defence of *his* kingdom of Ireland. In answer to this application, the pope published a bull, whereby he granted to Prince Hugh O’Nial, his confederates and assistants, the same spiritual indulgences usually conferred on the crusaders. The manifesto of Tir-owen was, probably, as well as the above letter, manufactured at Rome or in Spain, both are evidences of the spirit which had been infused into the insurgents, and how artfully the flame was kept alive by a constant recurrence to those oppressions which had at first aroused the spirit of discontent and resistance. We shall give a few extracts from this singular composition, supposed to emanate from the Irish champion of the most holy faith, whose crafty policy and duplicity may be traced in many passages of it, indicating that he, at least, was a party in its composition or revision.

The manifesto opens with a declaration, that the chieftain had shown great favour and forbearance towards his countrymen, not only because they were professors of the Catholic faith, but also in the hope that they would voluntarily take into consideration the lamentable state of their poor country, and of their own gentle consciences, in maintaining, relieving, and helping the enemies

of God and our country, in wars infallibly tending to the promotion of heresie. It proceeds to say, "That seeing that you are so obstinate, in that which you have hitherto continued of necessitie, I must use severitie towards you, who otherwise I most entirely loved, in reclayming you by compulsion, when my long tolerance, and happy victories, by God's particular favour doubtlessly obtained, could work no alteration in your consciences." It goes on to state, that "by persevering in that damnable estate in which ye have lived, great calamitie and miserie must ensue, of which they are forewarned, and that unless everie of you come and joyne with me against the enemies of God and our poor country, I will use meanes not only to spoil your goods, but to dispossess you of your lands. But and if you shall joyne with me, upon my conscience, and as I shall answer for it before God, I will employ myself to the utmost of my power in their defence, and for the extirpation of heresie, the planting of the Catholic religion, the delivery of our country from infinite murders, wicked and detestable policies, by which this kingdom was hitherto governed, nourished in obscurity and ignorance, maintained in barbarity and incivility, and consequently of infinite evils, which are too lamentable to be rehearsed." This too faithful picture of the state of the country is followed by the protestation: "Seeing there are motives most laudable before any man of consideration, and before the Almighty most meritorious, which is chiefly to be respected, I thought myself in conscience bound, seeing God has given me some power, to use all means for the reduction of this our poor afflicted country into the Catholic faith, which can never be brought to any good pass, without your destruction or helping hands." He then

professes his disinterestedness, that he desires no secular advantages, and adds, "giving you to understand upon my salvation, that chiefly and principally I fight for the Catholic faith, to be planted throughout our poor country, as manifestly might appear, by that I rejected all other conditions preferred to me, this not being granted; which eftsoone before by word of mouth I have protested, and do hereby protest, that if I had gotten to be King of Ireland, without having the Catholic religion, which before I have mentioned, I would not the same accept."

The following clauses are particularly characteristic of this plausible chieftain: "Yet some other, very catholickly given, to cover their bad consciences with cloaks of affected ignorance, will not seem to understand my good meaning therein, but according to their own corrupt consciences and judgement, construe my warres to be for my particularities, affirming that I never mentioned any points of religion in any article of agreement which was to passe between the queen's governors and me." He endeavours to destroy the prejudice this reserve had excited, by saying he was altogether guided by a wise policy, dictated by peculiar circumstances of the times. "Albeit," he says, "the same was not then manifested, because so good a cause should not be committed to so doubtful an entertainment as my power then was likely to afford; and least a Catholic cause should receive any disgrace, or should be scandalized by heretics, I refrained myself from giving others to understand my intentions." The document proceeds to deny that any allegiance is due to Elizabeth, she being under sentence of excommunication: "It is a thing void of all reason that his holyness should

revoke the sentence, she persevering in heresie, yea, in mischiefing and persecuting the Catholics."

A repetition of entreaty to unite for the cause of religion then occurs, the example of France being cited as encouragement for perseverance, as the manifesto concludes with the clause: "As for myself, I protest before God and upon my salvation, I have been preferred oftentimes such conditions as no man, seeking his own private commoditie, could refuse; but I, seeking the public utilitie of my native country, and means for your salvation, will prosecute these warres untill that generally religion be planted throughout all Ireland. So I rest, praying the Almighty to move your flinted hearts, to prefer the commoditie and profit of our country before your own private ease."

"O'NEALE."

"*Duneveag, the fifteenth day of November, 1599.*"  
*E. MSS. Epis. Strone. Bibl. Trin. Coll. Dub.*

It is evident from these documents how diligent the chiefs of the insurgents were to alienate the people from their allegiance to the queen, and to re-light the torch of war. The royalist army and government were too weak not to regard the preparations with apprehension, particularly as two of their ablest officers were prematurely cut off in some petty encounter with the insurgents. To act on the defensive for awhile was their only course, while the English ministry were earnestly solicited that some effectual means of protection might be afforded ere the rebels made good their evident intention of invading the pale, in which case ruin must ensue to the English.

## CHAPTER XIII.

*English power in Ireland reduced—Queen's authority condemned—Tirowen's activity—Mountjoy appointed deputy—His proceedings—Infuses spirit into the queen's authorities—Fickleness of the Irish—Tirowen's reputation diminishes—Distress and devastation attending the state of warfare—Ireland, a cause of anxiety to Elizabeth—Impolitic measure—Proceedings of Mountjoy—His sentiments—Insurgents encouraged by prospect of Spanish aid—Diligence of the ecclesiastics—Some chiefs sent to England—Arrival of Spaniards under d'Aquilla—Instigates the Irish to revolt—Mountjoy acts with determination—Spaniards reduced to difficulties—Disgust of Tirowen—Spirit of disaffection kept alive—Extreme distress of the country—Proceedings of Mountjoy—Tirowen makes overtures—They are listened to—His abject submission—Promised pardon—Death of Elizabeth—Tirowen's behaviour—Restoration of tranquillity—Spirit of party—Hypocrisy of Tirowen—Romish power diminishing—Artful suggestions of the Romanists—Their success in forming a strong party—On the accession of James it begins to manifest itself openly.*

WHILE the English power in Ireland was thus reduced, and the queen's authority contemned, Tirowen continued his activity in confirming his associates, carrying on his foreign correspondence, daily increasing his forces, and rising in pride and confidence. The rebel cause being secretly favoured by some who appeared outwardly best affected to the state. Elizabeth, whose parsimony could ill brook the expenses of the Irish disorders, in order to arrest the progress of the rebellion, returned to her former intention of appointing Mountjoy, lord deputy, and although she found him reluctant, she obliged him to accept the employ-



ment. Without any parade he arrived at Dublin, February, 1599. The refinement of manner which distinguished this nobleman was regarded with contempt as effeminacy by the rude Irish, and Tirowen could not conceal his contemptuous exultation in a choice, appearing so injudicious, of a commander, who he said "would lose the season of action while the breakfast was prepared." But this penetrating chieftain was for once at least deceived by his own vanity. Mountjoy found indeed the country in a desperate condition, but his native capacity and vigour dictated to him the best measures to pursue, not discouraged by the pride, the power and the popularity of Tirowen, he immediately marched against him in Ulster, penetrating into the heart of the province, the chief seat of the rebels. He fortified Derry and Mount Norris, in order to stem the Irish, and following their own mode of warfare, he chased them to their haunts, obliging them to take refuge in the most remote woods. With a similar success as followed his own plans, he employed Sir George Carew in Munster, and by his persevering vigour, he infused new life into the queen's authority throughout the country. The power and consequence of Tirowen, like those of all similar characters, guided by similar motives, and directed to similar views, depended greatly upon opinion, which remained buoyant on the stream of success, but sunk when opposing obstacles arrested its onward course. The partial defeats of their chief, immediately proved the fickleness of the Irish, they deserted in great numbers, and some of their principal partizans even applied to the lord deputy for pardon and protection. So wisely and successfully did Mountjoy prosecute his military operations, that every attempt of Tirowen was repelled by his vigour and his pru-

dence, so that the reputation of this idol of his country, this champion of her faith daily diminished, his followers continually escaping from the miseries of warfare under his banners, to sue the government for protection and pardon. The distresses and far spreading devastation attending this state of warfare, are dreadful in the recital and we may rejoice that our subject does not necessarily oblige us to narrate them. But although the advantages gained by Mountjoy were great, Ireland was still a just cause of anxiety and embarrassment to Elizabeth, and in order to enable her to sustain the great expenses of the war, she suffered herself to be persuaded to the very impolitic measure of issuing base money for the payment of the troops. Mountjoy in the meantime was prosecuting with vigour and progressive success, the war with the insurgents. With the aid of Sir George Carew, president of Munster, and other able commanders, the inferior rebels were gradually reduced, and even the supplies of Tirowen himself were cut off. Still the courage of the rebels was in a great degree supported by the hope of Spanish aid, nor were those hopes vain and delusive, for Spain was busily employed by her agents in endeavouring to make her intentions known, and to keep up the spirit of religious antipathy among the ignorant Irish. At all times the arts and effects of superstition are lamentable, and none can reflect without abhorrence on the principles inculcated, and the practices countenanced by the Romish agents sent into Ireland to foment the disorders of those times.

While we regard with repugnance the schemes of the artful, we must compassionate a wretched people, who, without ever hearing the salutary or warning voice of instruction, were abandoned to the influence of factious and sanguinary zealots.

Nor must we do the English government and its despotic head the injustice to suppose, that in regard to religious matters the policy was severe, rash, or arbitrary ; on the contrary, even the law which enforced an attendance on the reformed worship, was generally relaxed, indeed it could hardly be justly enforced under the circumstances of the times, as the Christian methods of reformation were sacrificed to the desire of discouraging the Irish language, in which only the mass of the people could receive instruction. There were also few churches to resort to, few teachers to exhort or instruct, and fewer still who could be understood. Hence, when the malcontents on submitting to government had been taught to demand a free exercise of religion, the ministers of Elizabeth were instructed to assure them of every indulgence, but that of an express and formal toleration. But at the same time, it was the regular and ordinary instruction to the provincial governors of Ireland, to persuade the people by all good means and ways to them seeming good, and especially by their own examples, to observe all orders for divine service, and to embrace and devoutly to observe the order and service of the church established in the realm by parliament, or otherwise.

Whenever the queen's ministers by virtue of these and similar commissions ventured on any vigorous exertion of their authority we find them controuled, and a more moderate conduct recommended from England, in which moderation Mountjoy seems to have heartily concurred, as he thought that any other course would defeat the object desired to be attained. " Not that I think," he observes, " too great preciseness can be used in reforming ourselves, the abuses of our own clergy, church livings, or discipline, nor that the

truth of the gospel can with too great vehemency or industry be set forward, in all places, and by all ordinary means most proper unto itself, that was first set forth and spread in meekness, nor that I think any corporal prosecution or punishment can be too severe for such as shall be found seditious instruments of foreign or inward practices, nor that I think it fit that any principal magistrates should be chosen without taking the oath of obedience, nor tolerated in absenting themselves from public divine worship, but that we may be advised how we do punish in their bodies or goods any such only for religion, as do profess to be faithful subjects to her majesty; and against whom the contrary cannot be proved."

Whilst the royal commanders were daily gaining considerable advantages, and the rebels were in proportion becoming weaker, confident assurances were spread throughout the country, that the Spanish succours were speedily to embark, and that Munster was fixed upon as the first scene of their invasion. Oviedo, the Spanish archbishop of Dublin, and other factious ecclesiastics industriously disseminated the intelligence, and were indefatigable in the exertion of every means to animate the leaders of rebellion, and to confirm their resolution. They presented to Prince O'Nial commander of the Catholic army a flattering letter from the pope, filled with benedictions on himself and his adherents, who it was expressed, had not "bowed the knee to Baal," but resolutely contended for the faith.

Tirowen, cheered and elated by the prospect of the Spanish succours called his councils, dispatched his emissaries, encouraged his adherents, and exhorted them to prepare for the eventful crisis, to exert themselves against "*the pagan beast*," and to rekindle the flame of rebellion.

One of the principal rebel leaders was James Fitz Thomas, titular earl of Desmond, he was delivered by treachery into the power of Sir George Carew, and with Florence Macarthy sent prisoner to England. Sir George also possessed himself of some leaders of the same sept. One of them was abruptly asked by Sir George on his professing his fidelity to government, "But what if the Spaniards should arrive?" "In that case," he replied, "let not your lordship confide in me, nor in any of those lords who seem most devoted to your service." This is an instance of noble candour.

At length the Spaniards under Don Juan d'Aquilla arrived at Kinsale. He assumed the title of general in the holy war, for the preservation of the faith in Ireland, and endeavoured to persuade the people that Elizabeth was by several bulls of the pope deprived of her crown, that her subjects were absolved from their oaths of allegiance and that the Spaniards were come to deliver the Irish from the dominion of Satan. Mountjoy found it necessary to act with determined vigour, in order to prevent a total insurrection of the Irish thus instigated to revolt. We shall not follow the detail of this war, but merely add that after being threatened with a dreadful storm of revolt, the English saw it, by the pusillanimous conduct of the Irish, dissipated at once. One of the chiefs, O'Donnel, fled to Spain, and Tirowen, unable to persuade his associates to keep the field, stung with disappointment and disgrace retired in disgust to his own territory. D'Aquilla reduced to the greatest difficulties capitulated to the terms prescribed by Mountjoy, and consequently the rebels were reduced to dismay at the reverse of fortune so sudden and unexpected. The rumours however of a second Spanish in-



vasion, kept alive the spirit of disaffection in Munster, although the calamities the insurgents endured might, it would naturally be thought, have subdued every feeling but that of personal and physical suffering. At a period when the horrors of famine and devastation were become absolutely insupportable to human nature, Owen Mac Eaggan, the pope's vicar apostolical for the southern provinces, and other factious zealots thundered out their anathemas against all those who should show mercy to the wretches taken fighting on the side of the English government. Those who thus fell into the hands of the insurgents, were butchered as enemies to the faith, those taken by the royalists were hanged as rebels. In one of the bloody rencounters, the furious Mac Eaggan was slain, animating his men with a sword in one hand, and his breviary in the other. Such was the bitter and rancorous spirit, which bore the name of a righteous zeal! In the meantime Mountjoy divided his army into small portions, harassing the rebels on every side, and many of the chieftains, after concealing themselves sometime in woods and morasses, submitted to mercy, receiving gladly such conditions as Mountjoy thought fit to impose. The miseries which the wretched Irish endured from the vicinity of the royal forces, preventing them from seeking any means of subsistence, were afflicting to the humanity even of those whom national duty obliged to punish them. Thousands perished by famine, and every place was encumbered by unburied victims of distress. The hideous resources sought for allaying the ragings of hunger, were more terrible even than the desolation. Tirowen was every day deserted by his followers, and in the extremity of distress made overtures with more sincerity than heretofore, to be received

upon terms. Circumstances determined Mountjoy to listen to these overtures with favour, but he refused to admit the rebel unless he made an absolute surrender of his life and fortune to the queen's mercy. Tirowen instantly complied, and appeared before the lord deputy at Millefont, by whom he was received with a dignity becoming the representative of an offended sovereign. He fell upon his knees and petitioned for mercy with an air and aspect of distress. His submission was entire. He utterly renounced the proud name of O'Nial, so far more precious to him than the earldom of Tirowen, abjured all foreign power, and in return for these and many other concessions he was promised a full pardon for himself and followers.

This affair being concluded, he accompanied Mountjoy to Dublin, where the death of Elizabeth was announced. The late rebel chieftain on hearing this intelligence burst into tears, by which he affected to manifest his grief for the loss of a princess who had shown him so much lenity. But those who knew his character more justly, it is probable, attributed the burst of passion to chagrin, at having by his premature submission deprived himself of some advantages which the death of Elizabeth might open to him. But it was too late to retreat, he therefore renewed his submission in due form to the new king, and addressed a letter to the king of Spain, notifying the return to his duty and allegiance, and requesting that his son who had been entertained at the Spanish court, might be permitted to return to Ireland. Many of the insurgents were driven by dire necessity to the continent, entering the armies of Spain. None remained in Ireland who had not sued for, or obtained the royal mercy. Tirowen's final submission taking place only four

days previous to the death of Elizabeth, she of course was not acquainted with it. That she was urged by her ministry to concede to him her pardon, appears very evident, but that her having done so, formed one of the causes of that melancholy which clouded the setting of her brilliant sun, can hardly be apprehended, although we admit the tenacity of her pride as a sovereign, and her inflexibility of temper, which might induce an apprehension that her concession would be attributed by the world to fear or to weakness, but we perfectly agree with her able biographer, that this attributed cause seems by no means commensurate to the lamentable effect.

Ireland was now restored to what may be deemed a general tranquillity, but it was the tranquillity of desolation. The contest had been long, difficult and dangerous, and the ghastly demon of famine, had accompanied the clangor of arms.\* The period however was approaching when some degree of civility and union should take place of discord and barbarity.

In describing the furious zeal of the Irish in the cause of their ancient faith, we should greatly err did we suppose it to have arisen from any deep sense of the importance of the cause, or of their sincere attachment to it as a *principle*. Far from it,

\* Some idea may be formed of the dreadful distress of the country at large, by the following rates of provisions sold in Dublin alone in 1602. By which it appears,

Wheat had risen from 36s. to nine pounds the quarter.

Barley malt from 10s. to 43s. the barrel.

Oat malt from 5s. to 22s. the barrel.

Pease from 5s. to 40s. the peck.

Oats from 3s. 4d. to 20s. the barrel.

Beef from 26s. 8d. to eight pounds the carcase.

Mutton from 3s. to 26s. do.

A lamb from 12d. to 6s.

A pork from 8s. to 30s.

See Leland's History of Ireland, Vol. 2. page 410.

their minds were too closely enveloped in ignorance to feel any sincere reverence for any mode of faith and worship, and little did they examine or know how to appreciate that for which they unsheathed the sword. The spirit of party was the exciting impulse, that spirit which it has been justly observed seizes upon the mind like a kind of dictatorship, which puts to silence every other authority of the understanding and extinguishes the power of every sentiment of the heart. It forms the connecting link, uniting men together by the attraction of a common animosity, and so completely enchaining within its cold and frigid boundary every moral feeling that even in doing wrong, those whom it encircles conceive they are devoting themselves meritoriously. Thus it at once contracts the understanding, and depraves the heart, reducing as it were all minds to the same level, by subjecting them alike to the debasing slavery of mere opinion, to establish which every thing must be sacrificed as to an earthly divinity. The emissaries of Rome knew well the art of erecting this insatiate deity within the bosoms of the ignorant, and under the fairest and most plausible arguments concealed the subtle poison of religious rancour. Even when the avowed champion of the Irish church was taught to grace and add vigour to his insurrection by his pretended zeal, his indifference to it was so well understood, and his hypocrisy considered so contemptible that the open hearted Essex exclaimed to him "Hang thee, thou talk of the free exercise of religion! thou carest as much for religion as my horse!" The Earl of Desmond also confessed his own ignorance of religious information, and was willing to comply with *any* the English government might prescribe. In fact the Romish emissaries saw their power was tottering, they

saw numbers of their ecclesiastics inculcating the doctrines of civil obedience and submission to a government to which they had sworn allegiance, and the busy agents of the papal court were violent in their condemnation, and industrious in counteracting doctrines so inimical to their power, and the dominion the papacy had hitherto maintained in Ireland. The people were artfully taught that while they had no power of resistance, the pope had graciously allowed them to submit to an excommunicated sovereign, and an heretical government, so far as the exercise of that government did not affect their religion. But when the faith required their assistance to support it, it was impious and damnable not to cast off this submission; and not to espouse a cause so glorious, was to renounce at once their eternal salvation. Bulls were spread through Ireland adapted to all humours, to countenance these principles, and thus almost insensibly a virulent popish party was formed in Ireland, and cherished with paternal care by the holy father, by means of his never wearied agents. But while this party was thus secretly animated, the rigour of Elizabeth's government during the period of her power, and the success of her arms as well as the universal commotion of war had kept it under some restraint. On the accession of James the first the latent spirit began openly to manifest itself. As this monarch however appears in a very advantageous light as a legislator of Ireland, we shall now conclude this chapter of our retrospect, and open another with the transactions of his reign as referring to his Hibernian dominions.



## CHAPTER XIV.

*Romanists' pretexts for intrigue—Contempt of the penal statutes—Boldness of the Catholics, their violent proceedings—Seditious spirit requires check—Interview of ecclesiastics with Mountjoy—His proceedings against the turbulent—Act of oblivion published—Mountjoy returns to England, is accompanied by his prisoner Tirowen—Irish present a petition to the king—King becomes more reserved towards them—Extract of letter from Sir John Harrington—Intentions of James respecting Ireland—Sir George Carew, governor—Sagacity of the people—Sir Arthur Chichester, governor, advances civil reformation, but good effects counteracted by religious animosities—Reasons of encouragement for the Catholics—Objections of James to the politics of the Catholics—Conduct of James—His measures not acted upon with a right spirit by his agents—Consequences—Daring spirit of the recusants—Severity towards them—Remonstrances—Coincidence of circumstances creates suspicion, seizure of Lalor—His conduct—His trial—Chichester—His proceedings—Book of Common Prayer translated into Irish—Seditious spirit prevailing keeps the government on the alert—Suspicious circumstance—Restlessness of the Northern chiefs—Tirowen and Tirconnel flee to the continent—Complaints of Romish agents—James's proclamation—Reception of Irish chiefs on the continent—Colony of Ulster—Chichester well calculated to bring into effect the designs of his sovereign—Rebel chieftains conciliated—Lands reclaimed by the clergy—Ecclesiastical institutions—Noble plans of James—Towns incorporated.*

THE Romanists of Ireland ever ready to avail themselves of any change as a pretext for their intrigues, on the accession of James, [1602] encouraged their votaries, by assuring them that the new king was of the Romish faith. But when they found this assertion discredited by circumstances, they industriously preached the infant's right of succession, and taught the ignorant that he could not

be a lawful king, who had not been established by the pope, and had not sworn to defend the Catholic religion.

These insinuations had so powerful an effect upon the restless dispositions of those to whom they were addressed, that almost all Munster, and also several cities of Leinster, conspired to avow their contempt of the penal statutes respecting the public worship, and resolved to revive that of the Romish ritual, in full splendour. No longer, as heretofore, confining the ceremonies of their religion to privacy, the Catholics not only erected their crosses, celebrated with pomp their masses and processions, with every circumstance of sacerdotal splendour; but even ejected the reformed ministers from their churches, seized those religious houses which had been converted to civil uses, and showed, even to the most trifling details, a firm and determined spirit of opposition to the reformed mode of faith.

These factious ecclesiastics were particularly numerous and turbulent in the city of Cork, where one of them pretended to have received a legantine authority from Rome, and the most ready obedience was paid to his commission. To such a height of insolence was it carried, that the magistrates refused to proclaim the king, demanding time to *consider of it*, and when they yielded to the remonstrances and vigorous measures of the lord deputy it was with little respect. As to the point of religion on which they had been peculiarly insolent, they replied to him, "that they only exercised now publicly, that which ever before they had been suffered to exercise privately, and as their public prayers gave testimony of their faithful hearts to the king, so they were tied to be no less careful to manifest their duties to God, in which they never would be dis-

sembling temporisers.” Had this firmness been free from the seditious spirit which corrupted it, it would have been laudable, but as it was far from being a pure principle, it was harassing and distressing to the nation, still suffering from the long protraction of wars, and the devastations it had produced, and called for the firm conduct of Mountjoy to arrest its consequences. He accordingly marched into Munster with his army, the gates of Waterford were closed against him, the citizens pleading, that by a charter of King John they were exempted from quartering soldiers. The promoters of this resistance were soon manifested; two ecclesiastics, in the habits of their order, with erected cross, presented themselves before Mountjoy, and peremptorily declared, that the citizens of Waterford could not in conscience obey any prince who persecuted the Catholic faith. We have the following account of this singular interview, given by Moryson: “ Dr. White, accompanied by a young Dominican friar, came into the camp, but when they foolishly carried a crucifix, openly showing the same, the soldiers were hardly kept from offering them violence, and when they put up the crucifix in their pockets, yet could hardly endure the sight of their habits, which each wore according to his order, Dr. White wearing a black gown and cornered cap, and the friar wearing a white woollen frock. White being come into his lordship’s tent, was bold to maintain erroneous and dangerous opinions, for maintenance of that which the citizens had done, in the reforming of religion without authority, all which his lordship did (as no layman, I think, could better do) most learnedly confute. And when White cited a place of St. Austin for his proof, his lordship, having the book in his tent, showed all the company that he had

falsely cited the father, for howsoever his words were found there, yet were they set down by way of an assertion, which St. Austin confuted in the discourse following. At this surprisal White was somewhat out of countenance, and the citizens ashamed." Though Mountjoy thus condescended to listen to the arguments of his clerical visitors, and had it in his power to detect their false adaptation of the venerable father Augustine to the circumstances of the time, yet he treated them with the dignity of an offended representative of their sovereign. He threatened to draw King James's sword, and cut the charter of King John to pieces, and to level their city. His determined menaces were effectual, and he was admitted, received the allegiance of the people, who renounced all foreign jurisdiction, and were obliged to admit a strong garrison to keep them firm to their engagements.

Several other cities, which had in a similar manner declared for the free and public exercise of popery, were reduced by Mountjoy to similar compliances. But though the arm of power, and the dread of punishment, thus restrained the turbulence of faction, the spirit yet remained in full force, ready to burst forth on the slightest favourable occasion. In order if possible to gain the affections, as well as to controul the passions of the multitude, an act of state was published by proclamation, called an "Act of Oblivion and Indemnity;" by this salutary act the whole body of the people were received into the immediate royal protection, all past offences were pardoned and utterly extinguished, never to be revived and called in question. This important ordinance was the last act of Mountjoy's most honourable administration. He was constituted lord lieutenant, but permitted to appoint Sir George Carew

his deputy. He returned to England with his prisoners, who were received favourably by the king. Tirowen was confirmed in his honours, and possessions, but such was the popular aversion expressed for the individual by whose rebellion so many had been deprived of their friends and relatives, that he was obliged to be attended by a powerful escort to guard him against the revengeful fury of the people.

From the favourable reception of this chieftain at the court of James, his countrymen and associates conceived that the king entertained a high idea of the Irish, and dreading their power would yield to their expressed wishes. By their friends, therefore, resident at the English court, they presented a petition to the throne for the free and public toleration of the Romish worship. Whatever were the private sentiments of James on the subject, the petition was disregarded, and it determined him to treat the Irish visitants with more reserve, and to be more guarded in his professions of grace and favour.

That James was too lavish in his favour to the arch rebel Tirowen is evident, from the lively remarks of Sir John Harrington, in a letter to the Bishop of Bath and Wells. "I have lived," he remarks, "to see that d——d rebel, Tyrone, brought to England, courteously favoured, honoured, and well liked. O, my lord, what is there that does not prove the inconstancy of worldly matters! How did I labour after that knave's destruction! I was called from my home by her majesty's command, adventured perils by sea and by land, endured toil, was near starving, eat horse-flesh at Munster, and all to quell that man who now smileth in peace at those who did hazard their lives to destroy him. Essex took me to Ireland; I had scant time to put on my boots,



I followed with good-will, and did return with the lord lieutenant to meet ill-will. I did bear the frowns of her that sent me, and were it not for her good liking, rather than my good deservings, I had been sore discountenanced indeed.”  
(*See Aikin's James I.*)

But to return to the state of Ireland, from which the agreeable Sir John Harrington has for a moment beguiled us.

Before James could hope to civilise his barbarous Irish subjects, he well knew that he must abolish as far as possible those customs which supplied to them the place of law, and which would ever prevent their rising in the scale of nations. After abolishing these pernicious customs, and substituting English laws in their place, having taken the natives under his protection, declared them free citizens, and quieted all minds by an universal indemnity, a detail of which belongs not to our retrospect, James proceeded in the most cautious and judicious manner to govern his Irish subjects, by a just administration, military as well as civil, no authority but that of the king and the law being allowed throughout the kingdom. In his plans for the restoration of public peace, and the firm establishment of public justice, during the administration of Sir George Carew, itinerant judges visited the northern provinces; one of these judges, Sir John Davis, remarks, “which visitation, though it were somewhat distasteful to the Irish lords, was most welcome to the common people, who, although they were rude and barbarous, yet did they quickly apprehend the difference between tyranny and oppression, under which they had lived before, and the just government and protection which we promised unto them for the time to come.” This is a proof of popular sagacity that illustrates in a striking

manner that the plans of reform before resorted to had been directed to the wrong quarter; it was evident that the chieftains' power needed restriction, in order effectually to ameliorate the condition and improve the morals of the people.

Sir Arthur Chichester succeeded Carew, 1604, and greatly advanced the work of reformation, for the interesting detail of which, we refer our readers to other histories; for it is our less pleasing duty to record, that the progress of these laudable schemes of reformation, as well as the salutary effects they were calculated to produce, were unhappily interrupted and retarded by the virulence of religious faction, or rather a seditious party spirit, covering itself under the venerable shade of religion.

It was not indeed without some reason that the numerous body of Catholics in Ireland presumed on the favour of the new king, and his partiality for their communion. The indulgence shown by him to the Catholics in Scotland, his transactions with the pontiff, and the hopes entertained of his entire conversion to the Romish communion, while King of Scots, were all well known, through the emissaries of the papacy, to the Irish Catholics. The sentiments also expressed by James in his first parliament, when he shocked the puritans, by declaring that he was ready to meet the Catholics half-way, and in regard to the laity of that communion, said, he "would be sorry to punish their bodies for the errors of their minds;" these sentiments were but a repetition of opinions he had often even more openly avowed, which, added to his many expressions of tenderness to the *mother church*, were industriously treasured and propagated among a people ready to believe any thing that favoured their own ideas. Obviously tending to

strengthen their cause, as such a belief of the monarch's sentiments must have done, the popish ecclesiastics with little restraint and caution made use of it among their ignorant votaries, denouncing their spiritual vengeance on those who should presume to attend on the established worship, or dare to dissemble the religious principles in which they had been brought up, we can hardly say educated. The abbies and monasteries were repaired, churches re-fitted and furnished for the Romish rites, which were again publicly celebrated in several parts of the realm. They even proceeded yet greater lengths, too evidently betraying the secular spirit which governed them, they presumed to arraign the civil administration, to review causes which had been determined in the king's courts, and to enjoin the people, as they tendered their salvation, to obey their decisions, and not those of the law. Whatever sentiments of indulgence James expressed for the religious tenets of Rome, he had certainly an utter abhorrence to their secular politics, which taught the supremacy of the pope. "But for the clerics," he says, alluding to the Catholics in his speech to the first parliament, "I must directly say and affirm, that as long as they maintain *one* special point of their doctrine, and another of their practice, they are no way sufferable to remain in this kingdom. The point of doctrine is that arrogant and ambitious supremacy of their head, the pope, whereby he not only claims to be spiritual head of all Christians, but also to have an imperial civil power over all kings and emperors, dethroning and decrowning with his foot as pleaseth him, and dispensing and disposing of all kingdoms and empires at his appetite."

Besides this avowed objection to the power of the Catholics, probably only assumed for the

occasion, as the plea was not grounded on any change in the system, since he had expressed favour towards the papists, James was now circumstanced in a manner which obliged him to be wary. When he had added to his privy council, on his accession, the lords Thomas and Henry Howard, the whole body of English Catholics regarded it as a happy augury for their cause, and doubtless those of Ireland participated in the feeling. Supported by such warm advocates in the council, they very naturally flattered themselves they should speedily experience the indulgence of the King of England, by the fulfilment of his assurances in their favour while King of Scots. But the times were altered with James. The Catholics were feared, despised, and hated by those whom the monarch feared to offend. The Catholics were a declining power; the puritans were a rising and increasing one. James had a difficult middle course to steer between them, and it is probable that his jealousy of the Catholic article of doctrine, interfering with his desire of possessing supreme jurisdiction both in church and state, determined his conduct. He lost no time in disavowing, by proclamation, the promises of some innovation in religion, which he was reported to have made, at the same time plainly manifesting his intentions towards the disappointed Catholics, by commanding all manner of priests, seminarists, and Jesuits, (whose numbers and boldness had greatly increased in the presumption of his indulgence,) immediately to depart the kingdom.

It may be proper to take a cursory view of the political state of England, in regard to the parties which agitated it at this time, as it was peculiar and critical. The parties which divided it being of different religious sects, of course the judicious

management of them was difficult and complex, in order to preserve a just equipoise ; for it is an observation, the truth of which is warranted by all history, that when the religious spirit mingles itself with faction, it produces effects in its operations on society less corresponding with their known causes than is found in any other circumstance of human life or government. The church itself was at this time divided into two parties, to which the Catholics were equally opposed : these were distinguished by the several appellations of Prelatists and Puritans. The prelatists or the orthodox professed a perfect satisfaction with the church establishment as it stood, desiring only to preserve it inviolate from innovation on either side ; they considered themselves as the natural allies of the king and the state. James found it both politic and necessary to conciliate this party, he therefore formally renounced the presbyterian principles of his education, the austere exterior of which he had indeed endeavoured to enliven by assimilating with it some of the simple ceremonies retained in the reformed Church of England ; but the line to be pursued towards the other parties, that is, those of the Catholics and the Puritans was more difficult. Scarcely knowing how to manage them, James had alternately flattered and promised each, more particularly the Catholics ; both were numerous, both powerful, both impatient of the yoke, and neither in any way disposed to forego present indulgence for the hope of future pre-eminence.

To the reader of the transactions of this period it cannot be a subject of doubt, that the Catholics considered themselves the rightful possessors of all the privileges wrested from them by the reformation, and still continued to regard themselves oppressed, insulted, and injured if not suf-



ferred to bear rule and maintain their superiority in the state. Yet this party had now been on the decline for more than half a century, and though it made frequent struggles of artificial strength, yet it would appear that by a firm and steady policy it might have been rendered at least innoxious. But if the Catholic party may be regarded at this time as declining, that of the Puritans was unquestionably rising into power and vigour. It numbered among its adherents some individuals, bold assertors of civil liberty, who by a discussion of some glaring grievances were naturally led on to the investigation of others. "Of these assertors of English liberty," observes the intelligent Aikin, "a small proportion appear to have been indifferent to the presbyterian cause, but there was a strong natural connection between Calvinistic principles in religion and popular principles in government, and they were so usually found united, that the sect and the party came to be considered as identified. This sect was important and formidable, possessing such a stern and inflexible spirit that the whole force of government was insufficient to support its aspirations. Indeed the puritans were enabled to forward their own views from being included in the church, pretending not to any separate worship or discipline, but ready to avail themselves of any weakness they perceived in the edifice which sheltered them. Any attempt at secession would have been considered as unpardonable, even by the puritans themselves, as tending to the subversion of civil society. "Even so great a reasoner as Lord Bacon," observes Hume, "thought that uniformity in religion was absolutely necessary to the support of government, and that no toleration could with safety be given to sectaries." Nothing but the imputation of idolatry, which was thrown

on the Catholics, could justify, even in the eyes of the Protestants themselves, the schism made by the Hugonots and other Protestants, who lived in popish countries.

If the Catholics thought themselves justified in anticipating the favour of James, the Puritans were no less sanguine of his support when he acceded to the throne of England. Under his sway, educated as he had been in the principles they professed, they entertained the warmest hopes of seeing more serene and prosperous days and of being allowed openly to evince their attachment to the discipline and worship of the Church of Geneva. These hopes were naturally grounded upon the early prepossessions of the king, and his frequent strong declarations of his attachment to their ecclesiastical constitution, particularly in a general assembly held at Edinburgh in 1530, when he observed, "I praise God that I was born in a time of the light of the gospel, and in such a place as to be king of the sincerest (viz. the purest) kirk in the world. As for our neighbour kirk of England, their service is an evil masse in English, they want nothing of the mass but the liftings (viz. the elevation of the host). I charge you my good doctors, ministers, elders, nobles, gentlemen, and barons to stand to your purity, and to exhort your people to do the same, and I, forsooth, as long as I brook my life, shall do the same."

The first measures of James seemed to confirm these assertions, as he appeared desirous of assuming the character of a mediator or arbitrator to conciliate matters between the church and the puritans. That these hopes were unfulfilled must be attributed to the desire of unlimited sway, which was the absorbing passion of James, so that all his measures, whether civil or religious, were rendered subservient to his one great selfish

object, which while it clouded and narrowed his mind by prejudices frequently rendered his conduct liable to the imputation of duplicity, weakness, and design.

As James, under the influence of the impressions made by the opposing parties in the state, had judged it proper to command all priests and Jesuits to depart from England, so by a like proclamation were the Catholic clergy of Ireland commanded to depart within a limited time, unless they consented fully to conform to the laws of the land. James, though positive, was lenient in all his measures, and this order was intended to be acted upon with that spirit equally in both kingdoms; but in Ireland, it enraged the whole body of Romanists so much, that it produced severities never intended. It was represented by those who had dominion over the popular feeling, that it was an instance of implacable persecution. Such was the daring spirit of the recusants excited by these insinuations, that the chief governor and council deemed it their imperative duty to guard against their outrages by reviving those statutes which were so openly insulted, by formally enjoining the magistrates and chief citizens of Dublin to attend the public worship in the established churches. The order, however, did but render the recusants more obstinate, and in fact, though prompted by a sense of official duty, it was injudicious.

Opposition, force, and severity must ever increase rather than still the fermentation of party spirit, for even a triumph gained by a compromise is esteemed a defeat by a spirit of party, nor will it admit the smallest appearance of modification. Thus it proved in the instance we are relating. Admonitions and remonstrances proving vain, the recusants were fined and committed to prison.

This severity roused many to espouse their cause, who otherwise were disposed to remain passive. All the old families of the pale took alarm, remonstrated against the proceedings of the government: and denying even the legality of its sentences; they urged, that by the act of the 2d of Elizabeth, the crime of recusancy had its punishment ascertained, and that any extension of the penalty was illegal and unconstitutional. Their remonstrance and petition for the free exercise of religion was presented to the council by a large concourse on the very day when intelligence was received of the gunpowder conspiracy, a circumstance which awakened the jealous fears of the king's ministers, making them suspect some concert and collusion between the conspirators of England and the Romish party in Ireland. Indeed, among all the various sources of inventive intrigue and deep policy employed by the Romanists to bring back England and Ireland to the papal yoke, and to ascertain the strength of their party, we must rank this conspiracy, whether it is regarded as the act of a few fanatical individuals or as emanating from more important and higher sources. The chief petitioners to the Irish council were committed to the castle at Dublin, and Sir Patrick Barnwall, their great agent, was by command of James sent in custody to England.

The general clamour and discontent of the party were increased at this time by an incident, which, under less irritable influence, would have caused no sensation. This was the seizure of a popish ecclesiastic, named Lalor. He had exercised the office of vicar-general throughout several dioceses of Leinster by virtue of a commission from Rome. Fear of punishment however so powerfully influenced the mind of this man, that he made a formal declaration, confirmed by oath,

of the unlawfulness of his office, renouncing foreign jurisdiction and acknowledging the king's supremacy. His party, informed of these concessions, bitterly reproached him, and with a true Jesuitical spirit he privately denied having made them. This in its turn was detected by the vigilance of government, and he defended it with the meanest equivocation; perhaps perfectly reconciled to himself under the convenient plea of justifiable *mental reservation*. He was brought to trial under an act of the 16th of Richard the Second, to convince the Irish that the recent declarations of the royal supremacy were but an assertion of the ancient constitutional rights of the crown. Lalor, though clearly condemned was not subjected to any punishment; severe measures not being deemed political by the counsellors of James at that particular period.

The Lord Deputy was recommended, if possible, to reclaim the recusants by the gentle and gradual methods of instruction and exhortation. Sir Arthur Chichester was very ready to act upon this judicious advice. He proceeded, in the first place, to take measures to reform the established clergy, to enforce a particular attention to their duty, and more especially to aid his intentions to procure a translation of the Common Prayer into the Irish language, for the instruction of the ignorant and the edification of all. It is pleasing to have it in our power to mark this important and salutary exercise of authority, for it is surely not sufficient that sovereigns should merely be persuaded of the salutary influence of religion on the morality and happiness of those subjected to their empire, but they are bound to use the means to maintain and to cherish this salutary action, and of course every part of public worship becomes of infinite importance and should be made plain and compre-



hensive to the people. Nor can any thing be imagined more calculated to produce every good effect, both political, moral, and religious on the minds of the multitude than the Liturgy of our church, at once interesting and affecting—sympathizing with human weakness—suited to human wants and anxieties, and of power to elevate the soul towards the Supreme Being and the study of his attributes, and in fact producing in the soul of man those sentiments which form the firmest and securest band to unite men together in loyalty to their king, obedience to their governors, and social love towards each other.

The confidence with which the recusants of the pale had demanded the toleration of their religion, the strength of their party, and the conviction of the incessant assiduity and influence of the popish emissaries, with a recollection of the political disorders they had heretofore fomented, tended not without just reason to keep the Irish government upon the alert, and suspicion and alarm ever awake, and of course gave weight and importance to rumours of insurrections, which under more quiet circumstances might have been deemed frivolous and unalarming. Thus, when a letter was found about this time in the privy council chamber, intimating that a dangerous scheme of rebellion was forming by the Earls of Tirowen and Tirconnel and others, the government was justly alarmed by its contents, more especially as it stated further, that the conspirators had solicited assistance from Spain and Brussels, intending to commence hostilities by surprising Dublin Castle, and assassinating the lord deputy and council. Nothing can more forcibly illustrate the restless ambition of these northern chiefs and the direful influence of those arts which had induced them to regard treason, rebellion, and assassination

as meritorious, than that they should even at the moment when they were still suffering the effects of their recent rebellion, in the devastation surrounding them, involve themselves in a fresh one; but that they were ready to relight the torch of war in their native land, would appear from the conduct of Tirowen and Tirconnel, who, on the first alarm of government, fled to the continent, thus abandoning, by an act which evidenced their guilt, their vast possessions to the disposal of the crown. It is true that the Romish party asserted that the violences exercised against these chieftains and their followers compelled them thus to abandon their possessions and their country, and that they had been beguiled to commit themselves incautiously in some private conferences with a person who had betrayed them to the lord deputy. Had this however been the fact, they had the power of justification and explanation, but as no such justification ever appeared, we must be compelled to doubt their integrity, though probably by the very act of their flight they did, as they wished, recommend themselves to their party as men who had sacrificed every temporal possession in the cause of their faith and their country.

Nothing could be more favourable to the designs of James in reforming and settling Ireland than the flight of these chieftains under such circumstances. The greatest and most valuable part of Ulster was thus left to his uncontrolled disposal, opening indeed a fair field for the exercise of that laudable policy he meditated to pursue. He lost no time in availing himself of the favourable circumstances; judges were immediately sent to the territories of the self-exiled chieftains, who were, with some fugitives of inferior note, attainted by process of outlawry; and other of the conspi-

rators, who had been seized, were tried, condemned, and executed.

The Romish agents were loud in their complaints, that these lords had been treated with such severity on account of their conscientious adherence to their faith. James repelled this charge by a proclamation, by which he declared that he was by no means to be regarded as the persecutor of that faith, which his laws had rendered it penal to profess, that it was not his remotest intention to proceed against the exiled chieftains and their followers on account of their religion, intimating that they were too barbarous and ignorant duly to know or appreciate any form of religion, therefore it would be both absurd and unjust to prosecute them on a point they could not understand. It was for their restless sedition that they were become obnoxious to the laws, fomenting as they did intestine rebellion, and by their agents, "priests and Jesuits," applying for foreign assistance, concealing under the false plea of divesting themselves of the English yoke, their deep designs of extirpating all the king's subjects in Ireland of the old English race. We have every reason to believe the sincerity of James in this self-vindication, as he was always ready to dispense with the severity of laws when he found it safely practicable.

Mean time the Irish chieftains, in spite of the remonstrances of the English ambassador in Flanders, were honourably received by the Archduke Albert and the Infanta Isabella, a new company being immediately formed in the archduke's army to give "present entertainment" to their followers; finally they repaired to Milan, where they resided, favoured and pensioned by Philip the Third, notwithstanding his absolute promise not to suffer them to remain in any part of his

dominions, and in defiance of the articles of a treaty which restricted each power from favouring the traitors of the other. But whatever plans James and his ministers had projected for the improvement of the country were for a time suspended, although the principal chiefs of rebellion were removed and others had paid the forfeit of their temerity. The elements of disaffection yet remained in many a bosom, ready to start into action upon the smallest provocation.

In a country where distress and oppression had made so many victims, there were naturally many brooding spirits, and many causes of aggression to justify violence or secret treachery, and in the guerilla wars of the irritated natives the English government found ample employ, while the continued efforts of the oppressed to harass and distress the administration they could have no rational expectation of subduing, served only more closely to rivet the chains which galled them.

Unfortunately for Ireland the government in applying apparent remedies to the evils which annoyed it and filled the country with misery and violence, forgot or seemed unmindful of the deep moral causes which produced them, and to which they should have reverted in order to effectuate any radical change. James seems to have been fully aware of the real causes which had hitherto operated against any improvement or settlement of his Irish dominions, and to have been ardent in the noble care of introducing humanity and justice among a people, possessing many noble qualities, but degraded, nay even depraved, by those principles which are intended and are capable of cherishing and exalting every social virtue; viz. religion and government. By the conspiracies and rebellions which had occurred, a vast tract of land had escheated to the crown. This was covered with

woods, where robbers and rebels found secure shelter. These lands James resolved to dispose of, in such a manner as might introduce the happy consequences of peace and cultivation. A company was accordingly established in London for planting new colonies in a country which only needed the culture of man to repay his toils. The property was divided into moderate shares, and tenants from England and Scotland were placed upon them. The Irish were removed from their hills and mountain retreats and placed in the open country. Husbandry and the arts were taught them, fixed habitations allotted them, plunder and robbery punished, and in process of time Ulster, from being the most wild, disorderly, and disaffected province of Ireland, became the most civilised and best cultivated, and the country must gratefully acknowledge that James here laid the foundation-stone of its structure of civility. In this great and praise-worthy work James was greatly assisted by Sir Arthur Chichester, appointed lord deputy. Endowed with those essential qualities in the character of a statesman, capacity, judgment, firmness, and experience, he was admirably qualified to direct the execution of the king's designs.

Amongst the old Irish chieftains who were included in the plans, were those who had engaged in the rebellion of Tirowen, and yet harboured in secret their discontents. To gain them over, if possible, by favour and lenity, particular indulgences were granted them. Their under-tenants and servants were allowed to be of their own religion and country, and they were tacitly exempted from taking the oath of allegiance. Scarcely, however, had the lands been severally allotted to the various patentees, when considerable portions were reclaimed by the clergy as their rightful



property, by the title of Termon, Corbe, and Herenach lands. In the northern parts of Ireland which had never been completely reduced, the ancient ecclesiastical institutions remained unaltered, the pope still disposing of clerical dignities. The terms by which they were now claimed were strange and inexplicable to the English government. Jurors in the several inquisitions were therefore required to obtain information on the subject, and many investigations ensued. The learned Usher exercised his abilities and industry in the research, he investigated their nature and origin, and the result was his conviction, that the ecclesiastical institutions of Ireland were similar to those of other countries of Europe, viz. That in ancient times, whoever founded a church, should endow it with certain lands for the maintenance of divine worship therein. The founder was to deliver to the bishop an instrument of such donation before the church could be dedicated, and from thenceforward the ordering and disposing of these lands was entirely vested in the bishop. In consequence of such donation, the lands became exempt from all charges of temporal lords, and were entitled to the right of sanctuary and other immunities. Hence they were called Tearmuin or Termon, or *privileged lands*. They were occupied by laymen who husbanded the same, both for the behalf of themselves and families, and likewise for the use and benefit of the church. They were called ecclesiastical tenants. To receive and apply the rents paid by such tenants it was deemed necessary that every church should have its archdeacon called by the Irish, *herenach*. We are to understand however, that these archdeacons were an inferior order to the presbyteri, not those who exercise jurisdiction immediately under the

bishop. A number of these *herenachs* were superintended by an officer of greater dignity, called Corbe, or Comburba, ranking as archipresbyter. This term, Comburba, frequently occurs in the Irish annals, and, in fact, signifies the prelate himself, or first successor of the Irish saint who presided in his diocese. Thus the Comburba of St. Patrick, means the then Archbishop of Armagh; the Comburba of Kienan, the Bishop of Clonmacnoise. The *herenachs*, under the direction of the *corbes*, resided on the Termon lands, and distributed their profits to the bishop, the inferior clergy, to the repairs of the church, the maintenance of hospitality in the proportions established in each diocese. They, like other ecclesiastics in early times, were under no injunctions of celibacy, their office and dignity, with the emoluments annexed to them, descended therefore, frequently, to their children, and the lands entrusted to them were held by their particular sept in succession. At the period, however, of which we treat, the estates of the northern bishoprics of Ireland, had become so embarrassed and unsettled, by the usurpations of the chieftains, the claims of patentees, and various other causes, that they scarcely afforded a competent, much less an honourable provision, for men of worth and learning, while the state of the parochial clergy was deplorable. During the recent wars, most of the northern churches had even been destroyed, others were fallen to ruin. The benefices were small, and such was the general abuse, that they were kept by the bishops in the way of canmondam, or sequestration, or what was even worse, filled with ministers unworthy their important office. Under these deplorable circumstances, the wretched flock were abandoned to their unchecked passions, and the

darkness of their ignorance, for many years divine service not having been performed in any parish church of Ulster, except in cities and large towns.

These abuses imperiously demanded attention and remedy ; the king therefore ordained, in order to make some provision for the instruction of a people immersed in such lamentable ignorance, that all ecclesiastical lands should be restored to their respective sees and churches, and that all lands should be deemed ecclesiastical from which the bishops had, in *former times*, received rents or pensions. He directed also that compositions should be made with the patentees, for the scite of cathedral churches, the residences of bishops and dignitaries, and other church lands ; they were to receive equivalents, if they compounded freely, but if not, they were to be deprived of their patent, on the ground that the king had been deceived in his grant, as he intended not to convey church lands to them, and considered the obligation of restoring them. In order to provide for the inferior clergy, the bishops were required to resign their impropriations, and relinquish the tithes paid them out of parishes, to the respective incumbents, for which they received ample recompense out of the king's lands. Every portion allotted to undertakers was constituted a parish, with a parochial church to each. The incumbents, besides their tithes and duties, had glebe lands assigned to them, in proportion to the extent of their parishes ; and to provide and ensure a succession of worthy pastors, free-schools were endowed in the principal towns. Considerable grants of lands were also conferred on the university of Dublin, together with the advowson of six parochial churches, three of the largest, and three of middle proportion in each county. Such

was the noble plan which justly entitles James to the praise of being the benefactor of Ireland, conferring upon him an honour far superior to the transient glory of successful ambition, or the acquisition of territory. Surely a monarch who thus estimates national prosperity by the diffusion of virtuous happiness, and in consistency with this maxim employs the prerogative of his high station in every lawful measure, to stimulate the idle to exertion, to encourage industry, to restrain licentiousness, to cherish and protect religion and true liberty, is worthy to be ranked among the first of human benefactors, has a just claim to the warmest gratitude of his people, and to the generous esteem of mankind; and to such an individual, whatever may be his station, whatever may be the general imperfection of his character, as in that of James, posterity, in referring to his Irish settlements, must regard with emotions of veneration his endeavours to promote the virtue, and ameliorate the state of an unhappy country. The auspicious effects of his generous policy soon appeared, although the imperfection which attaches to every human plan, was evident in the inadequate execution of the design, compared with the original idea. But with all the drawbacks which the apathy of some, the cupidity of others produced, a number of loyal subjects were introduced into a part of the country, which their industry converted from a desolated waste, the haunt of rapine and violence, into cultivated fields and cheerful towns, continually improving in civilization.

To encourage the industry of the settlers, as well as to advance his own projects, the king incorporated several of the towns, so as to give them a right of representation in the Irish parliament, thus gradually elevating them in the scale of being, by uniting them with the strong

bond of a community of interests, and making them participants of that government they had hitherto regarded with hatred and jealousy. The right thus vested in the towns of the infant settlement was soon brought by circumstances into action.

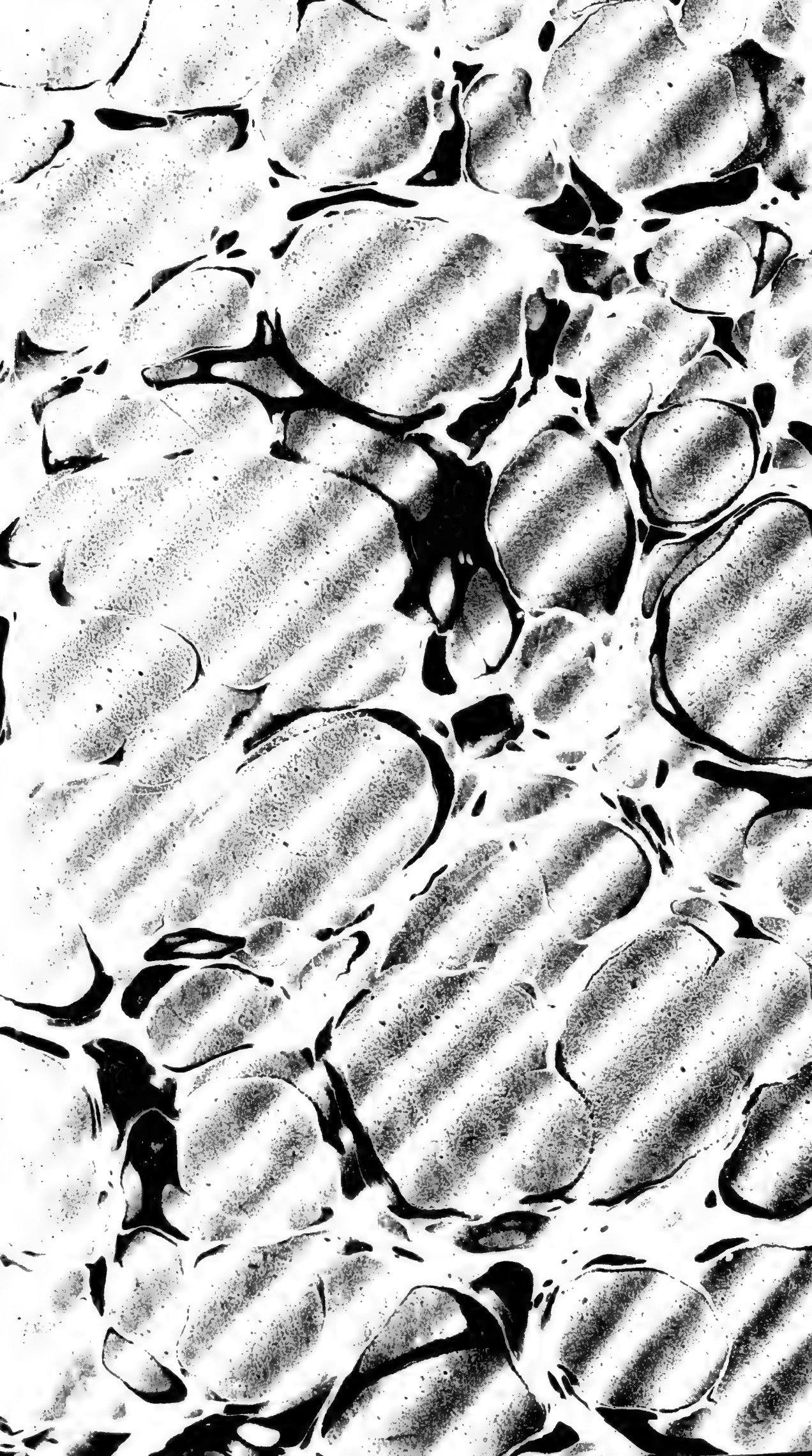
END OF VOL. I.

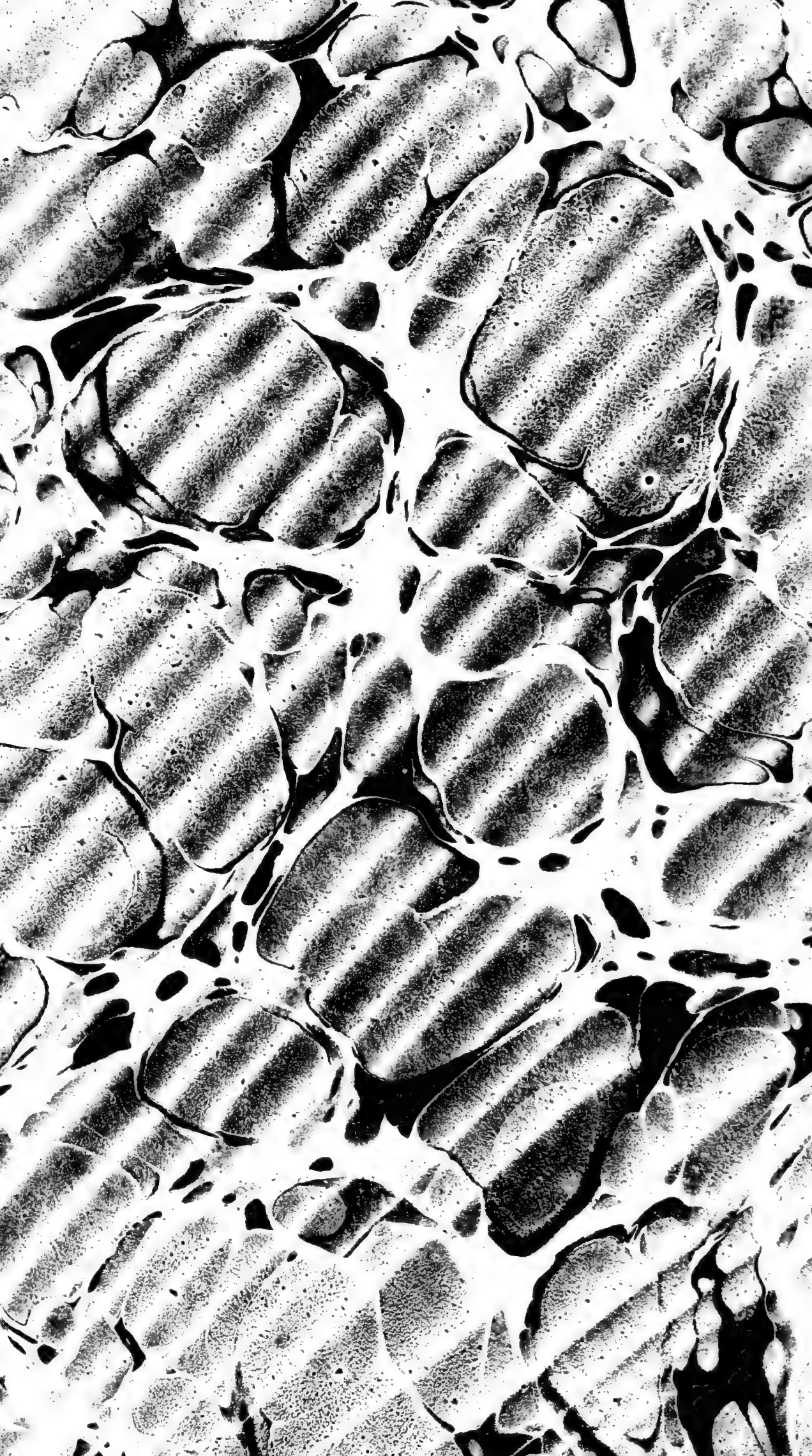
LONDON:

IBOTSON AND PALMER, PRINTERS, SAVOY STREET, STRAND.











# **IRELAND IN PAST TIMES;**

**AN HISTORICAL RETROSPECT,**

**ECCLESIASTICAL AND CIVIL;**

**WITH**

**ILLUSTRATIVE NOTES.**

*Præterita compellunt nos futurorum rationem habere.*

**IN TWO VOLUMES.**

**VOL. II.**

**LONDON :**

**JOHN HATCHARD AND SON, PICCADILLY;**

**B. DUGDALE, AND R. M. TIMS, DUBLIN.**

**1826.**



**LONDON:**  
**IBOTSON AND PALMER, PRINTERS, SAVOY STREET, STRAND.**

941.5

Ir 21

v. 2

## CONTENTS.

---

### CHAPTER XV.

High regard of the king for Chichester—Grants him the territory of Innishowen—Penal statutes—Civil disabilities—Oath of supremacy—Its original mildness—The conduct of the pope—Catholic party—Causes of animosity—Difficulty of governing a people with bitter religious antipathies—A parliament called—Fears of the recusants—Unjustifiable measures resorted to—The nobles address a letter to the king—Requisition neglected—Splendid entry of the recusant party into Dublin—Opening of the parliament—Violence and disorder ensue—Conduct of lord deputy—Parliament prorogued—Difficult task of Chichester—Recusant lords and commons write to the king, praying to be heard by their agents—Lord deputy sends agents to counteract those dispatched by the lords—Recusants admitted to plead their own cause—The result—King's speech—Spirit of opposition in some degree allayed—Judicious moderation of the lord deputy—Oppressive acts repealed—A subsidy granted—Complacency of the king—Convocation of the clergy for forming a confession of faith—Usher—Articles of the Irish church—Chichester created baron of Belfast—Recalled to England—Succeeded by Sir Oliver St. John—Enemies of St. John prevail—He is created Viscount Grandison of Ireland—Lord Falkland nominated governor—Clamour against Usher—His abilities—Military establishment requisite—Success of the settlements—Spirit of insurrection quieted in proportion—Dangerous measure of training men for foreign service—Death of James—The accession of Charles deemed favourable to the Catholic cause—Bull of Urban VIII.—Royal promise—Meeting of nobility—Proposal of contribution for the repeal of penal

laws—Protest of the prelates—Overtures to Charles—Concessions of the king—Excesses of the recusants—Remonstrance of protestant clergy—Proclamation of Falkland—Lord Falkland recalled—Viscount Ely and earl of Cork, lords deputy—Sir Thomas Wentworth governor—Partiality of the king for Wentworth—Lord Strafford creates him enemies—Their malignity—His erroneous ideas in respect to Ireland—His prejudices—His conduct respecting the Earl of Cork—Unpopularity of Strafford's government—Proceedings of parliament—Convocation of the clergy—Laudable measures of Strafford—Unity of the Churches of England and Ireland accomplished—High commission court established—Introduction and encouragement of the linen trade—Benefits from Strafford's administration—Influence of the Scottish religious dissensions on Ireland—Wentworth recalled to England—Commits his government to two lords justices—He is invested with the garter, created Earl of Strafford and made lord lieutenant of Ireland—Unity of the parliament—Subsidies granted—Proceedings against the university—Effects of Strafford's arrangement and death on Ireland—Fair prospect of tranquillity. . . . . 2

## CHAPTER XVI.

Invidious distinctions in Ireland—Strong prejudices—Just causes of them—Contrasted view of Catholics and Protestants—Irish easily acted upon—Roger Moore—Sketch of his disposition and character—Phelim O'Nial enters into the conspiracy—Crisis arrives—Apathy of government—Conspiracy discovered—Conduct of lords justices—General insurrections—Horrid cruelties committed—Supineness of the lords justices—Ormond remonstrates—Earl of Clanricarde—Unhappy situation of the king—Narrow policy of English ministers—King memorialized, Lord Dillon the bearer—Lords justices endeavour to counteract it, and succeed—Rebel leaders profit by the circumstance—Sir Charles Coote—Rebellion extends to the pale—Moore intrigues with Lord Gormanston—He joins the conspiracy—Dublin threatened with siege—Manifestoes circulated—Rebellion extends—Moderation of many Roman Catholic ecclesiastics—Legal conviction of rebels—Mercenary spirit of the lords justices—Mac Mahon—His confession—Sir John Read put to the rack—Patrick Borewall endures the torture—Insinuations against the king—Indignant feelings of Charles—He resolves to pass over to Ireland—Alarm of the lords justices—King not permitted to go—Dis-

appointment of the pale—Lord Gormanston dies of grief—His associates disperse—Rebel forces defeated by Ormond—Lady Offaly—Her spirited conduct—Distresses of the army—Irish parliament sits during three days only—Arrival of Owen O’Nial—His character—Is declared leader of the northern confederacy—Scotch troops arrive—Injudicious severity of parliament—Succours to the rebels sent from Dunkirk—English alarmed—Synod of Catholic clergy—Its decrees—Lord Mountgarret chosen president—General meeting at Kilkenny—Its imposing appearance—Death of Roger Moore—Earl of Castlehaven unites with the assembly—Clanricarde refuses—Policy of the lords justices—Loyalist officers address the king—Noble spirit of Ormond—A treaty proposed with the council of Kilkenny—Delicacy of it—The council make conditions—They are rejected by Ormond—Peter Scaramp minister from the pope—His reception by the old Irish—Articles of treaty agreed upon—Ratified by proclamation—Received with discontent and clamour. . . . . 55

## CHAPTER XVII.

Troops sent to England—Popular clamour against the measure—Unhappy situation of the devoted Charles—Difficulties attending the administration of Ormond—Want of faith in the confederates—Further cause of disunion and distress—The covenant offered—Entered into with ardour by the troops—The popular contagion rapidly spreads—Instance of versatility—The Scotch general Monroe takes the covenant at Carrickfergus—Agreement of the Scotch and English troops—Rebels make propositions to Ormond—He is perplexed—Demands of the commissioners at Oxford—Animosities prevent all final adjustment—Insolent language of the protestants—Agents of the council arrive—Condescension of Charles—He directs Ormond to make peace—Difficulty of the commission—He commences a treaty with the confederates—Perplexities—Proceedings suspended—M’Mahon and Macquire executed—Instability of the king—Perplexity of Ormond—He petitions to be removed—Consent not given—Irish active in strengthening their confederacy—Procrastination of the confederates—Internal weakness of the confederacy—Impatience of the king and insincere conduct—Earl of Glamorgan—Letter from Charles to Glamorgan—His mission to Ireland—His reception—John Rinuccini sent as nuncio by the pope—His character—Articles of his mission—Repeal of penal statutes urged—Opposition to the treaty—Battle of Naseby encourages the confederates to persevere in opposition—They

rise in their demands—Unhappy situation of the king—Disclosure of instruction enrages the confederates—It is shewn in their opposition to Ormond—Glamorgan received with satisfaction—Commission empowering him to treat with the confederates—Objections of the nuncio—Treaty with Glamorgan concluded—Its stipulations—Levies made for the royal service—Ormond's treaty—Perplexed situation of Charles. 98

## CHAPTER XVIII.

Measures of Ormond—Moderation of the assembly—Opposition of the clergy—Nuncio arrives in Ireland—His reception and interview with the council—Proofs of Charles' insincerity—The nuncio protests against the meditated peace—Intrigues with Glamorgan—Gains ascendancy over him—Unforeseen discovery—Gives the enemies of Charles advantage over him—Glamorgan charged by Lord Digby and imprisoned—Is shortly liberated and commissioned to treat with the confederates—Proceedings of the nuncio—Plan of a treaty averred to be framed by the pope—Its extravagant articles—Clergy sign a protestation in favour of it—Glamorgan's chagrin—His activity and private intrigues with Rinunccini—Marquis of Ormond's treaty ratified—Prevailing power in England disclaim the peace—Folly of Rinunccini—His secret intrigues with Owen O'Nial—Creaghts—They are assembled and headed by Owen O'Nial—Ormond's astonishment—Effects his retreat—Success of the nuncio's soldiers—Rout Monroe's forces—Proclamation of the peace attended by universal tumult—Nuncio assumes supreme authority—Oath of association framed—Injudicious conduct of the supreme council—Preston their favourite general beguiled by the nuncio—Rinunccini makes his public entry into Kilkenny—The secret intrigues between Glamorgan and the nuncio—Ormond prepares for the siege of Dublin—Patriotism of the ladies—Difficult and dangerous situation of Ormond—Jealousy of O'Nial and Preston, saves Ormond from the extreme danger of his situation—Contrast of character in the two generals—Perplexity of Rinunccini—Arrival of the English parliamentary army—Council suddenly breaks up—Preston engages to unite with Ormond—Ormond prepares to treat with the English commissioners—Their proposal—Ormond objects—The hopes of Ormond revive—Are destroyed by the dastard treachery of Preston—Ormond is compelled to treat with the commissioners—He concludes a treaty with them—Early



manifestation of their power—Forbid the use of the liturgy—  
 Impatience for the departure of Ormond—Confederates urge  
 him to remain—He embarks for England. 120

## CHAPTER XIX.

Ireland plunged in anarchy and distraction—Catholic armies—  
 Power of the nuncio—His arrogance—Upright conduct of  
 Clanricarde—Affair of Cashel—Conduct of the assembly—It  
 however declares for peace—Rinunccini prevails upon them  
 to send deputations to Rome and Spain—Private commission  
 of the agents sent to France—Answer of the queen and prince  
 —Agents return—Affairs favourable to peace—Catholic con-  
 federacy seems to decline—A treaty of cessation proposed—  
 Untoward circumstances counteract these happy auspices—  
 Rinunccini protests against the cessation—Fulminates an ex-  
 communication—His power weakened by his extravagant pre-  
 tensions—Perfidy of O’Nial—Conduct of the generals—  
 Nuncio’s power passing away—Design of O’Nial—Vigour of  
 the council—O’Nial intrigues with Jones—Is declared a  
 traitor by the council—Appeal to Rome against the nuncio—  
 Proceedings of the assembly against him—He is ordered to  
 depart the kingdom—His indignant fury—Demoralized state  
 of the country—Ormond resumes his power—His proceedings  
 with the assembly—Mutiny in Lord Inchiquin’s army—Treaty  
 suspended—Fleet arrives—Mutiny quelled—Negociation re-  
 sumed—Emissaries from Rome—Effect of the king’s situation  
 in Ireland—Peace proclaimed—Articles of the treaty—Ob-  
 jectionable clause contained in it—The fatal catastrophe of  
 the king—Horror of the Irish—Ormond proclaims Charles  
 the second—Arrival of Prince Rupert—Rinunccini retires to  
 France—Ormond confirmed in his government—He is left to  
 his own energies—Is aided by Clanricarde—Charles pre-  
 vented from going to Ireland—Ormond obliged to take the  
 field—O’Nial enters into secret correspondence with the par-  
 liamentarians—Unfortunate affair of the fort—Government  
 of Ireland, an object of intrigue—Cromwell is chosen governor  
 —He lands at Dublin—Reception—Takes the field—His de-  
 cision—Summons Drogheda to surrender, on refusal orders  
 an assault—Terror infused by the barbarity of Cromwell—His  
 entire success—Operations of Ormond defeated—Continued  
 success of Cromwell—Bishop of Ross—Cromwell retires to  
 England—Resigns his army to Ireton—Ormond expostulates  
 with the clergy—They publish a declaration against Ormond  
 —Success of the parliamentary army—Bigoted fury prevailing

—Concession of Charles in his declaration to the Scots—The effects of it—Ormond's spirited conduct—Protestation of the clergy—Ormond prepares for his departure—The alarm of the assembly—Earl of Clanricarde appointed lord deputy—Loyalty of Clanricarde—Versatility of the clergy—Their hatred of Clanricarde—Proposal to the Duke of Lorraine—Lorraine sends an envoy to Ireland—Proceedings of the negotiation—The duke invested with authority—Exultation of the clergy—Transactions of Ireton—Sir Phelim O'Nial suffers an ignominious death—Severities of Ireton—Reduces Limerick—Dies of contagious fever—General Ludlow succeeds in the command—Clanricarde accepts conditions, and retires to England—His death. . . . . 141

## CHAPTER XX.

Fleetwood appointed to the government of Ireland—Four individuals united with him as commissioners of parliament—They declare by proclamation that the rebellion is subdued—The proceedings of the commissioners—Effects of the revolution, which placed Cromwell in power, upon the Irish—Henry Cromwell sent to Ireland—Jealousy of Cromwell—Parties inimical to his accession of power—Appoints Fleetwood lord deputy of Ireland, with a council—His instructions—Suspensions of Cromwell's enemies—A refractory spirit subsists—Alarm of Cromwell—Liberal and equitable government of Henry Cromwell—His popularity—The protector supported—His death. . . . . 182

## CHAPTER XXI.

Religion important, if regarded merely as to its influence on civil government—The Romish faith loses considerable ground—Luxury and magnificence of the cardinals—Ecclesiastic affairs—Division of monastic orders into two general classes—Congregation of St. Maur—Enquiring spirit of the age—Benedictines—Jansenists—Oratory of St. John—Priests of the missions—Daughters of charity—Attacks against the Jesuits—Advantages of literature derived from them—Religious system of the Romish church not improved—Immoral tendency of the institution of Jesuits—Their great activity and influence—Translation of the Old Testament into Irish—Retrospect of religious opinions—Archbishop Laud—His

error of judgment—Sectaries enjoy liberty under Cromwell—His scheme for regulating the church—Anecdote of Cromwell and Usher—Quakers propagate their tenets—Animosities and controversies—Independents—Presbyterians—The Catholics—Political sentiments of the independents—Cromwell kept all, (however discordant,) in some degree of union—Protestant missions established—Society for the propagation of the Gospel—Boyle's Lectures—Flourishing state of the sciences—Bacon—Empire of superstition shaken—Improvements in the study of history—Its advantages—Eloquence and languages—Painting and sculpture decline—The causes—Cromwell's patronage of the arts—Civil wars favourable to eloquence and oratory. . . . 190

## CHAPTER XXII.

Cromwell's death makes no immediate change in Irish affairs—Richard Cromwell recognized as his successor—Henry confirmed in the government—He resigns his command on the dismissal of his brother—Government administered by commissioners—Ludlow in command of the forces—The royalists are sanguine—Levity of the commissioners—Lord Broghill engages in the royal cause—Sir Charles Coote attends to the overtures of Lord Broghill—Ludlow recalled to London—Operations of the royalists—Council of officers formed—Charles II. proclaimed—His restoration produces important consequences to Ireland—Premature proceedings—Court of claims erected—Jarring interests—Parliament deemed necessary to settle them—Disorders in the ecclesiastical system—Poverty of benefices—Ormond's advice to the king—It is acted upon—The opposers—Settlement of lands perplexing and arduous—Ormond created lord lieutenant—Parliament assembled—Prelates consecrated—Puritans dissatisfied—Act of settlement—Discontents—Schemes of insurrection formed—Ormond's ability—Secret preparations of the disaffected—Leniency necessary—Bill of settlement discussed—Parliament convened—Act of settlement passed—Difficulties of execution—Public mind disturbed by a violent act of the English parliament—Great distress in consequence—Vigilant conduct of Ormond—Manufactory of woollen cloths established—Encouragement of the linen trade—Great activity of Ormond to improve Ireland—Bishop of Down—Ormond's enemies prevail—He is removed from the government—Lord Berkeley nominated—Ireland the chosen scene for rehearsing the political drama to be acted in England—Anti-Remon-

strants—Irish council convened—Intrigues of party—Talbot—His indiscreet measures—Restless intrigues of the discontented—Ormond's perplexity—Petitions from the protestants—Berkeley succeeded by Lord Essex—Address to the king on the affairs of Ireland—Difficulties attending the administration of Essex—Ormond's high qualities—Behaviour of the king—Ormond appointed to his former government—Popish plot—Intrigues of Ormond's enemies—Defeated by his prudence and integrity—He returns to England—Earl of Arran made deputy—Ormond restored—Designs of the Duke of York—Measures taken—Ormond removed—Lord Rochester appointed to succeed—Richard Talbot lieutenant general—Death of Charles—Ormond's recall—Revolution in the prospects of the Irish . . . . . 219

### CHAPTER XXIII.

Charles and James different in character, but united in opinion—Causes of the latter—Catholics of Ireland animated with high expectations on the accession of James—Anecdote—Lords justices—Chancellor Boyle and Earl of Granard—Protestants disarmed—Triumph of the papists—Talbot created Earl of Tyrconnel—Lord Clarendon made lord lieutenant—Boyle deprived of the seals—Protestants displaced for Catholics—Plans of James gradually developed—Tyrconnel returns invested with great power—His violence—Army new modelled—Tyrconnel intrigues in England to impugn the act of settlement—Tyrconnel supersedes Clarendon in the government—Character of Tyrconnel—Protestants emigrate—Arbitrary proceedings of Tyrconnel—Mandate to the university—Tyrconnel seizes the university plate—Second mandate of the king—Tyrconnel stops the pension of the university—James's insincerity—Popish party contend between themselves—Birth of a prince—Unbounded joy of Irish Catholics—General state of national feeling—Arrival of the Prince of Orange in England creates a great sensation in Ireland—Alarming informations—Panic of the people—Protestant associations formed—James's expedition to Ireland—Resolution of the people of Londonderry—Violence of Tyrconnel—Premature measures of the Protestants—James's entry into Dublin—Proceedings of the king—George Walker—Siege of Londonderry—Ill success of the king's troops—He assembles a parliament at Dublin—Proceedings and acts of it—Unjust proscription—Unpopular measures—Arbitrary attempts against the university—Noble conduct of a popish ecclesiastic—

Wretched state of the Protestant clergy—Violences of the Romish clergy—Protestants remonstrate—Severe restrictions of the Protestants—Causes of discontent and disorder—A force sent under Schomberg—His proceedings—Apathy of James's troops—Siege of Carrickfergus—Distress of Schomberg's army—Elation of the king's troops—Make some movements indicating an attack of Schomberg's camp—but retreat—Distresses of Schomberg's army increase—Triumph of the enemy—Effects of religious zeal—Armies retire to winter quarters—William determines to prosecute the Irish war in person—Protestants animated with hope—Their activity—Want of judgment in James's measures—Proceedings of both armies—Departure of James—Disadvantages attending William . . . . . 256

CHAPTER XXIV.

Friends of James determine to prosecute hostilities—Dublin threatened with the evils of anarchy—Spirited and judicious conduct of Fitzgerald—William enters the city—Thanksgivings for his victory—He returns to his camp—Protestant clergy attend him with an address—Causes rendering the government of William unpopular—Oppressive spirit of the English—Irish resolve to prosecute the war—Wretched state of the country—Civil transactions—Rapparees—Decision of the people to trust their cause to the sword—The opposing armies—Conduct of St. Ruth—Enthusiasm excited—The desperate battle—Death of St. Ruth—The Irish defeated—General Ginckle suffers many to retire to Limerick—Irish make a brave defence—Terms of capitulation exorbitant—Siege continued—Ginckle offers liberal terms—Articles signed—Kingdom submits to the English government—Ginckle created Earl of Athlone—Prejudices yet rankle—Causes of discontent and distress—William's interest in foreign concerns produces neglect of home policy—Disputes between him and his parliaments—Perplexed and harassed by opposite parties—Neglect of Ireland—Lord Sydney's severe rule—Abuses in disposing of the forfeited estates, and other causes of complaint—The king entreated to redress them—Promises given, but no steps taken—Party spirit violent—Irish papists oppressed under Lord Capel—Interest formed against him—William Molineux publishes a treatise to prove Ireland entirely independent—Address to his majesty—Its contents—King promises attention—Irish forfeitures a great cause of contention—Commissioners appointed—Proceedings of par-



liament respecting them—Chagrin of the king—Death of James II.—War in consequence of the violation of the treaty of Ryswich—Preparations of William for a brilliant campaign—His death—Accession of Anne—General review of religion and literature . . . . . 303

## CHAPTER XXV.

Ecclesiastical polity—Convocation—Its nature—English constitution—Collision of parties subsequent to the Reformation—William favourable to the Nonconformists—Act of Toleration—Perplexities flowing from the endless diversity of sects—Schism in the church—Nonjurors—High church—Arminians and Quakers—Literature—Newton—Boyle, &c.—Wilkins—Royal Society—Polite literature—Causes of national debasement—Great influence of books . . . . . 325

## CHAPTER XXVI.

Discontent and oppressions in Ireland—Their causes—Lord Ormond invested with the government—A parliament—Its acts—Intrigues of the catholics—Discontents of England, have great influence on Ireland—Acts of the clergy—Sacheverell tool of the tory party—Excitement of popular feeling—Sacheverell impeached—Impolicy of the measure—The trial and sentence—Changes in the administration—Conclusion of a peace—Marlborough removed—Parties equally violent in Ireland—Contentions and acrimony of the parliament—Duke of Shrewsbury governor—Prorogues the parliament—Returns to England—Leaves Chancellor Phipps and the Archbishop of Armagh justices of the kingdom—Hopes of the jacobins elevated by the peace of Utrecht—Demise of the queen—Accession of George the First—Impeachment of the Duke of Ormond, with the Lords Oxford and Bolingbroke—Ormond and Bolingbroke escape to France—Parliament of Ireland—Its disposition and acts—Pretender passes into Scotland—Commences operations—Attacked and routed by the royal army—State of popular feeling—Parliaments made septennial—Acts of the English parliament of 1718—Discontents and disorders—South Sea scheme—Noblemen committed to the Tower—Atterbury banished—Oppressions and grievances in Ireland—Practice of appeals from

the Irish to the English parliament, complained of as an intolerable grievance—English parliament brings in a bill for the better securing the independence of Ireland—Affair of Wood—It increases the popular irritation—Tranquillity enjoyed under the government of Lord Carteret—An upright parliament—Judicious acts and regulations—Lord Carteret succeeded by the Duke of Dorset—Lord Chesterfield's popular administration—Charles Lucas—His political character—French invasion—Parliament assemblies—Loyalty of the Irish—Hostile invasion—Siege of Carrickfergus—French take and plunder it—They sail—White Boys—Causes of popular commotion—Sufferings of the people—Judge Aston—The catholics protest their loyalty—Disturbances in Ulster—The cause—Oak Boys—Steel Boys—Their disorders—Commercial restrictions—Calamitous effects to the country—Irish affairs taken into consideration, but unsuccessful in result . 340

## CHAPTER XXVII.

Latent discontent—Crisis of affairs—The roused spirit of the Irish volunteers—Irish parliament address the king—Irish affairs discussed in the English parliament—Propositions of Lord North—Acts of parliament—Popularity of Lord North in Ireland—Discontent manifested—Increase of volunteer associations—Letters of Owen Roe O'Nial—Mutiny bill—Henry Grattan—Discontents—Reviews—Anticipated invasion of Ireland—Bad policy of the government—Resolution of the volunteers—Meet at Dungannon—Proceedings—Mr. Grattan moves an address to his majesty—Association formed—Duke of Portland appointed lord lieutenant—Grattan renews his address—Succeeds in it—His great popularity—Jealousies continue—Conduct of Britain equivocal—Lord Temple appointed lord lieutenant—Representation to the English parliament—Result satisfactory—Effects of French revolution in Ireland—Character of the Irish—Mischievous union of religious opinions and political party spirit—United Irishmen—Their reforming views—Bill for the relief of the catholics—Military force—Proceedings of United Irishmen—They publish a manifesto—Disunion of the Irish—Catholic convention—Proceedings—They prepare a petition to the king—The result—Jealousies increase—Popular excitement—Debates respecting the Irish in the British parliament—Earl Fitzwilliam recalled—Lord Camden governor—Public ferment—Activity of United Irishmen—Revolutionary spirit—They apply to the French government—Lawless excesses—French prevented

landing—Proclamation—Martial law—Organization of Society of United Irishmen—Prejudices against the catholics—Societies of Orangemen—The activity of reforming emissaries—Inflammatory document—Effects—Intercourse with the French—Invasion attempted, abortive, as also was a second attempt—Determination of the government—Members of Directory arrested—Proclamation—Military execution—Distresses—Severity of government—Insurrection checked—Dreadful ravages—Insurrection spreads—Measures of coercion necessary—The consequences . . . 356

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

Rebels murmur—Instance of undue military ardour—Insurrection in Wexford—John Murphy raises the standard of rebellion—Excesses and distresses—Rebels attack Enniscorthy—Town fired—Garrison forced to abandon it—Distress of the fugitives—Wexford an insecure asylum—The place evacuated—Retreat to Duncannon—Gorey abandoned, dreading the rebels—Father Kern—Attack Bunclody—Rebels repelled—Victory important in its consequences—Habits of the rebels—Distressed state of the country—Affair of New Ross—Insurgents suffer—Superstition of the common people—Affair of Arklow—War religious—Rebels act on the defensive—Their principal post on Vinegar Hill—Father Philip Roche—The royal army force the head quarters of the rebels—Surprise a force under Roche—Dreadful situation of the protestants—Pleasing instance of the humanity of Philip Roche—Army commanded to march to Vinegar Hill—The attack—Non-attendance of one division of the army—The rebels escape by the opening—Enniscorthy relieved; and also Wexford—Horrible massacres—Comparative quiet of Ulster—Affair of Ballinahinch—Rebels at length disperse—Wexford insurgents, their operations, they are finally dispersed—Conclusion of the rebellion—Quiet of the capital—Punishment of the rebels—Earl Cornwallis—Treaty between the government and rebel chiefs—Its non-fulfilment—Predatory bands—Cruel policy—Losses of the loyalists—Sufferings of the country, and fatal effects of rebellion . . . 394

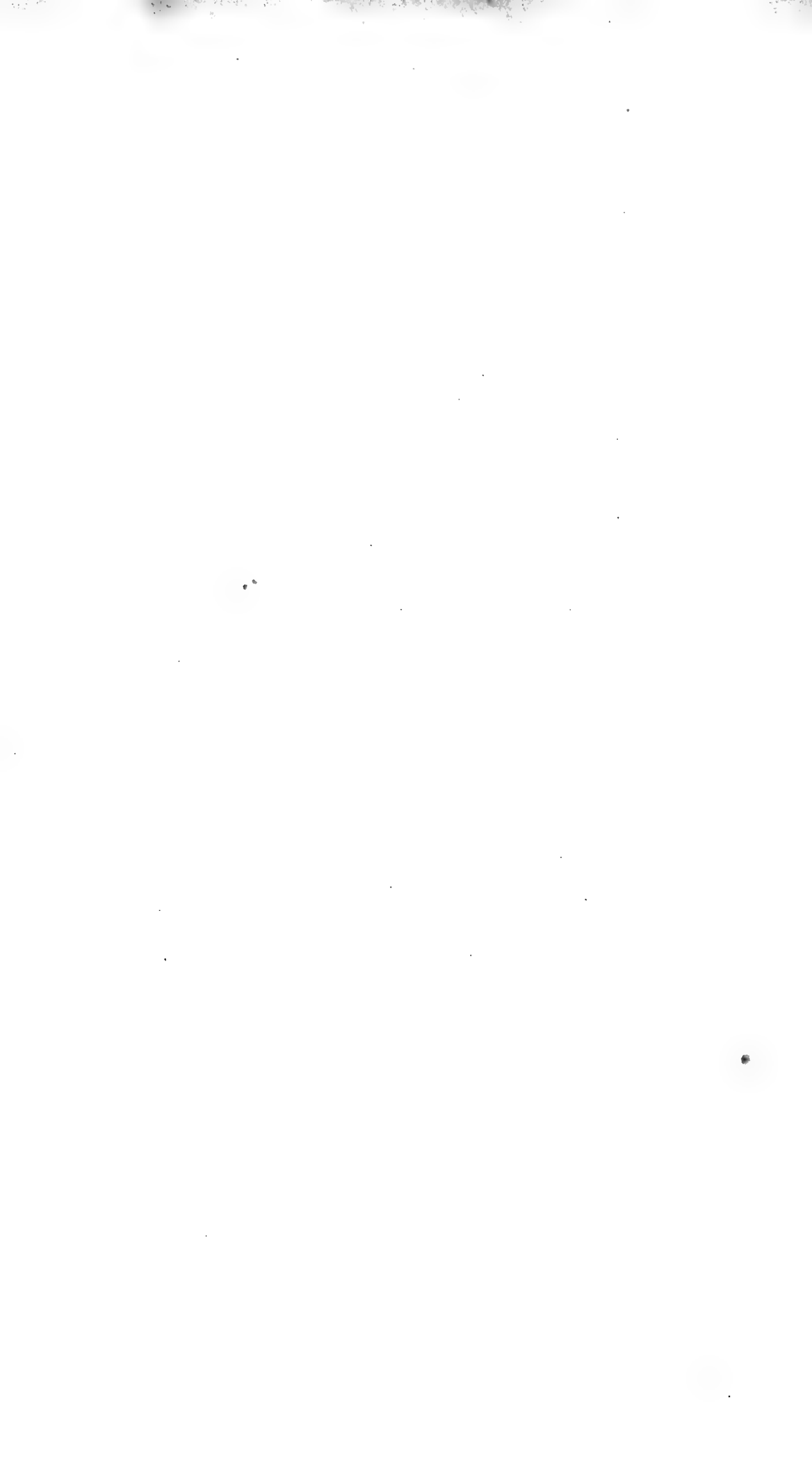
## CHAPTER XXIX.

Succours from France arrive at Killala—Small garrisons—French at first successful, but finally repulsed—Distresses created by this renewal of warfare—The behaviour of the

French at Killala orderly and honourable—Bigotry and superstition of the lower orders of the Irish—Contempt of the French for the priests—Excesses of the Connaught rebels not great—Many tried—Bartholomew Teeling—Matthew Tone—Theobald Wolfe Tone—His trial and suicide—Proposed remedies—Legislative union of England and Ireland—Question agitated in the parliaments of both kingdoms—It is finally agreed upon : articles of the bill—It is not cordially received—First united parliament assembles at Westminster—The claims of the catholics alluded to—Changes in the cabinet—Projected invasion—Spirit of the country—Ireland unquiet—Democratical opinions disseminated—Disturbance in Dublin—Murder of Lord Kilwarden and his nephew Mr. Wolfe—Insurrection suppressed by the military—The chief instigators suffer—Emancipation of the catholics—Their disabilities—The petition—The question agitated—Remark of the king—His determination—Ministry dismissed—Digression—Address to his majesty from Sion College—Also from the city of London—Circumstances apparently favourable to the catholic claims—The question is again agitated—Proceeds favourably, but the bill finally lost—Catholic petition—Observations—Catholic claims again discussed in parliament—Observations . . . . . 413

## CHAPTER XXX.

State of the arts, sciences, and literature, and of pulpit eloquence—The papacy—Its vicissitudes—Concluding observations . . . . . 452





## CHAPTER XV.

*High regard of the king for Chichester—Grants him the territory of Innishowen—Penal statutes—Civil disabilities—Oath of supremacy—Its original mildness—The conduct of the pope—Catholic party—Causes of animosity—Difficulty of governing a people with bitter religious antipathies—A parliament called—Fears of the recusants—Unjustifiable measures resorted to—The nobles address a letter to the king—Requisition neglected—Splendid entry of the recusant party into Dublin—Opening of the parliament—Violence and disorder ensue—Conduct of lord deputy—Parliament prorogued—Difficult task of Chichester—Recusant lords and commons write to the king, praying to be heard by their agents—Lord deputy sends agents to counteract those dispatched by the lords—Recusants admitted to plead their own cause—The result—King's speech—Spirit of opposition in some degree allayed—Judicious moderation of the lord deputy—Oppressive acts repealed—A subsidy granted—Complacency of the king—Convocation of the clergy for forming a confession of faith—Usher—Articles of the Irish church—Chichester created baron of Belfast—Recalled to England—Succeeded by Sir Oliver St. John—Enemies of St. John prevail—He is created Viscount Grandison of Ireland—Lord Falkland nominated governor—Clamour against Usher—His abilities—Military establishment requisite—Success of the settlements—Spirit of insurrection quieted in proportion—Dangerous measure of training men for foreign service—Death of James—The accession of Charles deemed favourable to the Catholic cause—Bull of Urban VIII.—Royal promise—Meeting of nobility—Proposal of contribution for the repeal of penal laws—Protest of the prelates—Overtures to Charles—Concessions of the king—Excesses of the recusants—Remonstrance of protestant clergy—Proclamation of Falkland—Lord Falkland recalled—Viscount Ely and earl of Cork, lords deputy—Sir Thomas Wentworth governor—Partiality of the king for Wentworth, Lord Strafford—creates him enemies—Their malignity—His erroneous ideas in respect to Ireland—His prejudices—His conduct respecting the Earl of Cork—Unpopularity of Strafford's government—Proceedings*

*of parliament—Convocation of the clergy—Laudable measures of Strafford—Unity of the churches of England and Ireland accomplished—High commission court established—Introduction and encouragement of the linen trade—Benefits from Strafford's administration—Influence of the Scottish religious dissensions on Ireland—Wentworth recalled to England—Commits his government to two lord's justices—He is invested with the garter, created Earl of Strafford and made Lord Lieutenant of Ireland—Unity of the parliament, subsidies granted—Proceedings against the University—Effects of Strafford's arraignment and death on Ireland—Fair prospect of tranquillity.*

A. D. 1612.

THE favourite object of James's policy thus succeeding, it is no wonder that with the dispositions he possessed, he regarded with high estimation his principal agent in the important work. With his usual liberality to those who had gained his favour, he vested Sir Arthur Chichester, his active and honourable lord deputy, with the territory of Innishowen, and it was but a just remuneration of the activity, vigilance, firmness, and caution which had marked the conduct of the viceroy in a country just emerging to some tranquillity and order, where disaffection yet brooded, and many still existing evils produced open and public discontent, for however successful had been the plan of reformation, it yet required long perseverance and unceasing attention to perfect. Indeed in the prosecution of the plan many former abuses were to be rectified, which bore hard upon individuals and caused great murmuring, but the principal subject of complaint was the penal laws against recusants.

The penalties, indeed, attached to those who refused to attend the reformed worship, or others to which recusants were exposed, were not made a subject of complaint, for they were so little exacted, that they could scarcely have been deemed a restraint. It was the legal disabilities

contracted by recusancy which were declaimed against with violence and acrimony. Taking the oath of supremacy was a necessary qualification for the enjoyment of any office, service, or promotion. No one could be preferred to any degree in the university, without previously taking this oath. No peer, or subject of consequence who refused it, could be admitted to a degree of a privy counsellor, or take any part in the administration of government. Neither could magistrates, or justices of the peace legally act, unless they yielded to it, nor could recusant lawyers, a large and powerful class of the community, be regularly admitted to plead at the bar, much less be advanced to the station of judges, without taking this oath. At the period that this test was enjoined, viz. on the discovery of the gunpowder conspiracy, the king had interposed to modify its severity, and to render it one of the least offensive tests ever imposed by authority. It is simply a declaration of civil obedience to the prince, with an absolute renunciation of the *deposing* power of the pope. On the king's actual supremacy it was silent, and as it trenched on no part whatever of the Catholic faith, (except, indeed, that of renouncing the deposing power of the pontiff,) it was cheerfully taken by Blackwell, the arch-Roman Catholic priest in England, and through his influence by a considerable number, both of priests and laymen. James was well pleased that he had succeeded in his tolerating expedient, by which he thought to soften the hostility of his Catholic subjects, when, to his and their mortification, the sovereign pontiff rose fiercely in defence of his absolute prerogative of *making* and *unmaking* kings, and in a very earnest brieve, exhorted his faithful children to incur all tortures, and even the pains of martyrdom, rather than

compromise with their consciences on so tender a point, and reproaching those who had done so. We shall not enter into the controversy which this produced; suffice it to say, that the state policy of James, at one period of his reign, made him desirous greatly to relax the penal statutes against Catholics, and so plainly did this appear, that it created the suspicion and jealousy of the puritans, and there is reason to think, had it not been for the energy and spirit of the latter, the ancient religion would have upreared its gigantic form with new strength and vigour. It was in the spirit of this indulgence on the part of James, that the laws regarding recusancy in Ireland were more especially greatly relaxed in the execution, and numbers of magistrates, justices of the peace, and lawyers, were never even required to take the oath, except on some very extraordinary occasions of insolence, or defiance of government.

But minds clouded by passion and prejudice are difficult to manage: though enjoying the privileges of this indulgence, the spirit of the old English race, and the pride of the Irish, equally disdained to owe those advantages to a precarious connivance, which they believed they might claim as their right.

The lords and principal inhabitants of the pale had ever loudly complained of the neglect and contempt of the government under which they lived, and their indignation now arose very high at those additional disqualifications which barred every access to offices of trust and honour.

It has been most justly observed, that when the religious principles of men expose them to great disadvantages in the society of which they form a part, they are particularly bound to investigate and strictly examine those principles, lest they sacrifice the interests of themselves and

their posterity to an illusion ; and more especially to ascertain that no spirit of party be mistaken for the principle for which they contend. To this investigation and self-examination the very genius of Catholicism is adverse, the mind being reduced by its dogmas and discipline to a state of indolence and acquiescence, most favourable to a pertinacity of error, while a desertion of the communion is attended with such consequences of disgrace and terror, as few minds have the vigour to resist, or the courage to meet. At the period we now allude to, the Catholics of Ireland, united in prejudices, opinions, and interests, formed a numerous party, perhaps the more dangerous and formidable, as they seemed not prompt to break out in the ebullition of rebellion, without a rational or concerted scheme ; but brooding over their real and imagined wrongs, practised in secret against that administration, towards which they outwardly bore themselves with professions of zealous and devoted loyalty. Thus the friends of government were completely beguiled, and insensible of the danger which was inclosing them.

It is a truth we think cannot be controverted, that unless the hearts of men are fully imbued with the genuine spirit of Christianity, or they have, on the contrary, arrived at a perfect indifference to religion otherwise than as a political engine, that a difference in theological opinions will necessarily lead to prejudice and aversion, should they be brought into the arena of controversy or debate. When a man steps forward as the advocate for what he deems the truth, he encounters, perhaps, scorn and opposition in its defence ; in proportion to the resistance, his self-love rises in degree, and he is too apt to feel exalted in his own estimation, and hence the feelings of con-



tempt and aversion are insensibly engendered in his bosom against those who have dared to impugn his opinions, or to call in question the results of his judgment.

In the opening of the seventeenth century, many such sentiments were awakened into being, sects and systems of religion were subjects of importance, and in settling the superiority of this or that form, in examining the justness of this or that doctrine, the spirit of religion as an operative principle on the heart and tongue, was in a great degree lost. The reformed looked with abhorrence on the partizans of idolatry, the Romanists with equal rancour and virulence inveighed against heresy and apostacy. The consequences of these bitter religious dissensions could not but be seriously apprehended by those who were to govern such discordant elements; and in order to avert the rising storm, so that the incipient political tranquillity which had begun to show its effects in the country might not be destroyed, it was deemed necessary by the constituted authorities to convene a parliament in Ireland. A period of twenty-seven years, passed in tumult and distraction, had elapsed, since a parliament had been held in the kingdom, and, of course, the important changes which had taken place in that long interval rendered the calling of a legislative assembly of high importance, and a necessary measure. Publication was therefore made of the royal intention to form such an assembly, and the subjects were invited to exhibit their grievances, and to consider of provisions for the public welfare. This measure, however, although so politically called for, awakened the fears of the numerous party of recusants. A thousand conjectures were formed as to the motives which had

urged the government to the design, and their jealousy was rendered the greater, as they were not admitted to any communication with the governing powers. Nor were these fears and jealousies unnatural. A number of new boroughs, many of them too poor to afford wages to their representatives, must necessarily be entirely influenced by government, and, of course, its creatures and immediate dependents would be returned.

Such an accession of power, so easily calculated, could not fail to encourage the administration to act without check or reserve, and to indulge to the utmost its prejudices, passions, and resentments. It was therefore natural for those known to be inimical to the government, to dread additional severities against those who persisted in their adherence to the Romish communion, and if further penal statutes were not enacted against them, to expect that those would be revived and enforced, which had in a great degree become a dead letter. It was not, however, the genius of the party knowing its own strength and popularity, and conscious of its power, to await the event in submission and despondency. On the first declaration, therefore, of the royal intentions to call a parliament in Ireland, six noblemen of distinguished consequence in the pale, addressed a letter to the king, in which they plainly and boldly express their apprehensions from a design of convening a parliament, without the laws therein to be enacted being vouchsafed to be made known to them, and others of the nobility. Intimating the insignificance of the new boroughs, and the corruptions and abuses which must thence ensue, if they were suffered to have influence in the purposed assembly, and further assuring the king, that if "he shall be

pleased to repeal the penal laws against the Catholics, he shall settle their minds in a firm and faithful subjection." The bold and fearless language of this remonstrance did not suit the royal ears of James, accustomed as they were to that of adulation and acquiescence; and although the complaints which it breathed were qualified by that strain of compliment known to be acceptable to the individual addressed, it was pronounced by James rash and insolent, and its requisitions were not deemed worthy of attention. The recusants, therefore, took their measures accordingly.

In the meanwhile the writs were issued, and every effort was made for strengthening the government party, and the recusants were indefatigable in forming theirs. Agents were sent from the pale into every province to support the elections of their friends, and to intreat the interest of the wealthy. The clergy preached the endangered cause of religion, and denounced their anathemas on those who should presume to vote against the friends of the holy Romish church. They went still further with the vulgar and ignorant, by assuring them that their favourite chieftain and champion, Tirowen, was preparing to invade the kingdom, and that there was no doubt if they stood firm to the faith, it would finally prevail over the heretics. In short, all the devices of policy and faction were employed, and with such manifest success, that most of the privy counsellors were rejected as knights of shires, for the most factious and turbulent lawyers, their competitors. Exulting in their success, and well aware of the influence of pomp and pageantry upon the popular feeling, the principals of the recusant party made their public entry into Dublin, with every circumstance of

splendour and magnificence. Bands of armed followers attended them, equally indicating their resolution of resistance, and their fear of being opposed. They objected to the castle of Dublin as the seat of session, under the plea that they were in danger of perishing by an explosion of gunpowder, and where the lord deputy's guard surrounding the house of parliament, could not fail to controul the freedom of debate. The clamour ran the higher, as the recusants had now the mortification to find themselves mistaken in their numbers. The returned members, and no others, were admitted, and directed to enter without arms. After the usual address from the throne, they were commanded to elect their speaker. The competitors for this office were Sir John Davis, the Irish attorney-general, recommended by the king, and Sir John Everard, a recusant of respectability, who had been justice of the King's Bench, but resigned on objecting to take the oaths, and had been granted a pension. But the party who had to give their suffrages in his favour contended, that the right of electing should first be ascertained, and they called in question the legality of the returns of many of the members. On the other side, it was urged that the speaker must first be chosen, committees then be formed, and the questioned elections examined and decided. A scene of violence and disorder ensued, which must ever reflect disgrace on the Irish parliament of 1613; the detail would be tedious and unnecessary; but the violence, the seditious menaces and exultation of the recusant party were so great, their open declarations of resistance, their agitations and cabals, their numerous followers, the popular clamour in favour of their cause so loud, that it was justly alarming to the state, destitute of any protecting

force, except an inconsiderable body of foot, and two hundred cavalry.

Every thing bore the appearance of a rising insurrection in the capital. The lord deputy however continued firm and moderate. By proclamation he commanded, by notices he separately summoned the seceding lords to attend their duty, he even remonstrated and in some degree conceded, and when he found every effort unavailable to allay the ferment, without resorting to any severity, he prorogued the parliament in which he could not persuade them to act, in order to give time for the violence of passion, and the bitterness of party spirit on each side to subside and soften. But Chichester like his royal master had two violent parties to please, and this was as arduous a task as to reconcile them. The conduct which he had pursued though in strict consistency with his accustomed moderation and discretion, and evidently in this instance the dictate of wise policy, was yet highly displeasing to the Puritans. Recollecting, with feelings not exempted from envy, the indulgence shewn to several rebels in the distribution of the Ulster lands, and the general lenity shewn towards the recusants, they condemned Chichester for that which formed his highest praise, his perseverance in a system of moderation, and now openly declared their conviction that he was utterly incapable of governing an unruly people, not daring to exercise his authority with the necessary vigour. These complaints and discontents reached even the privy council. It was alleged that on the accession of James, the enemies of the crown were so weak, that by a due execution of the laws the people might have been with ease reduced to any conformity. But by imprudent and unmerited favour shewn towards old rebels, by allowing their



meetings, by relaxing the authority of law, and other temporising courses, encouragement and opportunity had been given to the old Irish to correspond with foreign traitors, to harbour priests and Jesuits, by whom they were rendered obstinate and desperate, to attempt any wickedness and to resume their ancient tyrannical authority over their inferiors. The present strength and confidence of the popish party, their insolence, and the danger to be apprehended from their sedition was attributed to this injudicious indulgence and weakness of the chief governor. Aware of the lenient and moderate dispositions of his royal master, Chichester felt little alarm at these discontents of the puritan party. He therefore continued the same pacific measures, while the party in opposition were indefatigable in support of their cause. Immediately on their secession the recusant lords and commoners of the pale, dispatched letters to the king and English council with a repetition of their grievances, complaining of the corrupt return of the new boroughs, the transactions respecting the speaker, &c. and praying to be heard by their agents, renouncing the royal favour, should they fail in any point of proof respecting their allegations. Men thus engaged in a popular cause, powerfully influenced by their spiritual guides, encouraged by their adherents, feeling themselves degraded, were naturally determined, prompt and decisive. They lost no time in dispatching their agents to the English court to seek redress from the throne. All the zealous leaders of their party were employed in this political mission, and a liberal contribution was speedily made to defray the expenses. The lord deputy in vain endeavoured to prevent those measures. The agents departed, and Chichester had no alternative but to send over certain distin-

guished individuals to counteract the impression these popular agents might make. James received their complaints with temper, as they made the most solemn protestations that they were not influenced by any foreign power, and that so far from conspiring against his life they were ready to defend it with the zeal of faithful subjects. They were received with indulgence in several audiences, and were naturally inspired with confidence from the circumstance. Emboldened by the royal graciousness, they did not confine themselves to the recent transactions of parliament, but entered into many other particulars of mal-administration, beseeching the royal grace and equity to send commissioners to Ireland to investigate the particulars. To this request James assented, and the agents were so elevated that they were impatient of decision. A party of the agents attended the commissioners to Ireland; they were followed by Sir James Gough, who on his arrival spread the joyful intelligence, that he was commanded by the king to assure his Irish subjects that they should freely exercise the forms of their religion, provided they entertained no priests who preached the deposing power of the pope.

As the news of the king having sent a messenger to confer with the deputy speedily reached the capital, Chichester summoned the principal recusants to be witnesses of it. Great, therefore, was his astonishment at the nature of Gough's intelligence. The king had denounced a curse on himself and his posterity if ever he should grant a toleration to the Romanists, and had, moreover, on particular occasions, instructed his Irish ministers, to administer the oaths, and execute the penal laws. Chichester, therefore, was entirely warranted to doubt the assertions of Gough. He

publicly reproved him for the false statements, and seeing the exulting spirit of the recusants raised by it, in order to intimidate them, he by the advice of his council committed Gough to the castle, a close prisoner, until the royal will could be fully ascertained. This measure created no disturbance, because speedy redress was confidently expected. The deputy being summoned to England, they considered but as the prelude to his disgrace, and as the principal points of Irish administration were now to be transacted at the English court, the lords justices for the time being had not much difficulty in exercising their delegated authority, the discontented appearing confidently to anticipate the final success of their agents.

In the meanwhile, James having received from Chichester every information he required, the recusants were admitted to plead their own cause before the council, where it was repeatedly, deliberately, and patiently discussed. Of fourteen returns of which they complained as illegal, two only were found to be so; but in other particulars the king pronounced their allegations to be groundless. In a speech of some prolixity, of which James was so fond, he expressed plainly his displeasure of the frivolous causes of complaint brought before him, and reproved the turbulence and disorder of the *parliament recusants*, as he styled them in a tone of derision. He concluded his severe address to the Irish agents, by observing their conduct had been inexcusable, and worthy of severe punishment, "but which," he added, "by reason of your submission I do forbear, but not remit, till I see your dutiful carriage in this parliament, where, by your obedience to the deputy and the state, and your future good behaviour, you may redeem your by-past miscarriage, and

then you may deserve not only pardon, but favour and cherishing." Thus the contest ended; the complaints of the recusants were rejected, but the mortification was somewhat qualified with expressions of lenity and indulgence. Nothing remained, therefore, for them but to assemble peaceably in the parliament forthwith to be convened, after many prorogations. They could not, however, still the discontent they felt, for they were mortified to see the Protestant religion established above their own, while they possessed the power of resistance. Many devices were practised when the parliament did assemble, in order to obstruct the regular course of public business. But the cautious and conciliating conduct of Chichester, and the temper and moderation of Sir John Everard, to whom they paid particular deference, prevented any very serious consequences arising from the spirit of opposition and discontent that pervaded the recusant party. As the elections had been the principal subject of complaint, and were likely to produce the most violent discussion, they were referred to a committee formed of both parties, and after some inquiry it was resolved that the examination should be suspended for the present session, for the better expedition and furtherance of the public service. This evidence of the amicable disposition of the commons, was requited by moderation on the part of government. Whatever laws might have been projected, none were now proposed affecting the professors or teachers of the Catholic doctrines. Some lawyers had been prohibited pleading at the bar, on refusing the oath. The commons petitioned the lord deputy that they should be restored to their practice. The answer, though not explicit, was not unfavourable, and as a proof that all partialities were avoided, when the sub-

ject was resumed in the house, and one of the members observed that these lawyers were corrupt, and ought not to be allowed to corrupt others, he was called to the bar to substantiate his charge, and his explanation being unsatisfactory, he was committed to custody for his offence. Another instance of the care taken not unnecessarily to provoke the recusants, was the circumstance, that when Sir Oliver St. John moved a bill for keeping the fifth day of November as a religious anniversary, though it could not be instantly rejected, yet it was silently withdrawn.

Amity thus happily prevailing, the business of the session was conducted with less difficulty than had been anticipated. Many oppressive acts were repealed, which had degraded the native Irish, and given the English plea for oppression. All odious distinctions, of every kind, were done away, by the happy union of England, Scotland, and Ireland under one imperial crown, equally entitled to royal protection, and considered dutiful subjects of one monarch. An act of general pardon and oblivion was made in confirmation of the royal edict; and the proceedings of the parliament closed in granting the king a subsidy so liberal and so free, that James returned thanks in a letter to the lord deputy, by which he really did pay them that tribute of praise he had promised to their future good behaviour. "We now clearly perceive," he graciously observes, "that the difficult beginnings of our parliament there, were occasioned only by ignorance and mistakings, arising through the long disuse of parliaments there, and therefore we have cancelled the memory of them, and we are now so well pleased with this dutiful confirmation of theirs, that we do require you to assure them from us, that we hold our subjects of that kingdom in equal favour with



those of our other kingdoms, and that we will be as careful to provide for their prosperous and flourishing estate, as we can be for the safety of our own person." Such is the powerful influence of gold.

In a bill proving so acceptable to the monarch, the recusants took care not to lose their share of merit; they indignantly refuted the report, that any opposition had been intended or made against it. James, with his usual self-complacency, prided himself upon the address by which he had steered his difficult course through the agitations of Irish factions. Much had been effected to do away all invidious distinctions, and to unite in one body and one interest the population of Ireland. Yet some disabilities still existed, more mortifying to the pride of the old natives, whether English or Irish, than injurious or grievous, and the temper manifested by the commons at the opening of the assembly caused some apprehensions respecting the discussion of what might closely affect them; after the passing of the subsidy bill, these apprehensions were in some degree confirmed, and the parliament was abruptly dissolved.

While the assembly was thus employed in regulating the civil affairs of Ireland, a convocation of the clergy was directed to be held in Dublin, 1615. It appeared to the church of Ireland a proper assertion of its independence on that of England, to publish articles of its own, and it was for the purpose principally of framing a confession of faith that the convocation was held. James Usher, D. D. was at this period distinguished for learning and biblical knowledge, and to him the important work was entrusted.

The controversies which at this period engaged the attention, and occupied the pens of pious and

learned men, had naturally been investigated and studied by Usher, and in the examination of the writings of the foreign divines, he had imbibed a large portion of the Calvinistic opinions, and of course the bias of his mind strongly appeared in the profession of faith, which he had so large and primary a share in forming for the Irish church. It consisted of one hundred and four articles, in which were included the nine agreed on at Lambeth, 1595, which had been disapproved by Elizabeth and her successor James. The zeal of Usher was manifested in this elaborate formulary, by his concurrence with the French reformers, in pronouncing the pope to be Anti-Christ. It is well known that James disliked and discouraged the dark spirit of devotion among the puritans in their almost judaical observance of the sabbath; Usher, however, without any condescension to these sentiments of the king, declared in one article that the Lord's-day was to be *wholly* dedicated to the service of God. The profession was adopted by the convocation, and ratified by the lord deputy. Attempts were made to prejudice James against the compiler of these articles, as fraught with the sin most fatal in his reign to clerical preferment—that of puritanism, so repugnant to the king's principles; but James was prepossessed in his favour, by the “Continuation of Jewel's Apology for the Church of England,” a learned work, which Usher had dedicated to James, some time antecedent to his compilation of the articles of faith. James, never remiss in his attention to reward what he deemed ecclesiastical merit, was so just to the piety and erudition of Usher, that, notwithstanding the Calvinistic bias of his opinions, he promoted him to the see of Meath.

The king, elevated by the general success of

his northern settlements, extended them to some parts which had hitherto served as safe retreats to the demi-barbarous natives. The grants of this new scheme of plantation were scarcely effected, when Chichester, without whose agency it hardly could have been accomplished, was created Baron of Belfast, recalled to England, and was succeeded by Sir Oliver St. John. [1616.] By the conduct of this governor in the recent parliament, he appeared to be actuated with peculiar zeal against the Romanists, and this disposition was now soon manifested, by his proceeding to a vigorous execution of the penal statutes.

A dangerous order of men, the popish regulars, who for the most part were educated in foreign seminaries, and who had resorted to Ireland with the most determined hatred towards the government, were the first objects of the vigilance of St. John. They were banished by proclamation, and although the people had been greatly oppressed by these priests, yet the measure was regarded as one of cruel persecution and rigour, and the clamour was loud against the governor. This turbulence was augmented, when the magistrates and officers of justice were peremptorily required to take the oath of allegiance and supremacy. [1617.] The city of Waterford had chosen a succession of recusants as their chief magistrates, who all in their turn refused to take the oath, and as in other particulars also they evinced an aversion, or rather a determined opposition to conformity, a commission was now issued to seize the revenues and liberties of the city. This measure roused the general indignation of the Catholics, even in foreign countries. They made it a plea to inveigh against the general conduct of St. John. With severity and falsehood they charged him with cruel oppressions,

in exacting fines never imposed, and in crowding the prisons with wretched victims of the faith, when, in truth, no one suffered the restraint of a moment. But the measure which proved most prejudicial to the individual interest of St. John, and raised him the most efficient enemies, was an offence he gave to the leading members of the state respecting certain church lands. They had usurped these lands, and expected to keep possession by their influence and power; St. John was indignant at this mercenary corruption and departure from political integrity, he saw the miserable condition to which the clergy were reduced, and with the spirit of a true patriot and a just man, he determined to withstand these powerful usurpers. Men who could act so unjustly, were prepared to become the enemies of him who had the hardihood to expose them; accordingly they united with the popish party in reviling and maligning the fearless St. John. They carried their complaints even to the throne, praying that commissioners should be appointed to inspect the state of Ireland, and the irregularities of the government. Accordingly some individuals, who, from their spirited opposition in the house of commons, had offended James, were sent to Ireland for the purpose requested. Were merit, and reward and success, invariable cause and effects, St. John must have triumphed; but the machinations of his enemies prevailed; he was removed from the administration. But it would appear that the king was obliged to yield his judgment to the circumstances, for St. John suffered no disgrace in his estimation, on the contrary, he soon after created the removed governor, Viscount Grandison, of Ireland, Baron Trogore, of Highworth in England, Lord High Treasurer of Ireland, and privy counsellor of both kingdoms.

The recusants naturally triumphed in the removal of a governor who appeared so determined to oppose them; they pretended that his recall was in consequence of his severity towards them, and encouraged their party to expect yet further and less equivocal manifestations of the royal grace and favour. With this real or affected impression, they proceeded in the most open and undisguised manner to erect abbeys, seizing churches for their own worship, and other acts, which gave just alarm to the reformed clergy.

1622. Lord Falkland had been nominated governor, and Usher, the most distinguished of the Protestant prelates, and whose sentiments were received with reverence, was appointed to preach before the lord deputy on his arrival. Usher judiciously thought this a fair opportunity of displaying his zeal against the Romanists, and of recommending such restraints as might keep them within the bounds of a just reserve, or at least keep them from public insolence. The recusants were highly exasperated at this unpopular and plain doctrine. From the words of the prelate's text, "He beareth not the sword in vain," occasion was taken to exclaim loudly against him, as a cruel and sanguinary persecutor, who pleaded for the extirpation of those who did not conform to the heretical religion established. Such was the universal clamour raised by the artful commentaries of the recusants upon this text, that Usher absolutely found it necessary, in order to appease the public irritation, to preach an explanatory discourse, in which he declared the equity and lenity of his intentions. The abilities of Usher were highly useful to government in this period of religious contest and animosity. When magistrates and others were cited to the council-chamber for recusancy, he enforced the nature



and the lawfulness of the oath of supremacy, with a powerful and manly eloquence. But reason and argument can have little effect against the obstinate prepossessions of party. "There is," says an eminent writer, speaking of party spirit, "a kind of magic circle traced round the subject on which their confederacy turns, which the whole party beats round, and no one can cross, whether it be that by multiplying their arguments they are afraid of presenting to their antagonists a greater number of points of attack, or whether it be that in all men passion is more distinguished by its sameness than by its extent, more by force than variety. Placed at the extremity of an idea, like soldiers at their post, you can never prevail upon them to seek another point of view in the question, and adhering to some principle, as to their chiefs, and to certain opinions, as to oaths, they would consider it as an attempt to seduce them into treason, were you to propose to them to examine, to investigate some new idea, to combine some new considerations."

That the party which was conscious of its number, power, and consequence at this time in Ireland, possessed all this pertinacity, was continually demonstrated, and while we mark its violence and opposition, candour and truth equally demand that we should cursorily advert to the existing causes and reasons of discontent. That no human plans can be brought to bear generally for the public good, without involving in their accomplishment much individual injury none can deny, hence the civilizing measures of James, and his extensive designs of plantation in Ireland, though honourable in motive, and successful in accomplishment, were, in many instances, the means of injuring claims tenaciously held by the native Irish; and when he recurred to the con-

cessions made to Henry II., to invalidate titles derived from the possession of some ages, it was little understood by those unacquainted with the refinements of law, and consequently failed in removing from the minds of the sufferers the severity which appropriated what they considered as their ancient property, nor could the concessions and the added privileges conferred, reconcile the measure to those who thought too superficially, clearly to understand the remote advantages to be derived from present sacrifice. An enlightened and humane policy also may form a just and wise plan of civilization, but it is impossible to ensure that the fair theory shall be brought into practice with the same spirit; neglect, oppression, interest, will interpose their corrupting influence, and the agents of patriotic plans may be actuated by those unworthy motives which no human vigilance can prevent, or human sagacity foresee.

Thus were the good intentions of James in many instances defeated, and fraud, violence, and oppression, marked the conduct of too many of the agents necessarily employed to realize them. Neither the actors nor the objects of such grievances were confined to one religion, the most zealous in the service of government, and the most peaceable conformists were involved in the ravages of avarice and rapine, without distinction of principles or possessions. It is evident that a long train of evils must follow from the indulgence of the avaricious and selfish principles of these agents in a country remote from the seat of government, and in an age of project and adventure, inviting the needy, but not always virtuous, to seek their fortune in Ireland. In fact, proofs are by no means wanting of most iniquitous practices, of hardened cruelty, of perjury, and subornation, employed to despoil the unoffending and fair pro-

prietor of his inheritance, upon the plea of invalid title. Other grievances of inferior nature were urged and industriously aggravated by the discontented, urging them to examine the conduct of administration with severity. Under such circumstances it is obvious that a respectable military establishment was requisite. At the period of James's accession, the force amounted to twenty thousand men, but the reduction of the kingdom and his necessities had diminished it almost to nothing, and what remained, were in utter want of proper discipline, ill paid, ill clothed; and instead of being retained in a body, were dispersed in small parties through the estates of their officers where they cultivated the lands and even were employed in the menial offices of the household. In short, the forces, poor, mutinous and disordered, could hardly be entitled to the name of a military establishment; and in fact, had not the general good policy of the settlements been felt by the native Irish, so as to tranquillize their turbulent spirits, such a force would have been easily annihilated, and the English power defied. It is pleasing to remark, that notwithstanding the grievances we have hinted at, as attaching to the plantations, yet the general good effects of the king's arrangements were become abundantly manifest. Lands formerly waste were cultivated and improved, the commodities of the country increased, towns and villages were built, commerce was carried on with spirit, so that the customs began to afford some revenue to the crown, till then unknown. And it followed of course in proportion as industry and civility advanced, the spirit of insurrection was quieted and controuled. Still there remained, as there must in every human institution, circumstances and occasions requiring vigour, circumspection, and activity on

the part of government. In the country, particularly in the remoter provinces, were many young, active, high spirited men, destitute of employment and ready to join in any enterprise.

James and his council saw the propriety of ridding the country of these turbulent individuals, and therefore gave licence to enlist them for foreign service. The immediate danger of embodying such men, and training them to arms, appears to have been forgotten in the sense of their danger as mere idlers. The officers who were to raise and conduct these daring youths to the continent were mostly the sons or the retainers of the old rebels, devoted to the heir of Tirowen, men who had been bred abroad in extravagant ideas of the ancient grandeur of their families, and consequently of bitter enmity against the English power which had exiled them, and enjoyed the inheritance of their fathers. The influx of these irritated and lofty spirits was attended by consequences which might have been foreseen. They protracted the period of their stay, ranged through the country, curiously examined into its polity, marked its weak points, renewed their old friendships, awakened the interests of their family connexions, practised with the discontented, flattered and confirmed their prejudices, and enticed away the youth to be conveyed abroad for education. Having thus secretly added fuel to the smothered flame, and laid the train ready for future explosion, by slow degrees the transportation of the levies was effected, and the government was freed from an immediate danger which the inefficiency of its military force rendered justly alarming. It could not but be mortifying to Lord Falkland to be appointed to a government unsupported with an adequate force to awe its enemies, and destitute of necessary resources.

His remonstrances to government were repeated and strong, he particularly urged the danger to be apprehended from the recusants, and the consequences of their mutual union and connexion with Rome, as it was discovered that an ecclesiastical hierarchy, with a regular subordination of orders, offices, and persons was established throughout the kingdom by the papal power, that their jurisdiction was executed with as much regularity, and their decrees executed with as full authority as if the pope was in actual possession of the realm. The force and the propriety of Falkland's reasons were fully admitted, but the exchequer of James was empty, and even his credit exhausted. Numberless schemes to raise money were suggested, but before any of them could be brought to bear, James ended his life and reign, marked by many errors of judgment, but certainly honourably free from the vices of the will. The care of providing for the security of Ireland devolved in consequence upon Charles his successor, together with many other perplexities attendant on the commencement of his reign.

1625. On the accession of Charles, the discontented among the Irish regarded the circumstances of the period peculiarly favourable to their views. Involved in foreign war, and embarrassed by domestic faction, the situation of the unfortunate Charles was soon obviously critical, and opened to the disaffected many paths through which they might pursue their artful and ambitious designs. The recusants of Ireland were not backward in availing themselves of the circumstances, they soon manifested a determination to try their strength by showing a contempt of the penal statutes, in refusing all respect to the government of Lord Falkland, while Rome assiduously practised



every art to encourage and inflame them. A bull of Urban the eighth, exhorted them rather to lose their lives than to take the pestilent oath of supremacy, whereby the sceptre of the Catholic church was wrested from the vicar of God Almighty, and much is it to be regretted that upon ignorance and superstition, this senseless blasphemy had its intended effect.

The Irish council, which had been composed of the new English, fraught with the puritanic spirit, were alarmed at this turbulence, which greatly augmented their horror and fears of popery. The danger to be apprehended was strongly represented to the king, who determined to augment the Irish forces; but with every attention to economy in the measure, unassisted by parliament, the expenses could not be met; and Charles had recourse to the dangerous alternative of prerogative. In consequence of which, the army was ordered to be quartered on the different counties and towns of Ireland, who were to maintain the troops in turn for three months at a time. To reconcile the people to this unpopular measure, letters were addressed by the lord deputy to the several communities recommending a cheerful submission, with promise of future royal graces, which should amply repay present extraordinary expenses. These hopes induced a more cheerful acquiescence than might have been expected to a burden so unusual.

The popish party were not more zealous for the interests of their religion, than to extricate themselves from the disadvantages and mortifications of the penal statutes. And like their brethren of England, sought to recommend themselves to the king by supporting unconstitutional measures. In consequence of the desire each party had for a redress of their real or fancied grievances, a grand

meeting of the nobility and gentry, of which the largest portion were Romanists, assembled at the castle, Dublin, offering large contributions to purchase security to their lands, and a suspension of the penal statutes. The lord deputy, so far from discouraging their overtures, advised them to send agents to England to lay before the throne their several complaints. The vague hope of indulgence which this advice implied, was sufficient to elevate the spirits of the popish party beyond reason, which was testified by instances of offensive triumph, as if the desired toleration were already granted. This exultation provoked the Protestant party, leading them to infer that greater concessions had been made by the government than were acknowledged. The degree of aversion may be easily imagined, when it is stated that many of the new plantations had been supplied with teachers from Scotland, rigid puritans. Their churches were formed upon the presbyterian model in all its simplicity, and their members were nothing inferior to their brethren in Scotland, in gloom of disposition and in hatred to every other mode of religion, more especially the Catholic. Many of these ministers had, in conformity to the principles they held, refused episcopal ordination. The circumstances under which James peopled his forfeited lands, rendered a temporising spirit in religious affairs that of good present policy, hence, several bishops, to quiet the scruples of the Scotch ministers, had, with the consent of Usher, their learned metropolitan, ordained them to the ministry without strictly adhering to the established form. In consequence of this indulgence, many of these Scottish teachers enjoyed churches and tythes, without using the liturgy, and gained much respect and authority by their diligence and zeal in their ministry.

When, therefore, the proposal of contributions was made for the repeal of the penal statutes, these sturdy puritans exclaimed loudly against the horrid design of selling the truth, and establishing idolatry for a price. Usher, then archbishop of Armagh, acted with a wisdom and zeal befitting his high station in the Irish church, in this time of peril and offence. He assembled several prelates to deliberate upon the threatened danger, and to bear their testimony against any concession which might be meditated by the state towards the Catholics. The conference was closed by the unanimous subscription of the prelates to a protestation entitled "The judgment of diverse of the archbishops and bishops of Ireland, concerning toleration in religion." "The religion of the papists" says the protest "is superstitious and idolatrous, their faith and doctrine enormous and heretical, their church in respect to both, apostatical. To give them, therefore, a toleration, or to consent that they may freely exercise their religion, and profess their faith and doctrine is a grievous sin, and that in two respects, for first it is to make ourselves accessory not only to their superstitions, idolatries and heresies, and in a word, to all the abominations of popery, but also, (which is a consequent of the former,) to the perdition of the seduced people which perish in the deluge of the Catholic apostacy. Secondly, to grant them a toleration in respect to any money to be given, or contribution to be made by them, is to set religion to sale, and with it the souls of the people whom Christ hath redeemed with his blood. And as it is a great sin, so it is a matter of most dangerous consequence, the consideration whereof we commit to the wise and judicious, beseeching the God of truth to make them who are in authority zealous of God's glory, and of

the advancement of true religion, zealous, resolute, and courageous against all popery, superstition and idolatry." We are informed by the biographer of Usher, that this protestation had a considerable effect in retarding a project, the success of which was necessary to the king's affairs, and that Lord Falkland therefore requested the primate, knowing how greatly he was esteemed by both parties, to urge them to grant an aid without any previous conditions. Usher consented, and was possibly the readier to do so, in order to remove every suspicion of the purity of his conduct, or of his affection to the service of his royal master. His speech on this occasion was energetic, insinuating and pathetic, and so acceptable to the state, that it was immediately transmitted to the court of England. With a similar abhorrence of popery, and indignation at the proposal of compromising religion for lucre, as marked the protestation of the prelates, did the clergy from the pulpits express their dissatisfaction. The publicity with which the popish party presumed to exercise their rites, greatly offended and annoyed the protestants who represented it in a forcible manner to the government in England. It became ever an article of parliamentary remonstrance, that the government of Ireland secretly indulged the popish religion, that it was publicly professed throughout Ireland, and that monasteries and nunneries were everywhere newly erected and fitted with votaries. In despite however of these remonstrances, suspicions, and complaints, the Irish agents suspended not their solicitations to Charles, nor were their overtures unfavourably received. In return for the graces which they thus solicited they made the offer of a voluntary contribution of one hundred and twenty thousand pounds to be paid in three years, by

the way of three subsidies, each amounting to forty thousand pounds, and each of these to be equally divided into quarterly payments. The bounty was accepted, the graces conferred, and transmitted by way of instruction to the lord deputy and council. [1628.] Although these graces allowed indulgence to recusants almost amounting to a toleration, they were generally reasonable and equitable, calculated for the redress of those grievances affecting the people generally, and had a tendency to promote peace and tranquillity. By them it was provided for the better discharge of the pastoral care, that pluralities of benefices should not be bestowed on unqualified persons, that incumbents should be compelled to preach, or keep sufficient curates, that commissions should be issued for enquiring into endowed vicarages possessed by lay impropriators, and to reform the abuse, and that the incumbents of extensive rectories should be enjoined to maintain preaching ministers in chapels of ease.

As the recusants had been loud in their complaints against the demands of the established clergy, it was provided that all unlawful exactions taken by the clergy, be reformed and regulated. The rigour with which their demands had been enforced may be inferred from the annexed injunction to this article. "That no extraordinary warrants of assistance touching clandestine marriages, christenings, or burials, or any contumacies pretended against ecclesiastical jurisdiction are to be issued, or executed by any chief governor, nor are the clergy to be permitted to keep any *private prisons* of their own for these causes; but delinquents in that kind are henceforth to be committed to the king's public gaols, and by the king's officers."

Some circumstances of insincerity in bringing



these concessions into salutary action, certainly appear in the subsequent conduct of the king and his ministers, upon which it is unnecessary here to comment. Yet as the people relied on the royal promise that his graces should be confirmed by parliamentary sanction, those concessions were received with general satisfaction. They seemed to complete the scheme of reformation commenced and pursued by James, and favourably to open to succeeding legislators the facility of correcting any accidental abuses which elapse of time might create, as well as to lay the foundation of those improvements which the fluctuating nature of human manners and human wants might suggest, at once to promote the prosperity of the people and the honour and interests of the crown.

But although the animosity of the Irish against the English, thus deprived of any plea of complaint, seemed for a time to be extinguished, yet the spirit of faction did but slumber. Both in regard to religion and property, the principles of this deceitful faction stimulated to revolt. It was little to them, that indulgence had been granted to their creed, so long as the churches and ecclesiastical revenues were kept from the priests, and they were compelled to endure the intercourse of profane heretics. Thus discontented and restless they were vigilant in discovering any circumstance by which they might retard any cordial reconciliation between the English and the Irish nations.

The contribution which had purchased the royal graces had been universal among the people, but the recusants assumed the whole merit. They openly professed the most zealous loyalty, but secretly exulted in the persuasion of their own strength, and that the army, and of conse-

quence the authority of the crown in Ireland, could not be maintained independent of their aid.

The rectitude and gentleness of Lord Falkland little qualified him for the arduous task of governing a people in the factious temper then prevailing, or to awe the numerous body of recusants, relying on their own merits, and continually stimulated by their ecclesiastics to the most provoking excesses. Again in the full parade of their splendid ritual they publicly celebrated their religious worship. Churches were seized for their service, new friaries and nunneries were erected, their ecclesiastical jurisdiction severely executed, and even in Dublin an academical body was formed for the education of youth, superintended by an eminent Romish ecclesiastic. The clergy by whose influence all was directed, were daily augmented in number, by arrivals from foreign seminaries where they had not only imbibed the firmest opinions of the papal supreme authority, but the most inveterate prejudices against England and Englishmen. Bound by a solemn oath to defend the papacy against an opposing world, to labour for the augmentation of its power and privileges, to execute its mandates, to persecute heretics, their whole body, seculars and regulars, acted in dangerous concert under the direction of the pope, and subject to the orders of the congregation de propaganda fide, then recently erected at Rome.\* Many of these

\* This famous congregation for the propagation of the faith was begun by Gregory the fifteenth, who by the advice of his confessor Narri, founded it at Rome, in 1622, and enriched it with ample revenues. This congregation consists of thirteen cardinals, two priests,

one monk, and a secretary. It is intended to propagate and maintain the religion of Rome in all parts of the world. Its riches and provisions were so prodigiously augmented by the munificence of Urban the eighth, and the liberality of an incredible number of do-

priests, by their education in the seminaries of Spain, were peculiarly devoted to the interests

nors, that its funds are to this day adequate to the most extensive and magnificent undertakings. The enterprises of this congregation are unproportionate to the magnitude of its means. By it, a vast number of missionaries are sent to the remotest parts of the world, books of various kinds published to facilitate the study of foreign languages, the sacred writings and pious productions sent to the most distant parts of the globe, and exhibited to each nation and country in their own language and characters. Seminaries are founded for the sustenance and education of a prodigious number of young men set apart for the foreign missions, houses are erected for the instruction and support of the pagan youths that are annually sent from abroad to Rome, that they may return from thence to their respective countries and become the instructors of their blinded countrymen, not to mention the numerous charitable establishments designed for the relief and support of those, who have suffered banishment, or been involved in other calamities on account of their steadfast attachment to the religion of Rome, and their zeal for promoting the glory of the pontiff. Such are the arduous and complicated plans, with which this congregation is charged, but these though the principal are far from being

the only objects of its attention. Its views are vast and its acts almost incredible. Its members hold their assemblies in a splendid palace, whose delightful situation adds a singular lustre to its beauty and grandeur. Bernini, that being of versatile talent was the architect. To this famous establishment, another less magnificent but highly useful was added 1627, by Urban the eighth, under the denomination of a college or seminary for the propagation of the faith. It is set apart for the instruction and education of those designed for foreign missions. They are here brought up with the greatest care in the knowledge of all the languages and sciences that are necessary to prepare them for disseminating the gospel among distant nations. This excellent foundation owes its origin to the zeal and munificence of John Baptist Villes, a Spanish nobleman who resided at the court of Rome, and who began by presenting to the pontiff all his ample possessions together with his mansion which was a noble and beautiful structure, for this pious and useful purpose. His liberality excited a spirit of emulation, and is followed up with zeal to the present day. The same spirit reached France and several similar foundations were introduced there.

of that power, and naturally had been habituated to consider the insurrections of the old Irish, in the reign of Elizabeth, as laudable and generous efforts of patriotism, while they were taught to detest that power which had quelled this noble resisting spirit, and established a dominion on the ruins of the ancient dignity and pre-eminence of their countrymen. How much is it to be lamented that such noble germs of patriotic feeling should too frequently be sunned into poisonous plants, bearing the bitter fruits of anarchy and rebellion, by the self interested, the mercenary and the fanatical. \*Alas! Ireland was soon to exemplify this melancholy truth!

We have seen that the protestants regarded with equal rancour the idolatrous papists. Many of the lower orders of these clergy were poor and of base character, so as to justify the sarcastic observation of an Irishman, that "the king's priests were as bad as those of the pope." Yet were the great majority of far different description, men to whom the purity of their faith was an object of especial moment, these united with the prelates and some officers of state, holding the same sentiments, remonstrated with the lord deputy upon the increasing presumption and turbulence of the recusants.

The disposition of Lord Falkland, and his instructions from England were in perfect agreement to use the gentlest measures in every thing relating to religious controversy. Urged, however by his council, and the general remonstrances of the clergy, he issued a proclamation charging and commanding the recusants to forbear the exercise of their popish rites and ceremonies. This proclamation produced no effect whatever, things continued in the same state, or rather discontent and turbulence were increased by the recusants,

pleading many grievances, which, where a spirit of discontent prevails, will ever be found in the best constituted governments. Where this is the case, encroachment still rises in proportion to concession. The clamour rose so high that the government condescended to a sort of compromise accepting a quarterly payment of five instead of ten thousand pounds, until the whole voluntary subsidy should be discharged. In this difficult situation, Falkland knew not how best to act, he was maligned at the court of England, and his actions falsely interpreted. The reluctance of the recusants to fulfil their engagements, made Charles and his ministers the more ready to listen to insinuations respecting the administration of the lord deputy, and Falkland was finally recalled. The administration was for the present intrusted to two lords justices, united by friendship and affinity, and of considerable consequence in Ireland, Adam Loftus, Viscount Ely, lord chancellor, and Richard, earl of Cork, lord high treasurer. The first of these noblemen derived his fortune and station from the activity and prudence of Loftus the archbishop of Dublin in the time of Elizabeth, and who appears to have enjoyed her particular favour. The earl of Cork possessed the first degree of consequence in the kingdom, both from his property and alliances. This nobleman possessed a nobility of spirit suited to his exalted rank, not that species of despicable family pride that reposes fastidiously on its adventitious advantages, regarding with contempt those it considers as its inferiors, but sedulous to use the power and advantages which wealth, station, and abilities gave him in a liberal and generous solicitude for those dependent on his will, or governed by his power. On his own estates he was the protecting father of a numerous well regulated body



of English protestants, and the effects of his generous care and judicious management were seen in the industry, affluence, and urbanity of his tenants and dependents. The same principles guided his conduct when called to the helm of government. The errors of popery were offensive to the religious principles of the enlightened Earl of Cork, one of the many worthies bearing the name of Boyle, the prototype of that nobility which distinguished the members of his family. The earl saw that these errors, united as they were in his country with that demi-barbarism which prevailed, was totally repugnant to every plan of improvement his enlightened policy and intelligent philanthropy might form. He therefore agreed with his colleague no longer to use temporising measures with the recusants, but vested as they were with authority, to bring it vigorously into action. Without, therefore, previously consulting the English ministry, or waiting instructions from the king, they at once threatened all absentees from the established worship of the realm with the penalties of the statute enacted in the second of Elizabeth. They were however soon informed, that this severity was not pleasing to the king, nor deemed consistent with his present interests in Ireland. The triumph this gave the recusants may be well imagined, and was manifested in a manner which could not but arouse the indignation of the government they insulted.

In one of the most frequented parts of Dublin, a fraternity of Carmelites appeared in the habit of their order, and there celebrated their religious rites. Indignant at this contempt of all authority, the archbishop of the diocese, and the chief magistrate of the city led a party of the army to their place of worship, and attempted to disperse the assembly. The friars and the congregation

as might have been foreseen, repelled the injudicious attack by force, and obliged the assailants to seek their safety in a precipitate flight. These incidents forcibly prove how difficult and how rare it is to temper zeal with moderation, and how easy it is for the indignant emotions of a worthy heart, to overpower the cool arguments of reason. The earl of Cork possessing as he did such an enlarged mind, whose general conduct proved that he could at a single glance perceive the moral order of things, yet lost sight of that caution and moderation which it must ever be necessary to observe when we have to deal with prejudices and opinions, or any operations of the mind. Even that system of unity which is certainly most conducive to the happiness of a state, ceases to be good, if in order to establish it violence is resorted to. A government must never aim at any end by unjust means, let it be ever so desirable, and this rule is we think equally adapted to the opinions as well as the rights of men. The incidents which have drawn from us these reflections were represented in England in a manner that seemed to reproach the lenity that had encouraged the recusants. It was therefore deemed unsafe and impolitic longer to connive at such proceedings. By an order of the English council fifteen religious houses were seized for the king's use, and the popish college erected in Dublin was assigned to the University, who for the present, converted it into a protestant seminary.

But the suppression of popish superstition was an inferior object of concern to the English cabinet, to that of providing for the king's necessities. The contributions were not forthcoming; Charles therefore altered his language to his Irish subjects; he threatened that if the subsidy was not cheerfully and thankfully continued, that his

graces should be *streightened*; that the recusant fines should be universally and strictly levied, directing that the presentments necessary for this purpose should be made, at the same time intimating that he acted in conformity to the advice of the lords justices. Charles, in order to relieve himself from the embarrassment of his Irish affairs, had appointed Sir Thomas Wentworth to the government, who was held in the highest esteem and confidence by him as a statesman, but at the period of his threatened severity, Wentworth had not assumed the government. The justices were fearful of entering the king's letter in the council books, from a conviction that its perusal would occasion some dangerous result. Wentworth was highly indignant at this hesitation of duty, insinuating that it was only to embarrass the king that objections were raised. He employed secret agents to prevail on the recusants to offer a half-yearly subsidy, as the only means of suspending the execution of the penal statutes. After great altercation and delay, it was agreed that twenty thousand pounds should be added to the former contribution, to be paid in four equal quarterly assessments. Thus the immediate necessities of the state were supplied, and we may add, its weakness made fully known to those who were ready to take advantage of its declining power. Soon after this occurred, Wentworth passed into Ireland to assume the administration, Charles entertaining the most sanguine expectations that his vigour and abilities would effectually regulate and improve his Irish dominions. 1633. By his eminent talents and abilities, Wentworth, better known by his superior title of Strafford, merited all the confidence which his royal master reposed in him. His character was stately and austere, more calculated

to create awe and fear, than love and attachment; his fidelity to his sovereign was unshaken, but from some vacillations of conduct, his patriotism seems not to have been quite pure, but to have been susceptible of powerful impressions from private interest and ambition. These circumstances had created him implacable enemies among the popular party in England, and the evident partiality of the king confirmed this enmity. Their rancour followed him to Ireland, inducing the most vigilant attention to his conduct, and the greatest severity of judgment respecting his actions. But the character and the prejudices of Wentworth equally ill-fitted him for the high station which he occupied in Ireland. He regarded it as a conquered kingdom, in the strictest sense of the term, and with a narrowness of mind which appears truly extraordinary in an individual of his high rank in society, he deduced a principle as odious as it is absurd and unjust, that the subjects of such a country had forfeited the rights of men and citizens, and whatever they were *permitted* to enjoy, depended altogether on the royal grace. With these unjust ideas, it may readily be imagined, he treated men thus dependent on royal grace with a contempt unqualified, and even the most distinguished of Irish subjects were imperiously regarded by the haughty and severe viceroy. He assumed his government with his mind and affections fixed on one single object—the immediate interest of his royal master. Happily for Ireland, the service of the crown was intimately connected with, and depending upon the improvements of the realm. He assumed the government not only with general, but also many individual prejudices against several persons in Ireland, amongst these

was the Earl of Cork, who was powerful and popular.

The new lord deputy had been instructed to pay particular attention to the interests as well as the regulation of the established clergy, and this circumstance gave him an opportunity of gratifying his imperious spirit against that nobleman. The earl had possessed himself of lands which belonged to the church, and had erected a family monument in the cathedral of St. Patrick, Dublin, so untowardly situated, that it took up the place of what the prelate of Canterbury termed the great altar. Strafford had learned from Laud to regard with abhorrence such innovations, and the severest menaces were denounced against the earl's injustice and oppressive usurpation, aggravated by an act of such flagrant impiety.

The clergy of the puritanical spirit were no less obnoxious to the governor; amongst these were reckoned Usher of Armagh, and Bedel of Kilmore, both eminently distinguished for their piety and learning. Bedel in his simplicity, forgetting policy, had united with his diocese, in a petition to the late lords justices, representing the new contribution as irregularly obtained and oppressively levied. This was regarded by the governor as a presumptuous opposition to the king's service. Usher, more experienced, was more cautious; he as yet had given no offence, but lived in the quiet enjoyment of that consequence and reverence derived from his high character as well as station. But the bias of his principles determined Wentworth to form a balance against this popular prelate; he therefore was attended to his seat of government by Dr. Bramhal, whom he proposed to advance to a distinguished station in the Irish church. Bramhal



was eminent for his abilities and erudition, but his ideas, both of doctrine and discipline, were so consonant with those of Laud, that Cromwell afterwards styled him *the Canterbury of Ireland*.\*

\* In all ecclesiastical affairs, and in many civil, Laud had great influence over the king; indeed his character was of that dictating kind, that he was better qualified to fill the papal chair, than the primary of England in such critical times as those in which he lived. "He was virtuous," says our elegant historian, "if severity of manners, and abstinence from pleasure could deserve that name. He was learned, if polemical knowledge could entitle him to that praise; he was disinterested, but with unceasing industry he studied to exalt the priestly and prelatial character, which was his own. His zeal was unrelenting in the cause of religion, and in the heat and indiscretion of his temper, he neglected the views of prudence, and the rules of courtesy. He was in this respect happy that all his enemies were also imagined by him the declared enemies of loyalty and true piety, and therefore the very exercise of his angry zeal became in his eyes meritorious and virtuous. Now we can calmly investigate the encroachments of one party, and the difficulties of the other, we shall however find much to applaud in the zeal of Laud, although we may condemn and regret his erroneous judgment in its application and exercise.

The times, while they called for vigorous resistance to the growing faction, were altogether unfavourable to violent measures, or for the introduction of those ceremonies and observances which had been laid aside at the reformation." See Hume's *England*, vol. vi. p. 287, for several instances of the new ceremonies introduced by Laud.

Among the moral predictions we frequently meet with in history, we may rank that of James I., respecting the evils likely to be produced by the violence of Laud. In a conversation he had with Archbishop Williams, when James was hard pressed to promote Laud, he gave his reasons why he intended to keep him back from rule and authority; "because," he observed, "I find he hath a restless spirit, and cannot see when matters are well, but loves to toss and change, and to bring things to a pitch of reformation, floating in his own brain, which endangers the steadfastness of that which is in good pass; I speak not at random, he hath made himself known to me to be such an one." When at length urged to prefer the prelate, James closed his prediction, by saying in his usual uncouth manner: "Then take him to you! but on my soul you will repent it."

Thus, with lively prepossessions, and highly excited passions, Wentworth assumed the reins of government, and speedily, by the contemptuous display of them, disgusted and offended those with whom he had to act. After a meeting, in which his arrogance was particularly mortifying, and in which nothing was effected, a second one was convened, in which the chancellor suggested that the king should assemble an Irish parliament, to deliberate upon the public affairs, advising in the meantime that the voluntary contribution should be continued another year. A parliament was in every point of view desirable, the council, therefore, were readily influenced by the hopes of one being called to renew the contribution so suggested. The grant and the petition were transmitted to the king, the whole body of the realm concurring in both.

A supply thus obtained for the immediate charges of his government, Wentworth quickly put the military establishment upon a respectable footing; the troops, by the gallantry of their appearance, struck an awe into the disorderly, while from their proper discipline, they protected the peaceable. But the assembling of a parliament was a measure dreaded by the king: "As for that hydra," says he to his lord deputy, in allusion to it, "take good heed, for you know that here I have found it as well cunning as malicious." The deputy, however, relying on his own address for managing a parliament, quieted the king's apprehensions by reminding him, that by the law of Poynings, no act could pass without his previous inspection and sanction. It was therefore resolved to yield to the wishes of the nation, and the whole affair was entrusted to the judgment of Wentworth. His great object was to obtain a liberal supply, and yet to evade the

confirmation of those graces of 1628, which present circumstances rendered inconsistent with the royal interests. Every thing in this delicate affair depended on the dexterous management of the passions and interests of those concerned. With great political address, the lord deputy secretly practised with both the Catholics and puritans, exciting the apprehensions of each against the other, taking care that a number of military officers should be chosen burgesses, who, by their immediate dependence upon the crown, would be under his influence in any critical occasion, librating the balance of party as he should deem necessary. In all his measures, however, he displayed his pride and severity, and with a contemptible servility the counsellors appear to have yielded to his intimidating threats, and to have acquiesced in every measure proposed by the imperious lord deputy, who scrupled not to say, that if the king's wishes and demands were not cheerfully complied with, he should think himself justified in enforcing them at the head of his army. In the upper house, however, a bolder spirit manifested itself, and Wentworth found, in the display of his imperious will, that the spirit of the old English nobility of Ireland by no means corresponded with the contemptuous idea he had formed of the whole nation. He found it necessary to conciliate, and attach to his interest several noblemen, who nobly resisted his haughtiness, and made him sensible that his despotic will was not to govern them, as they were not to be intimidated by his severity, nor deceived by his artifices.

We shall not, of course, dwell upon the particular proceedings of this parliament, further than to mention that the lords infringed the law of Poynings, which Wentworth, at the conclusion of it, protested against, to prevent its becoming a

precedent for such violation. The necessities of the state being provided for, the question of the graces was agitated with the more freedom, many of them were evaded, some rendered nugatory, some denied, but many acts were established, affecting the general interests of the people, which did honour to the administration that supported them, and some few provisions for the public good, which had been opposed and defeated by the recusant members, Wentworth, with his characteristic high strain of prerogative, determined to establish by an act of state.

With this parliament sat also a convocation of the clergy. They granted eight subsidies to the king, at the same time soliciting redress of several expressed grievances, and the correction of several disorders in ecclesiastical affairs. The condition of the Irish church was indeed at this time deplorable; the places of worship were in ruin, the possessions of the clergy alienated; violent intrusion in the midst of public disorders, appropriations and commendams had reduced the rural clergy to utter poverty and contempt. Even the provisions made for the clergy in the late reign, on settling the plantations, had in a great degree been rendered nugatory, by artful or fraudulent commissions. The natural consequence of the poverty and contempt of the established clergy, was ignorance, negligence, and corrupt manners. The Romish hierarchy, which exercised a regular jurisdiction in every part of the kingdom, were indefatigable and assiduous in taking advantage of every neglect or absence of the established clergy, and in some places had even possessed themselves of ecclesiastical lands. On the other hand, the more bigoted of the Scottish presbyterians were violently zealous for their own discipline and worship, offering continual insults to

the established church government, and treating its rites and worship with open and marked contempt.

These sectaries appeared to the lord deputy at least equal enemies to the church as the Catholics ; a perfect conformity was the great work which he, and his guide and friend Laud, zealously desired to establish in Ireland ; but it was a measure which exceeded the abilities of both, superior as they were. The procedures of Wentworth were however highly judicious, in the existing state of religious affairs. He first provided churches to receive, and able ministers to instruct the people. He issued commissions for the reparation of the churches throughout the kingdom. Laws were provided in the late parliament for restitution of the rights of the clergy, and provisions made to prevent future alienations. The cares of the governor did not rest here ; they extended themselves to the instruction and education of the rising generation of Irish clergy. He inspected minutely into the state and circumstances of the university of Dublin ; they were found in great disorder ; the governor was removed, and another substituted more efficient ; the statutes were submitted to the Archbishop of Canterbury, who drew up a new body of laws for the university, as he had antecedently done for that of Oxford ; and these were established by royal authority.

But the grand point which Archbishop Laud and the lord deputy were zealously desirous to effect, was the entire union of the churches of England and Ireland, by establishing the English articles and canons in the latter, as the rule of doctrine and discipline. The clergy of puritanic bias were, it will be well supposed, by no means favourers of this union, and expressed a zealous



solicitude for what they termed the independence of their church. Archbishop Usher, who was the principal of this party, had always been regarded with a jealous eye by Wentworth, but on account of his station, his uncommon worth and great popularity, he was to be treated with respect and caution even by the haughty governor. It could not but be mortifying to the compiler of the Irish articles of religion, in the late reign, to find them threatened with abolition ; and had the temper of the revered Usher disposed him to turbulence and opposition, the lord deputy might have found himself involved in much trouble and embarrassment, so completely was Usher in possession of the affections, and so great was his influence with almost all the Irish clergy. To reconcile the projected reformation to those who disapproved it, it was agreed that no censure should be passed on any of the former articles, but that they should be virtually, not formally, abrogated, by the establishment of those of England. It was also determined, in respect to the canons, that they should not be received in a body, but a collection made of such as might be most acceptable and useful, to form a rule of discipline for the Irish church. Both these important measures were accomplished, but evidently more by the influence of the lord deputy's authority, than the inclinations of the clergy, although only one member of the convocation had the manliness to avow his dissent. These regulations of the ecclesiastical system were followed by the establishment of an high commission court, erected in Dublin after the English model, with all its odious formalities and tremendous powers. The intentions of this establishment, (observes the lord deputy to-Laud,) were to countenance the despised state of the clergy, to support the eccle-

siastical courts, and restrain the extortions of their officers, to annul foreign jurisdiction, to punish polygamies and adulteries, to provide for the maintenance and residence of the clergy, to inquire into the application of pious and charitable donations, to bring the people into a conformity of religion, *and in the way of all these raise, perhaps, a good revenue to the crown.* The favourite, and as it would appear, the never-forgotten object of Wentworth, seems to have been to improve the revenue, and to supply the royal necessities; and when in effecting this, we find him protecting commerce, encouraging industry, introducing manufactures, we gladly award him the tribute of just praise he merits; but when the faith of a people is rendered subservient to this measure, it assumes a character at once impious and detestable. There is one scheme of national good, which owes its origin to Wentworth, and which entitles him to the gratitude of Ireland, that of the introduction and encouragement of the linen trade. To encourage a spirit of enterprise, the deputy himself embarked in his favourite project, even to the amount of thirty thousand pounds.

The general acts of Wentworth's administration are not necessary to our design; we shall, therefore, not enter into them, but those who consult the history of his government, will be readily convinced that he seems, in some instances, to have conceived that the dignity of his administration could only be supported by exertions of authority, which betray a complete intoxication of power and greatness. In investigating and prosecuting the king's claims of land, and in other instances, many individuals were aggrieved by his imperious government, but justice and truth oblige us to say, that the country in general derived many advantages from his rigid administration.

The army, which had been a heavy burden, was now rendered effective, serviceable, inoffensive to the peaceable, formidable to the disaffected. The revenue was unencumbered, and a surplus reserved for exigencies. The ecclesiastical establishment was protected, church revenues improved, and able and respectable teachers provided for the instruction of the people. The recusants being possessed of the largest portion of power and consequence, were not irritated by opposition or violence, but were restrained in their public exercises of religion, so as to preserve the authority of the government, without exciting any very serious discontents. Various great national benefits were derived, upon the whole, from the administration of this nobleman, however, in too many instances, justly unpopular. But fraught with difficulties, as the exercise of his high responsibilities hitherto had been, the time was fast approaching in which Wentworth found them to increase manifold.

It would carry us far beyond the limits of our design, to detail the important influences of the troubles in Scotland upon Irish politics and prejudices, at the period we are now arrived at in our retrospect. [1639.] It must suffice to say, that the perplexities of the devoted Charles became, in both countries, every passing day more inextricable, that the fervour of religious zeal, the desperate obstinacy of fanaticism, were transmitted from Scotland to Ireland, and that although in the latter the explosion was not so dreadful, yet the mine was laid for a universal spirit of opposition, at once deliberate and strenuous, or to use the expressive observation of Wentworth, when the Scottish disturbances became known to him, and awakened his fears for Ireland, he justly apprehended "that the skirts of the great rain,

if not some part of the thundering and lightning, might fall on this kingdom." The Scots settled in the northern counties, generally agreed with those of their native country in religious doctrine and discipline, and although under more controul, were in reality no less inveterate enemies to the established church; several of them had even taken the covenant, and passed secretly into Scotland, to share in the glorious cause now so happily there advanced, while the less active were persuaded, that the period was quickly arriving, when their own discipline would be established, and therefore firmly resisted the attempts made to reduce them to a conformity. These circumstances could not but excite alarm to the lord deputy, who was perfectly aware that many individuals of high station in Ireland were favourers of the puritanical cause; nor could his sagacity fail to perceive the perilous situation of his royal master. Determined therefore to act with, if possible, increased vigour and assiduity, he prescribed a new engagement to the Ulster Scots, whereby they promised allegiance to the king, submission to his commands, and expressed an abhorrence of the proceedings of their countrymen, and the abjuration of all covenants contrary to their present oath. This test was imposed on all ages, sexes, and conditions, and the refusal of it was attended with fines and imprisonment, severely executed. Charles highly approved of this and several other measures of Wentworth, but his affairs were now in such a distressful situation, that he could no longer dispense with his personal assistance and counsel. He was accordingly recalled to England, being directed to commit his government to two lords justices. Wentworth had frequently besought his royal friend and master to justify him against the clamour of

his enemies, by bestowing on him some high honour. His petition was now granted, the king confirmed him in his high official station, under the title of Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, advanced him to the earldom of Strafford, and created him a knight of the garter.

These manifestations of royal favour, in times so critical, could not fail to expose Strafford to envy, and odium, and danger, more especially when contrary to sentiments he had formerly held, he recommended the most vigorous measures against the Scots, who, provoked at this zeal, vowed vengeance against the malignant enemy of their cause. The earl persuaded the king that considerable resources might be furnished by Ireland for his necessities, and advised that a parliament should be summoned there; the scheme was adopted, and Strafford passed over to Ireland to accomplish it.

1640. The popish party in Ireland, whatever were their prejudices and grievances, were far from favouring the cause of the covenanters, and affected the greatest zeal and attachment to the king. The puritans, indeed, were numerous, but not yet encouraged by their friends in England to avow their discontents, and were awed by a rigorous administration.

These and various other combining causes appeared to confer an unusual unity to the assembly, and they even exceeded the wishes of Strafford, by granting four subsidies, attended by a high encomium on the administration of the lord deputy, declaring unanimously that they were ready to support his majesty, on all great occasions, with their persons and estates, &c. The Irish lords manifested the same spirit of loyalty. Strafford indeed seems to have seized that happy moment in the mutable state of human affairs, which



once suffered to pass by unimproved, is lost for ever.

In these favourable dispositions of the Irish representatives, Strafford had but to issue the requisite orders for levying the grants, and raising and regulating the new army; but the pressing situation of Charles imperatively required his return to England. To his friend and deputy, therefore, Wandesford, was left the charge of raising the subsidies, and the Earl of Ormond was appointed to organize the army. The new levies consisted of eight thousand men, and a thousand from the old army were incorporated with them, in order to expedite the discipline. The privates were all Catholics, but all the officers Protestants. Although necessity obliged this measure, it raised a violent clamour against the king and Strafford, who, it was said, armed legions of popish ruffians, to glut their malice in the blood of the godly. Now was to be displayed an instance of political insincerity and versatility, which appears almost as a spell, to defeat the purposes of the unhappy Charles. That parliament, lately so profuse in profession, so loud in its sentiments of devotedness and attachment, so virulent against the disloyalty of the covenanters, now most reluctantly and scantily supplied his exigencies; a new spirit seems suddenly to have actuated the people.

To follow the several manifestations of this opposing spirit, would but fatigue our readers, in few words we therefore sum them. The subsidies which they had so cheerfully voted to the service of "*the best of kings*," such was their expression, they reduced to a fourth part. The court of high commission was determined to be a grievance not to be borne, martial law was abolished, the juris-

diction of the council annihilated, proclamations and acts of state declared of no authority ; every order and institution which depended on monarchy was invaded, and the prince was despoiled of all his prerogative, without the least pretext of any violence or illegality in administration.

Amongst the proceedings of an assembly, which in various instances appears to have scorned the limits of its own constitutional privileges, and to have assumed a power of deciding property, and controlling the courts of law, a convenient object of arbitrary power was found in the established clergy, a body alike obnoxious to the popish and puritanical systems. Not contented with rescinding decrees made in favour of the clergy, and involving individuals of this order in vexatious difficulties, the house proceeded to strike at the very vitals of the religious establishment, by harassing the university. The code of laws for this institution, drawn up by Laud, excluded, as may well be supposed, all non-conformists from the advantages and preferments ; the regulations underwent a severe parliamentary investigation ; dangers were affected to be discovered in them, that had never been experienced, and objections made, which time and experience had abundantly confuted. In the plenitude of their power, they forbade any elections to be made, or any leases executed in the college, until the house should give further orders therein ; and to complete the triumph over royal prerogative, the committee were empowered to inspect the old and new statutes, and to make a compilation of laws from both, as they should judge necessary, for the government of the college. By this instance, among very many others, it will easily be seen, the Irish parliament was treading in the steps of the

English one, and gradually undermining the ground on which the unfortunate Charles was pursuing his anxious and difficult course.

After the arraignment of Strafford, and the fatal termination of his life, in the former of which his administration in Ireland bore so large a part, and the particulars so well known are unnecessary to be adverted to here, the sensation created in Ireland by that great event, produced effects, of which the transactions we have alluded to were but a very small part.

The Irish forces raised by Strafford for the service of Scotland, but which upon a cessation of arms were directed to be disbanded, had long continued an useless and heavy burden to the state of Ireland, and as they were Catholics, an odious and alarming object to the English commons; for as there was no money to pay the arrears of the soldiers, the order for disbanding them could not be executed. The repeated remonstrances, however, of the English parliament, [1641,] obliged Charles to disband them; but to prevent the danger of letting so many unemployed men loose upon the country, he determined to send them on foreign service, and he actually entered into negotiations with the Spanish ambassador. Every thing was judiciously prepared for their transport, when, as if actuated by one impulsive spirit of opposition, the Irish committee in London, and the commission in Ireland, protested against the measure. The commons of England united in the objections raised, and thus the project of freeing the country from men who might be made the instruments of rebellion, was frustrated. Nor would the Irish parliament assent to any proposal of augmenting the standing army from three to five thousand men, a number which

Charles deemed necessary for retaining Ireland in due obedience.

In the meantime the old Irish, under the continual influence of their accustomed instigators, remarked every weakness and false step of the English, and secretly resolved to take advantage of them. These ever restless feudatories, living under the perpetual vigilance of a government they hated, brooding in discontent, in all that stern elevation of soul which is reckless of human suffering, when in competition with powerful volitions, ever the sport of powerful antipathies, and impetuous passions; these were the men who were prepared to act a part in any drama, however horrid, which the mistaken zeal, the direful fanaticism, or the diabolic hatred of their prime movers might assign them.

We shall close this period of our retrospect by stating, that the Irish committees, long anxiously expected, at length arrived, laden with proofs of favour and honour. They were the bearers of those bills for which the parliament had so repeatedly and strongly petitioned, by which the possessions of the subjects were ensured, and all their capital grievances redressed, so as to deprive the most factious of any reasonable excuse for discontent, and calculated to give entire satisfaction to those who had asserted the rights of Irish subjects with integrity and sincerity, and to open to all a fair and flattering prospect of public tranquillity and national prosperity. It was in this state of affairs that the Irish parliament adjourned.

## CHAPTER XVI.

*Invidious distinctions in Ireland—Strong prejudices, just causes of them—Contrasted view of Catholics and Protestants—Irish easily acted upon—Roger Moore—Sketch of his disposition and character—Phelim O’Nial enters into the conspiracy—Crisis arrives—Apathy of government—Conspiracy discovered—Conduct of lords justices—General insurrections—Horrid cruelties committed—Supineness of the lords justices—Ormond remonstrates—Earl of Clanricarde—Unhappy situation of the king—Narrow policy of English ministers—King memorialized, Lord Dillon the bearer—Lords justices endeavour to counteract it—And succeed—Rebel leaders profit by the circumstance—Sir Charles Coote. Rebellion extends to the pale—Moore intrigues with Lord Gormanston—He joins the conspiracy—Dublin threatened with siege—Manifestoes circulated—Rebellion extends—Moderation of many Roman Catholic ecclesiastics—Legal conviction of rebels—Mercenary spirit of the lords justices—Mac Mahon—His confession—Sir John Read put to the rack—Patrick Barewal endures the torture—Insinuations against the king—Indignant feelings of Charles—He resolves to pass over to Ireland—Alarm of the lords justices—King not permitted to go—Disappointment of the pale—Lord Gormanston dies of grief—His associates disperse—Rebel forces defeated by Ormond—Lady Offaly—Her spirited conduct—Distresses of the army—Irish parliament sits during three days only—Arrival of Owen O’Nial—His character—Is declared leader of the northern confederacy—Scotch troops arrive—Injudicious severity of parliament—Succours to the rebels sent from Dunkirk—English alarmed—Synod of Catholic clergy—Its decrees—Lord Mountgarret chosen president—General meeting at Kilkenny—Its imposing appearance—Death of Roger Moore—Earl of Castlehaven unites with the assembly—Clanricarde refuses—Policy of the lords justices—Loyalist officers address the king—Noble spirit of Ormond—A treaty proposed with the council of Kilkenny—Delicacy of it—The council make conditions—They are rejected by Ormond—Peter Scarampi minister from the pope—His reception by the old Irish—Articles of treaty agreed upon—Ratified by proclamation—Received with discontent and clamour.*



It has been justly observed, "There is a state of public feeling, that although veiled in the silence of brooding reserve, yet contains a mine of resistance which the faintest spark may kindle into inextinguishable explosion." Ireland alas exemplified the truth of this observation at the period we are now about to consider. The fair prospect with which we closed our preceding chapter, was quickly overcast by clouds so awful, that our spirit sinks when we recollect that the scorching lightnings which proceeded from them, were no appalling illusions of the fancy, but realities terribly pressed upon the senses by the fearful devastations they produced. We have seen that the ardent desire and professed object of James in forming his Irish settlements, was to unite the inhabitants of Ireland, and to banish all those odious distinctions which had been the fruitful source of jealousy and anarchy. Unfortunately, however, the same generous policy did not animate the breasts of his ministers and their successors. By them invidious distinctions were still made, as the recent adventurers and servants of the crown appeared virtually to be esteemed as the only loyal and affectionate subjects. While all others were deemed disaffected and dangerous, and treated accordingly. These latter, spirited, proud, and smarting under a sense of injustice, felt themselves insulted, and although circumstanced so as not to possess the power of resistance, yet the very restraint added ardour to the desire and gave more bitterness to their resentments. In forming and organizing those plantations, we have already stated that in various instances the pride and the prejudices of the old natives were necessarily invaded, and that advantageous as was the prospect of civilization which they opened, yet many preferred their ancient barbarous com-

munity to the more secure but narrower possessions assigned them by the plan of James. The fraud and circumvention of artful ministers and self interested agents were not only irritating to such individuals, but the insincerity evinced respecting the *graces* and the severity of the government at the period when they were purchased, aroused every dormant principle of opposition, and fixed deeper in the breast those pernicious prejudices which were so powerfully operative against every thing English.

To so many estranging principles, we must add those so strong in themselves, and so tending to add vigour to every other with which they connect themselves, religious animosities and prepossessions. With all the obstinacy marking a sectarian spirit, the largest proportion of Irish inhabitants were devoted to popery, regarding protestantism with double hatred, because it was the religion of their oppressors, who had coupled their mode of faith with odious disqualifications, and punished it with penal statutes. The tenets of the Catholic religion gave the Romish clergy the most unbounded influence over the minds of the most enlightened of their flock, and the multitude were governed, and could be directed at will. It is unnecessary to dwell upon the spirit of those ecclesiastics who educated in foreign seminaries in all the dangerous spiritual and political dogmas of their religion, brought them all into pernicious action among the irritated Irish, as they are well known to change the very nature and essential differences of vice and virtue to sanctify rebellion and to absolve man from his allegiance to his God and his king.

Ecclesiastics possessing and triumphing in this dangerous spirit, erected a spiritual jurisdiction in the combustible soil of Ireland. The state

connived at the private exercise of their devotions, and religious rites. But this indulgence was of little avail to men who had been accustomed to the ostentatious pomp of their ritual in foreign countries, who had witnessed the grandeur of foreign prelates, the reverence paid to their order, their noble endowments, their ample revenues, their unbounded influence. They formed the humiliating contrast of their own situation, fulfilling by sufferance and connivance their sacerdotal duties in secrecy and disguise; and possessing only a scanty and dependent subsistence surrounded by heretics, enjoying those advantages which should be theirs. They were bound by the principles of their faith to use all endeavours to extend the empire of the holy see, to assert the popes universal monarchy, civil and spiritual, and every means to attain these pious ends, were deemed not only profitable, but meritorious. To support, to strengthen, and to extend the powerful system of priestly domination in Ireland, there appeared no other way than that of arms and insurrection, and the elements of these were laid in the character, the affections, the oppressions of the people. Proud, querulous, impetuous, disdaining any profession but that of arms, the old Irish were easily roused to any desperate attempt which gave an opportunity for the development of those deep seated feelings which rankled in their souls.

While the passions of the Irish were thus violently agitated, the Scots threw off their dependence on the crown of England, and roused all the emulation of the Irish, who felt even a self degradation in having been anticipated in what they deemed a noble struggle for their liberties, civil and religious. Circumstances, the Irish thought, subjected as they were to far greater

oppressions than the Scots had been, demanded the same noble and perilous duty of them. The recollections of their ancient grandeur, their hopes for the future in the land of their birth, every thing around them, and within them, summoned them to the assertion of their rights, and roused in each heart thoughts of patriotic affection and honour, while they were animated by a determination holy and terrible, and all the forces of the soul were directed to one great end, that of emancipation from a thralldom no longer endurable. Such were the sentiments which the popish emissaries assiduously cultivated, and kept alive as instrumental to their own self interested policy, and a fit agent was soon found to explode the mine they had extensively and deeply laid. Roger Moore was the head of a once powerful family in Leinster. His ancestors, during the reign of Mary, had been expelled from their princely possessions by violence and fraud, and their sept harassed, and nearly extirpated by military execution. An hereditary hatred of the English had thus most naturally been infused into the scattered and reduced remnants of the family, and had been manifested in various instances by them. Nurtured in the noxious atmosphere of these revengeful and irritated feelings, the resentment of Roger was deep seated and determined. The elements of all that was noble and generous were in the soul of Roger. It remained for circumstances to bring them into action, and give them direction. Brooding on the sufferings of his ancestors, sinking under his own difficulties and narrow resources, and continually a witness of his rightful inheritance as he considered it, possessed by strangers rioting in the spoils of his family, and possessing that nervous temperament which peculiarly clings to the consolations of

religion, as a refuge from constantly pressing evils, it can be no subject of conjecture to which point the affections and the passions of Roger Moore would be directed. Deeply concentrated within his own soul, however, were the thoughts and designs which agitated it. His conduct was cautious and deliberate, for he possessed judgment, penetration, and a refinement of manners which far advanced him beyond the period in which he lived. Some part of his youth had been past on the continent, by which his manners were polished, but where his hatred of the English power was confirmed by the intercourse he there held with his exiled countrymen. In particular while on a visit to the Spanish capital, he attached himself to the son of the rebel chieftain Tirowen, who had obtained a regiment, and was greatly caressed at the Spanish court. The victims of what they regarded a similar oppression, a community of feeling and of interests drew these high souled Irishmen together in the strictest bond of amity. Together they expatiated on the wrongs of their forefathers, on their noble efforts in the cause of religion and their country, and together they dwelt on the hopes of still reviving by their self devotion to the cause, the ancient splendour of their families.

With such men, in such a place, an aversion to that power which had subverted all they deemed sacred in their country, was heroic patriotism; the spirit of Moore was fired, the powerful impulse was given; he had arrived at the point of enthusiasm when self is annihilated, no anticipated perils daunted him, he had offered himself a sacrifice to his country's wrongs, no regret, no hesitation now intruded themselves into his resolutions, his heart became absorbed entirely in its object, and he had literally separated *himself* from



*himself* as an offering to his country, unmindful of life and all that endeared it, could he but effect the restoration of his brethren, to the privileges of their father's land. These sentiments, it will be imagined, were applauded by his brave companion and friend, they separated with mutual emotion, and Moore returned to Ireland with his mind wholly engaged by the bold design he had formed. From the moment that the idea of expelling the English and establishing the independence of his country first dawned on the mind of Moore, he judiciously endeavoured to conciliate the esteem and affection of the native Irish. He was in every way remarkably qualified to effect his wishes on this point. His address was courteous and insinuating, he possessed a quick discernment of character, a pliancy of adapting himself, to their sentiments and passions rendered irresistibly pleasing by a remarkable gracefulness of person and dignity of aspect and demeanor. Fascinated with these exterior graces and moral qualifications, the old Irish beheld the gallant representative of one of their most distinguished families, with feelings of rapture and affection amounting to enthusiasm, they regarded him as their glory and their protection, they celebrated him in their songs, and it even became a proverbial expression, that their dependence was upon God, our lady, and Roger Moore! Moore secretly went from chieftain to chieftain, and adapting himself to each according to the predominant bias of the mind, or their peculiar causes of hatred to the English, he roused up every latent spirit of discontent and resentment. He maintained a close correspondence with Lord Macguire, and Sir Phelim O'Nial the most powerful of the old Irish. By his insinuating conversation, by letters, by his emissaries, he repre-

sented to his countrymen the motives of a revolt, intimating that such a revolt tending only to vindicate their native liberty against the violence of foreign invaders, could never at any time be deemed rebellion.

By such arguments, Moore engaged all the chiefs of the native Irish into the conspiracy. The plan formed was that Sir Phelim O’Nial and others should begin the insurrection in one day throughout the provinces, at the same time Lord Macguire and Moore were to surprise the castle at Dublin. The commencement of the revolt was fixed for the beginning of winter, that there might be the less facility in transporting the forces from England. To quicken the resolutions, and animate these hopes of the conspirators, there now arrived an emissary from the Earl of Tirowen in Spain, (as he was there called by that title,) with assurances to all of his name and kindred, of arms, money, and ammunition, from Cardinal Richelieu, with instructions to hold themselves in readiness for an insurrection. This emissary was in return directed to inform the earl, of the period fixed for revolt, and to desire the arrival of all the succours by the period named; and to such a height was their enthusiasm now exalted, that even the rumour of the death of the brave young Tirowen, the beloved friend of Moore, did not damp their zeal. The messenger was instructed, that if the report were confirmed, he should address himself to another of the same family, then in the Low Countries, Colonel Owen O’Nial, acquaint him with the plan, request his aid and direction, and particularly that he would exert his interest with Richelieu, and secure his promised succours.

The spirits of the malcontents were raised by intelligence, real or feigned, of terrible proclama-

tions issued against the Catholics of England, and the denunciations of the Scots against all of their communion. Imagination presented a Scottish army, in all the phrenzy of religious zeal, ready to land on the Irish shores, to persecute the Romanists with sword and fire; hence all the objections to sending the disbanded Irish army into foreign service—they were already fixed upon as fit instruments of rebellion.

A desperate and dangerous partizan in the conspiracy, was Sir Phelim O'Nial of Kinnaud; in his youth he had professed the Protestant religion, receiving his education in England. On settling in his native country, however, he apostatized to popery, and degenerated into all the rudeness of an Irish life, in the remote provinces. Unlike Roger Moore, his hatred was not grounded upon any injuries experienced either by his family or himself; but on the contrary, their possessions had been secured, and were confirmed to Sir Phelim by new patent. In character, this man stood in direct opposition to Moore; the spirit of selfishness, and the restlessness of this ignoble feeling, made him plunge eagerly into the conspiracy, which borrowed the sacred name of religion to sanctify its enormities. With a brutal and sensual temper, and mean understanding, this degenerate branch of the O'Nial took possession of his patrimony, at an age when he was destitute of discretion, and of consequence was quickly involved in difficulties, arising from his licentious and dissipated life. His name, however, gave him local consequence, which was augmented on the confirmation of the premature death of the young O'Nial, which event left him in uncontested rank, as chieftain of the extensive and powerful sept of O'Nial.

The offers and plans of Moore aroused his

imagination with visions of exchanging his present poverty, and comparative obscurity, for the riches and power annexed to his title in old times. Accordingly he entered fully into the design, corresponded with Owen O'Nial, listened to his assurances of foreign succours, and under the pretence of levying forces for the King of Spain, he collected the indigent, the profligate, the barbarous, the violent, and the discontented, and kept them in readiness for the purposes of his colleagues and himself. Roger Moore, secretly exulting in the progress of that conflagration which he had lighted up, had hitherto kept himself in reserve, employing Macguire as his agent, to organize the conspiracy. But the hesitation and defection of some of the conspirators obliged him to come forward with his commanding and insinuating powers, to prevent its being extinguished in the commencement. He prevailed; the conspiracy was revived, and the order and method of procedure was duly regulated. The day was fixed for surprising the castle of Dublin, which, by an unaccountable carelessness of government, was guarded only by fifty men, though containing arms for ten thousand men, and thirty-five pieces of cannon. Moore undertook this primary enterprise, while O'Nial agreed to conduct the northern insurrection. Two hundred men were to be employed in the attempt against the castle. That their entrance into Dublin might create no suspicion, they were represented as intended for Spain. The general rising was to take place at the same time. Such were the schemes, the prospects, and motives of these misguided men; and there is every historical evidence, to prove that their design extended to the subversion of the late establishments of property, the restoring to the Irish what they had lost by the rebellions

of their ancestors, or the decisions of law, and the re-establishment of the Romish religion in all the splendour and power of its hierarchy.

But the conspirators by no means rested even in this extensive plan. Their imaginations projected a far more glorious work, even the subjugation of England, the re-establishment of the papal power in that kingdom, which once effected, they meant to assist Spain, and with them chastise the rebellious Hollanders. These extravagancies are said to have gained possession of the Romish clergy, a considerable meeting of whom, with some laymen, took place, just previous to the period fixed for the revolt, in the abbey of Multi-fernan, county Westmeath, where with the arrogance, presumption, and vanity, which are the usual concomitants of ignorance and inexperience, when engaged in any factious purpose, they consulted, as if already masters of the kingdom. But if the clergy indulged such hopes of the success of the conspiracy, the leaders were more cautious and solicitous.

The day quickly approached which was to prove their fatal purpose. Secret rumours had transpired of a disposition to revolt, but with a supineness and apathy, which almost seemed to indicate connivance, the lords justices took no warning by them, and the Earl of Leicester, whom the king had appointed lieutenant, remained in London. All seemed to slumber in profound repose on the brink of destruction. It was not till the eve of the day fixed for the revolt, that they were roused from their security; the conspirators but waited the hour of execution. Macguire and Moore were already in Dublin, with a numerous band of their partisans, others were expected momentarily; and the following morning they were to undertake what they esteemed



an easy enterprise, the surprisal of the castle, when O'Conolly, an Irishman, but a Protestant, to whom Mac Mahon had unaccountably divulged the whole conspiracy, on a presumption of his secretly being favourable to the cause, betrayed the whole to Sir William Parsons, one of the lords justices. The justices and council fled for refuge to the castle, and reinforced the guards. All was commotion and alarm throughout the city; Macguire was taken in his concealment, Moore escaped; Mac Mahon was seized, and after some hesitation freely confessed the design in which he had engaged, boasted that the insurrection of that day was too mighty and too general to be subdued, and expressed his satisfaction that although he had fallen into the power of his enemies, his death would be severely revenged. Alas! he spoke but too true. Although the castle was saved from surprise by the disclosure of O'Conolly, it came too late to arrest the general insurrection; the plans had been too well and too deeply laid.

O'Nial and his confederates had already taken arms in Ulster. The Irish, every where mingled with the English, needed but a hint from their leaders and priests, to begin hostilities against a people whom they hated on account of their religion, and envied for their prosperity, derived, as they thought, from their property.

In the meantime, measures to secure the peace and security of the capital were formed, and intelligence sent to England of the events; O'Conolly being the bearer of a letter to the Earl of Leicester. This letter was closed by a postscript, signed by Sir William Parsons, recommending O'Conolly as a person, who by his faith and loyalty had deserved such a mark of royal bounty, as might extend to him and his posterity.

The operations of the conspirators had been so well concerted, and their design concealed, that faithful to their engagements they rose simultaneously in different quarters. O'Nial led the way, by surprising the castle of Charlemont; Lord Caulfield, a brave officer, grown old in the royal service, was governor of this fort, and lived in the exercise of generous hospitality, in unsuspecting confidence with his Irish neighbours. O'Nial invited himself to sup with this brave officer; he and his followers were received with that cordial welcome which ever distinguished the noble hearted soldier. While in the enjoyment of it, a signal was given by the treacherous O'Nial, the whole family were seized, the garrison were made prisoners, and the castle was pillaged! Thus they continued their devastating course, possessing themselves in their progress of a considerable quantity of arms and ammunition. The popish inhabitants were every where summoned to arms, and commanded to maintain the honour of their religion; and such was the success, that in the short space of eight days, the rebels were absolute masters of the entire counties of Tyrone, Monaghan, Langford, Leitrim, Fermanagh, Cavan, Donnegal, and Derry, together with parts of Armagh and Downe. Through the whole open country of these districts, the English inhabitants became the victims of a ruthless enemy; driven from their habitations, naked, destitute, exposed to the rigour of an inclement season; fainting and dying in the public ways, or crawling to some place of refuge, overwhelmed with fear, or expiring of famine. Many were also confined in prison, in perpetual fear of death, although indiscriminate massacre was not yet committed. The English were the objects pointed out to vengeance and detestation, the Scottish planters being left

unmolested. The measures of a puritanic government were the theme of unceasing complaint, to keep alive or to excite the hatred of their followers, whose ignorance was easily led to believe, that it was the intention of government to extirpate the Romish religion from Ireland. Such suggestions gave fresh impulse to the fury of the Irish. They vowed not to leave an Englishman in the country, and uttered the most horrid threats against the king and his family. Many were seduced by a shameful imposture to join the revolters. The leader O'Nial having found at Charlemont a royal patent, tore off the seal, and affixed it to a commission which he had forged himself, by which he made it appear, that he had his authority from the king and queen for the insurrection, affirming that the cause of assuming arms was to vindicate the royal prerogative, now invaded by a puritanical parliament.

Amidst all the enormities which spread through the devoted country, and the miseries, from which the imagination recoils in horror, the sacred name of religion resounded, not with its still small voice of mercy, but as a furious zealot, to steel the heart against every human sympathy. The English, as heretics, were abhorred of God, and justly detestable to all holy men. It was meritorious to rid the world of these enemies to all that was good.

“Nature,” says Hume, “in that rude people sufficiently inclined to atrocious deeds, was stimulated now by precept, and national prejudices empoisoned by those aversions, more deadly and incurable, which arose from an enraged superstition. While death closed the sufferings of each victim, the bigoted assassins with joy and exultation still echoed in his expiring ears, that these agonies were but the commencement of torments

infinite and eternal." We cannot enter into the terrible detail of the barbarities which marked a revolt memorable in the annals of human kind, and most worthy to be held in eternal abhorrence—ignominious remembrances are they of that intolerant frenzy, which we trust will never again be called into action.

There is little doubt, formidable as the insurrection was, but it might have been quelled, had the lords justices acted with spirit and firmness; but their supineness evidently was the effect of some self-interested cause, which did not clearly appear, having its origin in the spirit of the party. Many scrupled not to insinuate, that the coldness and reserve of the governors was the effect of directions received from the reigning factions in England. The justices seemed, by their conduct, rather to wish to foment the rebellion, with a view of profiting by the multiplied forfeitures, therefore instead of taking active steps to allay its far spreading fury, they contented themselves with providing for their own present security, and that of the capital. The Earl of Ormond, general of the forces, remonstrated warmly against such timid, base, and interested counsels, but was most unwillingly obliged to submit to authority.

The general tenor of the conduct of those who held the government at this most critical juncture, was so obstinately opposed to every thing which was patriotic, in such direct contradiction to the sentiments of the wisest and most moderate of all parties in the kingdom, that the results can occasion no surprise. Among the many instances which might be adduced of the aversion of the lords justices to suppress the rebellion, at least, by any resources which Ireland might offer, was the neglect which was paid to the virtuous Earl of Clanricarde and St. Albans, the most powerful

friend to government in the western province. With the old inhabitants he enjoyed the confidence of a chieftain, with the English, the reverence and dignity of a distinguished nobleman, equally eminent by his illustrious connexions, his favour with the king, but more especially by his own excellent and exalted endowments. On the first rise of the rebellion, he was resident at his Irish mansion of Portumna, and exerted himself with especial zeal to preserve the peace of his own county, Galway, and of the neighbouring districts. He raised troops, strengthened the fort of Galway, made a progress through the country, dissipated the apprehensions of the people, inspected every port, encouraged the loyal, terrified the disaffected, and, in short, evinced in every act the most perfect honour and loyalty. But with all his zeal and activity, with all the exalted qualities which form a true patriot, the Earl of Clanricarde was hated and suspected by the state, for he was a Catholic. Every assistance was denied him, and every occasion seized to mortify and disgust him.

The lords justices, and their puritanic adherents, were the more encouraged to reject the assistance of all who were not of their party, by the assurances of support they received from England. In short, the English parliament had made the Irish rebellion subservient to their own purposes, consequently the government of Ireland was completely subjected to their will.

Fifteen years of continual contest between the unhappy Charles and his people, had reduced both to a state lamentable and critical. The popular leaders had triumphed over their monarch, and they now pleaded the necessity of securing the subject, not only by circumscribing, but abolishing the royal authority. The enthusiastic passion for the presbyterian discipline, diffused



itself through every grade of society, mingled with all their concerns, and had an especial and powerful influence on their political pursuits and opinions. The king, who from inclination, as well as a sense of duty, supported the hierarchy, therefore became the object of the resentment and hatred of those who detested every mode dissimilar to their own. Charles had unhappily fallen into such a situation with the people it was his lot to govern, that whichever side he embraced he must be endangered. The religious abhorrence of the hierarchy which prevailed, was augmented by the favour it received from the royal authority, while every device was resorted to, to confirm and inflame the suspicions entertained of the king's sentiments. A virulent abhorrence of popery, apprehension of popish agents and their deep designs, were the general themes of popular declamation.

At the period when every art was used to prejudice the popular mind against the king, the intelligence was received of a popish rebellion in Ireland. It was eagerly seized on as a confirmation of every assertion, industriously spread abroad with every exaggeration. The peculiar guilt of Catholic individuals was attributed to the whole as a body, and the people, ever accustomed to identify the prelatical with the popish party, were very easily persuaded, that this horrid insurrection was the result of their united intrigue; they were told that the Irish rebels pleaded the king's commission for their violences; bigoted, malignant, and credulous, they listened to the calumnious tale, and loaded the already heavily oppressed monarch with the whole enormity; even the more candid and considerate, although they could not credit that the king would sanction such acts, yet believed (so universal was the pre-

judice against him) that the discontents of the Irish had been rather encouraged by him, in order to find the parliament employment, and to divert them from their too evident designs against his power. With such impressions, they saw danger in every proposition made by Charles for suppressing the rebellion. His solicitude for his Irish subjects was converted by the jealousy or the art of his enemies, into an insidious scheme of exhausting England of its arms and treasure, and of involving the parliament in an embarrassing and expensive war.

It was no new thing for the commons to encroach on the executive power ; in regard to Ireland, they now at once assumed it, artfully grounding that assumption upon an expression of the king, whereby he had recommended to them the care of that kingdom. Having laid deeply their project for further innovations, the leaders now made their operations with respect to Ireland subservient to the great design they meditated, to establish their power. They affected the greatest zeal against the Irish insurgents, but they served only as a pretence for securing to themselves a superiority in those commotions which they anticipated in England. Had they any point to gain, the Irish rebellion was a ready plea and instrument for their purposes. If opposed in any design, it was imputed to the influence of the malignant party, encouraged by the rebellion in Ireland ; if recusants were to be seized, if they were to continue guards about the house of commons, the Irish rebellion justified the measures. It was the constant burden of every petition for new-modelling religion, for subverting episcopacy, for guarding against papists and their adherents, and, in short, for every act of the parliament. Believing that at any time they could suppress the rebellion in

Ireland, they determined not to relinquish, by too hasty measures in doing so, the advantage it afforded them in their intended encroachments on the royal prerogative. Whatever law or act they deemed necessary to effect the purposes of their own ambition, was voted under the colour of enabling them to recover Ireland; and if the king withheld his consent, the refusal was instantly imputed to those pernicious counsels and opinions, which had at first excited the rebellion, and still threatened destruction to the protestant interest throughout his dominions. And such was the bias of the public mind against the church and the Catholics, that although no forces were for a long time sent to Ireland, and little aid given to the distress there existing, yet fault was never imputed to those pious popular leaders, whose votes breathed nothing but destruction to the Irish rebels.

We have thus found it necessary to glance at the intriguing motives of the English popular leaders, as it at once explains the conduct of the heads of the Irish government. Indeed English and Irish politics were become so intimately connected, that to understand the machinery of one, the other must be at least superficially examined. Guided as they were by their faction in England, the lords justices waited supinely within the walls of the capital, in expectation, they said, of supplies from England, while the flame of insurrection continued to extend itself, and many who had both the spirit and the loyalty to arrest its exterminating course, could neither obtain arms nor men to effect their wishes.

Things continued in this state of suspense and increasing danger, when a considerable party well affected to the royal cause, fully sensible that the insurrection, however unwarrantable, had

not been entirely unprovoked, and convinced that it might be suppressed by a judicious exertion of that force which even Ireland could supply, resolved to address the king without the intervention of the chief governors, whom they both suspected and despised. Lord Dillon was made the bearer of the memorial to the king. It contained just complaints against the conduct of the lords justices, and recommended that the Earl of Ormond should be substituted in their place, as a measure most effectual to allay the ferment of the nation, and to suppress the rebellion without assistance from England. Alarmed at this design, the crafty and mercenary Parsons, with his pliant colleague, devised means to counteract it. They instantly dispatched an agent to the leaders of the house of commons, and in a private letter to the Earl of Leicester, signed only by themselves and their junto, they declared they could not depend upon any other members of the council; they desired no attention to be paid to the representations of Lord Dillon, that the Irish were insufficient to repress the rebels, a work, they said, only to be effected by English forces. The mercenary spirit of these unworthy statesmen was sufficiently shown by their remark, that whatever expense the English government might incur by an armament, would be fully repaid by the increase of revenue, arising from the forfeited estates of those who were actors in the present mischiefs.

These representations were fatal to the embassy of Lord Dillon; he, with his companion, Lord Taaffe, was arrested at Ware, by order of the house of commons, his papers taken from him and industriously suppressed. They were committed to custody, till it was no longer of consequence to detain them, when, being negligently guarded, they effected their escape. They has-

tened to the king at York, but were too late to offer their propositions.

In the meantime, the rebel leaders quickly discerned the advantages they derived from these circumstances. Moore, the great agent and director of the rebels, redoubled his assiduity; he desired his followers to discard all national distinctions, and to rest the whole merit of their cause on the civil and religious rights of the king's subjects in Ireland, which could only be defended against their numerous enemies by force of arms.

He forcibly pointed out the danger more especially that threatened their religion; the virulence expressed against popery by the English parliament, their sanguinary prosecution of popish ecclesiastics, their passionate declarations against any tolerance of popish errors, their denunciations against the Catholic communion, their menaces of persecution and extirpation; these and every argument to keep alive the spirit of resentment, were made use of with all the characteristic insinuation of the misguided Moore, who now dignified his followers with the title of the Catholic army, and published an oath of association, to be taken by all insurgents, purposely calculated to possess the nation with favourable sentiments of their motives, their cause, and their pursuits. The shameful timidity of the chief governors, the delay of English succours were alike encouraging to the daring rebels. They invested the castle of Wicklow, and the lords justices were hence compelled to some resistance. For this purpose they employed Sir Charles Coote, who was a soldier of fortune, trained in the wars of Elizabeth. Morose, insolent, and cruel in character, and further irritated by the ravages made on his estates, he had imbibed the most illiberal and inveterate prejudices against the Irish. He executed his



present commission therefore under the full influence of all these prejudices, repelled the Irish to their mountains, and in revenge of the depredations he had suffered, committed such ruthless, unprovoked and indiscriminate carnage in the town, as rivalled the utmost enormities of the northern rebels. This wanton cruelty did but exasperate the desperate, and provoke them to severe retaliation.

Hitherto, the rebellion however formidable, was limited to the province of Ulster, and some few other counties, and confined wholly to the Irish as the actors. A more alarming and extensive scene now opened by the defection of the English pale. Although the inhabitants of this district had not entirely approved the assuming arms, they had their prejudices and their discontents. The lords justices regarded them with a suspicion, (they took no care to conceal,) as Irishmen; with abhorrence, as Romanists; they had granted them arms in the most ungracious manner when required for self defence, while the recal of them was humiliating and provoking. To determine them to arms, little more was required than to inflame the resentment which was brooding, and for this purpose Roger Moore was a fit agent. He accordingly addressed himself to Lord Gormanston, who not only possessed great power and influence, but was acquainted with the first conspiracy. Moore was never at a loss to give a fair and captivating aspect to any cause he advocated. With deep insinuating art he brought into view all the subjects of grievance which pressed upon the Catholics, the increasing power of the puritanic faction in England and Ireland, their inveteracy against all Catholics, and the imminent danger of some sanguinary scheme being devised to extirpate all of the communion.

With well affected disdain he dwelt upon the insolence of the lords justices, and roused the pride of his hearer by intimating the scorn with which they regarded the old nobility of Ireland. He expatiated with all the warmth of patriot feeling on the justice, the glory, the absolute necessity of rising in defence of the crown and the rights of the people. In short, he left no argument untried to influence the mind of his noble auditor, although he lamentably forgot the important maxim, "not to do evil that good may come." A remembrance of it was not to be expected from an enthusiast, a bigoted and irritated Catholic, whose conscience, if it whispered aught unpleasant in the overt act, was easily quieted by the private absolution, or the promised penance. The representations of the ardent Moore thus urgently enforced, failed not in making the impression he wished, and with Lord Gormanston, the inhabitants of the pale might justly be deemed brought over to the cause. The interests of religion were found more prevalent over them, than regard or duty to their father land.

Lord Gormanston was chosen their leader, and uniting themselves with the old Irish, they even exceeded them in acts of violence towards the Protestants. Besides various smaller bodies dispersed over the kingdom, the principal army of the rebels amounted to twenty thousand men, and Dublin was threatened with an immediate siege. The Catholic lords having thus renounced the authority of government, and determined to recur to arms in honour of their religion, prepared an apology for their revolt to be transmitted to the king, which of course contained an enumeration of grievances as a justification of their defection. They deigned not, however, to march under the standard of the Ulster Irish, but levied

troops and chose their own commanders. The lords justices in their dispatches to Leicester, expressed the utmost contempt of this defection of the lords of the pale, but however they affected to despise the circumstance as one of no moment, it was really important. No evidence of zeal was it is true manifested, no excesses committed, but by apparent temper, moderation and dignity of conduct, by fair declarations of loyalty, by their zeal for the redress of grievances, they made a powerful impression on all the Catholics of Ireland. Manifestoes were sent to all the trading towns and seaports. These chiefly dwelt on the dangerous conjunction of the Irish governors with the popular party in England, and the terrible scheme of extirpation devised against all those who should refuse to abandon the Romish communion. All indiscreet and virulent expressions emanating from the government, were industriously propagated and commented upon, and succeeded in making a strong impression upon those whose remoteness of situation precluded the examination of reports or detection of their falsity.

The contagion of rebellion thus was spread far and wide, and the usual violences, cruelties, and enormities followed the steps of fanaticism, and misdirected passion. It is but justice to say that if many popish ecclesiastics instigated by their horrid doctrines and persuasions to blood and massacre, others were known equally zealous to moderate the excesses of their misguided votaries, many not only protected the miserable English from fanatic fury, but also concealed them beneath the sanctuary of their altars, from that vengeance which pursued them from every quarter. Inevitable and total ruin must have ensued from this cruel contest, had it not yet been, that although the Irish had received military discipline

from foreigners, and in foreign service are not excelled by any troops, yet they in their own country have never been able to make a vigorous and effectual effort for the defence or recovery of their liberties. Hence, in many encounters, the English under different commanders had, though under the greatest disadvantages of situation and numbers, put the Irish to the rout. The lords justices in the meantime were engaged in a far more interesting manner to them than any thing that concerned the country alone, viz. the legal conviction of the individuals engaged in the insurrection, a measure previously necessary to the forfeiture of their estates. These extensive forfeitures were the chief object of these mercenary statesmen and their friends; and in order to ensure the advantages they anticipated from this source, the commons of England had very early petitioned that the king would not alienate any of the exacted lands that might accrue to the crown from the Irish rebellion. They had, in furtherance of their object, lately proceeded in a scheme for raising money from the lands thus expected to escheate. A bill was framed for repaying those who should advance certain sums for repressing of the rebels, (as was pretended,) by vesting them with proportional estates in Ireland, on terms highly advantageous to a new English plantation. Thus literally the devoted country was sold to the highest bidders. It was natural that the malcontents should be exasperated by this scheme, but it was not on this account less acceptable to those it tempted. Much as Charles regretted the consequences, he could not but foresee that he was reduced to the humiliating necessity of submission, and was obliged to consent to a bill which augmented the strength of his enemies. The administration of Ireland im-

plicitly yielding to the direction of their English guides, proceeded indefatigably in procuring indictments, not only against open rebels, but those whose conduct had been in the smallest degree suspicious. The fury of their prosecutions falling principally upon the gentlemen of the pale, desiring if possible to involve the principal families of the district so named in the guilt of first contriving and concerting the insurrection. With this view they inhumanly determined to supply the deficiency of legal evidence by putting some prisoners to the torture. They began with Mac Mahon, who had been seized on the information of O'Conolly. The point they wanted to establish was the king's having granted a commission for the insurrection, but torture could elicit nothing from their victim essential to their purpose, "He had been told that application was to be made to the king for a commission, he had been promised that such a commission should be produced, but he had never seen any commission." Such was the substance of his answers.

Sir John Read was next subjected to the horrid ordeal of fidelity. He had been chosen by the inhabitants of the pale on their taking arms to be the bearer of their justification to the king, but had been treacherously seized and imprisoned, his letters taken from him and carefully suppressed, and now he was importuned on the rack with interrogations tending to make him criminate his royal master. But Sir John Read was nobly firm, and disappointed his malicious torturers. They were not however yet discouraged. Patrick Barewal was their next victim, venerable in age, respectable in character. His only guilt, that he had attended the meeting at the Hill of Crofty, and had been appointed by the insurgents to a command. But he had never acted or united



with the rebels. He endured the torture with so steady an avowal of his innocence, and such abundant evidence was offered in his favour that the justices were almost put to shame for their cruelty. In order to make some amends to their wretched victim, he was permitted to reside in Dublin, and his estate was protected from the general havoc. Unable in this way to criminate the king, the popular partisans determined to derive some advantages from them, by plausibly spreading rumours abroad that the examination of the prisoners contained intelligence of great moment, highly reflecting on the king's honour. All, however, was vague insinuation, no particulars were divulged. His secretary applied to the lords justices for copies of those examinations for the king's perusal, but without avail, they were in the hands of his enemies, who forbore to communicate them to the individual so much interested. And such was the violence, the prejudice and the credulity of the misguided people, and so obtuse was become their moral perception that they perceived not that this reserve was really a refutation of the charges brought against the king as having instigated the rebellion. The king, most justly indignant at these circumstances, resolved himself to pass over to Ireland, and accordingly by a message to both houses, he declared his intention of going with all convenient speed to that country to chastise the rebels, of raising a guard for his person, and even of selling or pledging his parks and houses if necessary for this service.

The lords justices were, as may be supposed, highly alarmed at this proposed royal visit. They sent the most discouraging accounts of the distressed state of the country, intimating unequivocally that the king could not appear with personal safety, comfort to his subjects, or terror to

his enemies. But these objections would probably have been unheeded by Charles in his eager wish of effecting his purposes, had not a peremptory negative been given to his design, by the power at home which enthralled him, and with insulting menaces insisted that his design should be relinquished, thus the unhappy Charles was compelled to yield to a power he could not resist. This was a cruel disappointment to the pale whose last hopes of an equitable accommodation with government, rested upon the presence of their monarch. They had precipitately involved themselves in the horrors and guilt of rebellion. All retreat was rendered desperate by the treatment of those who had surrendered. The apparent object of the Irish government and the English parliament was the extermination of the Catholics, their estates were already allotted to their conquerors, so that themselves and their posterity were consigned to inevitable ruin. Lord Gormanston was so deeply affected by the melancholy state into which he had reduced himself, his family, and his friends, that grief soon put a period to his life. His associates lost to all hope, grew desperate and violent, abandoning all thoughts of treaty or pardon, they became a band of those wretched beings who having cast off the world's friendship, and the world's law, consider themselves also in a state of moral outlawry, and sunk into that misery which is too often the parent of moral evil. Soon after this, the rebel forces were defeated by the Earl of Ormond; an account of this action, called the battle of Kilrush, was transmitted to the English commons, whose encomiums on the victorious general were speedily followed by an order that five hundred pounds should be expended on a jewel as a token of their satisfaction, and that the lords should be

requested to unite with them in a petition to the king that he would be pleased to confer on the earl the honour of the garter. Every part of Ireland was the theatre of a wasting war carried on in the usual guerilla mode of the Irish, the insurgents following their respective leaders without union, command, direction or scheme of general resistance, enterprise or good.

In Leinster the loyalists were harassed by detached parties of rebels who ravaged their possessions and besieged their castles. The arrival of some succours encouraged the chief governors to make some effort to repress these outrages, one of which we shall relate. The Lady Offaly had been summoned by the rebels to give up her castle. Her answer to this summons was worthy of a daughter of the house of Kildare; "I received your letter wherein you threaten to sack my castle by his majesty's authority, I am, and ever have been a loyal subject and a good neighbour among you, and therefore cannot but wonder at such an assault. I thank you for your offer of a convoy, wherein I hold little safety. And therefore my resolution is, that being free from offending his majesty, or doing wrong to any of you, I will live and die innocently, and will do my best to defend my own, leaving the issue to God. Though I have been, and still am desirous to avoid the shedding of Christian blood, yet being provoked, your threats shall no whit dismay me."

LETTICE OFFALY.

This heroic female was relieved in the domain she so resolutely determined to defend, and others were rendered the like succour, but the general circumstances of the army were most distressing. The most common necessities of life were not to be procured, the country had been rendered a barren waste by the wild rage of the Irish.

Every petty detachment from England served to aggravate the distress by lessening the scanty supply of provision. Officers clamoured for their arrears of pay, the men without pay or cloathing, weakened by unwholesome diet, inclement seasons, exposure to damp, and worn with fatiguing marches, daily sank under these accumulated miseries. The more robust grew mutinous, and quarrels continually arose between them and the new comers. Melancholy is the reflection, that two nations should thus by their civil and religious animosities, make desolate that fertile land which in peace and union might so amply have furnished sustenance for both. Without pay it was utterly impossible to keep the army within any bounds of discipline, in this crisis of affairs an Irish parliament sat for three days only in Dublin. The number of members was necessarily inconsiderable, as many were in actual rebellion, and as many excluded themselves by refusing to take the required oath of supremacy. Yet those who did assemble were furious in their invectives against the Romish party, declared for a rigorous execution of the penal statutes, urging both to the king and English parliament the absolute necessity of new and severe laws against recusants. As might be expected, the English parliament echoed these sentiments. The bills were prepared for transmission, and the utmost vengeance declared against popery. The cord being thus drawn to its extreme tension, it was not surprising that it should break. The insurgents grew if possible more desperate, and by the infamous conduct of government were suffered to collect and increase their force, to possess stations of strength and consequence, and in some places to confine the English within narrow bounds, while they themselves ranged at large with free possession of the

open country. To render them more formidable, Owen O'Nial, who had been so long and anxiously expected, at length arrived in Donnegal with a supply of arms and ammunition and accompanied by one hundred officers. Owen O'Nial was well adapted for the service of his country at this juncture. He had served with high reputation in the imperial and Spanish armies. Experience had formed him to an able and skilful soldier, quick in discerning his advantages, diligent and prompt in improving them, less enterprizing than circumspect, possessing a genius peculiarly suited to defence, and in the methods of protracting a war, all qualities most especially useful in that service which his country demanded of him. His prudence, his temperance, his caution and knowledge of the world formed a striking contrast to the rudeness, the ignorance, the intemperance, levity and inexperience of his relative, the brutal Sir Phelim; the most undiscerning must mark the superiority of the one over the other, and to the secret mortification of Sir Phelim, Owen O'Nial was unanimously declared by the northern Irish the leader of their confederacy. The generous and noble minded Owen regarded with a horror which he freely confessed, the barbarities exercised by Sir Phelim and his brutal followers, and he declared that he would unite with the English rather than suffer the actors of such enormities to escape their just punishment. In the meantime the English parliament entered into a contract with the Scots for sending an army of ten thousand men into Ireland, and in order to engage them to compliance, gave a promise of pay, and agreed to put Carrickfergus into their hands, and to invest their general with an authority independent of the English parliament. After many delays these troops were sent to their destination, and while



they remained, were so far useful, that they diverted the force of the rebels, and protected the small remnants of the British planters in the north. Except this controul over the Scots, all the measures of parliament tended rather to the injury than the good of the protestant cause in Ireland. By continuing their persecution and violent menaces against priests and papists, they confirmed the Catholics in rebellion, and cut off all hopes of accommodation, indulgence, or toleration. By disposing beforehand of the Irish forfeitures, they rendered all desperate, and seemed to threaten the total extirpation of the natives. A thousand acres for instance were given to every one that subscribed two hundred pounds, in Ulster. In Connaught the same tract for three hundred and fifty, and in Munster, four hundred and fifty.

To increase the confidence of the rebels which had been justly raised by the arrival of Owen O'Nial, a second and even more important embarkation was made for their support at Dunkirk. No less than fourteen vessels laden with every requisite for warfare arrived, together with a considerable number of Irish officers and veteran soldiers, discharged from the French service by Richelieu, all amply provided and assured of further succours. The English were now justly alarmed, as the rebels being now masters of the sea, could intercept any relief, and of course the capital appeared at their mercy. They naturally imagined immediate operations would take place, furnished as they were with every necessary for war. But the Irish were for the present engaged in the execution of a scheme long since concerted to give the form of authority to their procedures and to unite their associates in the different provinces, so as to ensure general obedience and

submission. These were the very desiderata which were to render them truly formidable. The authority of their clergy had been already employed. The Catholic prelate first summoned his clergy to a synod; therein it was declared, that the war of the Irish was lawful and *pious*, and all persons were exhorted to unite in the righteous cause. This, however, was not deemed sufficient authority, a general synod was therefore convened of all the Romish clergy throughout Ireland, which sat at Kilkenny.

The acts of this numerous assembly were many, and most solemn. They opened the business of their meeting, by declaring the war maintained by the Catholics against sectaries and puritans, for the defence of the Catholic religion, the royal prerogative, the honour and the safety of the queen and royal issue, the conservation of the rights and privileges, the liberties of Ireland, and of themselves as individuals, to be just, meritorious, and lawful. They directed that all their confederates should be united by an oath of association, and denounced sentence of excommunication on all who should refuse to take it, against all neuters, all who assisted the enemy, all who should invade the possessions of any Catholic, or any Irish Protestant, *not adversary to their cause*. They forbade all distinctions and comparisons between the old and new Irish, directed that exact registers be kept in every province of the cruelties and murders committed by the puritans, for under this denomination they included all those who opposed them, and denounced their ecclesiastical censures on those of their communion, who should commit the like excesses. They also ordained that provincial councils should be formed, composed of clergy and laity, and a general one also, to which the others should be

subordinate, that embassies should be sent to foreign potentates, soliciting aid to their cause.

Such were the principal acts of the clergy. The nobility and gentry then resident at Kilkenny united with them in framing the oath of association, in naming the members of the supreme council, of which Lord Mountgarret was chosen president, and in appointing a general assembly of the whole nation to meet in that city, in the ensuing month, (October 1642.)

The period of this convention had arrived, when the foreign succours gave animation to the cause. The popish prelates, clergy, and lords, popish deputies from the principal counties and towns of every province, assembled as agreed at Kilkenny. The concourse was great and imposing. With well affected humility they disclaimed all wish of having their assembly considered as a parliament, but as a general meeting to confer on their affairs, until his majesty could in his wisdom settle the present troubles. It was, however, modelled according to a parliament in every respect, consisting of two houses, one of temporal peers and prelates, the other of representatives, deputed by counties and towns. Both sat in the same chamber. Patrick Darcy, an eminent lawyer, took his place bare-headed on a stool, as a substitute for the judges; and Nicholas Plunket, another distinguished partisan of the recusant faction, was appointed speaker. The Lords had a place of retirement for their consultations, and Darcy was the medium of their communication to the commons. Those of the clergy who were not admitted to sit among the lords, formed a convocation, in which they treated of ecclesiastical affairs. In the first place, this assembly declared their firm resolution to maintain the rights and immunities of the Romish Church. The common

law of England and statutes of Ireland they professed to accept as their note of government, so far as they were not contrary to the Roman religion, or inconsistent with the liberties of Ireland. They commanded all persons to bear faith and loyalty to the king, but renounced the authority of his Irish government, formed as it was of "a malignant party, and in compliance with their confederates, the malignant party in England." The administration of public justice they assumed to themselves. A council was assigned to each county, consisting of twelve persons, who were to transact all local affairs. From these there was an appeal to the provincial councils, who were to meet four times in a year, and from these again there was an appeal to the *supreme council of the confederated Catholics of Ireland*, consisting of twenty-four persons, chosen by the general convention. This council was to direct every affair relative to the interest of the confederacy, and for its greater honour and security, a guard was assigned to the assembly, of five hundred foot and two hundred horse. As this council had been adopted from the ecclesiastical synod, so also was the oath of association taken from their form, except in one part only, in which the clergy bound their votaries never to consent to peace, until the church should be again amply invested not only with all its powers and privileges, its splendour and magnificence, but also with all its ancient possessions, which no zeal for religion could induce the present possessors to restore. Thus they seemed to render the war interminable. The assembly were contented with directing that all persons should swear allegiance to the king, engage to defend his prerogative, the power and privilege of the parliament of Ireland, the fundamental laws, together with the free exercise of

the Roman Catholic religion, to obey the orders of the supreme council, to seek for no pardon or protection, without the consent of the major part of the council, and to prosecute and maintain the common cause.

The system of government being thus adjusted, the provincial generals were next chosen; Owen O'Nial was appointed for Ulster. They had scarcely sworn to maintain the king's prerogative, when they violated it in a material point, by assuming a power of regulating the coin, and raising its value. Ambassadors were sent to foreign powers, to solicit succours, and petitions were prepared to be sent to the king and queen, with a representation of the grievances which had urged their confederacy. But with all this apparent state and authority, the confederation possessed within itself the principles of dissension and weakness. It is seldom that the first leaders of an insurrection preserve their power: they are rather doomed to excite the movement, by which they are the first overwhelmed, and to develop the principles by which they are condemned. Thus the more moderate among the confederates now affected to condemn the enormities which had disgraced the original insurrection. Hence in their present disposal of offices, several of the first conspirators were purposely neglected: Sir Phelim O'Nial was indignant and mortified, and even Roger Moore, whose temper was more generous, was greatly disappointed when he found his zealous services unnoticed and unrewarded, for no man ever descended without regret from a rank which placed him superior to other men—at least, no ambitious man. Possessing spirit, abilities, and activity, Moore, in disgust, might have proved a formidable malcontent to the confederacy; but, for the present, he was soothed



and flattered, and his death, which occurred not long after the convention, was an incident probably not regretted by those to whom he might have proved troublesome. They had flattered themselves that the noble-minded Clanricarde would have united with them, but they had the mortification to find him reject their most urgent overtures, unshaken in his loyalty alike by their solicitations, menaces, and excommunications of their clergy. Their disappointment, however, was in a degree made up, by the acquisition of an associate of dignity and consequence, Touchet, Earl of Castlehaven, and Baron Audley of England, who, urged by indignation and disgust at the injuries he had experienced from the government, was readily persuaded to unite with the confederates.

In the meantime, the lords justices, instead of acting against the public enemy, seemed solely intent on embarrassing and mortifying those attached to the king. The civil war in England had been declared, and his authority was despised by the governors of Ireland, from the moment the sword was unsheathed. Every rumour disadvantageous to the devoted Charles, was industriously propagated. The pulpit was employed, as in England, as an engine of state, and the medium of calumny, to inflame the popular mind; and the most absurd illiterate brawlers, encouraged by those in power, vented their crude decisions on the unhappy contest between the king and his people. It was a point of especial care with the lords justices and their intriguing party, that no accounts of Ireland should be transmitted to England, but through the deceitful medium of their representations. But this deceptive policy was at length defeated by the spirited conduct of the loyalist officers, who, after various difficul-

ties thrown in their way by government, succeeded in conveying an address to the king, wherein they detailed the distresses to which they were subjected, by the mal-administration of the government, and stated many circumstances respecting the governors, their principles, procedures, and connexions. To enter into a detail of events that followed, would be both tedious and unnecessary, arising as they solely did from the culpable conduct and political bias of the chief governors, and the firm spirit and success of the confederates, while the noble spirit of the Marquis of Ormond shines forth in the manifold difficulties of his situation. We shall therefore briefly say, that the chief justices, with several who favoured their party, were, by the instance of Ormond, removed from their situations, and their place supplied by others better affected to the royal interest. The king, as he had neither money, arms, ammunition, nor provisions to spare from his own urgent wants, in order to carry on the war in Ireland, resolved to embrace an expedient which might at once relieve the necessities of the Irish Protestants, and contribute to the advancement of his affairs in England, viz.: a truce with the rebels; by this he trusted his Irish subjects would be enabled to provide for their own support, and even to grant him some aid. But as a treaty with a people so odious for their religion, and the enormities which had disgraced them might, it was too probable, be represented in invidious colours by his enemies, and be a pretext to renew all those calumnies with which he had heretofore been loaded, it was necessary to proceed with extreme caution in conducting the measure. Accordingly the king gave orders to Ormond and the justices, to conclude a cessation of arms, for a year, with the council of Kilkenny, by whom

the Irish were now governed, and to leave both parties in possession of their present advantages. Whatever might have been the primary motives of the king in desiring this truce, involved as he was in a desperate civil war, which obliged him to seek resources from every quarter, yet the melancholy plea of necessity never could be urged with greater force, for the country was in a desperate situation. The affair of the treaty thus rendered almost unavoidable, was obviously one of great delicacy, requiring equal address and caution. The honour of the king demanded that the overtures should come from the confederates, who had formerly expressed a wish that hostilities might be suspended, that they might present their grievances, and prepare a way to settle the distractions of the kingdom. The Marquis of Ormond therefore employed agents, to confer with the supreme council at Kilkenny, who finally agreed to a cessation of twelve months, on certain *conditions*, to be proposed by their agents to Ormond; and they were appointed to meet him accordingly, at Castle Martyr, in the county of Kildare. Ormond received them with a stately dignity, and examined their propositions with the freedom of a superior. They demanded that the exercise of their government should continue during the cessation, and that a free parliament, admitting Catholics, should be convened. These demands were rejected. Other demands Ormond thought derogatory to the royal interest, and supposing the high tone of the confederates was produced by their military successes, he determined for a while to suspend the negotiation, in the hope of obtaining some advantages which would render them more complying. But the necessities of the king soon obliged a renewal, although under the greatest disadvantages of con-

cluding it favourably to the royal interests, the Irish at the time having a manifest superiority over the loyalists. Nor were the assembly insensible to these favourable circumstances, which were pressed upon them more particularly by their vigilant clergy. Peter Scarampi, a father of the congregation of the oratory,\* appeared at Kilkenny, as minister from the pope. He was the bearer of money and military supplies to the rebels, letters from the holy see to the supreme council, the provincial generals, and the Romish prelates, and above all, a bull, granting a general jubilee, and plenary absolution to those who had taken up arms for the Catholic faith. The old Irish crowded about the Romish agent, with lively emotions of attachment. He taught them to regard their brethren of the English race as impious temporisers, and betrayers of the faith; to regard with horror any treaty, in which was no express stipulation for the free, public, and splendid exercise of the Romish worship. He insisted on the present flourishing state of their affairs, the distresses of the English, the certain support from foreign powers, if the confederates should persevere and not betray their glorious cause in so critical a juncture, and warmly remonstrated against supplying the king with money, assuredly to be employed against themselves. He concluded by urging his partisans to move,

\* The fathers of the oratory of St. John. This order, both in the nature of its rules, and design of establishment, seems in direct opposition to that of the Jesuits. It was founded 1613, and has produced a number of persons eminent for piety, learning, and eloquence; it still even

retains its reputation. They are not properly religieux, being bound by no vows, their institution being merely sacerdotal, or ecclesiastical. From the suppression of the Jesuits, the education of youth was intrusted principally to the Fathers of the Oratory.

that the treaty of cessation should be deferred, until the pope could be consulted, and had given his directions in an affair of such moment as religion. Fortunately for the fate of the treaty, there were moderate and sagacious individuals among the Catholics, who by no means were disposed to rest implicitly on the advice of this sacerdotal minister. Amongst these, the Earl of Clanricarde was earnest in his remonstrances to his friends not to reject this favourable opportunity of preserving themselves and their country; and Lord Castlehaven was also indefatigable in inspiring his associates with sentiments of moderation and peace. Happily their influence prevailed over the persuasions of Scarampi, although much contest and debate marked the discussion of the measure.

All preliminaries being at length adjusted, the Irish finally agreed to grant the king thirty thousand pounds, one half in money, to be paid at several periods, the other moiety in cattle. When the articles were concluded, they were communicated in form to all the principal lords, some of the privy council, and officers of the army who had attended, and assisted in the treaty. These all subscribed a declaration, that considering the circumstances of the kingdom, they believed it necessary, for his majesty's honour and service, that a cessation should be finally concluded on the articles now laid before them. On the 15th of September the treaty was signed by the marquis and the Irish commissioners. It received also the ratification of the justices and council, and was then notified, by proclamation, to the whole kingdom. It was received with equal discontent and clamour in both kingdoms. The parliament, whose pleasure it was to condemn



every measure adopted by the loyal party, and who exulted in every opportunity of reproaching their ill-fated sovereign with his favour to the Irish papists, exclaimed loudly against the cessation; and among other reasons upon which they grounded their condemnation, was the divine vengeance which England might justly dread for tolerating anti-christian idolatry, on pretence of civil contracts, and political agreements. Thus religion, though every day rendered subservient to their towering ambition, was now supposed too sacred to be yielded up to the temporal interests or safety of nations.

The true ground of this hypocritical zeal, and severe condemnation, was to be found, however, in their chagrin in being by the treaty deprived of their popular pretence for raising money to support their own contest. Candour, however, demands us to add, that the objections of many might be grounded in upright and patriot principles, although erring in judgment, and misguided by credulity.

The people of England, generally speaking, were quite indifferent to Irish affairs, and had neither the disposition nor the curiosity to inquire into the accuracy of any accounts received from thence. The vague accounts respecting the barbarities of the rebels, were easily extended to the character of the whole Catholic population, and all were alike held in detestation and abhorrence. Of course, when the concessions admitted were represented through the medium of self-interested politicians, the condescensions shown by the royal party were deemed scandalous and weak. Some even regarded them as a departure from those solemn protestations which Charles had repeatedly made against popery, and declared, that

after such a proof of his insincerity, they could no longer support his cause.

Thus did a strange fatality seem to attend every measure of this unhappy branch of the unfortunate house of Stuart.

## CHAPTER XVII.

*Troops sent to England—Popular clamour against the measure—Unhappy situation of the devoted Charles—Difficulties attending the administration of Ormond—Want of faith in the confederates—Further cause of disunion and distress—The covenant offered—Entered into with ardor by the troops—The popular contagion rapidly spreads—Instance of versatility—The Scotch general Monro takes the covenant at Carrickfergus—Agreement of the Scotch and English troops—Rebels make propositions to Ormond—He is perplexed—Demands of the commissioners at Oxford—Animosities prevent all final adjustment—Insolent language of the protestants—Agents of the council arrive—Condescension of Charles—He directs Ormond to make peace—Difficulty of the commission—He commences a treaty with the confederates—Perplexities—Proceedings suspended—M<sup>r</sup> Mahon and Macguire executed—Instability of the king—Perplexity of Ormond—He petitions to be removed—Consent not given—Irish active in strengthening their confederacy—Procrastination of the confederates—Internal weakness of the confederacy—Impatience of the king and insincere conduct—Earl of Glamorgan—Letter from Charles to Glamorgan—His mission to Ireland—His reception—John Rinuncini sent as nuncio by the pope—His character—Articles of his mission—Repeal of penal statutes urged—Opposition to the treaty—Battle of Naseby encourages the confederates to persevere in opposition—They rise in their demands—Unhappy situation of the king—Disclosure of instruction enrages the confederates—It is shewn in their opposition to Ormond—Glamorgan received with satisfaction—Commission empowering him to treat with the confederates—Objections of the nuncio—Treaty with Glamorgan concluded—Its stipulations—Levies made for the royal service—Ormond's treaty—Perplexed situation of Charles.*

A. D. 1643.

AFTER this cessation of arms there was little occasion as well as no means of subsisting the army in Ireland. The king therefore directed the

Marquis of Ormond, who was firmly devoted to his unfortunate master, to send over considerable bodies of it to England. These troops were Protestants, many of them English by birth, who considered the return to their native country as a happy escape from the calamities they had endured in Ireland. Yet scarcely had they landed, than rumours were spread, that the Irish rebels, still reeking with the blood of Protestants, were now arrived at the coast, impatient to extend their ravages through England; and others averred, that the Irish rebels were now to join the popish armies of the king and queen, and in conjunction with these associates, to settle the religion and liberties of England.

Most of these forces continued faithfully in the royal cause; but some few, having imbibed in Ireland strong prejudices against the Catholics, and hearing the king's party universally reproached with popery, deserted to the parliament's army.

Thus anxiously and precariously did the unhappy Charles sit upon a throne continually tottering under him. Attacked on all sides by enemies, numerous, violent, and implacable, and from the shock of the opposite pretensions of the crown and parliament, rendered more violent by religious animosity, factious convulsions and disorder necessarily arose, which finally precipitated the monarch from his anxious elevation. It had been debated, if Ormond should not be recalled to England to command the Irish troops; but affairs in Ireland so imperiously demanded his presence, that he was continued there under the title of lord lieutenant, the duties of which he fulfilled with that enthusiastic loyalty and devoted attachment to his royal master, which distinguished him. These high qualities were drawn abundantly to view, by the difficulties of his si-

tuation. The confederates infringed the articles of cessation, and committed various outrages which were too often recriminated by the English. The subsidies they had agreed to pay were irregularly and slowly remitted. They refused to send any forces into England. In vain did Ormond remonstrate, urge, and threaten; the confederates were obstinate, believing that the pressing necessities of the king would oblige him to purchase their assistance by important and liberal concessions, they would not therefore even allow arms or ammunition to be purchased in their quarters for the royal service.

At length the Earl of Antrim, who had undertaken the service with much difficulty, raised two thousand men for the royal cause, and Charles was still amused by various pretences of receiving further aid. But a period was now arriving, when the already almost overwhelming perplexities of devoted Ireland were to be augmented by religion, or rather that delusive and destructive spirit, which had usurped her meek and holy name.

The Scottish regiments, under Monroe, which had been sent to repel the rebels in Ulster, were at this period so eager for the covenant by which their countrymen had engaged themselves, that they actually sent to Scotland for a copy of that famous engagement.\* The English regiments,

\* This covenant consisted in an absolute renunciation of popery, and contained many invectives, fitted highly to inflame the minds of men against their fellow-beings, holding different sentiments from their own. These were followed by a bond of union, whereby the subscribers engaged most solemnly to resist all religious

innovations, and to defend each other against all opposition whatsoever; and all this for the greater glory of God, and the greater honour and advantage of their king and country. None but rebels to God, and traitors to their country, it was thought, would refuse to engage themselves in so pious and salutary a combination.



under Ormond, were better affected to the royal cause; but their necessities were urgent, and their hopes of relief resting on the parliament, urged them to an engagement which would recommend them to its favour. Ormond saw with unfeigned sorrow the bias of their minds, and advised their colonels not to act precipitately, to give themselves time to consider, and to receive directions from the state. He represented the iniquity of the covenant, and furnished them with a proclamation, issued by the Irish government, forbidding all persons from tendering or accepting it. But so great were their apprehensions of the spirit of the Scottish forces, against all who opposed the covenant, and the displeasure of parliament, that they declined to publish this proclamation to their troops. At length a supply of money, cloathing, and provision was remitted from Scotland, together with four ministers of the kirk, to tender and enforce the covenant. These missionary priests passed with indefatigable zeal through every parish in the counties of Down and Antrim, and themselves and doctrines were every where received with ardour. All ranks and conditions flocked around them, contending who should first have the glory of being found worthy to be engaged in the godly cause, and entering a combination so essential, they were taught, to the salvation of their souls. The prohibitions and menaces, the proclamations of government against the covenant, only served to increase the general fervour to engage in it. Those soldiers who had secretly taken it, now emboldened by numbers, openly avowed their engagement, in defiance of their officers. They who refused to be united by

Of course, those who withstood it were objects of general odium, amounting to proscription.

this godly vow, were regarded as impious wretches unworthy of the rights of humanity, and many in consequence, were actually denied by the covenanters the common necessities of life. All, even those who had ever evinced the utmost loyalty, now caught the popular contagion. It seemed like the working of a spell. Audley Mervin inveighed with such vehemence against the covenant, in the parliament of Dublin, expressed such loyalty to the king, and declaimed so copiously against the commons of England, and their neglect of Ireland, that Ormond deemed him a proper person to be intrusted with the government of Derry; yet this man had scarcely entered on his new responsible office, when he was prevailed on to take that very engagement, which had been the object of his severe censure. This revolution of opinion cannot otherwise be accounted for, than as being produced by that tumult of passion, ever accompanying the spirit of party. There is a moment of enjoyment in all tumultuous passions, the individual may then be considered in a delirium, which gives, in a moral sense, that pleasure which arises from strong excited feeling, and elevation of thought. The contending opinions, prejudices, and prepossessions of the period we are reviewing, were well calculated to multiply instances of this mental inebriation.

The Scotch general, Monroe, had taken the covenant with great solemnity, in the church of Carrickfergus. He affected, however, the greatest moderation, leaving it entirely to the kirk ministers, by pious exhortations, to prevail, without attempting any violence against those who refused the engagement. No one, however, believed this moderation was sincere. The English officers more especially doubted it, every day expecting from the parliament an order to impose the cove-

nant by force, and their apprehensions were soon confirmed, when a commission from the English houses, under their broad seal, was received by Monroe, empowering him in their name and authority to carry on the war against all the enemies of the covenanted party. Hostilities were in consequence commenced; but the circumstances of each party rendering an amicable agreement desirable, a stipulation was soon formed and subscribed, whereby the English were assured they would not be required to take any oath contrary to their consciences, until they should first address themselves to the English parliament, representing their reasons and scruples; and further, that their regiments should be furnished with the same provisions, and have the same privileges with the Scots. On these conditions they engaged to unite with Monroe, in a vigorous prosecution of the Irish rebels, unless his majesty's command should hereafter contradict any further proceeding. The rebels became alarmed; as usual they were divided by frivolous competitions; their forces were scattered. They made private overtures to Ormond, that he would accept the supreme command of all their forces, and march against the stubborn northerns, with the whole united power of the royalists, for in this party they constantly included themselves. At the same time, they required that he should proclaim the Scots rebels, in consequence of their infraction of the cessation.

It is obvious that the honourable spirit of Ormond could not yield to these proposals and requisitions; yet it was dangerous, he knew, to exasperate the Irish, as his hopes of subsistence depended upon them, and if provoked, they might reduce him to sudden famine.

In this perplexity, Ormond was obliged to temporise and amuse; and without giving any

explicit replies, he made propositions which, with discussions and replies, occupied the time till it was found that Monroe was really no ways inclined to prosecute the war. While the marquis was thus occupied with the wants and distresses of the state, and was contending with the arrogance of the popish confederates, the virulence of the covenanters, and other trying circumstances of his situation, Oxford was the scene of Irish negotiation; but the commissioners were found so extravagant and intractable, that the conference was upon the point of closing, without effecting any thing. At length they withdrew some of their obnoxious propositions, and the royal commissioners were enabled to listen to them, the king being extremely solicitous for a peaceable adjustment of affairs, as opening a prospect of aid from Ireland, if effected. Of these moderated demands, the most important were, the freedom of their religion, by a repeal of all penal statutes; a free parliament; suspension of Poynings' law, during its session; the vacating of all indictments, attainders, and outlawries, in prejudice of Irish Catholics; the establishment of an inn of court, and seminaries of education in Ireland, for the benefit of Catholic subjects; a free and indifferent appointment of all Irish natives, without exception, to places of trust and honour; that no persons, not estated and resident in Ireland, should sit and vote in the parliament of the realm; that no chief governor should be continued above three years, and that during his government he should be disqualified to purchase any lands in the kingdom, except from the king. On the grant of these, and many lesser propositions, they declared their readiness to devote their lives and fortunes to the king's service, and particularly to contribute ten thou-

sand men, towards suppressing the unnatural rebellion in England.

But however desirous and willing Charles was to make these proposals the basis of a treaty of peace, and however urgently he might require its fulfilment, his hopes and wishes were retarded in their accomplishment, by the contention of Irish parties, popish and protestant, both obstinate, irritated, violent, and alike unreasonable in their demands. The protestant party required the most rigorous execution of the penalties against recusancy, that the usurped power of the confederates should be dissolved, their whole party disarmed, compelled to repair all damages sustained by protestants, and brought to condign punishment for their offences, without any act of oblivion, release, or discharge; that the oath of supremacy should be strictly and universally imposed on all magistrates, and that all that refused should be incapable of sitting in parliament, in which nothing should be attempted contrary to the law of Poynings, the bulwark of the royal power, and the protection of the protestant subjects of Ireland.

These propositions were made in a manner so peremptory, as to astonish the king and his ministers, albeit they were not unused to the language. It was obvious that they could not be acceded to in the existing state of things, and they were reminded that they could not expect compliance. They replied, they were entirely ignorant of the king's circumstances, they were but to propose the sentiments of his good subjects, and to prove their allegations; they thought it better that the protestants should even abandon Ireland, than make a destructive peace; they intimated, with ill-concealed insolence, that the king had nothing more to do than to submit to the terms of peace proposed by the English parlia-



ment, and there then would be no want of supplies for the Irish war.

In the meantime the commissioners from the Irish council, whom Charles had expressed a wish should be deputed to confer upon the treaty, had so much delayed their mission, that the protestant deputies had thus preceded them. At length they also arrived. The propositions of the protestants were of course condemned in toto, but they remained obstinate. The unfortunate Charles thus finding himself enclosed with difficulties on every side, from which he could not escape, with his mind naturally biassed towards the Catholic cause, as that of his queen who possessed his devoted, undivided love; pressed down by his necessities, and finding no human source of relief but from Ireland in the event of a peace with his rebellious subjects in that kingdom, was certainly inclined to treat with the agents from the council, and by no means to yield to the peremptory demands of those who it was evident wished to obstruct a peace on any terms. He therefore treated the former with particular attention, and with that courtesy which was equally the dictate of his native feelings, and the result of those misfortunes which had mellowed them into gentleness. To their proposition for the repeal of the penal statutes, he replied that those statutes had never been rigorously executed, so that his recusant subjects should have no reason to complain that they were treated with less moderation than heretofore, and that such of them as manifested affection for his service should receive such marks of his favour, as would evidence his regard and consideration of them. The agents won by the condescension of the monarch, treated him with the utmost deference and respect. They acknowledged that Charles situated as he was, could not



be expected to make further concessions, and trusted the general assembly would admit it, by moderating their demands, though they had not present authority to recede from them. Charles dismissed them with a pathetic admonition to consider his circumstances and their own. This address was more the dictate of wounded and harassed feeling, and a deep sense of present difficulty and prospective evil, than consistent with that sincerity and honour which should never depart from the breast of him who holds in his hands the happiness and well being of thousands. The terms of it were equivocal, and tending to inspire those he addressed with hopes utterly inconsistent with many former solemn declarations. The events of this period may indeed as they referred to the king and his negociation with his Irish subjects, be regarded as one of those trials of human integrity and virtue from which few indeed came forth pure and unspotted.

Environed by enemies, eager to avail themselves of any circumstance to render him odious in popular estimation, fearful of offending and alienating his own party, he could not decide, and his ministers would not advise him, Charles therefore resolved to remove the onus from himself, and to direct the Marquis of Ormond to make a full peace with his Catholic subjects of Ireland, on such conditions as his own judgment should dictate for the public welfare, and the advantage of the royal cause. Ormond felt the full difficulty of such an important commission. He was to effect what the king and his ministers dare not venture to adjust. He was to hazard that provocation they shrank from. Should he make concessions to the popish party his authority only delegated, might be opposed or questioned, he might be accused of culpable partiality to his

countrymen, and his kinsmen, many of whom were among the confederates. Should he refuse, these very individuals would most probably reproach him as an inveterate enemy to them and his country. He had above all to meet the formidable power and inveteracy of the bigoted English parliament, whose vengeance he was sure to meet if he offended their passions or their prejudices, while he well knew the royal power was far too weak to protect him. To add to the difficulty of his situation, he was told he was to expect no instructions, but was to act in the delicate transaction upon his own judgment and responsibility, as the king and his ministers declined taking any part in it. The difficulties of the government were at this time great and manifold, without the additional embarrassment of this important transaction. Ormond, however, thus completely thrown upon the energies of his own mind, found them not unfaithful to the summons. With that spirit of decision, without which, the highest faculties of man are rendered nugatory, Ormond commenced his treaty with the confederates. Their commissioners attended him at Dublin, and it was first agreed that the cessation should be prolonged. Conferences respecting peace, however, proved perplexing. The Irish conscious of their own power, and aware of the necessities of the king, were elevated with the hope that they would oblige the unfortunate monarch to make important concessions to them. In these hopes they were greatly encouraged by their clergy, who from their removal to Dublin had ample opportunity to exert their influence. One of this order, Fleming, the Romish archbishop of Dublin, had been nominated one of the commissioners to attend the lord lieutenant, Ormond refused to confer with him. This refusal we think was in-

judicious, but reasons which have not transpired might have justified the exclusion. Public characters were however not necessary to enforce their authority, which seems to have borne down all the efforts of the more temperate and conciliating of their party. The consequence was, that the propositions of the confederates were of a nature to which Ormond could not accede, and the treaty was adjourned from October to January, and in consequence, the agents appointed to attend the king with the result, having been taken prisoners in the vessel which conveyed them, further proceedings were suspended till April, 1645. About this period Mac Mahon and Macguire were condemned and executed in London. They had remained two years in the tower, had then escaped, were retaken and immediately brought to their trial. In this interval the unhappy Charles evidenced that instability which was the source of so many of his misfortunes, and that indulgence to the Catholics which rendered him so odious to his enemies. The confederate Catholics carried on a sort of private negotiation with him by their agents Lord Muskerry, Nicholas Plunket, and Geoffry Browne. They magnified their power and disposition to support him, and sinking under the power of his enemies he caught at the hope, and was impatient to purchase their alliance at any price. Continually becoming more complying to their demands, when the new projected model of the parliamentary army, threatened momentous consequences to him, he not only empowered but commanded Ormond to make peace with the Irish. "Whatever it cost," he writes, "so that my Protestant subjects may be secured, and my royal authority preserved in Ireland, you are to make me the best bargain you can, and not to discover your enlargement of power till you

needs must. And though I leave the managing of this great and necessary business entirely to you, yet I cannot but tell you, that if the suspension of Poynings's act for such bills as shall be agreed on there, *and the present taking off the penal laws* against papists by a law will do it, I will not think it a hard bargain, so that they freely and vigorously do engage themselves in my assistance against my rebels of England and Scotland, for which no conditions can be too hard, not being against conscience or honour." In the pressure of his calamities, Charles seems to have forgotten that he was both violating conscience and honour, and however he might deceive or reconcile himself to such departure from the immutable obligations of both, Ormond was fully aware of the political danger of compliance. Sincerely attached to the Protestant faith himself, he readily entered into the repugnant feelings of those holding the same opinions, against any concessions towards the popish party, which formed the majority of the Irish population. He was not insensible to the odium he must incur by a measure the king could not avow, and his sagacity readily anticipated the encroachments of the Romish party, when encouraged by such important concessions. His honourable spirit revolted at the disposition of Charles, to recede from those terms he once professed to hold most sacred, and perplexed how to reconcile his feelings with his duty he grew disgusted and impatient in his situation. He accordingly petitioned to be removed from it, professing to apprehend that the confederates expected more from him as their countryman and kinsman than could with safety and propriety be granted.

This relinquishment of a station which Ormond was in every point calculated to fill with advan-

tage to his country, and honour to himself, could not be accepted, and to reconcile him to the burden, Charles conferred upon him every power which remained to him to bestow ; amongst these additional powers, Ormond received a commission he had once vainly solicited, for accepting the submissions of such confederates as were inclined to peace upon the terms offered by the king, and for restoring to them their estates and honours. In the meantime the Irish were indefatigable in their endeavour to strengthen their confederacy, so as to maintain a war, or conclude an advantageous peace. One of their ecclesiastics was dispatched to Madrid, and the Secretary of the supreme council was commissioned to address himself to the pope, the Italian princes, and the governor of the low countries, “ that they might know what they had to trust to, and what succours they might really depend upon from abroad, and that in case they should be forced to *serve God in holes and corners*, the world might be convinced they had laboured all they could to prevent this misfortune.” Their agents were also busily engaged in France, resorting to the Queen of England’s court on her retreat to that country. To recommend themselves to foreign powers, and to infuse an idea of their consequence, they transported troops for the service of France, and when Ormond applied to them for assistance in the royal cause, under Montrose in Scotland, they positively declared that they would send no men to the king’s assistance, until such a peace should be settled, as might demonstrate that they had really taken arms for the *sake of religion* and to establish it in *full splendour*. Yet these men called themselves loyal, and boasted of affection for their king and his family.

The period now arrived when the negotiations



for peace were to be renewed, but the confederates wished to gain time for receiving intelligence from their foreign agents; they therefore proposed that the conferences should be further postponed. Ormond would not consent, and the Irish agents attended him, but not in such number as their powers required. A week was thus gained by them, they then declared that as their general assembly would meet in the middle of May, they would conclude nothing till after that period, confining themselves merely to making their propositions, to debate the matter of them, receiving the answers and promising to prevail on the party to accept them. Ormond strictly attentive to the interest and honour of his royal master, concealed the additional powers he had received, and with a due mixture of dignity and condescension, he conducted the conference, dismissing the agents apparently disposed to peace, who flattered him that their general assembly would very soon decide in favour of the royal interests. But this assembly, although apparently united by the great interests of a common cause, was internally divided by many discordant parties, and by contending motives and passions. The clergy who had the commonalty at their complete devotion, assiduously endeavoured to obstruct all measures of accommodation which might not meet the most extravagant of their wishes. Totally overlooking the real and general interests of their party, they bewildered the minds, and dazzled the perceptions of their ignorant auditors, by descriptions and declamations of the riches, the power, the magnificence attendant on the free exercise of their religion. The impatience of Charles for a conclusion of the treaty, served but to retard its accomplishment. Although he had given such ample, nay uncontrouled power to



Ormond, he rested not quietly in dependence upon his judgment, sagacity, and moderation, to effect his wishes, but suffered himself to be seduced into a vain dependence on secret councils and private agents.

Amongst the most zealous partisans of Charles was Edward Somerset, Lord Herbert, eldest son of the Marquis of Worcester. Attached to his royal master both by personal affection and principle, he had raised a considerable body of forces for his service. In return, he had been created Earl of Glamorgan. Charles feeling confidence in his zeal, had created him generalissimo of the three armies, English, Irish, and foreign, with power of naming all inferior officers in this imaginary body. Various other powers were also entrusted to him, to which was added the promise of his daughter Elizabeth to the son of this favourite, with a portion of three hundred thousand pounds. Glamorgan was a Roman Catholic, and a most zealous one; he had married Margaret O'Brien, daughter of the late Earl, and sister of the present Earl of Thomond, consequently he had possessions, and was allied to some of the first families in Ireland.

This nobleman, about the close of 1644, upon some real or pretended business, announced his intention of visiting Ireland. Charles recommended him warmly to Ormond, informing him that Glamorgan had engaged to further the peace by all possible means and expressing the utmost confidence in his affection and integrity, intimating, however, at the same time, a doubt of the correctness of his judgment. The confederated Irish, with their characteristic levity, were filled with high expectations from a nobleman of such influence and power connected as he was with them, both by religion and affinity. They affected

to believe that he was sent into Ireland with full authority to hear their demands, and to grant them such conditions as could not be yielded by the intervention of any other agent, nor publicly acknowledged by the king under his present embarrassments, and it is probable that in these conjectures they were not far from the truth. Nor had the Irish less reason to be elevated by the success of their application to the pope. Innocent the tenth had recently been placed in the papal chair, and he was solicitous to distinguish the infancy of his power by some extraordinary marks of his zeal for the interests of religion. He therefore had received Belling the Irish secretary who was an acute and intelligent statesman with particular respect, and in return to the application of the supreme council resolved to send a nuncio into the kingdom, as he considered the present circumstances of it most favourable for the restoration and reestablishment of the Romish faith, and also of reducing the people, if not indeed as entire tributaries to the apostolic see, yet at least subject to the plenitude of the pope's spiritual power. The individual selected for this important mission was well qualified to fulfil the intentions of the holy father. This individual was John Baptista Rinunccini, archbishop of Fermo and a Florentine of noble birth. His address was graceful, his manners conciliating, his conversation eloquent, his habits regular, and even austere, but his soul ambitious, ardent and vain, his religion bigoted, his principles and practices superstitious; and possessing such a portion of spiritual pride as amounted to the fanatical prepossession, that he was the appointed and favoured instrument of providence to effect the entire conversion of the western islands. Rinunccini, among various instructions for promoting the general pur-

poses of his mission, was more especially directed to unite the prelates in a firm declaration of war, until their religion should be completely re-established, and the government entrusted to a *Catholic* lord lieutenant, thus clearly did the sovereign pontiff indicate his aim at civil as well as spiritual dominion. He was also, if possible, to persuade Ormond to return to the bosom of the church. In his way to Ireland, the nuncio was directed to visit Henrietta, queen of England at Paris, to assure her that religion was the sole object of his mission, and that no designs were entertained against the English royal prerogatives; at the same time he was to persuade her to abandon the intention she had formed of passing over to Ireland, as her presence could only embarrass the religionists, give strength to the neutral party, and be attended with an expense more profitably employed in war. The expectations of the confederates were elevated very high, and their ideas of their own consequence greatly augmented by these circumstances, they received the propositions of the marquis, however, at the time appointed, with so much temper, that nothing seemed to remain an obstacle to peace, but the penal statutes.

The Earl of Clanricarde ever equally loyal and an advocate for conciliation expressed to Ormond his confidence, that if the repeal of those statutes were granted a final accommodation would be the immediate result, and that the Irish would embark cheerfully and warmly in the royal cause. The clergy however entered not into these pacific opinions. They declared that by the oath of association the confederate catholics were bound to stipulate expressly that the churches, abbeys, nunneries, monasteries, and chapels now in their possession should be ever retained. The more

moderate of the party were highly indignant at this declaration, they demanded that it should be retracted, as charging them with perjury. After much altercation the clergy disclaimed the intention of charging the agents of a peace with perjury; but they exclaimed loudly against the impiety of any peace which should not invest their priests with full jurisdiction, together with the right of sitting in parliament. They urged the imminent danger of the holy faith, and conjured their party to combine, to declare and to protest against the present treaty. The assembly although sensible of the culpable intemperance of these ministers of misguided zeal, yet were so far under their influence as to refuse the restoration of the churches to the protestants, and rejected obstinately any compromise for removing this new risen obstacle to a peace. So true is it that the uncomplying spirit of party regards all compromise as a defeat, and rejects it as betraying the weakness of their cause. The fatal battle of Naseby, instead of affecting the confederates with the truth, that the triumph of the king was also the triumph over their cause, ungenerously regarded it as favourable to their pretensions and as affording an opening for extending their demands upon the royal indulgence. Of course their propositions both civil and religious increased in temerity and presumption. Their prelates were to exercise uncontrolled jurisdiction, all penal statutes, whether enacted by Henry or Elizabeth, or in earlier reigns, against provisors, were to be utterly abolished, and all churches in their possession were neither to be expected nor demanded.

In the first shock of his consternation the unfortunate Charles considered that all succours from Ireland would now be useless to his cause; under these impressions he felt the full extent of

that ungenerous advantage the Irish had taken of his falling fortunes, and he directed Ormond, if possible, to procure a further cessation, and rather leave all things to chance than grant such an allowance of popery as must evidently prove destructive to the protestant profession. A little reflection however convinced him that Irish troops might prove useful, and Lord Digby was directed to write to Muskerry one of the agents of the confederacy.

Nothing however was effected when the arrival of Glamorgan in Ireland revived the expectations of the confederates and opened some hope of negotiation. Among the papers of the king disclosed at Naseby, were discovered his instructions to Ormond to make a peace at any price. The confederates were enraged at this discovery, they published the letter with severe animadversions on Ormond, whom they affected to consider secretly attached to and in conjunction with the presbyterian council (as they called them.) Offended also at the stateliness of the marquis they found gratification in thwarting his wishes and throwing every obstruction in the way of a peace. In such an acrimonious and resentful temper, they received Glamorgan with peculiar attention and satisfaction, and artfully taking advantage of Charles' communication to Lord Muskerry pretended to consider it as a formal stipulation on the part of the chief governor to concur with the earl in his transactions and to ratify his engagements.

Two commissions from the king were produced by Glamorgan to the confederates, one dated January 1645, the other in the succeeding March. These commissions amply empowered the earl to treat for peace with the confederates, and in virtue of them he entered into private negotiations with them, presumptuously anticipating

that he would shortly be distinguished as the leader of a large force and be the instrument of restoring the king to his independence, power, and splendour. The Abbé Scarampi, agent of the pope, remonstrated against negotiating for peace publicly with the marquis, and privately with the earl, and more particularly separating the civil from the ecclesiastical articles, yet his objections were not regarded and within one month after the arrival of Glamorgan the treaty was concluded. It was agreed by the earl on the king's part that all Roman catholics should enjoy the public exercise of their religion, possess all the churches not actually enjoyed by protestants, exercise their own jurisdiction, be exempted from that of the protestant clergy, that an act of parliament should be framed to confirm these concessions, and to render catholics capable of all offices of trust and dignity. That the Marquis of Ormond should not disturb the catholics in these or any other articles to which the earl had condescended, until his majesty's pleasure should be signified for confirming them. For the due performance of them Glamorgan engaged the royal word. On the part of the confederates it was stipulated that ten thousand men should be sent to serve the king in England, Wales, or Scotland, under the command of the earl, and officers appointed by the confederates, and that two-thirds of the revenues of the clergy should be assigned for the maintenance of the body for three years. In considering these articles the confederates receded from the demand of their confirmation by act of parliament, upon the pledged honour of Glamorgan that they should be rendered equally secure by other forms. With additional caution also the assembly resolved that their union and oath of association should remain in full force until



the articles should be ratified in parliament. In consequence of this extraordinary treaty immediate levies were made for the royal service, and as it was still necessary to continue the public treaty with the marquis, Glamorgan eager to conduct his troops solicited Ormond to make what concessions he was authorised to grant, and for the rest to appeal to the king. Every civil interest in Ormond's negotiation was adjusted without difficulty, but the demands respecting religion amounted to nothing less than a legal establishment, an entire papal jurisdiction. He cautiously opposed these extravagant requisitions. The Irish agents, conscious of the private transactions with Glamorgan, proposed that no clause in the treaty should preclude the catholics from such further graces as his majesty might be pleased to grant. This proposal was accepted by the generous Ormond, and on the arrival of Lord Digby to conciliate the Irish and expedite succours, it was mutually agreed, that the propositions relative to religion, the great and as it would appear insuperable obstacle to an accommodation, should be referred entirely to his majesty. Thus was Charles placed in the very perplexity from which he had sought to emancipate himself by investing Ormond with uncontrolled power, a power which his impatience and necessities had induced him virtually to abrogate by those he conferred on Glamorgan. Peace now seemed on the very eve of settlement: the king anxiously and impatiently expected the stipulated succours, when with the fatality which seemed continually to portend over him, the very means employed for his service, defeated the purposes of the unfortunate monarch.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

*Measures of Ormond—Moderation of the assembly—Opposition of the clergy—Nuncio arrives in Ireland—His reception and interview with the council—Proofs of Charles' insincerity—The nuncio protests against the meditated peace—Intrigues with Glamorgan—Gains ascendancy over him—Unforeseen discovery—Gives the enemies of Charles advantage over him—Glamorgan charged by Lord Digby and imprisoned—Is shortly liberated and commissioned to treat with the confederates—Proceedings of the nuncio—Plan of a treaty averred to be framed by the pope—Its extravagant articles—Clergy sign a protestation in favour of it—Glamorgan's chagrin—His activity and private intrigues with Rinunccini—Marquis of Ormond's treaty ratified—Prevailing power in England disclaim the peace—Folly of Rinunccini—His secret intrigues with Owen O'Nial—Creaghts—They are assembled and headed by Owen O'Nial—Ormond's astonishment—Effects his retreat—Success of the nuncio's soldiers—Rout Monroe's forces—Proclamation of the peace attended by universal tumult—Nuncio assumes supreme authority—Oath of association framed—Injudicious conduct of the supreme council—Preston their favourite general beguiled by the nuncio—Rinunccini makes his public entry into Kilkenny—The secret intrigues between Glamorgan and the nuncio—Ormond prepares for the siege of Dublin—Patriotism of the ladies—Difficult and dangerous situation of Ormond—Jealousy of O'Nial and Preston, saves Ormond from the extreme danger of his situation—Contrast of character in the two generals—Perplexity of Rinunccini—Arrival of the English parliamentary army—Council suddenly breaks up—Preston engages to unite with Ormond—Ormond prepares to treat with the English commissioners—Their proposal—Ormond objects—The hopes of Ormond revive—Are destroyed by the dastard treachery of Preston—Ormond is compelled to treat with the commissioners—He concludes a treaty with them—Early manifestation of their power—Forbid the use of the liturgy—Impatience for the departure of Ormond—Confederates urge him to remain—He embarks for England.*

A. D. 1645.

It is but too true that the spirit of party is a domineering passion, which erects the destruction of all the virtues into that which their prejudices have dignified with the name, and lays claim to glory from those actions which would cover men with odium, and which they would labour to conceal if they were performed from motives of mere personal interest. Alas! if men were but to impress upon their minds a firm and abiding conviction of the truth of that most plain and simple proposition, that they have no right to do evil in order to obtain good, we should not have seen, we should not continually see so many human beings immolated on the altars of prejudice, insincerity and bad faith. The events of which we are now to take a retrospect have forcibly aroused these reflections.

Ormond not doubting but a peace so advantageous and even necessary to the Irish would be strictly and faithfully observed, proceeded to take the requisite measures for the common defence with his new allies; during the negotiation a spirit of moderation seemed to pervade the majority of the assembly, and they appeared contented with the privilege of avowing the free enjoyment of their religion without requiring an absolute public establishment of its splendour. The clergy however exclaimed against this, as what they termed a desertion of the church, and their agents at Rome were busy in representing the danger and condemning those as impious temporisers who dared to conclude a peace without due attention to the interests of religion. To avert the consequences which they thus affected to apprehend, Rinuccini was hastened to Ireland. The presence of this nuncio was justly dreaded by the king's party, as tending to embarrass the conclusion of affairs with the confederates, and

Henrietta would gladly have retained him at Paris till all was concluded, representing to him that by his endeavours with the pope he might have the honour of giving success to an affair desired by all the powers of Europe, all of whom dreaded that by ruin of the royal cause the parliamentarians would unite with the Hugonots and Dutch, a conjunction equally hateful and formidable to the several monarchies, and the evils of which they subsequently experienced from the inflexible Cromwell, fully equal to their apprehensions. The intimation of the queen was enforced by a memorial from the catholics of England to the nuncio. They had heard that the queen had applied to Rome for succours, therefore they solicited Rinuccini that these subsidies should be refused until the Irish should receive their just demands. They proposed to unite with the catholics of Ireland so as to form one army for the defence of the king, provided their demands were conceded and ample security given for the performance.

In this tumult of negociation the nuncio flattered himself he had proceeded considerably in the object of his labours, namely, the extirpation of the northern heresy. Many schemes were devised to co-operate in his designs, but at length he was directed to proceed without delay to Ireland, and arrived at Kilkenny on the 12th of November 1645, when the negociation of Ormond was approximating to a conclusion. Having obtained his audience with the supreme council he professed the fairest intentions with respect to religion and peace. The council, on their part, gave assurances that they would not act without his knowledge and concurrence. They explained what had passed, the secret treaty with Glamorgan, the reasons of the king's privacy with regard to religious concessions, also the public negociation

with the marquis, and how far it had advanced. In such a situation, they observed, every thing called for speedy decision, upon what was requisite for the preservation of their religion. Glamorgan next addressed himself to the nuncio, declaring his reverence for his character, his resolution of acting in deference to his opinion, explained the nature of his commissions from the king, expatiated on the confidence of his royal master, in corroboration of which he produced a letter, sealed and addressed to Pope Innocent X., as a proof of his attachment to the holy see. To the nuncio himself he also delivered a letter, in which Charles expressed his satisfaction at his purpose of going to Ireland, requesting him to unite with his faithful servant Glamorgan, and promising to ratify whatever they should jointly resolve, recommending the observance of the strictest secrecy, and assuring Rinunccini, that although his letter was the first he had written to a minister of the pope, yet he hoped it would not be the last. “When the earl,” he added, “and you have concerted your measures, we will openly shew ourself, as we have assured him—Your Friend.” Even the desperate situation of Charles could not justify such condescensions, too forcibly do they indicate that the moral sense had lost its delicacy in the collision of contending interests, which had made him their sport and victim; they served but further to inflate the vain and self-confident Rinunccini. He haughtily objected to the terms both of the public and private treaties, condemned the publication of the political articles, while those respecting religion were suppressed, by which the world would naturally conclude that the honour and interests of religion had been basely sacrificed to temporal advantages.

If the confederates were cautious of alienating

the protestants, by publishing the religious articles, they should be at least equally cautious of alienating the sovereign pontiff, and all Christian princes, by suppressing them. He scornfully added, that even in these boasted articles, in which they appeared to pride themselves, no mention had been made of a Catholic lord lieutenant, no provision for Catholic bishops or universities. The council endeavoured to obviate these objections, and many more suggested by the haughty ecclesiastic, but without any further effect than to confirm him more tenaciously in his own opinion, and the moderate of the confederates in resolving upon an immediate accommodation. Rinunccini, when he found he could not bring the entire council into his own measures, resolved to throw every obstacle in the way of accommodation. He summoned the Romish bishops, assembled at Kilkenny, to a secret meeting; eight obeyed, and united with him in a protest against the meditated peace, and a resolution to oppose it. The nuncio in the next place proceeded to practise upon Glamorgan, whose character his penetration quickly discovered. Nor was he deceived in his expectation of effectually influencing his opinions and actions. Impatient to remove every impediment to his appearing at the head of an Irish army; Glamorgan readily yielded to the plausible arguments of the eloquent nuncio, who working upon his bigotry and vanity, prevailed on him to sign an instrument, by way of appendage to his former treaty, and by which he engaged, that when ten thousand men should be sent into England, the king should oblige himself never to employ any but a Catholic lord lieutenant of Ireland, Catholic bishops to sit in parliament, universities to be erected under their sole regulation, and that the jurisdiction of the supreme council



should continue until all the private articles were ratified.

In this state of affairs, the secret negotiations were suddenly disconcerted by an unforeseen incident. By means entirely fortuitous, a complete and authentic copy of the private treaty which Glamorgan had concluded with the confederates, was discovered, together with a distinct recital of his commission, and of his oath to the confederates. Thus were disclosed the insincerity and equivocation of Charles, by which his enemies obtained an unhappy advantage over him. The papers were printed, industriously dispersed to the dishonour of Charles, the mortification of his protestant adherents, and the utmost exultation of his enemies. The effect naturally to be expected from such a discovery, was nothing less than that all good protestants, (as is forcibly expressed by Lord Digby,) “should conclude, that the scandals formerly cast on his majesty, of inciting the Irish rebellion, were true, and that he designed to introduce popery, even by ways most unkingly and perfidious.”

We shall not enter further into the circumstances attending this disclosure, than to observe, that probably with a view of vindicating the king's honour, Glamorgan was charged by Lord Digby, before the privy council, of a suspicion of high treason, and was imprisoned accordingly. That Glamorgan was authorised in his negotiation, there appears no just ground to doubt; and even Ormond, in a letter to him, seems fully aware that he was so: “My affections and interest,” he says, “are so tied to his majesty's cause, that it were madness in me to disgust any man that hath power and inclination to relieve him, in the sad condition he is in, and therefore your lordship may securely go on in the way you have proposed to yourself

to serve the king, without fear of interruption from me, or so much as *enquiring into the means you work by.*" After a short confinement, Glamorgan was liberated, and the lord lieutenant and council manifested their belief of his innocence, by giving him a commission, to treat with the confederates upon several affairs of consequence.

Meanwhile the nuncio indefatigably endeavoured to oppose any accommodation, but on terms of exorbitant concessions. Of course, the Romish clergy were all at his devotion, excepting a very few, whom age and experience had moderated, or who were independent. The general interests of Ireland, and those of the king, were entirely forgotten, in the vain imagination of establishing his religion, with every attending circumstance of dignity and splendour. He therefore utterly condemned those who were willing to make peace on such terms as might secure them toleration, without absolute outward establishment. To counteract these *moderates*, the nuncio produced a plan of a treaty, averred to be framed by the pope, and transmitted by his nephew, Cardinal Pamfilio. It comprised the most extravagant provisions for the Irish church; the nuncio was empowered to make such additions as he should see proper; these added articles were yet more extravagant than those emanating from the pontiff. Rinuccini collected his clergy, who readily signed a protestation in favour of this treaty. To the assembly he also recommended it, as the only plan by which their rights and interests could effectually be secured. He, however, exhorted them to wait the arrival of the original articles, to prolong the cessation, and to send their purposed forces to the relief of Chester. This last recommendation won Glamorgan to his interest, although he had ranked himself among the moderates, and

had declared for a speedy conclusion of the articles with the marquis, and for considering his own private treaty as sufficient guarantee for the ecclesiastical concessions.

Whilst Rinuccini thus exerted himself in favour of a treaty which, perhaps, existed only in his own intrigue, although he assured the council he daily expected it from Rome, the *moderates* of that assembly were urgent for the conclusion of the treaty with the marquis, urging the king's condescension in granting their temporal requisitions, and the concessions he had made in spirituals, which were all that could reasonably be expected from him under his present afflictive circumstances. Even the pope had declared that a connivance was all that could reasonably be demanded of Charles. Such was the attestation of one ecclesiastic; while another called in question the Roman treaty altogether, as an imposition on the Irish, devised to prevent the peace. The impatient Glamorgan could ill bear the altercations and delays; they materially affected the great object of his vanity—the leading an Irish army to the rescue of his majesty; he flew from party to party, endeavouring to moderate the asperities of each; he made large condescensions to the nuncio, and entered into private intrigues with him, in order to effect and expedite the object of his wishes. All these various plans, however, came to nothing; and it was not until the unhappy Charles was held in captivity by the Scots, and was subjected to the severest restraint, that any prospect of relief from Ireland was opened, by the ratification of the Marquis of Ormond's treaty with the confederates, July 1646.

Some settlement and composure, it might naturally be expected, would result from this long protracted object being completed; but the tu-

mults of faction that then prevailed, were inimical to any degree of serenity. The prevailing power in England utterly disclaimed the peace, and so high was now become its pretensions, that Lord Lisle was already appointed chief governor of Ireland by the parliament.

The covenanters in Ulster, a numerous body, concealed not their contempt for the whole negotiation; and the parliamentarians of Munster violently opposed any peace with the Irish, as in the fulness of their zeal they could be contented with nothing less than the extirpation of popery. The powerful body of Catholics, on the other hand, with equal violence, aimed at the utter extirpation of the English, and their religion. The nuncio also, throughout the whole negotiation, obstinately opposed any treaty but one framed by the pope, any separation of the civil and ecclesiastical articles, and any of the latter which should not fully meet his expectations, of an immediate, a complete, and splendid establishment of the Romish worship.

Amidst these violent contending passions and interests, little hope could be entertained of peace and tranquillity for Ireland. So utterly superficial and narrow was the political sagacity of Rinuccini, that although he publicly pretended a zeal for the king's interests, he, in a letter to Pamfilio observed, that the destruction of the king would, in his opinion, prove most advantageous to Ireland, and that the final triumph of the parliamentarians in England would be most effectual to the establishment of Catholicism in Ireland. Upon whatever basis he grounded this extraordinary opinion, he was so completely possessed with the justness of it, that as in duty bound, as *un bon Catholique*, he secretly rejoiced in every adverse circumstance attending the royal

cause, and strenuously contended against any measure likely to support it. Against the treaty of Ormond he unceasingly remonstrated and protested, preached the necessity of union among the confederates, regardless of the king's ministers, or any thought of peace; exhorted them to look abroad for support, to seek protection from foreign powers, pointing out the pope as their natural and sure protector. But as a great and powerful party of the confederates were anxious for a final accommodation, and were supported by their general Preston, the *Minicio* became sensible, that neither his own influence or eloquence, nor the intrigues and arts of his clergy, would prevent the peace, without some power to support them against an army ready to execute the orders of the supreme council. Rinunccini, foreseeing that a general submission to the lord lieutenant would unavoidably put an end to his own influence, secretly conspired with Owen O'Nial, who commanded the native Irish in Ulster, and who bore a great jealousy to Preston. O'Nial was a fit instrument for the deep purposes of the wily Florentine; both he and his followers were under the influence of disgust, for grievances received from the supreme council. So true is it, that the triumphs of a party seldom or never prove advantageous to those, who, in the course it has pursued, have shown themselves most ardent. The forces of Owen O'Nial were composed of what in Ireland were termed *Creaghts*, a race of barbarous rovers, without settled residence, who, shut out from social relations, gave free scope to their lawless volitions, and were a general annoyance to the districts they roamed through in search of subsistence. Rinunccini found not much difficulty in prevailing upon the irritated and disgusted O'Nial to declare against the peace, and of course



his followers, whose only resources arose from public commotion, were ready to unite in any enterprise which opened a field of action for their lawless energies. They, indeed, were anxious for engagement, and readily consented to be deemed the nuncio's soldiers. But a short period was necessary to assemble them, and a force of near five thousand foot, and five hundred horse, about the end of May, marched towards Armagh, headed by Owen O'Nial.

Ormond, who had remained in perfect security confiding in the pacification so recently completed, was astonished at the intelligence he received of this treachery, which extended to enclosing him on every side. He effected his retreat with celerity and judgment, and sheltered his small army in Dublin and other fortified towns which still remained in the hands of the protestants. In the meanwhile the progress of the nuncio's soldiers was marked with success, they encountered the forces of Monroe, which they routed, and more than three thousand of the British troops were slain, while the loss of the furious Irish did not amount to more than seventy; Ulster was in fact upon the point of being entirely reduced by the victorious O'Nial when he was summoned by the nuncio into Leinster to oppose the peace, and instantly marched at the head of ten thousand barbarous ravagers; for to this number was his lawless army swelled. The proclamation of the peace was attended by universal tumult. At Limerick the chief magistrate attended the proclamation of course officiously; he was suddenly attacked by a tumultuous crowd, led on by several ecclesiastics, who wounded the mayor and the heralds, some mortally, imprisoned them several days, and for this daring outrage they received the thanks and benediction of the nuncio. As-

suming to himself the supreme authority, he displaced the magistrates who had attempted to support the proclamation, and conferred the government of the city on a man who had been a principal in the tumult. At Waterford he convened the clergy, and together with them he excommunicated the commissioners and all who had been instrumental to the peace, pronouncing an interdict on all places where it had been admitted, he suspended all clergy who preached in favour of it, and all confessors who absolved any adherents of it. Excommunication was also denounced against those who paid or levied any money assessed by the council of Kilkenny, and all soldiers who should support the execution of their orders.

For the better union of their party, a new oath of association was framed, whereby they engaged not to adhere to any peace but such as should be honourable, secure to their consciences, and so approved by the congregation of Irish clergy. These bold and unwarrantable measures had their full effect upon a bigoted, furious, and ignorant people, every where producing the most violent exclamations against a peace in which the interests of religion had not been explicitly secured. The supreme council acted most injudiciously in this critical state of affairs. Instead of enforcing firmly and rigorously their authority, they endeavoured to sooth the clergy, received their extravagant propositions without proper reprehension and disdain, and these were confirmed in the exalted opinion of their own power, which their success had engendered. Their favourite general, Preston, was beguiled by the insinuating art of the nuncio to favour his views, thus his triumph became complete. Soldiers and gentry, officers and commonalty all crowded to this ambitious prelate, exclaiming against the *Ormondists*, (so

the favourers of peace were designated), all clamouring for religion, the clergy and the papal minister. In this frenzy of popular feeling, the power of the confederated Catholics so long supported, the authority of their assemblies, the dignity of their councils were all at once annihilated, and a few ecclesiastics seemed absolute lords of the kingdom. Rinunccini made his public entry into Kilkenny in all the pomp of royalty, and the pride of victory. All affairs, civil and ecclesiastical were resigned to his direction; completely as it were intoxicated with flattery and power, he ordered the members of the council and other promoters of the peace to be imprisoned, and general Preston was his agent to execute the order! so mutable is human opinion, so fluctuating human fidelity. Not contented with this exercise of his self constituted authority, Rinunccini appointed a new council, consisting of four bishops and eight laymen, acting himself as president, with despotic power.

But of all the infatuated individuals who thus bended before the shrine of the artful nuncio, the Earl of Glamorgan was the most servile and obsequious. Having received a private letter from the unfortunate Charles with warm assurances of his regard, and intimating that if he could effect his escape, he would cast himself into his arms, and those of the nuncio; the vain and sanguine earl communicated it to Rinunccini, and they devised a thousand plans for conveying the king to Ireland. The nuncio heaped favours and honours upon an individual whom he saw he could make a ready tool of for any purposes he might desire. He even promised to appoint him lord lieutenant, when Ormond should be driven from Dublin. The vain Glamorgan elated by present and prospective favours, renewed his vows of eternal

obedience to the nuncio, and swore he would in all things pay obedience to the holy see. While they were engaged in their ambitious and visionary plans, Ormond expected and prepared for a siege. The Irish of the north were held in particular horror by the inhabitants of Dublin, on account of the barbarities they had committed; and in order to animate the zeal of the citizens against these expected besiegers, the marchioness of Ormond and other women of quality appeared at their head carrying baskets of earth to the fortifications. But with all these preparations against a siege, Ormond was deeply sensible of the desperation of his situation. He was destitute of all resource, and had mortgaged his own property for the public service. Unable to maintain a siege, he could not treat with the Irish for they were too faithless to adhere to any armistice. The whole power of the confederacy now rested with the old Irish, desperate and barbarous, and imbued with a deep hatred against the English, and who were even now labouring to reduce the nation to a foreign subjection. To such men the noble and honourable Ormond could not consent to submit. The parliamentarians he detested, yet to them he was compelled to apply in this extreme exigence.

Not uselessly to dwell upon the perplexities of this period, we shall but say that the situation of Ormond became daily more critical, and at length, the king who despaired of ever resuming his authority, sent orders from his confinement in Scotland to Ormond, that if he could not defend himself, he would wish him rather to submit to the English than the Irish rebels. Fatal must the event have proved to the noble Ormond in the enterprise of the nuncio against the capital, had not the indiscretion of this sacerdotal politician created a jealousy between his generals, O'Nial

and Preston. Some partialities shown towards the former, roused the choleric temper of the latter; the most bitter enmity was the consequence, which communicated itself to the troops of each. Thus divided amongst themselves, the interests of the general cause were necessarily weakened; opposition, not co-operation, actuating each on every occasion. O'Nial, dark, sarcastical, reserved, jealous, captious, and severe, never suffered his sentiments to transpire, but brooding in secret upon his plans, overwhelmed his victim in a moment of security which had been vigilantly marked. Preston, irritable, open, and unrestrained, expressed his feelings with indiscreet ardour and violent invective, giving his adversary every advantage over him. The conflicts of two such tempers could not but embarrass Rinuccini, if they did not alarm him. He was half resolved to commit the violent Preston to custody, while O'Nial fanned the flame by affecting to dread some insidious design against him and his forces. In short, the two armies were ready to draw swords against each other, rather than co-operate in carrying on the siege with concert and alacrity.

Solicitous to take advantage of these animosities, Lord Digby exerted himself to reconcile the whole body of the Irish to peace, and if he could not effect this, to detach Preston from the nuncio, and by uniting him with Ormond to prevent the mortifying treaty with the English parliament to which he had been compelled to apply for succours. For the purpose of effecting a pacification, Lord Clanricarde repaired to the confederates and commenced a treaty with the nuncio and his council, he engaged for the repeal of all laws against the Catholics, that they should retain possession of the churches until the king's



pleasure should be signified upon a full settlement of the nation, that the queen and prince should confirm those articles, and the crown of France be guarantee for their performance. This, however, was far from satisfying the bigoted expectations of the nuncio, though entirely agreeable to the moderate among the confederates. In the midst of the debate, the intelligence arrived that the English parliamentary forces were arrived. The council, as if seized with a panic, suddenly broke up. O'Nial called off his men from their posts, and marched away in the night; the council hastened to Kilkenny, followed by the nuncio, while Preston and his officers continued his negotiation with Clanricarde, engaging on security of the terms he proposed, to observe the late peace, to obey the king's authority, and to unite with Ormond. The marquis thus extricated from his pressing danger, could better treat with the English commissioners, who seeing the wretched state of Dublin, were disposed to grant their assistance only on severe terms. They were regarded by the protestant inhabitants as their deliverers. Mortifying was it to the high minded Ormond to treat with the bitter enemies of a monarch whom he had so faithfully and zealously served. The transactions of Clanricarde giving, however, some hopes of a peace, he determined not to treat with the commissioners as a desperate man, but with a dignity suited to his rank, character, and station. They proposed to take the protestants under their protection, and to allow Ormond his estate or an annual pension of two thousand pounds for five years, in the event of his not receiving his rents. On these conditions they demanded that he should resign his government. Ormond objected to the indefinite and lax nature of their overtures, no mention being

made of many points which it was his imperative duty to attend to, before he could commit his high responsibility to any one. Some propositions he made were rejected, and the conference for the present closed. Ormond during this negotiation was subjected to many difficulties, in which his principles of religion and honour had to contend with his policy. At length the negotiation of Clanricarde seemed so happily advanced, as to inspire the hopes of Ormond, that he should be relieved from the mortifying necessity of submitting to the English parliament. The Leinster army was subjected to the command of Clanricarde, and Preston agreed to become his major-general; Ormond was consulted respecting the necessary military operations; Preston engaged to attempt some important services, and was to be speedily assisted by Ormond and his forces.

Thus far all favourable to Ormond's wishes, Preston began his march, when some agents from the nuncio appeared and commanded him to stop, to disperse his forces, and in case of disobedience denounced the sentence of excommunication on him and his followers. The dastard and bigoted rebel was terrified, and was easily prevailed upon to reconcile himself with the nuncio, and three days after he published a renunciation of his treaty with Clanricarde on the pretence that the articles were not performed on the part of government. Thus were the dawning hopes of Ormond dispelled by a perfidy which, experienced as he was in the levity and treachery of the Irish, he had not contemplated or supposed possible. The traitor had intimated in a letter to Clanricarde, the propriety of Ormond's waiting the result of an assembly about to be convened, ere he proceeded further in his projected measures. In order, therefore, to deprive him of all excuse, he re-

solved to do so. Shortly after the assembly was convened, and the nuncio and his clergy rose in the extravagance of their demands, and by a formal resolution they condemned the late peace, and pronounced it null and void. Thus all hopes from the Irish were brought to a period. Surrounded by a party not without reason exasperated and indignant at the repeated perfidy and obstinacy of the Irish, provoked at distresses daily becoming more pressing, unable any longer to supply a discontented and famishing army, the Marquis of Ormond found himself after all his ceaseless exertions for the interests of his royal master, deceived, destitute, abandoned ; no longer seeing any possibility of supporting the cause of the unfortunate Charles, or of protecting his Irish dominions, he was compelled as his last desperate resource, to resign the rights he held, and to deposit those of the crown with the English parliament. With the full concurrence of all those who were interested in the honour and interests of the king, Ormond wrote to the commissioners, offering to resign his government and garrisons to them. Imagination pictures the agitation of the gallant Ormond, his internal struggles, his hesitation, his grief, and indignant emotions ere he could resolve upon this forced humiliation. His propositions were accepted by the commissioners, and the treaty commenced. The confederates who had ever professed loyalty to the king, though they had little proved it, were not insensible to the odium of forcing Ormond by their obstinacy into a submission to his enemies, and affecting a solicitude to prevent it, renewed their overtures of accommodation, but as the influence of the clergy continued to prevail, nothing could be done. It is stated, that even Owen O’Nial began to apprehend bad consequences, from

driving Ormond from the kingdom, and entered into some negotiations with him, Ormond proposed that if he could procure a cession for one year, he would break off his treaty with the parliament, not yet advanced so far, but he could do it with honour. He required from O'Nial an answer in fourteen days. The proposal was dispatched by a confidential messenger to the council, with recommendations to the popish bishop of Clogher to support it. But the infatuated council effectually defeated the project by imprisoning the messenger, till the limited fourteen days had expired. Nothing therefore remained to Ormond, but to conclude the hateful treaty with the commissioners. Accordingly he delivered up Dublin, Tredah, Dundalk and other garrisons to Colonel Michael Jones, who took possession of them in the name of the English parliament. The commissioners promised on their part, that the protestants should be protected; that all who chose to attend the marquis out of Ireland should have free liberty to do so; that popish recusants, who had not engaged in the rebellion, might rest securely in the favour of parliament according to their future demeanour; that Ormond should have the liberty of residing in England, provided he submitted to the ordinances of parliament and they agreed to reimburse the expences he had incurred for the public service.

Complete masters of Dublin, the commissioners delayed not till the departure of Ormond the manifestation of their new power. By their own will and pleasure alone, they forbade the use of the liturgy, (the only form of worship established by law), and substituted the directory in all places of worship. This stipulation was, however, for the present confined to the city, or at least not obeyed without it. The bishop of Meath still

continued the use of the liturgy, and thither the protestants of the established church resorted in great numbers to unite in divine worship during this period of double persecution. The Irish Catholics had already, as we have seen, refused the smallest degree of toleration of the established worship in any place subjected to their power, and in the extravagance of their expectations, had even disputed if the king should be allowed one chapel in the capital, when their dominion was to extend over the entire kingdom. With the same spirit of bigotry directed to the opposite extreme, the gloomy reformers rejected the remonstrance of the clergy, and uttered loud menaces against the heinous guilt of worshipping God in any form or manner but their own. They expressed the greatest impatience for the departure of Ormond, although they were by no means careful to perform their stipulations to enable him to liquidate his debts.

In the meantime, the most eminent of the confederates anticipated the worst consequences to their cause, by the departure of Ormond, and he was earnestly entreated to remain sometime longer in Ireland. But Ormond had no reason to rely on their stability, and he saw no good likely to result by his continuance, as he could not condescend to remain in obscurity in a country where he had sustained a public character, he therefore left the regalia to be delivered to the commissioners, and embarked for England. Thus was a virtuous statesman, a true patriot, a faithful subject, and a noble minded man, driven from a station he had filled with honour, through a continued course of perplexity, difficulty and danger; and that by two contending parties, who each in pursuit of their object cared not what devastation they made in their course, or what was sacrificed to the plans of their ambition.



## CHAPTER XIX.

*Ireland plunged in anarchy and distraction—Catholic armies—Power of the Nuncio—His arrogance—Upright conduct of Clanricarde—Affair of Cashel—Conduct of the assembly—It however declares for peace—Rinunccini prevails upon them to send deputations to Rome and Spain—Private commission of the agents sent to France—answer of the queen and prince—Agents return—Affairs favourable to peace—Catholic confederacy seems to decline—A treaty of cessation proposed—Untoward circumstances counteract these happy auspices—Rinunccini protests against the cessation—Fulminates an excommunication—His power weakened by his extravagant pretensions—Perfidy of O’Nial—Conduct of the generals—Nuncio’s power passing away—Design of O’Nial—Vigour of the council—O’Nial intrigues with Jones—Is declared a traitor by the council—Appeal to Rome against the Nuncio—Proceedings of the assembly against him—He is ordered to depart the kingdom—His indignant fury—Demoralized state of the country—Ormond resumes his power—His proceedings with the assembly—Mutiny in Lord Inchiquin’s army—Treaty suspended—Fleet arrives—Mutiny quelled—Negotiation resumed—Emissaries from Rome—Effect of the king’s situation in Ireland—Peace proclaimed—Articles of the treaty—Objectionable clause contained in it—The fatal catastrophe of the king—Horror of the Irish—Ormond proclaims Charles the second—Arrival of prince Rupert—Rinunccini retires to France—Ormond confirmed in his government—He is left to his own energies—Is aided by Clanricarde—Charles prevented from going to Ireland—Ormond obliged to take the field—O’Nial enters into secret correspondence with the parliamentarians—Unfortunate affair of the fort—Government of Ireland, an object of intrigue—Cromwell is chosen governor—He lands at Dublin—Reception—Takes the field—His decision—Summons Drogheda to surrender, on refusal orders an assault—Terror infused by the barbarity of Cromwell—His entire success—Operations of Ormond defeated—Continued success of Cromwell—Bishop of Ross—Cromwell returns to England—Resigns his army to Ireton—Ormond*

*expostulates with the clergy—They publish a declaration against Ormond—Success of the parliamentary army—Bigoted fury prevailing—Concession of Charles in his declaration to the Scots—The effects of it—Ormond's spirited conduct—Protestation of the clergy—Ormond prepares for his departure—The alarm of the assembly—Earl of Clanricarde appointed lord deputy—Loyalty of Clanricarde—Versatility of the clergy—Their hatred of Clanricarde—Proposal to the Duke of Lorraine—Lorraine sends an envoy to Ireland—Proceedings of the negociation—The Duke invested with authority—Exultation of the clergy—Transactions of Ireton—Sir Phelim O'Nial suffers an ignominious death—Severities of Ireton—Reduces Limerick—Dies of contagious fever—General Ludlow succeeds in the command—Clanricarde accepts conditions, and retires to England—His death.*

A. D. 1647.

ON the departure of the upright and intelligent Ormond, Ireland seemed to revert to its ancient anarchy and distraction. Most complicated were its miseries; torn by faction, wasted by war, opposed by poverty, it appeared no enviable theatre for the display of parliamentary skill and military discipline. The republican vulgarity of Colonel Jones and his unpolished train, was strikingly contrasted with the elegant state and polished decorum of Ormond and his court. The new governors found themselves plunged into difficulties they had not anticipated. Some attempts to restore discipline among the troops did but irritate them, suffering from absolute famine they plundered the inhabitants and insulted their officers, and Jones who had no means of supplying their necessities was obliged to connive at their outrages. Three armies of Catholics surrounded them, O'Nial and his troops professing entire devotion to the pope and his minister, were equally inimical to the royal cause and the ruling powers. Preston and his followers vainly regretting the departure of Ormond were inveterate against the

parliamentarians. The Scots were equally averse to the present government. All was disunion, jealousy and inveteracy. The authority of the nuncio prevailed over all the Catholics without any qualification or controul, and he by his arrogance and insolence soon made them repent of the unbounded power with which they had entrusted him. The Earl of Clanricarde, who preserved his loyalty firm and unblemished, saw with a sagacity rendered more acute by his principles, that ruin impended over his unhappy country, and the whole energies of his upright and intelligent mind were called into action to avert if possible the terrible effects of the moral tempest which was collecting on all sides. He secretly entered into correspondence with Lord Inchiquin, who preserved great authority over the protestants in Munster, and in the course of the hostilities, the latter advanced against the city of Cashel. The inhabitants of which fled to their cathedral church seated on a well fortified rock, and provided with a strong garrison. Inchiquin proposed to leave them unmolested, provided they would advance him three thousand pounds, and a month's pay for his army. This proposal was haughtily rejected, he therefore stormed and took the place with a considerable slaughter both of the inhabitants and soldiery. The booty he obtained was also very large, but still insufficient to enable him to keep the field, therefore on the approach of winter he dispersed his army into garrisons. But the circumstance which has induced us to advert to the affair of Cashel, is that in storming it, about twenty ecclesiastics were included in the slaughter, an incident which furnished Rinuccini with a theme for declamation against the sacrilegious cruelty, and added warmth to his arguments for revenge. He imputed the

affair to some secret collusion between the confederates' general of the Munster army, and Inchiquin, and to the imputed desertion of the holy cause ascribed all the calamities of the faithful, the innocent blood which had been shed before the holy altars, and all the enormities which had marked the heretical armies. Fired with his outrageous zeal, his whole party exclaimed so loudly against Lord Taaffe, that he was obliged again to take the field so late in the season as November. His army was met by Inchiquin, who routed it, more than three thousand of the infatuated Irish, the flower of the Munster army, were cut to pieces, and the entire *materiel* of the army fell into the hands of the victors.

These repeated calamities had a great impression on the confederates, who, in proportion to their proud elation in prosperity, were depressed by adverse circumstances; many determined to abandon a cause so desperate, no longer to submit to the insensate pride and insolence of the nuncio, and the outrages of O'Nial, his ally. Under these impressions of disappointment and disgust, Lord Muskerry prevailed upon them once more to attempt to effect peace for their country. The nuncio soon discovered the design of subverting his power, and, fired with indignation, resolved to counteract it; for this purpose he took measures which prove his total inebriation of power, and the violent excesses to which it leads, effectually sapping the foundations of its own proud erections. He had recommended eleven persons to Rome to be made bishops. In order to gain a superiority in the assembly, to oppose the designs meditated against him, he prevailed on the supreme council, formed of his own creatures, to summon those ecclesiastics by writ to the assembly. The lawyers objected that their

bulls were not yet arrived, that they were not consecrated, nor invested with their temporalities, therefore the summons would be altogether informal and invalid. Rinunccini passionately replied, he would consecrate them himself, but as a more expeditious step, he ordered them to take their seats directly. The dastard and servile assembly were intimidated by this unlawful assumption of power, and actually submitted to it. The triumphant nuncio, of course, became more and more insolent; for instance, Ulster usually sent sixty-three members to the general assembly, nine from this province only attended on this occasion, and the overbearing nuncio insisted these nine should have sixty-three voices! This extravagant and absurd demand was, however, rejected. But in spite of every intrigue of the artful Florentine, the assembly declared almost unanimously for peace, and for that purpose determined to send agents to the queen and prince in France. Rinunccini, who well knew this step would be the destruction of his power, and produce the return of Ormond, violently opposed it; he pressed the assembly to implore the pope to assist them, and so prevailing were his persuasions, that it was resolved to send deputations to Rome and Madrid, and that the agents destined for France should await the answer received from those courts. The instruction given to these agents was, of course, a point in which Rinunccini was especially interested. In the fulness of his pride, he had with his clergy subscribed a declaration, never to consent that either the queen or the prince should be invited into Ireland, until all the articles of the pope respecting religion were secured, a Roman Catholic made governor, or that any peace should be concluded, which might diminish the present state and public exer-



cise of their religion. They insisted, therefore, that the instructions should be modelled in conformity to this declaration. They were accordingly permitted to frame them, and to insert all their extravagant demands, as with that convenient equivocation and mental reservation sanctioned by their corrupt religious principles, the opposite party had obtained the secret promise of the agents, to reject them in their negotiation, as tending to the subjection of their country to a foreign power, now the clearly avowed design of the clergy and the old Irish. This design was even publicly avowed, in a tract written by an Irish jesuit, printed at this time, and assiduously, though privately, dispersed through the country: the author contends, that the Kings of England had never any right to Ireland; but even admitting they once had, they had forfeited it by turning heretics, and thereby neglecting the conditions of Adrian's grant. That the old Irish would be fully justified, not only by force of arms, to recover their possessions from usurpers of English and other foreign extraction, and to kill all the Protestants, but also all Roman Catholics of Ireland, who supported the crown of England. That they ought to choose an Irish native for their sovereign, and at once to throw off the yoke of heretics and foreigners. Such was the inflammatory doctrine, circulated amongst a people whose combustible nature was so readily ignited. The priest, in whose custody this book was seized, escaped punishment by the interest of the nuncio, who also endeavoured greatly to save the book itself from censure. In this, however, he did not succeed; it was condemned by the general sense of the more moderate of the supreme council, and ordered to be burnt at Kilkenny.

The appointed agents in the meantime repaired

to France, had an interview with the queen and prince, whose countenance and assistance were entreated for supporting the royal authority, proposing that the prince should be supplied with arms and money, to enable him to take his well affected subjects under his command. Such was their private commission. In a public audience, the propositions of the clergy were presented as the mere form of their office. Ormond, and his amiable son, Lord Ossory, were in France, and the royal exiles found in them able advisers in this delicate emergence. By the advice of the marquis, they returned a general and gracious answer to the Irish agents, expressing satisfaction that after their violation of the late peace, the confederates seemed disposed to discern that their true interest must be involved in their return to duty. In respect to religion, discussion was at present evaded, with assurances that a person fully authorised should be sent to Ireland, to make propositions to the confederates, and to grant them every grace consistent with the honour and interest of his majesty.

Glamorgan, strongly recommended to Mazarine by the nuncio, had been some time at Paris, soliciting for the appointment of the lieutenancy of Ireland; the Marquis of Antrim flattered himself he should obtain the station by the favour of the queen. But it was privately intimated to the agents, that Ormond was certainly destined to resume his station in the kingdom, as the prince declared against resorting thither while the nuncio remained; next to his royal highness, no one could be more acceptable than the marquis, and the agents returned well satisfied with the result of their negociation. On their return, they found the state of affairs favourable to the design of peace. The tide of success seemed turned, and

the Catholic confederacy appeared declining in consequence and vigour each succeeding day. Their enemies were powerful on every side, and the inclemency of the season alone prevented the most desperate hostilities. With exhausted resources, and rendered impatient by misery, their adherents grew querulous, mutinous, and obstinate; they believed, with their characteristic impatience, that any change would be relief, and deserted in great numbers, purchasing their protection of the parliamentarians, on what terms they chose to offer, and most grievous were the compositions they yielded to.

To effect a cessation, seemed to the majority a case of absolute necessity; even the infatuated bigot, Rinuccini himself, recommended a truce with their most formidable enemy, Inchiquin, that the confederates might securely march to Dublin, and expel from thence the odious sectaries. Inchiquin was ready to meet their wishes, an emissary was sent to the confederates, to treat respecting a cessation. Their generals, Taafe and Preston, entered into a solemn oath to support the king's rights, and to obey his lieutenant, and Inchiquin entered into the same engagements.

These happy auspices were counteracted, however, by untoward circumstances, obliging a premature avowal of the coalition. Rinuccini had, it has been stated, but a few weeks antecedent recommended a cessation. He had suffered his imagination to dwell upon the happy event of detaching Ireland altogether from Englishmen, of whatever opinions, as he was equally an enemy to the royal, or popular party. Indulging the dazzling visions of a pope supreme monarch of Ireland, and a stately and powerful hierarchy to execute his behests, the nuncio, in the contemplation of becoming the representative of the sove-

reign pontiff, averted his mental view from the direful calamities of the nation, with a cold and steady insensibility; therefore, from the moment that Lord Inchiquin declared for the king, he resolutely opposed the cessation, nor were all the arguments and efforts of the supreme council sufficient to obviate his wild objections. As usual, he recurred to his clergy, assembling them, and with them renewing a protest against the cessation. The council were perplexed, as well as indignant at this pertinacity and folly, yet weakly terrified at the apprehension of excommunication, they hesitated, equivocated, and delayed; nor could all the efforts of the noble-minded Clanricarde and his colleagues confirm their resolution; at length, by the added support of the supernumeraries, the provincial assemblies of Leinster and Munster urging a cessation, it was resolved that it should be concluded, as the nuncio, in the midst of his invective, could propose no reasonable scheme for prosecuting the war. Enraged even to frenzy by this defeat of his purposes, and opposition to his lordly will, the irritated prelate fled from Kilkenny, and passionately cast himself into the arms of his favourite O'Nial, whom he conjured, by all his hopes of heaven, to march without delay to the relief of the degraded and suffering church, and its profane betrayers. The council respectfully solicited his return, to confer temperately on the affairs of the nation; but he imperiously and indignantly disclaimed all connexion with them, unless the whole conduct of peace and war was submitted absolutely to him and his clergy. He caused a protest against the cessation to be affixed to the doors of the cathedral at Kilkenny, and when it was contemptuously torn down, he fulminated his direful sentence of excommunication against all who contrived or

favoured the cessation, and denounced an interdict on all places in which it should be accepted or maintained.

But the popular feeling, if it had not experienced an absolute revolution, in respect to the nuncio, was undergoing a rapid transition. His despotism had reached its summit, and the people were directed by a new impulse, ready to adopt a more moderate system, or rather to suffer that which had been drawn to extreme tension, and which had borne them up, now gradually to relax. Hence the severities and the censures of the nuncio failed to have that effect which they produced, when in the plenitude of his power he commanded both the mental and physical energies of his votaries. His spiritual terrors, by being fulminated on the most trivial occasions, were become familiar to the imagination of the weakest, and divested of their horror; and this diminished effect was further aided by the few clergy who united in the sentence, in comparison to those who had formerly given strength to the individual anathemas of the fiery nuncio. The supreme council ventured to appeal in form against his censures, in which they were supported by two archbishops, twelve bishops, all the secular clergy of their dioceses, by all the Jesuits and Carmelites, many of the Augustines and Dominicans, and about five hundred Franciscans.

Though the power of Rinunccini was thus evidently declining, and his scheme for a concentration of power in consequence far from the accomplishment his vanity and bigotry had anticipated, yet still he was supported by no inconsiderable party, if a combination of individuals might be termed such, who were each destitute of any fixed principle of resolute action, and subject to all the fluctuations produced by narrow and selfish pas-



sions and interests, with a perfect indifference to the common cause beneath which each sheltered his individual designs. The nuncio yet ranked among his adherents those of the clergy, who expected preferment by his favour, and those of the laity who looked for the restoration of their paternal lands ; those who were oppressed by debt, and those who having nothing to lose had some chance of gaining by popular commotion ; and in the state of anarchy so long subsisting in Ireland it may be well imagined the latter class was a numerous one. All these united with Rinunccini in desperate measures, and joined the standard of O’Nial, who totally unmindful of his oath to obey only the orders of the confederates, acted as if the nuncio had absolved him from it, and denounced war against the very council he had bound himself to support : so true is it that the combinations of the selfish and the wicked are peculiarly subject to dissolution and discord.

The generals however determined to avoid all violent measures, and though they had opportunity of seizing the nuncio and O’Nial, they contented themselves with desiring him not to trouble them with letters or orders, as they should only pay regard to the supreme council. At the same time they detached a force to Kilkenny to support its authority. Thus involved in a war among themselves, the nuncio found his power rapidly passing away, and the high authority he had enjoyed daily tottering, so as to threaten total dissolution. He endeavoured to convene a synod in order to obtain a full sanction of his censures, but Clanricarde, by order of the supreme council, prevented the assembly and invested the city, obliging the people to proclaim the cessation and to renounce the nuncio. Still undismayed the furious prelate issued his comminations in his own name, de-

claring all to be guilty of the mortal sin who agreed to the cessation. This ridiculous display of zeal and obstinacy, was however but the bravado of disappointment and hate. With an inconsistency which at once betrayed his secret fears, he permitted O'Nial to make overtures to Jones, the arch heretic as he had called him, who was the inveterate enemy of the king, the confederates, and above all of the catholic faith. Jones, who dreaded the return of Ormond, gladly received the overtures of O'Nial, as a fit tool to employ in his own designs; he consented to an accommodation with him, and O'Nial formed the bold design to surprise Kilkenny and seize the council. His design was favoured by the treachery of many, and was near accomplishment when it was discovered. The power of the nuncio was now nearly extinct, all his intrigues were counteracted by the vigilance of the council, who on the intelligence that Ormond would soon arrive proceeded with vigour and resolution in the execution of their duty. Indignant at the outrages of O'Nial, and particularly at his transactions with Jones, they declared him a traitor by proclamation; nor did they evidence much more indulgence to the falling nuncio. They renewed the appeal to Rome against his sentence of excommunication, and upon Rinuncini contriving to have their messenger intercepted and his papers seized, his audacity did but higher rouse their indignation. All the catholics of Ireland, more especially those of Galway, where his influence was the greatest were (under the severest penalties,) forbidden to hold any intercourse or correspondence with him. He also received a letter from the prolocutor of the assembly, exhorting him to depart from a kingdom he had harassed and well nigh ruined by his factious

violence and obstinacy, and to prepare his defence against those articles of accusation which the assembly intended to exhibit to his holiness the pope, whose instructions he had neglected, departed from and exceeded, and whose authority he had so utterly disgraced. It would be useless to dwell upon the indignant fury of the disappointed zealot in being thus not only deserted but contemned by those, by whom he had been most flattered. How often does history present us with such mutability of sentiment, how often does its faithful page illustrate the truth, that the very transport that raises the individual to distinction becomes the irresistible impulse of his humiliation: how rapid is the fall, how sudden the reverse.

While these events were passing in the councils of Ireland, imagination may form perhaps a faint idea, but language must fail to describe the demoralised state of a people, for whom Adrian so many ages before imagined he had effectually provided, to civilize and render happy! In the chaos of continually recurring revolutions, partial and general, the moral condition of the people had been utterly lost sight of, and they were literally abandoned to their imaginations and frightfully excited passions, and in our retrospect of the leading acts of Irish government we must be led to contemplate with deep regret the dreadful corruption of manners pervading the community. If compelled to work it was with despair and unwillingness, for the chances were, that their labour would be vain, the fruits of it becoming the prey of the ravager; alternately brutified with intemperance, and the victims of want, their physical energies were broken and their morals utterly destroyed, uniting the dissolute habits of the profligate with the ferociousness of the barbarian. Amid the conten-

tions respecting religion and the restraints in the exercises of it the essential spirit was lost, for among the inferior orders of society at least, if external forms and stated periods of public worship are disregarded or omitted, the neglect of this first essential duty easily opens a way to the violation of every other, and with the vulgar the transition from religious indifference to actual vice is as rapid as it is certain and dreadful.

But let us return from the digression to which these melancholy facts have beguiled us, and proceed with our retrospect of the state of affairs, on the arrival of the Marquis of Ormond to resume his power. His object and task was an arduous one, to unite the protestant and catholic royalists as the only expedient left to avert the ruin of the king; had they been bound by the genuine bonds which should unite Christians, there would have been no hesitation, no difficulty in producing co-operation, but contending worldly interests, for the most part, governed those who deceived themselves in supposing they were but firmly upholding the genuine principles of their faith. The Marquis, though disappointed in his expectations from France, succeeded by fair promises and carefully concealing his limited resources in satisfying the army, and his next point to gain was the assembly. To this assembly he notified, that agreeably to their petition presented at St. Germain, he was sent with powers to conclude a peace. Commissioners were appointed to treat with him at his residence at Carrick. The nuncio and his party could not conceal their mortification, they exclaimed against the impiety of betraying the holy church and precipitating the conclusion of an impious peace, without even waiting for dispatches from Rome, their emissaries being daily expected with large sums of money for the

prosecution of the war, and to support the catholic cause. These clamours were not without effect, they induced the assembly to appoint a bishop as one of the commissioners, and Ormond judiciously admitted the nomination. Their demands respecting religion were extensive and explicit, and were a subject of unceasing conference during twenty successive days. So much delay was produced however by the distance of the seat of conference from that of power, that it was proposed to Ormond that he should take up his residence in his own castle at Kilkenny. To this he acceded, and was received with every demonstration of respect and affection, and surrounded by his own guards in regal state. While here engaged in negotiation he was suddenly summoned to the assistance of Lord Inchiquin, a dangerous spirit of mutiny having manifested itself in his army.

Thus again was the treaty suspended: fortunately a messenger arrived with intelligence that a fleet would soon arrive with provisions and ammunition, that the Duke of York was immediately to sail, and the Prince of Wales would follow. This account aided the address of Ormond, and the commotion was for a while quelled; Ormond therefore returned to his negotiation at Kilkenny. During his absence the emissaries had returned from Rome, not however with effective succours and vast sums of money, but heavily laden with reliques and benedictions. These, however, composed but a sorry material for war. His holiness seemed disposed to get quit of the affair if possible. He pleaded the distresses of the holy see, preventing any supply of money to his dear children, the Irish; and in regard to the conditions respecting religion he graciously left them to the dictates of their own judgment. This disappointment confirmed the moderates of the as-



sembly in their dispositions for peace, but yet those passions, interests, and prejudices which invariably pervade a popular assembly tended greatly to retard decision, notwithstanding Ormond energetically and boldly remonstrated against the extravagance of their demands and the danger of their delay. But an event which filled Europe with dismay, effected that which even the approaching ruin of the country had failed to accomplish. Intelligence was received of the remonstrance of the army to the English parliament, that the king should be brought to trial. The effect in Ireland was as powerful as the event was unexpected. All complaints of all parties seemed silenced, the confederates, with a feeling nearly allied to remorse, were seized with a strong sense and deep impression of the king's precarious situation. It is possible a feeling of individual danger might mingle itself with the conviction of the high power of the parliament, produced by the intelligence; be this as it may, they at once, without further debate, acceded to the terms proposed by Ormond. The treaty was concluded, peace proclaimed, and even the clergy expressed their satisfaction, and by circulars recommended a strict observance of the peace. The concessions in regard to religion were what had been formerly firmly rejected, which had been abhorrent to the great body of protestants. All the penal statutes were to be repealed, and the catholics left to the free and secure exercise of their religion. It was not, indeed, expressly stated, that they were to be allowed their ecclesiastical jurisdiction, nor the grant of churches, and church livings, neither were they expressly restrained; but they were secured in the possession of such churches then held, until the king's pleasure should be authentically and freely declared.



But what appeared a suspicious and dangerous clause was, the limitation of the lord lieutenant's powers, by the nomination of twelve commissioners, called *commissioners of trust*, they were to take care that the articles were duly observed and ratified in a full and peaceable convention of parliament: they were to share with Ormond his authority in every point. Ormond, sensible how repugnant the articles of this treaty must be to the protestants, published his declaration of reasons, that his liberal concessions to the Irish had been made in consequence of the desperate state of the king, which had imposed upon his royal master, the necessity, "the saddest to which any king was ever reduced." But all the hopes of Ormond, whether of leading an army into England or of terrifying the persecutors of his royal master with the apprehension of an invasion from Ireland, or any other expectation dictated by his zeal and attachment, were quickly dispelled, for before the intelligence of the Irish treaty reached London, the unfortunate Charles became the victim of that political faction which had embittered his life!

Such was the horror and detestation of the Irish at the tragical end of the unhappy monarch, that Rinuccini at once concluded the whole party would submit to the lord lieutenant, who instantly proclaimed Charles the Second, and to the great consolation of the afflicted royalists, at this critical moment, Prince Rupert arrived at Kinsale with the long expected fleet. The nuncio had hitherto remained in Ireland, in sanguine hope that some favourable incident might again turn the tide of popular opinion and draw the nation into his measures. These hopes seemed now dispelled, he therefore resolved to retire from the country which he had nearly ruined by his senseless ambition. He embarked for France privately, and

from thence continued to inflame the Irish clergy by his letters, until he was summoned to Rome.

Ormond, whose attachment to the royal cause was firm and invariable, was confirmed in his government by the exiled Charles. It remained a difficult station to fill, as he had both various enemies and difficulties to encounter. Dublin was in the possession of the parliament, and Jones, who was governor, declared he expected large reinforcements. To the British forces in Ulster the abhorrence of the King's death and the hatred of the Irish were equally violent; disdaining all connection with the supreme council they would neither accede to the peace nor acknowledge the lord lieutenant. O'Nial, leader of a formidable force, still adhered to the nuncio's measures and defied the royal party. Such were the opposing interests Ormond had to reconcile, and if possible attach to his cause. O'Nial was persuaded to consent to a treaty, but here the division of power counteracted the design; the Commissioners of Trust hated and feared O'Nial and refused the troops he demanded as the condition of his accommodation: of course the treaty was broken off. Ormond then applied to Sir Charles Coote, who held Derry for the parliament; from him he could obtain only general and vague professions. Still not quite discouraged he endeavoured to practise with Jones, who was at least unreserved. He declared his resolution of firmly adhering to his principles and party, and of supporting the English interests. It was some allay to the mortification of Ormond in these unsuccessful endeavours to favour the royal cause, that the troops of Ulster declared for the king and blocked up Coote in Derry. The distressed Ormond was now to collect as he could an army from the most heterogeneous materials, from men of different religions, interests,

passions, nay even nations, a sort of civilized banditti. He had to unite such men,—who had during eight years waged perpetual and bitter war against each other, instigated by the most barbarous passions. The leaders, on the affection and abilities of whom he could have no reliance, were contending with each other for commands and honours, continually harassing Ormond with their rivalships and competitions. He was also ignorant of the circumstances of the confederate party in respect to the entire arrangements of the troops. They had engaged for an army of fifteen thousand foot and two thousand five hundred cavalry ; but it was impossible for the provinces to maintain this number, and those whom it was found necessary to dismiss found ready entertainment from O’Nial, whose followers enticed by every thing which can allure the idle, the dissolute, and the desperate, found no difficulty in procuring an abundant succession of recruits, as pillage gave every one ample opportunity of supplying themselves with at least momentary profusion. The Commissioners of Trust also, apparently attentive only to their own interests, took little care to provide either magazines or money. They had indeed engaged to do both, but when Ormond was to take the field, no part of the applotment made upon the kingdom for the purpose was collected. All was left to his own energies, in which he was generously and voluntarily aided by Clanricarde. He succeeded in obtaining some inconsiderable sums from several cities and corporate towns ; but so far from there being that union, without which no national good can be effected, they like so many independent states obeyed no orders of the general assembly, but directed all they contributed by their own acts. Ormond expected assistance from the fleet commanded by Prince Rupert ; but from causes

it is not necessary to advert to disappointment ensued in that quarter. Ormond severely felt the complicated difficulties and distress of his situation, and he earnestly urged the king to repair to Ireland: every good was to be expected from the measure; and Charles himself was inclined to it. At this critical juncture the Scottish commissioners attended him at the Hague. He referred them to his arrival in Ireland for an answer to their propositions. His baggage and inferiors of his suite were actually embarked. But the apathy which marked the princes of Europe in their conduct towards the unfortunate exiles defeated this plan, apparently fraught with so many benefits to all parties. Three months were wasted in a vain expectation of assistance from the states; more time was lost at St. Germain, and though the young king yet adhered to his resolution, and even proceeded to the Isle of Jersey, yet the time of action was now arrived, and Ormond obliged to take the field. Having at last collected an army of sixteen thousand men, he advanced upon the parliamentary garrisons with success, but the necessities of his army were a fatal impediment to his progress. O'Nial, more intent on schemes for his own personal advantage and safety than anxious for the preservation of his country or religion, entered into a secret correspondence with the parliamentarians. The other Irish, divided between their clergy, who were averse to Ormond, and their nobility, who were attached to him, were uncertain in their motions and feeble in their efforts.

It is in fact most difficult to describe the situation of a country governed by no fixed principles, and subject to all the fluctuations which are produced by the interests and passions of individuals and of parties. In such a state, circumstances

are too evanescent to be detailed, and the opinions and dispositions of the people are so mutable and contradictory, that it is impossible to connect them in a regular series. The reduction of Dublin was the great object which Ormond wished to accomplish; after he had therefore united his troops to the main army, he passed the Liffy and took post at Rathmines two miles from Dublin, with a view of commencing the siege. In order to cut off further supply from Jones, who had received some from England, Prince Rupert having refused to blockade the harbour, Ormond had begun the reparation of a dilapidated fort which lay at the gates of Dublin, and being exhausted with physical fatigue and mental anxiety, had retired to take a short repose, leaving directions to keep his forces under arms. The report of arms suddenly awakened him from his short slumbers, and starting from his bed he found every thing around him in tumult and confusion. He found the party employed at the fort driven from their works, Sir William Vaughan, one of his officers routed and slain, and the whole of his right wing completely broken. This disaster was occasioned by Jones making a sudden sally from the city with a fresh reinforcement he had received. Ormond in vain endeavoured to correct the disorder, he forced his way to the left wing, but here also his men had caught the panic, and fled without even firing at the enemy. Fifteen hundred privates and three hundred officers were made prisoners, about six hundred slain, many of these, to the utter disgrace of the conquerors, when they had accepted quarter, and laid down their arms. Such was the unfortunate issue of an enterprise which Ormond hoped would have turned the national mind in his favour, and been attended with the most happy results to the royal cause. Yet it was nothing



more than might have been anticipated from the army, it was his great misfortune to command officers faithless, negligent, ignorant; men undisciplined, inexperienced, indifferent to the honour of the service, and secure of a refuge if disbanded. Arms and ammunition lost, were more to be regretted than such troops. But the evil of the misfortune most to be lamented, was the dejection it occasioned in the friends, and the exultation of the enemies of the royal cause; the blemish it threw on the military character of Ormond, and the complaints it aroused respecting the peace, the enemies of which considered the misfortune as entirely imputable to Ormond, and transmitted the intelligence of the defeat to Rome, with expressions of joy and triumph. Soon after it occurred, Ormond, (who himself was little dispirited at the event), wrote to Jones, desiring a list of the prisoners he had taken. The proud republican returned the following laconic reply, to the gallant noble. "My Lord, Since I routed your army, I cannot have the happiness to know where you are, that I may wait upon you.

MICHAEL JONES."

In the meantime O'Nial had grown disgusted with his new allies, and renewed his treaty with Ormond, who although he well knew there was not the smallest reliance in his fidelity, was yet desirous to detach him from others. While these things were passing, the English commonwealth was arrived at some settlement, and reluctantly began to take an interest, in what, during the tumult of nearer interests had passed unnoticed. The government of Ireland began to be an object of intrigue, the presbyterians desiring one individual to be nominated, the independents another. Cromwell, however, aware that much glory might be won, and great authority acquired in the station,

determined himself to aspire to it, and Cromwell was not one to aspire in vain. His energetic soul firmly grasped every circumstance which could favour success in the objects of his ambition; he had learned to repress, to curb every feeling which could raise an obstacle to his desire; he therefore contrived by his intrigues, to be chosen lord lieutenant of Ireland, by a unanimous vote of parliament.

Had not the confederates of Ireland been obstinately hardened in their infatuated policy, had they formed a firm, real, and timely union with Ormond, they might have expelled every English partizan of the parliament from their country. But in the rigour of Cromwell's government, a dreadful chastisement was reserved for their pride and bigotry. After various delays and difficulties, which it required all the energy of Cromwell to surmount, he landed at Dublin with eight thousand foot, four thousand cavalry, a formidable train of artillery and other military necessities, with an ample supply of money. He was received with shouts and rejoicings. Having exercised some acts of his new authority, regulated all civil and military affairs, offered indemnity and protection to those who would submit to the parliament, Cromwell committed the city to a new governor, and took the field with ten thousand men. Cromwell possessed that essential principle in the character of greatness, *decision*, a total incapability of surrendering to indifference or *delay*, the serious determinations of the mind. His strenuous will depending upon the conclusions of his comprehensive mind, the moment they were matured went forth to the accomplishment, with an inflexible course, and nervous energy which nothing had power to divert or to controul. Never was this moral strength more strikingly exemplified,

than during his government military and civil in Ireland, and never was his immobility of heart amidst causes of subduing emotion more clearly betrayed.

Ormond believing that Cromwell would first direct his attention to Drogheda a frontier town, much exposed, and of great consequence in opening a communication with the north, had given particular attention to prepare it for any attack. He committed it to the care of a tried and faithful officer, strengthened the garrison, and amply furnished it with ammunition and provision. But the commanding spirit of Cromwell suffered him not to wait the slow operations of a siege, disdaining all the usual forms and approaches, he summoned the governor to surrender, and on refusal, battered the walls for two days, until he made a breach. He then ordered an assault, his men were twice repulsed, but in the third attempt, led on by Cromwell himself, attended by Ireton, the town was gained. Quarter had been promised to all those who should lay down their arms, a promise observed till all resistance was at an end. But the moment that the city was completely reduced, Cromwell with that imperturbable cruelty we have named as his characteristic, resolved by one effectual execution to terrify the whole Irish party he had to contend with. He calmly issued his fatal orders, that the whole garrison should be put to the sword! during five days this butchery was carried on with circumstances of horror, from which the imagination recoils. A number of ecclesiastics were found within the walls, and Cromwell, as if he was the avenger of heaven against the ministers of idolatry, commanded his soldiers to plunge their weapons into the undefended bosoms of these wretched men. Thus even the remorse

which must inevitably accompany the performance of acts at which conscience revolts, does not deter the ambitious from the perpetration. But in fact ambition bears down every thing internal and external which impedes its course. No sacrifice appears too great which can purchase the acquisition at which its aim is directed. The execrable policy of Cromwell had the effect he intended. His progress was as successful as it was rapid, every town before which he presented himself, overcome with consternation, opened its gates without resistance. The English in fact had no further difficulties to encounter, than what arose from fatigue and inclemency of the season. Disease made dreadful ravages amongst his troops, who perished in great numbers. Jones, who had distinguished himself considerably by his military genius, was swept off by disease. But while Cromwell himself seemed hemmed in by quickly advancing difficulties, calling for the exertion of all his capacity, and many in which it was useless, several English garrisons declared for him, and opening their gates, resolved to share the fortunes of their victorious countrymen. And thus is it generally seen, that the doubtful, the wavering, the timid, and the indifferent determine in favour of whatever appears to act upon a presumption of its own strength, or to have a tendency to established authority.

The defection of these garrisons put the final stroke to Ormond's authority. The Irish altogether actuated by religious or national prejudices could no longer be preserved in obedience to a protestant governor, the stream of whose fortune was turned. The clergy renewed their excommunications against him and his adherents, and thus added the terrors of superstition to those which arose from a victorious army, and when the ima-

gination becomes once subject to superstitious influences, it little matters what is chosen as the *charmed* means of captivating the mind, the difference is only in name, between the fanaticism of the cross, and that of the republican zealot. Thus the insolence and bigotry which every where defeated the best concerted operations of Ormond, arose from the dominion of the turbulent and factious clergy over their ignorant adherents. The confidence of these men arose in proportion to the adverse circumstances of the opposite party. The public misfortunes they malignantly imputed to the ill conduct of their governors, and laboured unceasingly to infuse their prejudices into all those who were within the sphere of their insinuations. Discontent, jealousies, murmurs, were the natural consequence. They had even ventured to insinuate that if their countrymen must accept of an heretical government they might as well submit to Cromwell, as to Ormond, and some were said to have offered prayers for the success of the heretical general. The people irritated by the burden of contribution and assessment, depressed by disappointment, and perhaps above all, weary of a declining cause, readily listened to these insinuations.

Cromwell, who had received a reinforcement from England, again took the field in the spring; he made himself master of Kilkenny and Clonmell, the only places where he met with any resistance. In the latter, Ormond, notwithstanding the infatuated obstinacy of the commissioners of trust (who were a dead weight upon every operation he projected), prevailed on Lord Roche, a nobleman possessing considerable power in the south, to collect a body of troops for the relief of the place, but these were encountered and defeated by Lord Broghill. The Romish bishop of Ross, who had



been particularly active in raising and animating these troops, was taken prisoner in the engagement. Thus distinguished in his opposition to the parliamentary forces, the unfortunate ecclesiastic could expect no mercy. Broghill however promised to spare his life, on condition, that he would use his spiritual authority with the garrison of an adjacent fort, and prevail on them to surrender. For this purpose he was conducted to the fort, but the gallant captive, unawed by the fear of death, unshaken in his principles of fidelity, exhorted the garrison to maintain their post resolutely against the enemies of their religion and their country, and instantly resigned himself to execution. His enemies could discover nothing in this self devotion but insolence and obstinacy, for he was a papist and a prelate! But it is pleasing to the historian thus to meet with one faithful among the faithless. During these transactions, Cromwell was repeatedly called into England, he therefore resigned his army to the care of Ireton, and embarked for that country destined to be the scene of his ambition. Had there been either union, order, or resolution among the Irish, it had not yet been too late to recover some importance, and to have maintained a successful war against the republicans. But the whole frame of Irish union seemed in a manner dissolved, Ormond imputed this to its true cause, the malignant practices of those clergy and their partizans who from their opposition to the peace, had uniformly traduced his government, exulted in his misfortunes, inflamed the general discontent, and by artfully increasing the dejection and terror of the people, drove them to compositions with the enemy which defeated his every purpose. With the concurrence of the commissioners of trust he therefore condescended to expostulate

with the clergy. For this purpose he summoned twenty-four bishops to attend him at Limerick, that he might confer with them and other of the nobility upon measures for the king's service, and the preservation of his people. Whatever might be their secret prejudices, they assembled with every external mark of respect and submission. With the open candour of a noble mind, acutely feeling the ingratitude it had experienced, and conscious of its own unvarying integrity, Ormond freely conferred with them on the distracted state of affairs, representing the ruin that must ensue to the nation, and the dishonour to himself, were he to submit to a mere nominal authority without the real power of a chief governor. If they had conceived, he added with a dignified firmness, any distaste to his administration, he desired they would express their sentiments with freedom, and proposed that they should either procure a due obedience to be paid to him, or recommend some other mode than his quitting the kingdom, if it might still be preserved. With affected deference they presented him with some propositions which they said would remove the prevailing discontents. Though loosely expressed, general, and indeterminate, Ormond gave such unequivocal and satisfactory answers to them that they were compelled to publish a declaration, that they would endeavour to root out from men's hearts the jealousies against the present government, &c. Every day, however, afforded fresh occasion of discovering the hypocrisy of these men, the inconsistency of their private practices with their public professions.

Ormond absolutely wearied by their insolent and insidious conduct, and mortified to be obliged to keep upon apparent terms with individuals who disgraced their profession, and acted in a manner

revolting to every honourable mind, declared his resolution of making use of the license he had received from the king, and withdrawing himself and his authority from Ireland. However acceptable this purposed removal might be to the clergy, the period was not quite arrived when it would suit their purposes. As they wished the nominal authority to be vested in one of their creatures, but had not yet agreed who among them would be most suitable, they wished to retain Ormond till they had settled this important point. A letter was addressed to the marquis, signed by the popish archbishops of Dublin and Tuam, informing him that they and their brethren, the prelates of Ireland, had resolved to assemble, to devise some measures for the defence of their religion, and the security of the nation. In a style highly imperious, they declared their readiness to receive any proposals from the marquis, and they did not want "willingness to prepare a good answer." The marquis replied with becoming dignity, declined making any further proposals, allowed their convention, and expressed his wishes that the result might be happy. Instead of receiving overtures, they were thus obliged to make them, which they soon did, in a strain so insolent, that it could hardly have been anticipated by those who were even accustomed to their imperious language. They required that Ormond should, without delay, repair to the king, leaving his authority "in the hands of some person faithful to his majesty, and trusty to the nation, and such as the affections and confidence of the people would follow."

It might have been supposed, that men who could frame an address so improper to the representative of royalty, would have rendered themselves the objects of popular resentment, and ex-

posed themselves to punishment. But ignorance and bigotry had stamped such a degree of reverence on the ecclesiastical character, that they were in fact deemed infallible, the dictates of the meanest of the order being of superior influence to all other power, either civil or military. It is a fact strongly illustrative of this assertion, that when a regiment was detached on some particular service, a seditious friar, seizing the colours, pronounced eternal perdition on those who should presume to march; the whole body, at his word, cast down their arms and dispersed. Even at the period we are immediately reviewing, those most zealous for the king, and most offended at the violence of their clergy, were yet so tenacious of their immunities, (granted in the darkest periods of popery, and now revived to their full extent,) that they could **not** harbour a thought so profane, as to inflict punishment on a churchman, by any other than an ecclesiastical authority. Ormond, therefore, had no alternative; inclined to condescension and forbearance, he summoned the bishops to a second conference; they refused to attend him. Unable longer to conceal his indignation at a faction so contemptible, he declared he would not now quit the kingdom, until forced from it by absolute necessity.

But the factious and bigoted spirit which the nuncio had infused into the clergy, was still so predominant, that they were not to be diverted from a purpose they had determined upon. They now published an instrument, entitled “A declaration of the prelates and dignitaries of the secular and regular clergy, against the continuance of his majesty’s authority in the Marquis of Ormond, for the misgovernment of the subjects, the ill conduct of the army, and the violation of the peace.” They complained of the partiality of

Ormond to Protestants, his aversion to the Catholic religion, his cruel treatment of its professors and clergy, and his misrepresentations to the king. They threatened to present articles of accusation against him to his majesty, and enjoined the people to obey no orders, but those of the congregation of clergy, until a general assembly should be convened. To add force to this peremptory edict, it was attended with a solemn sentence of excommunication against all those who should adhere to the lord lieutenant, or give him subsidy, contribution, or obedience. The folly, as well as the iniquity and ingratitude of this proceeding, was rendered more manifest, when the success of the parliamentary forces is considered. Ireton had advanced as far as Athlone, and thus the whole western province was in jeopardy. Lord Clanricarde marched to oppose them, but the sentence of excommunication was published at the head of his regiments, so as to discharge them from all obedience to government. Entreaties, remonstrances, expostulations, were all used with the congregation, but in vain. Neither danger, entreaty, nor the more obvious suggestions of duty or policy, could induce these stubborn and proud prelates to revoke their sentence. They consented only, with a stately pride, to suspend it during the expedition made for the relief of Athlone. In the infatuation of their self-created power, they proceeded to levy forces, so that the harassed Ormond had a new enemy to contend with. And although their expectations in this point were disappointed in a great degree, yet they still continued to invoke the full weight of divine vengeance upon the people, for contempt of their own censures, and those of the nuncio, to which they insolently ascribed the calamities of the nation. At this juncture an incident oc-



curred, which added fuel to the flame of bigoted fury. This was the concession of Charles in his declaration to the Scots, whereby he completely united himself with the covenanters, professed his hatred of all Catholics, and resolved not to tolerate them in any of his dominions; and among other particulars, expressed his utter abhorrence of the peace concluded by his father with the Irish papists, and ratified by himself, pronouncing it utterly void, on the ground of the unlawfulness of any peace made with bloody and idolatrous rebels.

Nothing could more opportunely serve the purposes of the congregation, for inflaming the people, than this declaration of Charles. Ormond well anticipated the use that would be made of it, and the haste that imputed it entirely to his representations with the king: "Why," said they, "should we be now bound by a peace he disclaims? Why submit to an authority which he in effect recalls? Let us remember our oath of association, and instead of shedding our blood in defence of a treaty thus disowned, let us hazard our lives to extort more favourable articles from the enemy."

Ormond, whatever his secret opinion might be, affected to treat this degrading declaration as a forgery; but private letters from Charles soon acknowledged it as wrung from him by the exigencies of his situation, insinuating at the same time, that it could not be binding in Ireland, as it was transacted without the concurrence of a privy council, earnestly pressing Ormond to retire in time from his Irish government. Betrayed, harassed, maligned, and insulted, Ormond could have no wish to remain, well knowing that it was impossible for him to maintain a contest with the king's open and secret enemies. Yet the honour

of the monarch, and his own integrity of office, determined him not to leave the factious and refractory any just ground of excuse for their unwarrantable acts. He therefore told them, that the declaration was forced from the king, therefore that until he could have the unrestrained assurances of his royal master's pleasure, he was resolved at all hazards to assert the lawfulness and validity of the late peace, provided in the meantime, that the acts of the congregation of prelates should be revoked, or punished as an usurpation of the royal authority, and that all obedience should be paid to him, an honourable maintenance provided to support the dignity of his station, his private fortune having been sacrificed to the public service. The answer of the commissioners of trust sufficiently indicated their opinion of the exorbitant requisitions of the clergy. They expostulated with them, but found them inexorable; they besought the marquis to await the result of a new general assembly, about to be convened. The assembly met, but it soon was evident they were far too indulgent and submissive to the haughty ecclesiastics. The latter deigned to publish a protestation, that by their proceedings they had no purpose of usurping on the king's authority, or the liberty of the people, graciously confessing, "that it did not belong to their jurisdiction so to do." The assembly, satisfied with this, did not even pass a censure on their acts, nor demand any security for their future peaceable conduct. Ormond was justly incensed at this disrespect shown to his station, and prepared for his departure. Alarmed at his determined purpose, every member of the assembly, not absolutely infatuated by religious bigotry, shuddered at the consequences of that anarchy, which they anticipated would ensue from the abandonment of

the lord lieutenant. They besought him at least to delegate the royal authority to some person faithful to the king, and acceptable to the nation. Ormond replied that he would comply with their desires, but he must first be satisfied that the person he should appoint would not be subject to the insults he had himself experienced, but be received with honourable submission. Upon these conditions, he appointed the Earl of Clanricarde his lord deputy, with directions to use or decline the commission as he should be treated by the proceedings of the assembly.

Had Clanricarde consulted selfish interests alone, every thing around him, every dictate of his feelings, was opposed to his assumption of the power thus delegated to him. But his ardent and devoted loyalty determined him even under the manifold and various disadvantages, to protect the royal cause against its numerous enemies in Ireland. He therefore intimated his acceptance of the government, provided due obedience was assured to him. After much evasion, prevarication, and insidiousness, the affair was settled. Clanricarde saw plainly a general disposition to submit to the parliamentarians, that the clergy in their blind zeal to abolish the royal power, encouraged this disposition, and that some immediate union, and the instant exertion of some authority were absolutely necessary, to prevent consequences fatal to the realm; therefore, defective and unsatisfying as the declaration of the assembly was, as referring to his authority, he hesitated no longer to declare his acceptance of the government.

The Catholics had now what they had long professed ardently to desire, a chief governor of their own religion. The protestant royalists were dispersed; some engaged with the parliamenta-

rians, many were glad to embrace banishment as a refuge; above forty thousand passed into foreign countries, and the republicans, well pleased to free the country of enemies to their cause, gave every facility to quit it. The spirit of bigoted faction, however, was still in full and active operation. Scarcely had the earl accepted his troublesome responsibility, when agents from Ireton proposed to the assembly to abandon their desperate cause, and treat with the parliamentarians. The proposition was at first rejected, yet by the influence of the restless and intriguing clergy, was resumed and supported. The popish bishop of Ferns, a distinguished partizan of the nuncio, and who was imbued with a large portion of a similar fiery zeal, and virulent hatred of the royal authority, was loud in favour of a treaty. Clanricarde remonstrated on the treachery and danger of such a measure, and several of the nobility boldly expressed their indignation at the clergy thus abandoning the interests of the king, declaring that as they had now so plainly manifested it was not individual objections to this or that governor, but the demolition of the royal power, which was their aim, they were resolved to defend it at every hazard. The clergy were unaccustomed to language so unequivocal and bold; they began to apprehend they had proceeded rather too far, and that in endeavouring to exalt the temple of their power beyond due proportion, they had weakened its foundation. A sudden and complete revolution of sentiment seemed to actuate them, they concurred with the assembly in opposing any treaty with the enemy, and when Clanricarde issued a proclamation, forbidding all persons from resorting to the quarters of the common enemy, or to enlist in their armies, the versatile prelates deigned to enforce this act of state, by fulminating

sentence of excommunication on all those who should not pay it strict obedience. Their hatred of Clanricarde and his cause, however, remained the same, although fear and self-interest taught them to conceal it beneath smoothness of manner, and guardedness of expression. They still held their secret consultations, still indulged their visionary schemes and hopes of establishing the papal, and of course, their own sovereign power in Ireland, by the intervention of some foreign prince. Impressed with these ideas, the Bishop of Ferns, their most zealous partizan, was actually sent to Brussels, to solicit the Duke of Lorraine to take their nation and religion under his princely protection. The character and circumstances of this prince belong to other histories, but it is requisite to take a cursory view of the latter, in order to explain the ground of an application which appears so extraordinary in the restless and ambitious clergy of Ireland.

Previous to the departure of Ormond, Charles in his extreme necessity had listened to a proposal of mortgaging the fort of Duncannon to the Duke of Lorraine, and Ormond was directed, if he approved of the contract, to deliver up the fort to persons appointed by the duke, upon receipt of the stipulated sum, twenty-four thousand pounds. Duncannon, however, being threatened with a siege, the security became of course precarious; difficulties arose respecting the payment of the sum, and after a long course of evasion, the agents of the duke departed, without bringing the treaty to any issue. It was subsequently renewed by Lord Taaffe, who earnestly requested the duke to support the king's interests in Ireland, offering him the security of any place in the kingdom for repayment. The influence of private passion effected that which the melancholy



situation of Charles, as a brother prince, had been powerless to accomplish. The duke had married his cousin german, Nicole, daughter of Henry, Duke of Lorraine; but being afterwards captivated by Beatrix de Cusance, widow of the Count of Cantecroix, he married her while Nicole yet survived. He wished to engage the court of Rome to pronounce his first marriage void, and to legitimize his children by his second union. His solicitations had hitherto proved ineffectual; but he flattered himself, by engaging with ardent zeal in defence of the Catholic cause in Ireland, *he might plead so much merit*, that the pope must eventually yield to his wishes. Lord Taaffe, who was an insinuating and wily negociator, saw the weak point of attack; he flattered the partiality of the duke for the children of the princess Beatrix, and proposed a match between her infant daughter, and the Duke of York. The amorous Lorraine was delighted with the prospect of such an alliance for the child of a woman whom he idolised. It is even probable that Taaffe, penetrating as he was, in the progress of the negociation, gradually extended his views, and flattered the sanguine Lorraine with many airy visions of future power in Ireland. But whatever were his designs and expectations, the duke gave substantial proof of his present favour, by furnishing Lord Taaffe with five thousand pounds to purchase arms and ammunition. Taaffe was surprised at this munificence, which Lorraine declared was but an earnest of his future favour.

It has been most justly remarked, that those who desire your assistance are so varied in their display of attachment, their praises so readily assume the air of independence and sincerity, that they equally impose upon themselves, and the individuals they desire to conciliate. We

will not pronounce that Lord Taafe and the duke were mutually under this pleasing illusion. The latter expressed the most pathetic commiseration for the Irish Catholics, declared he was ready, if invited, to appear personally in their defence, with ample supplies, at the same time hinting, that he should expect entire obedience, and not consent to act by commission from any individual whatever. These engagements Lord Taafe, however, did not venture to make, but he proposed to the duke that he should send some distinguished person to Ireland, to treat with those in authority. Accordingly Lorraine immediately fixed upon Stephen de Hennin, Abbé de St. Catherine, for the purpose, who landed at Galway, while the Bishop of Ferns was on his way to Brussels, with a commission from the disaffected clergy to treat with the duke, they doubtless being well aware of his application to the court of Rome, and the use that might be made of his private partialities to effect their purposes.

No one could be more acceptable to them and their partisans than the envoy of Lorraine, who, although his letters of credence were addressed to the estates of the kingdom, finding the authority vested in the chief governor, with due decorum applied to him. To avoid every dispute and censure, Clanricarde appointed a committee composed of bishops, nobility, and gentry, to treat with the abbé, to receive his proposals, and to report them, with their opinion and advice. Nothing could be more candid and generous, yet they were altogether disregarded. The proposals of the envoy were, that the duke, his heirs, and with a saving of his majesty's rights, should be received as protectors of Ireland, and when there resident, to enjoy all authority. These proposals were debated by the committee among themselves,

disdaining to communicate with the lord deputy respecting them. Clanricarde complained of this disrespectful proceeding, as well as of the propositions of the envoy, as derogatory to the king's honour and authority. The bishops insisted that they should be accepted, as the only means left to save the nation. The abbé consented to some qualification of his demands; they were declared still inadmissible, consistent with the royal honour. At length the abbé consented to advance twenty thousand pounds, on the security of Limerick and Galway, and to refer articles relative to the protectorship, to be adjusted by a treaty at Brussels. In consequence of which a commission was formed to treat with the duke, and expressly instructed to carry on their negociation agreeably to the directions they should receive from the queen, the Duke of York, and the lord lieutenant. These limitations were, however, speedily forgotten.

The turbulent Bishop of Ferns, finding Lord Taaffe was gone to Paris, attended the Duke of Lorraine, and was graciously received. He was attended by some of the disaffected clergy and others; they without scruple assured the duke, they would invest him with the entire power of the kingdom. The bishop was loud in his invectives against the commissioners sent by the deputy, their opposition to Rinuccini, and the appeal to Rome against his just sentence of excommunication. He declared, that he doubted not this excommunication was confirmed in heaven, that all its opposers, however great and exalted in the eye of man, were forsaken of God, and delivered up to Satan. He concluded much similar impious language, by an assurance, that God would never prosper any treaty directed by the deputy, a man excommunicated for many just causes, and

that the duke, he was convinced, when informed, could never consent to negotiate with agents, deriving their authority from a withered and accursed hand. The commissioners of the lord deputy, to whom this insidious cant was addressed, received it with too much attention; they disclaimed his commission, pleading another and more unlimited authority. In the name of the nation and people of Ireland, they signed a treaty with the duke, by which he was in effect invested with the sovereignty, by the title of "Protector Royal." At the same time, one of the bigots was persuaded by the Bishop of Ferns to sign a petition to the pope, by which, in the name of the nation, he professed an entire submission to the holy see; the other declined subscribing; the name of Lord Taafe was inserted without his consent or knowledge. The clergy now exulted in the successful progress of their schemes; the airy prospects of a triumphant church, a stately hierarchy, protected by a Catholic prince, dazzled their fancies—but these were soon dispelled.

Whatever were the secret designs of Lorraine, he found they could not be promoted by any further treaty with the Irish, and a fair pretence occurred for declining it. He received from the lord deputy a formal protest against the proceedings of his agents, so contrary to instructions, and so derogatory to the king's honour.

The king's interests grew so desperate in Ireland, that there soon was nothing left to purchase the assistance of Lorraine, even upon the most favourable terms. But the negotiation had transported the clergy to positive extravagance. Their synods were convened, the duke was declared protector of the nation, those were excommunicated who refused to acknowledge the nomination. They took an oath of secrecy, and resolved

that the prelates of each province should choose two persons to compose a new supreme council, with full powers, under the direction of the clergy. They also prepared a sentence of excommunication against Clanricarde and his adherents, to be published when they should think fit. But they were soon roused from this dream of power and grandeur, by the flame of war surrounding them.

Ireton, the new parliamentary deputy of Ireland, at the head of an army thirty thousand strong, prosecuted with vigour the work of subduing the Irish, and with a similar success to that which attended Cromwell. He punished without mercy all those who had taken an active part in the massacres. Sir Phelim O'Nial, among many others, suffered an ignominious death. From the arrival of Owen O'Nial, this barbarous conspirator had acted only an inferior part in the terrible drama, without notice, esteem, or honour. During the administration of Clanricarde, he emerged from his obscurity, and rendered him some assistance, but from repeated defeats, was again obliged to shelter himself in a remote concealment. Lord Caulfield, the heir of him he had so barbarously murdered, discovered and dragged him to justice. In the last period of his life, he discovered a spirit and resolution worthy a noble character.

After the siege of Limerick, which he took, Ireton executed the severest vengeance on those who had been the most distinguished partisans of the nuncio, and most inveterate opposers of the English government; of all those who had been excepted from mercy, the Bishop of Limerick alone escaped. O'Brien, the popish prelate of Emly, was condemned, and instantly executed. With him were also led to execution some magistrates, the most turbulent and seditious of the nuncio's



faction. Ireton caught the fatal infection which raged in several parts of Ireland, and had scarcely accomplished the reduction of Limerick, when he fell a victim to it. The command of the forces devolved on General Ludlow, who continued to push the advantages against the Irish, and every where obtained an easy victory.

After every exertion possible to maintain his station, and to serve the interests of the king, Clanricarde, beset on every side, and even his personal safety every moment in jeopardy, by the treachery of those who surrounded him, found himself obliged to pursue the king's instructions, and accepted conditions from the victorious and persevering republicans. He retired from a country now lost to his royal master, whom he had so faithfully served, with the mortifying conviction, that it was so lost by the illiberal bigotry, overweening pride, and blind policy of men, intoxicated by an imaginary consequence, by their wicked factions, and obstinate perverseness, in contending against their own interests, and violently rejecting every measure suggested, as necessary to secure their rights and privileges. ~~The~~ virtuous nobleman soon after died in England, whither he had retired universally respected, esteemed, and loved.

## CHAPTER XX.

*Fleetwood appointed to the government of Ireland—Four individuals united with him as commissioners of parliament—They declare by proclamation that the rebellion is subdued—The proceedings of the commissioners—Effects of the revolution, which placed Cromwell in power, upon the Irish—Henry Cromwell sent to Ireland—Jealousy of Cromwell—Parties inimical to his accession of power—Appoints Fleetwood lord deputy of Ireland, with a council—His instructions—Suspensions of Cromwell's enemies—A refractory spirit subsists—Alarm of Cromwell—Liberal and equitable government of Henry Cromwell—His popularity—The protector supported—His death.*

A. D. 1653.

THE power of the parliament of England was now to effect the settlement of a country wherein existed a terrible combination of personal suffering and political discontent. After some intrigue and debate in the English parliament, Fleetwood, who had married the widow of Ireton, was appointed to the government of Ireland. On his arrival war seemed at an end, and the country wasted by its long commotions was to be recruited and restored to some degree of order and tranquillity. For this purpose four individuals were united with Fleetwood in the civil government, with the title of commissioners of parliament. Their first act was to declare by proclamation that the rebellion was subdued; thus adventurers were assured of speedily receiving the lands for which they had advanced sums, and the inhabitants were encouraged to resume their agricultural labours.

Courts were established at Dublin and Athlone to hear and adjudge all claims which were to be exhibited and established within a limited time, that all proprietors might be freed from future litigation. Such various arrangements engaged a considerable time, and were attended with complaints, disputes, and jealousies; nor in the distribution of lands were the commissioners and their subordinate agents inattentive to their own interests. Meantime the revolution which vested Cromwell with the protectorship of the three kingdoms took place in England. Various were the effects of this intelligence upon the Irish, according to the peculiar bias and situation of those who received it; by the army with peculiar satisfaction, by some fanatics with invective and resentment, by Ludlow and other zealous republicans with indignation and abhorrence; they could not conceal their feelings when they found that Cromwell had succeeded in appropriating to himself the advantages both of fortuitous events and the labours of others, and of captivating the people by an exterior of severe virtue, which the obtuseness of his feelings and the coldness of his heart enabled him to assume, as might suit his purposes. The proposal of proclaiming the protector produced a fortnight's debate; but at length Fleetwood with his colleagues and a few principal officers resolved upon it.

Ludlow, disgusted, mortified, indignant, retired from the offensive pageantry, declaring his resolution no longer to act as a commissioner, yet retaining his post of lieutenant-general, in order to preserve his influence in the army. Cromwell, whose vigilance never slumbering, extended on all sides, was doubtless aware of Ludlow's indignation at his attaining a power so nearly allied to royalty, he accordingly sent his son Henry into Ireland

to sound the disposition of the army, and to reconcile all parties to his usurpation. No one could be better suited to this conciliating commission than Henry Cromwell, penetrating, just, and generous, of amiable manners, and possessed of a vigorous capacity. Ireland might be considered as entirely in the possession of the army. Deeply was Henry affected by the miserable state of the people and the universal desolation arising from the virulence of the English against the old inhabitants, and the corruption, oppression, and fraud which pervaded the civil departments. He endeavoured to reconcile the disaffected, and to win over Ludlow to his father's interests, but in vain, for it was not the least of his discontents, that after having laboured and devoted himself to the common cause, he now found himself excluded from power and its concomitants.

The document, entitled the *Instrument of Government*, by which Cromwell was invested with authority, required that a parliament should be summoned for the three nations, now united into one commonwealth. Thirty members were to be chosen for Ireland, and in spite of the avowed opposition and indignation of Ludlow, those were chosen as should be most acceptable to the protector; but even this could not dissipate the jealousy Cromwell entertained of the commissioners, the republicans being as it were dethroned by his usurpation, were the party he had the greatest reason to apprehend. These were, says Hume, divided into two sets of men, seemingly of most opposite principles, but were in fact united by a similarity of character and principles. The first were known under the designation of millenarians, who insisted that dominion being founded on grace, all distinction in magistracy must be abolished, except what arose from piety and holiness, who

expected suddenly the second coming of Christ upon earth, and who pretended that the saints in the mean time, that is themselves, were alone entitled to govern. The second were the deists, who had no other object than political liberty, who denied in toto the truth of revelation, and broadly insinuated that all the various sects, so heated against each other, were alike founded in folly and in error. Men of genius and views so daring were not contented with the ancient and legal forms of government, but challenged a degree of freedom beyond what they ever expected to enjoy under any form of monarchy. This latter class were perfectly hated by Cromwell, because having no enthusiasm he could neither govern, deceive, or overreach them, he therefore hated them with great rigour and disdain, denominating them *heathens*. It was obvious that individuals of this character were considered by him as dangerous agents of his power. He therefore appointed Fleetwood lord deputy of Ireland for three years, assigning him a new council to assist in the administration. Fleetwood was a millenarian, or what was familiarly styled fifth monarchy man; but although a republican he was a fanatic, and possessing a weak judgment he was biassed by the suggestions of others, which in fact neutralised his free principles. He, with his colleagues, were instructed to improve the interest of the commonwealth in Ireland, to suppress idolatry, popery, superstition, and profaneness, to encourage godly and gifted ministers of the word, to execute the laws against the scandalous and malignant, to provide for the advancement of learning, to attend to the revenue with diligence and economy, and to dispense with the orders of the late parliament, which had decreed that all the old Irish should be confined to Connaught, a policy which was



indeed as absurd as it was found to be impracticable. This last clause, so indulgent to the Irish, did not escape the notice of Cromwell's enemies; they evidently saw that his aim was to conciliate all parties to his interest. It could not but be observed by those jealous of his aspirings, that the form of administration he had established in Ireland was more congenial to royal than republican government, and strongly indicated his purpose of establishing the monarchical power in his family. The army were discontented at the continued delay respecting their divisions of land, and utterly dissatisfied with the present government. Yet in the army was laid the basis of the power attained by this extraordinary man; and in fact their interests were so strongly identified with his, that he seemed secure of their attachment: but all military government is precarious, particularly when it has to compete with religious prejudices.

Cromwell, by the fanaticism he (to effect his own purposes) encouraged in his soldiers, had infused a spirit which rendered it a difficult and delicate task to govern them: so that he who directed their movements often had reason to tremble at the power of their mighty and complicated operations. It had been the constant lesson of Cromwell, that the office of king was an impious usurpation upon the authority of Christ; but when he assumed a power so nearly analogous, the natural idea arose that a protector could not be altogether compatible with the divine authority. Many, therefore, became his inveterate enemies when they saw his single authority was established, against which he had so often made the most violent and solemn protestations. Hence, when Cromwell recalled a detachment from Ireland to England in order to strengthen himself against

some attempts of the royalists, he found he had lost much influence over them. They mutinied, and exclaimed, that they had engaged to fight against the Irish rebels, but in England they might possibly be employed against their best friends.

Ludlow was regarded as the principal mover of this refractory spirit, as he took an active part in inflaming the discontented, and was particularly industrious in disseminating several tracts published against Cromwell. These circumstances both offended and alarmed the protector; he directed the lord deputy to require Ludlow to surrender his commission, and in case of refusal to send him prisoner to England. Ludlow however boldly resisted a power his principles would not admit, and refused to yield a commission received from the parliament. At length he was prevailed on to promise, on his parole, that he would present himself to Cromwell, and in the mean time not to act against the present government. Cromwell was very sensible that in the present discontents, such a man might prove very troublesome and dangerous in England, he therefore reversed his order and directed that he should be detained in Ireland.

Ireland at this period presents nothing in the smallest degree relative to our subject, or indeed for even general detail. The natives broken and subdued, the English conquerors waiting with impatience the rewards of their valour, the government employed in suppressing murmurs and discontent, and in reconciling the minds of men to the changes which had taken place, and the existing government. To effect these desirable ends Henry Cromwell was again employed, first in a military command, subsequently as lord deputy, in the place of Fleetwood. The liberal and equitable spirit of his government, his justice, impar-

tiality, and benevolence had the happiest effects. He proved "a governor from whom he himself might learn," were the words of the inflexible and severe Cromwell. Henry in fact established himself so firmly in the hearts of the people, that they became entirely reconciled to his father's interests.

At all times indeed it will be found that there are numbers who make it a principle to adhere to any power which is uppermost, and to support the established government. Thus when Cromwell received a petition from the officers of his own regiment, avowing their dissatisfaction at his government, addresses were transmitted from the army and the inhabitants of every county in Ireland expressing their resolution of adhering to the protector against all those whose particular animosities endeavoured to re-embroil the public. We read with astonishment this revolution of sentiment in a people to whom no form of government had ever before appeared satisfactory. Are principles the mere creatures of circumstances? or were these concessions not the suggestions of reason, but the dictates of fear? So long accustomed to anarchy, perhaps the people were glad to repose beneath the shelter of despotism. Happy however was it for both Cromwell and the Irish that they were subjected to the mild and intelligent sway of Henry, whose authority was directed and exercised in a manner to preserve a due subordination and to improve the national energies of the people.

Things remained in this state of progressive improvement and tranquillity till the period of Cromwell's death; but the moment when that master spirit ceased to animate the potent hand which had wielded the government of three kingdoms through perils and through dangers, formed

an important epoch in history: we shall pause awhile, not to delineate with our feeble pencil a character so complicated, but to take a general retrospect of the seventeenth century, as far as relates to religion and literature to the advanced period of the century at which we are arrived.

## CHAPTER XXI.

*Religion important, if regarded merely as to its influence on civil government—The Romish faith loses considerable ground—Luxury and magnificence of the cardinals—Ecclesiastic affairs—Division of monastic orders into two general classes—Congregation of St. Maur—Enquiring spirit of the age—Benedictines—Jansenists—Oratory of St. John—Priests of the missions—Daughters of charity—Attacks against the Jesuits—Advantages of literature derived from them—Religious system of the Romish church not improved—Immoral tendency of the institution of Jesuits—Their great activity and influence—Translation of the Old Testament into Irish—Retrospect of religious opinions—Archbishop Laud—His error of judgment—Sectaries enjoy liberty under Cromwell—His scheme for regulating the church—Anecdote of Cromwell and Usher—Quakers propagate their tenets—Animosities and controversies—Independents—Presbyterians—The Catholics—Political sentiments of the independents—Cromwell kept all, (however discordant,) in some degree of union—Protestant missions established—Society for the propagation of the Gospel—Boyle's Lectures—Flourishing state of the sciences—Bacon—Empire of superstition shaken—Improvements in the study of history—Its advantages—Eloquence and languages—Painting and sculpture decline—The causes—Cromwell's patronage of the arts—Civil wars favourable to eloquence and oratory.*

RELIGION must ever be deemed a subject of the highest interest, speaking even of it abstractedly, as referring to its connection with civil government. For it is assuredly only in proportion as we succeed in impressing men with the idea of a constant over-ruling Providence that we can either work on their fears or their affections. Nothing but that principle which connects us with futurity



can possess power to withdraw us from worldly interests, so far as to prevent our immoderate devotion to the disorderly impressions of our senses, and the tyranny of our passions, and most assuredly men both individually and in society must ever sink in the scale of nationality and virtue if, in endeavouring to form the chain of duties and moral principles, they do not place the last link above sublunary calculations and beyond the limits of their social conventions, for without this grand connection it must ever be liable to separation amidst the collisions of human interests and the fluctuation of human passions. At the period of our present retrospect this principle, so necessary and so interesting to man, was peculiarly the great spring of his actions and determinations.

We have hitherto traced the rising and the declining power of a dominant hierarchy holding the ascendant both in the ecclesiastical and civil affairs of nations, but the great event of the reformation elicited the intellectual capacities of men, hitherto checked and kept in abeyance by the interdicts which forbade all discussion and display of thought, and although these were now frequently manifested by fantastic whims and fanatical absurdities, still it was the search of truth, and that search must ever be a noble employment. Religion in general had indeed, during the period we speak of, many enemies to contend with. A number of writers arose whose productions were levelled against all principles of faith, or designed to confine the belief of men to natural religion alone; but on the other side were still superior numbers of writers, who, by their luminous compositions, beautifully and strikingly illustrated the dignity and intrinsic excellences of the gospel.

In the early period of the 17th century Rome, in preserving some of her external marks of power

and grandeur, lost the substance which she had in part derived from her spiritual and partly from her temporal dominion. That authority which had once so nearly subjected Europe and threatened an universal monarchy of her pontiffs, now lost considerable ground, as the important maxim was generally admitted, "that the power of the Roman pontiff is entirely confined to matters of religious or spiritual nature, and cannot under any pretext whatsoever extend to civil transactions or worldly affairs." Her power in one half of the Christian world was even contemned, "struggling for prerogatives, once regarded as unalienable rights, upholding jurisdictions which many considered but as long established abuses, the sovereign pontiffs continued indeed to exhibit some semblance of their ancient supremacy, and by much pretension, deep policy, and other arts in which they were adepts, they hid from the world, if not from themselves, the decay of their influence and the precariousness of their sway." In proportion as they experienced this internal decay and the gradual concentration of their power to the immediate precincts of their court, their exterior marks of grandeur appear to have increased. The eminent writer quoted above thus describes the luxury and magnificence of the cardinals:—

"The journey of a cardinal," she observes, "to his diocese, or when on a diplomatic mission, resembled the royal progress of a sovereign, rather than the journey of a subject. In Italy they were generally accompanied by a train of a hundred domestics, including in this denomination their chaplains and the ecclesiastics comprised in the household. Their carriages were all glass and gold, with silver springs and velvet linings, and their sumpter mules were laden with rich furniture and with bedsteads, which were sometimes com-

posed of solid silver, set with precious stones, and provided with mattresses of eider down, while a troop of cavalry brought up the rear: it must be admitted a very necessary accompaniment to such a rich cortége."

Amongst the inconsistent practices which marked the ecclesiastics was their addiction to theatrical amusements, which reached even to the vatican itself. Indeed the corruptions that had too conspicuously marked the several orders of the clergy in preceding ages were not diminished in this. Dignitaries rarely owed their elevation to their learning or merit; patronage, service rendered to men in power, connections, and simoniacal practices were, generally speaking, the steps to preferment. There were, it is admitted, many individuals possessing both piety and virtue who enlightened this period of moral obscurity; but these rare patterns were either ruined by the stratagems of their resentful or envious brethren, or were suffered to remain in obscurity without the encouragement and support requisite to enable them to execute effectually their pious and laudable purposes. The same treatment awaited those among the inferior orders of the clergy who endeavoured to maintain the cause of truth and virtue: while we acknowledge that among the prelates and other of the clergy there were many pleasing exceptions from the general prevalence of immorality, it is also incumbent on us to do justice to the merit of some pontiffs of this century, who used their utmost endeavour to reform the manners of the ministers of religion. It is however a subject of surprise to us, who can dispassionately view the past, that these pontiffs, enlightened and virtuous as they were, did not perceive insuperable obstacles to the success of their counsels and the fruits of their wise and salutary

edicts, subsisting in the very interior constitution of the Romish Church and in the very nature of the papal government; nor is it scarcely conceivable how they could for a moment encourage the thought, that it was possible by any human agency to retain order and good morals among that prodigious multitude of persons of all characters, classes, and dispositions subjected to their jurisdiction. Though the monks conducted themselves with much more circumspection, and propriety than in former times, yet they had veery where departed from the spirit of their founders and the primitive laws of their several institutions.

It is from this period we are to date the division of the monastic orders into two general classes, one of these comprehends the reformed monks, the other the unreformed, by far the most numerous. Among the reformed, a particular attention is due to certain benedictine societies or congregations who surpass the other monastic orders, both in the excellence and utility of their rules and institutions, and in the zeal and perseverance with which they adhere to them. The most eminent of these congregations is that of St. Maur. In it are a select number of persons distinguished by their genius and talents, set apart for the study of sacred and profane literature, more especially of history and antiquity. This learned part of the society is furnished with all the means and materials of knowledge in a rich abundance, and with every thing that can tend to facilitate their labours and render them successful. The republic of letters has derived signal advantages from the establishment of this congregation whose numerous and admirable productions have shed abroad light upon various branches of learning. Their researches grasped in

their comprehensive power the whole of science. The enquiring spirit of the age animated countless minds, and proceeded with philosophy for its guide, by great experimental truths to ameliorate the condition of mankind. The benedictines of whom we speak, still maintain their literary fame, by their publications in the different branches of sacred and profane literature. Their order was founded in 1600, by Gregory the fifteenth, and greatly enriched by the munificence of Urban the eighth. There were, however, still existing some rigid censors, who had in their view the ancient monastic discipline, and who regarded the present reforms as trifling and imperfect. They considered a monk as a person obliged by the sanctity of his professions to spend the whole of his days in prayers, tears, contemplation, and silence, in the perusal of holy books, and in the hardships of manual labour, nay they went so far as to maintain that all other designs and all other occupations, however laudable and excellent in themselves, were entirely foreign from the monastic vocation, and on that account vain and sinful in persons of that order. This severe discipline so unsuited to human frailty, so directly opposed to human duty, so inconsistent with the mild precepts of a gentle, social, and cheerful religion, was adopted by the Jansenists, who reduced it to practice in certain places, and in none with more success and reputation than in the female convent of Port Royal. The example of the Jansenists excited a fanatical emulation in consequence of which, several monastics exerted themselves in the imitation of the austere model. They were all surpassed by De Rancé, abbot of la Trappe, who with ardent zeal and indefatigable perseverance, introduced into his monastery this discipline to its utmost perfection of austerity.

Several new monastic institutions were erected



during this century, among which we may rank those of the Oratory of St. John, to which we have adverted in our illustrative note; also that of the priests of the missions founded by Vincent de Paul and formed into a regular congregation by Urban the eighth in 1632. The rules prescribed by this society, lay its members under three obligations. First, to purify themselves, and daily to aspire to higher degrees of sanctity and perfection, by prayer, meditation, devout books, and other holy exercises. Secondly, to employ eight months in the year in the villages among the peasantry, in order to instruct them in the principles of religion, form them to the practice of piety and virtue, accommodate their differences, and administer consolation and relief to the sick, the sorrowful, and the indigent. Thirdly, to inspect and govern the seminaries in which persons designed for holy orders receive their education, and to instruct the candidates for the ministry, in the sciences which relate to their respective vocations. Who can doubt but that the institution of this order was the work of enlightened and benevolent minds? incalculable benefit has been derived to society by the pious labours of its members. Many a conscience has been roused from its lethargy, many a heart has been softened from its obduracy, many a mind been irradiated with the light of religion by the simple soul searching discourses of these apostles of the poor. With such men were the revolutionary prisons of the nineteenth century filled; proscribed, persecuted, ridiculed, banished, while a temple was erected to reason! The priests of the missions were also entrusted with the direction and government of a female order called "daughters of charity," whose most appropriate office was to administer assistance and relief to indigent persons who were confined to their abodes by sick-

ness or infirmity. This order was founded by a noble lady, noble in the most exalted meaning of the term, as applying to the soul's nobility, called Louisa de Gras, and received in 1660 the approbation of Clement the ninth,

At this period the society of the Jesuits had to withstand attacks from all quarters. The severe Jansenists in particular opposed them. But all hostile efforts failed in overturning that fabric of profound and insidious policy which that mentally gifted order had raised under the protection of the pontiffs, and those princes and nations into whose grace and favour they had insinuated themselves. It seemed indeed as if opposition had strengthened their interest, and added to their influence and prosperity, instead of abasing them. Amidst the storm they preserved themselves buoyant and calm, steered their course with dexterity and prudence, attained the safe harbour, and arose to the very summit of spiritual authority. In the republic of letters, the Jesuits, Benedictines, priests of the oratory, and Jansenists, each had their respective merits. The Jesuits for a long time possessed the undisputed pre-eminence. This suffered some eclipse from the rising lustre of the Benedictines, and it is to the emulative jealousy of these rival orders we owe many of the best editions of the Greek and Latin writers, the discovery of many curious records and documents that illustrate the history of remote times, antiquities of various countries, and other valuable advantages of literature. To the same spirit of emulation may we trace the labours of the priests of the oratory, and the Jansenists who have each enriched the literary world with the fruits of their genius and industry. In taking a retrospective view of the religious system of the Romish church during this century, as referring

to articles of faith, and rules of practice, we are compelled to say, no improvement seems to have taken place. We find the same intellectual disparity between the many and the few; the superiority being made the instrument of delusion, and rendering the inferior easy dupes and victims. In fact, the church far from having emerged from its darkness, had contracted further corruptions, and sunk into greater degeneracy, partly by the negligence of the pontiffs, and partly by the dangerous maxims and influence of the Jesuits. The foundations of morality were sapped by these ecclesiastics; this is acknowledged by the wisest and worthiest of the Catholics, and every one of the communion who has a zeal for the advancement of true Christian knowledge and genuine piety. The very genius of the institution of the Jesuits enabled them to extend and to fix their influence. Unlike the other monastic societies secluded in cloisters to work out their own salvation apart from the cares and pleasures of the world, the Jesuits considered themselves as born for action, chosen soldiers, bound continually to exert themselves for the service of God, and the pope, his vicar upon earth. They are entirely exempted from monastic functions, but are required to attend to all the transactions of the world, on account of the influence they may have on religion and the interests of the Roman see, they are directed to study the dispositions of persons possessing worldly power and influence, to cultivate their friendship, insinuate themselves into their confidence, and thus a spirit of action and intrigue is infused into the very constitution of the order. The jesuits peculiarly gifted with every accomplishment and acquirement which it was in the power of talent to impart; obtained the direction of the education of youth in every Catho-

lic country of Europe. They became the confessors of almost all its monarchs, an office which enabled them generally to direct the movements of the great political machine of states. They were the spiritual guides of almost every person of rank or power, and possessed the highest degree of confidence and interest with the papal court. The advantages derivable from these circumstances are obvious ; they formed the youthful mind, they possessed at different periods the direction of courts. They mingled in all affairs. They took part in every intrigue and revolution. Unhappily for mankind, this vast influence was exerted too frequently with most pernicious effect. The fundamental maxim of the institution which was to regard the interest of the order as the capital object to which every other was to be sacrificed, led them frequently to propagate a system of pliant morality, which authorised almost every action, that the most audacious or crafty politician would wish to perpetrate. As the prosperity of the order was intimately connected with the preservation of papal authority, the Jesuits have of course ever been the most zealous patrons of those doctrines tending to exalt ecclesiastical power on the ruins of civil government. They have contended for the entire independence of ecclesiastics on the civil magistrates. Its members, proud of the distinction which their zeal for the papal power gave them, considered it as their peculiar duty and function to combat the opinions, and to check the progress of the Protestants. For this purpose they have made use of every art, have employed every weapon with which their firm union, unbounded influence, and high intellectual superiority furnished them. They have set themselves in most formidable array against every gentle or tolerating measure in their favour, and have in-

cessantly stirred up against them all the rage of ecclesiastical and civil persecution. It is certain that by these means the Jesuits may justly be deemed as responsible for most of the pernicious effects arising from that corrupt and dangerous casuistry, from those extravagant tenets concerning ecclesiastical power, that intolerant spirit, which have been the disgrace of the church of Rome, and which have brought so many calamities upon civil society. If truth thus obliges us to advert to the pernicious influences of this extraordinary body of men, it equally demands us to admit that in many respects they have merited the praise of society. In science and industry they rank high, and by the improvements they made for facilitating the instruction of youth, they have much contributed towards intellectual improvement. More particularly in the new world were their mental energies displayed for the good of man. There they made the uncivilized of their fellow beings to taste the sweets and the benefits of society, and the blessings of security and order. Respected and beloved almost to adoration, a few Jesuits presided with paternal care over some multitudes of Indians. But even in these meritorious efforts of the order for the good of mankind, their genius and spirit were mingled and displayed by their aiming at an independent power subject to the society alone. At length, the ambition, the innovations and power of this great body long observed and felt, with the pernicious effects upon the political and moral world were so plainly displayed, that its downfall was the consequence. The emperor, Charles the fifth, thought it expedient to check its aspiring progress in his dominions. It was expelled from England by proclamation of James the First, 1604. From Venice, in 1606; from Portugal, 1759; from



France, 1764; Spain and Sicily, in 1767, and totally suppressed and abolished by Clement the fourteenth, 1773.\*

\* This commanding order is now revived. A college is erected in the very centre of England, and in Ireland the order has attained influence: there is a very extensive establishment of them at Castlebrown, in the county of Kildare. In the year 1814, Castlebrown was purchased of Wogan Brown, Esq. by the Jesuits, for a college, at the sum of 16,000*l*. Only four Jesuits then came from Palermo; they were Irishmen, educated abroad: each had a peculiar department assigned him. Mr. Kenny, the principal, subsequently passed over to America, to found an establishment there; he however returned, a Mr. Aylmer being the principal. In 1817 they had two hundred pupils only; but were building additions to accommodate five hundred, besides noviciates to increase the order. In the short space of time since their purchase they had built nearly a little town, at the rear of the college, having their own artisans and tradesmen, all belonging to the order as lay brothers. Many more individuals resorted thither from Italy and from Russia, when the Emperor Alexander banished them from his empire.

The strictest silence is observed by the pupils, who appear not to dare to speak without permission of their tutors: besides the regular pupils there

are a number of paupers, whom they teach gratuitously. Their refectory in the new building is eighty feet in length. The dormitories are admirably constructed; one of them contains one hundred and forty-four beds, placed in squares of sixteen in a square, and built up like pews in a church, so that no pupil can be overlooked. Six of the tutors watch in turns during the night, that not a word may be spoken. The boys have a separate apartment wherein they wash, and in another they dress. In the latter boxes are ranged round, containing brushes, combs, &c. In all the apartments occupied by the pupils there are private closets, from which every thing passing can be seen and heard, without the boys suspecting they are watched. They all answer, not to their names, but their number, and that is increasing every day from the reputation of the college. They know nothing of their own clothes, but when new are required they find them provided, and no inquiry is to be made about them. When the weather is unfavourable they exercise in the cloisters, which surround three sides of the building.

The correspondence of this society is extensive, and they have succeeded in having a post office established at Clare, the nearest village to the college. They do not deny being



During this age great and bitter contests occurred between the Jesuits and Jansenists, which being referred to papal decision, the interest of

Jesuits, and wear the peculiar habit of their order. Their last general was a native of Poland, named Broniski. A few years since there was an election for a new one, when a deputation from Castlebrown went to Rome to attend. Their general, chosen for life by deputies from different societies, possess a supreme and independent power, extending to every person and every case. By his sole authority he nominates or removes every officer of the order: in him is vested the sovereign administration of the funds and revenues, which are large; to his commands every member is required, not only to yield outward obedience, but to resign up his sentiments, will and inclination:—in fact, mere passive instruments to execute his mandates. There is not in the annals of mankind such a complete despotism, and that not executed over a confined body but over men dispersed throughout the whole earth.

Every novice who offers himself as a candidate for entering the order is obliged to manifest his conscience to the superior, and is required to confess, not only his sins and defects, but to discover the inclinations, passions, and bias of his soul, and this must be renewed every six months. Not satisfied by thus penetrating into the recesses of the heart, each mem-

ber is directed to observe vigilantly the words and actions of the novices, they are constituted spies upon their conduct, and are bound to disclose every thing of importance concerning them to the superior, and these reports are faithfully and regularly transmitted to the general, with the most minute details respecting the character of each person, his abilities natural and acquired, his temper, experience in affairs, and the particular department for which he is best calculated. These reports, digested and arranged, are registered, that the general may at one comprehensive view survey the state of the society in every corner of the earth, and be able to choose the instruments which his absolute power can employ in any service for which he sees meet to destine them. It is obvious that this system of profound and artful policy must effect a mighty change in the opinions of those submitted to its action.

This order have an establishment also at Hardwicke-place, Dublin, and the members frequently preach charity sermons in the several papal chapels in the metropolis. There is a branch society connected with them in another part of Kildare to that we have mentioned. They are very reserved in replying to any questions or in-

the Jesuits prevailed. The holy scriptures did not acquire any new degree of public respect and authority under the pontiffs, on the contrary, in proportion to the zeal manifested by the reformers to open the sacred treasure to the world, so were the art and dexterity of the Romanists employed to prevent it, or at least to have the scripture explained in a manner which they were well aware would open the eyes of the people to the undue pretensions of their church, and strike at the foundations of its grandeur and power. About the middle of this century, however, Bedel, bishop of Kilmore,\* set on foot a translation of the Old Testament into the Irish language. The New Testament and the Liturgy had been previously

quiries respecting their society, pretending not to hear, or else evade: on a visitor inquiring at Castlebrown if they were aided by private subscriptions, the reply of the member addressed was, "That door, sir, leads to such an apartment."

Their influence is very great: since they settled in the county all Roman catholic servants are forbidden to attend domestic prayer in the protestant families where they live; and very few are suffered to peruse

\* Kilmore, in the county of Cavan, and province of Ulster, a bishop's see. It was anciently called Clunes or Clunis, viz. "The sequestered place." It is situated near Loch Erne. St. Fedlemid founded this bishopric in the sixth century, but it was afterwards removed to an obscure village called Fribund, where it continued until the year 1454, when

the Scriptures. But the establishment attended with the greatest danger to the protestant interest in Ireland is Clondalkin, where their itinerant emissaries are instructed. The order appears fully aware of the fruitfulness of the soil it wishes to cultivate, as it has offered 13,000*l.* for Furnace, near Naas, and 9000*l.* for another fine mansion near Cork. The junior college also at Rahon, near Tullamore is in a prosperous state.

Andrew Macbrady, Bishop of Fribunna, erected a church on the site of that founded by St. Fedlemid, to whose memory it was dedicated, and denominated Kilmure or Kilmore, viz. "The great Church." At present there is neither cathedral, chapter, nor canons belonging to this see. The small parish church adjoining serving for the purpose of a cathedral.

translated. The bishop employed a person named King, to execute the work. But not understanding the oriental languages, he was obliged to translate it from the English version. The work was received by the bishop, who after having compared the Irish with the English translation, collated it with the Hebrew, the LXX, and the Italian version of Diodati. When this was finished, the bishop would himself have been at the charge of the impression, but his design was arrested upon advice given to the lord lieutenant, and the archbishop of Canterbury, that it would be a disgraceful thing for a nation to publish a Bible translated by such an incompetent person as King. The manuscript, however, went to press in 1685.

We have seen that the churches of England and Ireland had long been like vessels tost on a tempestuous ocean, unable to find anchorage. The opposition of the papists on the one hand, exerting every energy to support the powerful system of priestly domination, which for ages had governed the nations of Europe; and the discontents, the rising hopes, and increasing power of the puritans, we have seen effecting revolutions of opinion and sentiment, which had fearful influence on the happiness and well being of society.

While these controversies were in full action at the beginning of this century, James I. died, the bitter enemy of the puritan doctrine and discipline, in which he had been brought up, the inflexible and ardent patron of the Arminians, to whose ruin and condemnation in Holland he had been singularly instrumental, and the most zealous defender of episcopal government, against which he had more than once expressed himself in the strongest terms. It is asserted, that this facile monarch had formed serious intentions of

embracing the faith of Rome. His unfortunate son had it much at heart, to bring to perfection the designs of his father, firmly to establish the supremacy of the royal power above every authority; the reduction of all the churches of Great Britain and Ireland, under the jurisdiction of bishops, whose government he regarded as of divine appointment, as well as best adapted to guard the privileges and majesty of the throne; and lastly, the suppression of the opinions and institutions peculiar to Calvinism, as tending far too much to the encouragement of civil liberty, and the modelling of the doctrine, discipline, ceremonies, and polity of the Church of England, after the spirit and constitution of the primitive church. To effect his wishes, we have seen he made choice of Laud, Bishop of London, and afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury, an individual possessing a complicated character, of great qualities and great defects. This prelate executed the plans of his royal master with an intemperance that defeated its object, and raised him up as bitter and violent enemies the whole vast host of puritans; for in reviving many religious rites and ceremonies, although they were stamped with the sanction of antiquity, yet were quite unsuited to the spirit of the times, and had been abrogated for their superstition by the reformists.

By these his unpopular acts, and violent proceedings, he drew upon the unhappy king, and upon the episcopal order in general, a violent odium. Hence in 1644, he was brought to the tribunal of the public, declared guilty of high treason, and was condemned to decapitation, which sentence was executed. That he was sacrificed to the vengeance and bigotry of a malignant party, no impartial reader of the history of the period can deny. The error of Laud

seems to have been that of the judgment, and a superficial view of the times in which he lived, which he should have known could not tolerate those innovations which he introduced. The time was past by, when religion had called in the aid of the senses to her interest.

When the doctrines of a mystic creed were enforced through palpable forms, addressed to the affections, powerfully assisting (it must be admitted) to awaken faith through feeling, "for that which is felt it is difficult to doubt, and that which satisfies the senses, is vainly distrusted by the understanding," Laud forgot that the general impulse of the vulgar towards decoration, had for a time at least given place to affected simplicity, abstracted devotion, and enthusiastic visions. It had been the policy of the reformed religion, to carry on her system by a proud and stern rejection of all the meretricious means, by which the old church had effected her scheme of usurpation, and dazzled her votaries. Men usually pass to extremes, and time must elapse before the mutation can be safely meddled with. That period of safety was not reached, when Laud revived a few of the primitive institutions, by presenting to the mind, lost in abstracted and spiritual religion, some exterior observances, which might fix it during its religious exercises, and abate the violence of its ineffectual efforts "to personify the essence which thought could not reach."

After the decease of this venerable prelate, of whom it may be said, that nothing in his life became him better than his death, dissensions increased. The great council of the nation, heated by the inflammatory suggestions of the puritans and independents, abolished episcopacy, and as we have seen, overturned all rights and privileges, concluding their tumultuous drama by becoming

regicides! Such are the calamities flowing from religious zeal, without knowledge, temperance, and liberality; from that bigotry and enthusiasm, which inspires a blind and immoderate attachment to the external unessential parts of religion, and to certain doctrines imperfectly understood!

While Cromwell had the reins of government, sectaries enjoyed much liberty—the episcopalians none; bishops were deprived of their dignities and revenues, and received severe and iniquitous treatment; presbyterians and independents met with peculiar favour, and aimed at a very high ecclesiastical power. “Though transported himself with the most frantic whimsies,” says Hume, “Cromwell had adopted a scheme for regulating the religious principle in others, both sagacious and political.” Resolved to maintain a national church, yet determined neither to admit episcopacy nor presbytery, he established a number of commissioners, under the name of *tryers*, partly laymen, partly ecclesiastics, some presbyterians, some independents. These presented to all livings, which were formerly in the gift of the crown, they examined and admitted such persons as received holy orders, and inspected the lives, doctrines, and behaviour of the clergy. But instead of supporting that union between theology and learning, which had been so long attempted in Europe, these *tryers* embraced the former principle in its full purity, and made it the sole object of their examination.

If Cromwell might be said to adhere to any particular form of religion, the independents could most boast of his favour, the pastors of that sect, who were not passionately addicted to civil liberty, were universally attached to him. He granted unbounded liberty of conscience to all but Catholics and prelatists, and thus attached



the wild sectaries, and employed them in curbing the domineering spirit of the presbyterians; he was wont to say, "I am the only man who has known how to subdue that insolent sect, which can suffer none but itself." Though he retained the Church of England in constraint, he permitted its clergy a little more liberty than the republican parliament had allowed. There is an anecdote related of him and Archbishop Usher, which is relevant to our subject here. Cromwell, at the intercession of Usher, (for whom he had a high respect,) had promised to permit the ministers of the established church the freedom of their mode of divine worship in private congregations. This promise not being fulfilled, Usher waited upon him to claim it. He found Cromwell under the hands of his surgeon, who was dressing a large bile on his breast. Cromwell said to his visitor, "If this core," pointing to the tumour, "were once out, I should be well;" the archbishop mildly replied, "I doubt the core lies deeper, there is a core that lies at the heart, that must be taken out, or else it will not be well." "Ah," replied Cromwell, while he heaved a deep sigh, "there is indeed!" Usher not succeeding in his application, when he returned home, said to his friends, "This false man hath broken his word with me, and refuses to perform what he promised; well, he will have little cause to glory in his wickedness, for he will not continue long; the king will return—I shall not live to see it, but you may."

It was at this period that the quakers propagated their tenets; they made many proselytes, for the affections of men were directed to diversities of faith, and the most extravagant modes were, of course, the most popular; and the hot-headed anabaptists were also unrestrained, in

promulgating their visionary doctrines. In short, a multiplicity of sects arose, all with shades of difference, which excited continual animosities and controversies without end. Every man, as prompted by constitutional warmth, excited by emulation, or supported by habitual hypocrisy, endeavoured to distinguish himself beyond his fellows, and to arrive at a higher degree of saintship and perfection, at a period when the enthusiastic spirit met with such honour and indulgence, and was the immediate road to worldly distinction and preferment. In proportion to its degree of fanaticism, each sect became dangerous; thus it was with the presbyterians and independents, who apparently had been united, but soon betrayed very distinct views and pretensions. The independents rejected *all* ecclesiastical establishments, admitted no spiritual courts, no government among pastors, no magisterial interference in religious affairs, no fixed encouragement to any system of doctrines and opinions. According to their opinions, each congregation contained within itself a separate church, exercising a jurisdiction over its own pastor, and its own members, though destitute of temporal sanctions. Nothing that was deemed requisite in other churches, to confer a right to holy orders, was considered necessary by this sect. The election of the congregation was all-sufficient to bestow the sacerdotal character, and no essential distinction between the clergy and the laity was admitted.

The enthusiasm of the presbyterians led them to reject the authority of prelates, and the restraints of liturgies, to retrench ceremonies, to limit the authority and riches of the priestly office. The fanaticism of the independents exalted a step higher, abolished ecclesiastical government, disdained creeds and systems, neglected all ceremo-

nies, confounded ranks and orders. Individuals of every occupation or station indulging the fervours of zeal, and guided by the illapses of the spirit, resigned themselves to an inward and superior direction, and were consecrated in a manner by an immediate intercourse and communication with heaven. "The Catholics," continues the historian, from whose luminous pages we now quote, "pretending to an infallible guide, justified upon that principle their doctrine and practice of persecution." The presbyterians, imagining that such clear and certain tenets as they themselves adopted, could only be rejected from a criminal and pertinacious obstinacy, gratified to the full their bigoted zeal, by a like doctrine and practice. The independents, from an extreme of the same zeal, were singularly led into the milder principles of toleration. Their mind, set afloat on the wide sea of inspiration, could confine itself within no certain limits, and the same variations in which an enthusiast indulged himself, he was apt, by a natural train of thinking, to permit in others. Of all Christian sects, this was the first which, during its prosperity as well as its adversity, always adopted the principles of toleration, and it is worthy of observation, that so reasonable a doctrine owed its origin not to reasoning, (though so obviously rational,) but to the height of fanaticism and extravagance. Popery and prelacy alone, whose genius seemed to tend towards superstition, were treated by the independents with rigour. The doctrines of fate or destiny were deemed by them essential to all religion. The political creed of the independents kept pace with their religious system: they were decided, stern republicans.

Such was the state of ecclesiastical affairs at the period of our retrospect at which we are

arrived, namely, at the time when Cromwell paid the debt of nature, when the form which had been animated by such an intelligent and daring spirit, became as the clod of the valley. That master spirit had kept these discordant interests in some degree of union. It remains for us to trace the events which followed his final removal from a scene in which he made himself to be feared and courted by all foreign princes; in which he equally displayed unconquerable courage, signal military talent, eminent address, profound policy, consummate artifice, and above all, admirable dexterity in discovering the characters of men, and rendering their abilities or their weaknesses subservient to his own designs. In referring to the ecclesiastical affairs of this century, we must not omit the mention of the protestant missions established, and also that illustrious society, which derives its title from the great object of its institution, namely, the "Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts." Nor ought we to pass over that munificent friend to the same pious object, that is, the service of Christianity, Mr. Robert Boyle, who, to counteract, if possible, the sceptical spirit of his times, in 1691, consecrated a considerable part of his ample fortune, to the foundation of a course of lectures, to be preached successively by a chosen number of eminent divines. Eight discourses were the number fixed for every year, the subjects, the defence of natural and revealed religion. This pious and honourable task has always been committed to men of the most eminent genius and abilities, is still undertaken with zeal, and performed with remarkable dignity and success. The discourses that have been delivered in consequence of this admirable institution have invariably been published, and form a large and important collection, which is

known throughout Europe. It has done eminent service to the cause of religion and virtue, refuting most ably and clearly the sophisms of the infidel writers, who industriously spread their gloomy and demoralising doctrines, at this period of intellectual impulse.

The progressive and flourishing state of the sciences in this century is abundantly known, as we see the effects, and enjoy the fruits of the efforts then made for the advancement of learning. "Philosophy," says an intelligent modern writer, "availed herself of the license of the times, and of the inquiring spirit of the age; she came forth with her great experimental truths, to better the condition of humanity, to lessen its inflictions, to meet its wants, and to diminish the many ills that flesh is heir to. Her object was the happiness of mankind, and her agent knowledge. Obstructed in every step of her progress, condemned as an infidel for expounding the laws of nature, and persecuted for truths for which she deserved to be deified; still she advanced, slowly indeed, but firmly. Moral and physical evil, error, and disease, bigotry, and the plague, receded before her luminous progress. Philosophers, it is true, perished in the dungeons of the Inquisition, or fed the flames of an *auto da fé*—but philosophy survived."

No branch of literature was neglected, all the sciences that belong to the respective provinces of reason, experience, observation, genius, memory, and imagination, were cultivated and improved with remarkable success throughout the Christian world. Bacon, towards the commencement of this century, opened, by his admirable works, the avenues that lead to the fair temple of true philosophy. The march of science was indeed truly astonishing. The stream of knowledge

had hitherto been confined, the flood-gates were now opened, and it rushed forth with impetuous force, dividing itself into many fertilizing courses in its progress. By these scientific inquiries, the empire of superstition was shaken ; by them natural religion was erected upon solid foundations, and illustrated with admirable perspicuity and evidence, as by them the infinite perfections of the supreme being were demonstrated with the utmost clearness and force. The natural philosopher marked creation rising in immensity before him, filled with the energy of the divine presence, and passing upward from the majesty of nature, to the majesty of nature's mighty architect, he finds in the lofty abstraction of his feelings, that there is indeed a spirit in man destined to rise far above human passions and human anxieties. Thus led to contemplate the nature of his own soul, man is drawn insensibly to its worth, its primeval dignity, its sad deviation, and the means of final restoration, hence was true philosophy the hand-maid of revealed religion. The improvements made in the study of history, more especially the ancient history of the church, were also of eminent service to the cause of Christianity. The vivid light of truth, and the calm and cheerful repose that attend it, arose upon the minds of many, delivering the great family of mankind from many of those crimes which had been engendered and fostered by superstition, and had been even sanctified by her barbarous ignorance. Innumerable and inestimable were the advantages which resulted from this spread of historical knowledge. By it, many pious and excellent individuals whom ignorance and malice had branded with the ignominious title of Heretics, were delivered from the reproach, carrying with it so many dangers and afflictions, and were secured from the malignity



of superstition. By it also was made manifest, that many of those religious controversies which had divided nations, separated friends, disunited families, and involved sovereign states so often in bloodshed, rebellion, and crimes of the most horrid kind, were frequently owing to the most trifling and contemptible causes, to the ambiguity of certain theological phrases and terms, to superstition, ignorance, and envy, to spiritual pride and ambition. By this study it was demonstrated with the fullest evidence that many of those religious rites and ceremonies, which had been considered as of divine institution, were derived from the most inglorious sources, being borrowed from the customs of barbarous nations, invented with a design to deceive the ignorant and credulous, or dictated by the senseless enthusiasm of overwrought imaginations. But not to multiply instances in proof of the high importance of the study of history, we shall but say, that by her bright lamp the most important discoveries as to the state of the Christian church have been made, the salutary effects of which we enjoy. Hence flow the lenity and moderation that are mutually exercised by those who differ from each other in religious sentiment; that prudence and caution in estimating opinions and deciding controversies; that protection and support granted to men of worth, when attacked by the malice of bigotry, and that visible diminution of errors, frauds, crimes and cruelties with which superstition formerly embittered human life, and every enjoyment of social intercourse.

The writers of this age distinguished themselves by the study of eloquence, and the languages. The divine rules of morality and practice laid down in the Holy Scriptures, received new illustrations, when that great scheme of law

which results from the system of nature, and the dictates of right reason began to be studied with more diligence, and investigated with more accuracy than had hitherto been the case, while the impiety of those infidel writers who had the moral hardihood and effrontery to maintain that the precepts of the gospel are contrary to the dictates of sound reason, repugnant to the constitution of man's nature, inconsistent with the interests of civil society, adapted to enervate and narrow the mind, and to draw it off from the business, the duties and the enjoyments of life, was ably and perfectly refuted by many eminent writers of the seventeenth century, as we shall abundantly have power to prove when we resume our retrospect nearer to our own times. Those evidences of genius and talent, which painting and sculpture display, alone were deprived of encouragement at this period. The perfection they had attained during the middle ages, was derived from the peculiar genius of the times, when to support and to embellish a powerful hierarchy, the aid of the arts and the products of human genius were brought forward. The splendours of architecture, and the fascinations of painting were early adopted by a church departing rapidly from primitive simplicity and that single reliance on a vicarious sacrifice which formed the basis of the Christian faith. The effect of both upon the imagination through the medium of the senses was powerful. To witness the obscured glory of the lofty painted windows of a cathedral, the awful bend of its arched roof, the loftiness of its noble pillars, the capacity of its niches, and as it were, their interminable length, the high raised altar, and the solemn grandeur which pervaded the whole, struck an awe into the human heart, which prepared it for all the affecting forms of Romish worship. But if the vene-

vable forms of architecture thus excited solemn and devotional feelings, the magic of painting was infinitely superior. It rendered as it were that tangible which could not be expressed, and found its way to the mind and heart with the vividness and the rapidity of lightning. It depicted “says an expressive writer, “the mystery which reason could not explain, it revealed the beatitudes of heaven, and the torments of hell, in imagery which struck upon the dullest apprehensions, and intimidated the hardest consciences. Eyes which shed no tears over the recited sufferings of a Saviour, wept gratefully over the pictured agonies of a self-sacrificed mediator, and knees unused to bend in mental devotion, dropped involuntarily before shrines exhibiting maternal love and blooming innocence, a virgin parent, and an infant God! These awakened religious adoration through the captivating medium of human sympathies.” But with the decline of the Romish power also declined these great actuating engines of human feeling. Towards the close of the sixteenth century, new opinions, new interests arose, and the age of painting passed away with the rise of the reformation; religion then became an inquiring spirit, not affecting to be roused by external influences, and as the human mind is continually hurrying from one extreme to another, the reformers rejected all pictures, and with a sadly Vandal spirit, despoiled the riches of architecture. We have already stated how far this barbarous spirit was carried in the destruction of every thing which embellished the Romish sanctuaries. One instance only of the same superstitious Vandalism we shall give, occurring at the period at which our retrospect is arrived.

Among the votes passed in the English parliament of 1636 it was ordered that all such pictures

there (in the royal collection) as shall have the representation of the second person in the Trinity on them, shall be forthwith burnt, and all such pictures as have representation of the Virgin Mary upon them shall be forthwith burnt. The pictures without any superstition upon them were to be sold for the benefit of *the poor Irish*. In England, before the civil wars, learning and the fine arts were favoured at court, and a refinement of taste pervaded the higher classes, quickly finding its way to the inferior. Charles the first, loved painting, was a judge of the arts, and even in a degree an artist himself. His literary taste was also correct, and music he delighted in. Cromwell himself, though individually rough and unpolished, was not insensible to literary merit in others. Archbishop Usher, notwithstanding his sacerdotal dignity, and his frankness of character, yet received a pension from the protector as an evidence of his respect for his learning. This was not the only instance of his patronage of individuals. He even projected the erection of a college at Durham, for the benefit of the northern counties. Generally speaking, civil wars when founded on the principles of liberty, are found rather favourable to the arts of eloquence and oratory, as by presenting noble and interesting objects to the mind they exalt and invigorate its powers. The various tempers and passions of mankind are then unfolded, and their various operations, both supply subject for the orator, and elicit his own latent faculties, and he is taught by his own ardent and overpowering enthusiasm, the art of convincing the judgment, and influencing the passions of others. But though imagination may thus impart vivacity to judgment, and receives from it both solidity and justness. taste must give elegance to both to render them attractive. Thus,

although the parliamentary orators of the commonwealth, and the period immediately antecedent, were, in regard to force and judgment, greatly superior to those of former times in England, yet the wretched fanaticism which overclouded the parliamentary party, was destructive of all taste and science, and therefore the eloquence though vigorous, was destitute of elegance or harmony. It is, therefore, to the restoration we must undoubtedly look for the period when our language assumed the facility and the clearness, the fluency and grace hitherto unknown in its structure.

## CHAPTER XXII.

*Cromwell's death makes no immediate change in Irish affairs.*

*—Richard Cromwell recognized as his successor—Henry confirmed in the government—He resigns his command on the dismissal of his brother—Government administered by commissioners—Ludlow in command of the forces—The royalists are sanguine—Levity of the commissioners—Lord Broghill engages in the royal cause—Sir Charles Coote attends to the overtures of Lord Broghill—Ludlow recalled to London—Operations of the royalists—Council of officers formed—Charles II. proclaimed—His restoration produces important consequences to Ireland—Premature proceedings—Court of claims erected—Jarring interests—Parliament deemed necessary to settle them—Disorders in the ecclesiastical system—Poverty of benefices—Ormond's advice to the king—It is acted upon—The opposers—Settlement of lands perplexing and arduous—Ormond created lord lieutenant—Parliament assembled—Prelates consecrated—Puritans dissatisfied—Act of settlement—Discontents—Schemes of insurrection formed—Ormond's ability—Secret preparations of the disaffected—Leniency necessary—Bill of settlement discussed—Parliament convened—Act of settlement passed—Difficulties of execution—Public mind disturbed by a violent act of the English parliament—Great distress in consequence—Vigilant conduct of Ormond—Manufactory of woollen cloths established—Encouragement of the linen trade—Great activity of Ormond to improve Ireland—Bishop of Down—Ormond's enemies prevail—He is removed from the government—Lord Berkeley nominated—Ireland the chosen scene for rehearsing the political drama to be acted in England—Anti-remonstrants—Irish council convened—Intrigues of party—Talbot—His indiscreet measures—Restless intrigues of the discontented—Ormond's perplexity—Petitions from the protestants—Berkeley succeeded by Lord Essex—Address to the king on the affairs of Ireland—Difficulties attending the administration of Essex—Ormond's high qualities—Behaviour of the king—Ormond appointed to his former government—Popish*



*Plot—Intrigues of Ormond's enemies—Defeated by his prudence and integrity—He returns to England—Earl of Arran made deputy—Ormond restored—Designs of the Duke of York—Measures taken—Ormond removed—Lord Rochester appointed to succeed—Richard Talbot lieutenant general—Death of Charles—Ormond's recall—Revolution in the prospects of the Irish.*

WE paused in our detail of Irish occurrences, at the eventful period of Cromwell's decease, [1658.] That event made no immediate changes in the state of Irish affairs. The same assurances which had been made to support the protector's power, were renewed by the Irish to his son Richard, when the country recognised him as the successor of his father in his high dignity. Richard confirmed Henry in the government of Ireland, under the title of lord lieutenant. When, however, the cabals in the army, and the faction which they formed for the support of the *good old cause*, resulted in the dismissal of the peaceable and unambitious Richard. The popularity of Henry in Ireland, might have created a revolution in opinion; but having, as he considered it his duty, exerted himself to preserve the tottering power of his brother, and on the restoration of the rump parliament, laboured to prevent the disorders of this sudden revolution, he resigned his command, and retired to England. The parliament resolved that the government of Ireland should be again administered by commissioners, and that Ludlow should be appointed to command the forces of the commonwealth in that kingdom. From the moment of the abdication of Richard Cromwell, the royalists of Ireland naturally entertained the most sanguine hopes of the king's restoration. Many, both of the old English race, and the original Irish, were attached to his inte-

rests. It has been asserted, that Henry Cromwell contemplated to declare for the king, but on the arrival of the commissioners declined it. The severity and jealousy of these commissioners considerably promoted this disposition in favour of the king. Many officers whom they suspected of attachment to his cause were cashiered without trial, or any crime alleged, to diminish the merit of their long and painful services. Lord Broghill, in particular, was both by birth and interest determined on the side of monarchy. The nobility, the gentry, bent their passionate endeavours to effect the restoration, and the dissolution of that tyranny, which, whether considered in a civil or military view, appeared equally oppressive and ruinous to the nation.

Lord Broghill, disgusted at the sudden revolutions of power, the anarchy and confusion of England, and anticipating that they were preparing the popular mind for the restoration, was desirous of engaging in the enterprise; but of a cautious, dark, and deliberate character, he concealed his wishes, while, at the same time, he insidiously engaged his officers, friends, and dependents in his design.

Sir Charles Coote and his father had engaged in the parliamentary service, like many others, from interest, not principle, and had already betrayed a disaffection to the rump parliament, and to the army. The ruin of this party seemed to be approaching, and these wily politicians thought it would be prudent to retire in time, and recommend themselves to the ascending power. Sir Charles instantly embraced the overtures of Lord Broghill, but as is usual with young converts, or those who suddenly change with circumstances, his ardour was so unrestrained and violent, that

the cautious measures of Lord Broghill were in danger of being prematurely developed.

When the rump parliament, so odious to the nation, was dissolved, Ludlow was recalled to London, and a Colonel Jones, one of the judges of the unfortunate Charles, was appointed to command the forces, nor could these republicans conceal their exultation in having, as they believed, reconciled the army to the new government.

Peace and composure seemed established in Ireland, when the royal party suddenly burst from their concealment, and threatened destruction to the republican administration. Several noblemen of weight and influence had adopted the sentiments of Broghill. They made themselves masters of the castle, seized Jones and others, and declared for a free parliament, and finally impeached Ludlow and the commissioners of high treason. In the space of one week most of the garrisons declared for a free parliament, so sudden was the apparent revolution of opinion. But the popular mind had long been in preparation, for a universal fear prevailed of that perpetual servitude so severely felt beneath those sanctified robbers, whose union or whose divisions were equally destructive to the national well-being, and whose fanaticism was as fatal to private morality, as it was inimical to all law and justice.

So favourable was the progress of the royal cause in Ireland, that Charles was earnestly requested to repair thither; but the prudent, cautious, and judicious loyalty of Monk had now so effectually prepared every thing for his glad reception in England, it was judged best to decline going to Ireland, until the result of the English measures should be known. In the meantime a council of officers assumed the government of Ire-

land, and summoned a convention of the estates, independent of England; they declared their detestation of the king's murder, provided for the payment of army arrears, and their future maintenance, and published their declaration for a free parliament. After some opposition from the republicans, which was overcome, the convention and council of officers proceeded to avow their design of restoring the king. One only point remained in dispute, whether they should stipulate for a confirmation of estates to the adventurers and soldiers, or whether they should restore him without previous conditions. At length it was agreed to submit all their interests implicitly to the king. In this debate, the ardour, the sanguine hopes, and daring decision of Sir Charles Coote, was directly opposed to the reserve, the caution, and the frigidity of Lord Broghill, and such was the effect of this discrepancy of sentiment, that it might have proved mischievous, had there been any immediate necessity for action. The only persons who declared against the king, (so entirely had the nation caught the flame of loyalty,) were a few inconsiderable fanatics, and some of the old Irish, with their popish primate. When the declaration of Breda was promulged, it was readily accepted, and Charles was proclaimed in Ireland with every due demonstration of joy. 1660.

The restoration of Charles II. produced important consequences to Ireland, and forcibly demonstrated the fact, that although it be unquestionably the interest of all good government to prevent injustice, it is far from being always possible to remedy it, after it has had a long course, or been attended by great advantages to the agents. But as the events and circumstances which illustrate our position have little to do with

our peculiar subject, we shall give only a very brief and cursory view of them, to preserve connexion; referring our readers to other historians, for a detail purely political.

During a period of nine years, Ireland had been rent by civil wars, and all the direful concomitants of violent and embittered factions, and variations of power and property, according to the fluctuating ascendancy the contending parties enjoyed. Hence at a period when a just authority, peace, and tranquillity were expected, by the restoration of the rightful monarch, the minds of men were naturally drawn to the extremest tension of anxiety respecting those objects interesting to them as men and social beings. The old inhabitants, new adventurers, Catholics, puritans, protestants of every denomination, and every party of Romanists, regarded each other with a degree of jealousy, and even incipient envy, suspicion, and aversion, according as they fancied others to be more likely to derive benefit from the change than themselves. All were impatient to be restored to their possessions, confirmed in their acquisitions, pardoned if they had erred in the conflicts of party, or rewarded for their adherence to that which now ruled the ascendant. But of all these, the Irish Catholics were the most impatient: these had, in 1648, concluded a treaty with Ormond, in which they had stipulated a pardon of past rebellion, and, under certain conditions, engaged to assist the royal cause; and although, as we have seen, the violence of the priests, and the bigotry they encouraged in the people, had in a great measure rendered this treaty nugatory, yet there were many who, even at the hazard of their lives, adhered to it; and on that account, justly deemed themselves entitled to reap the fruits of their loyalty. Cromwell having, without

distinction, expelled all the native Irish from the three provinces of Munster, Leinster, and Ulster, and confined them to Connaught and Clare, many of these, also, were of unquestionable innocence, and, of course, expected that they should be regarded in that light by those, to whose cause they had been faithful, and by which they had been sufferers. Several protestants, also, and even Ormond among them, had invariably opposed the rebellion, yet from having embraced the king's cause against the parliament were all attainted by Cromwell. There were also many officers who from the commencement of the insurrection had served in Ireland, and who because they would not desert the king, had been refused all their arrears by the English Commonwealth. All these sufferers had a strong claim to justice, but how it was to be awarded was the difficulty, without creating commotion and dissatisfaction, and in many instances doing injury to the royal cause.

The Catholics of Connaught exulting in the overthrow of the fanatical power, waited not even for the king being proclaimed, but re-entered their patrimonial lands, expelling the occupiers whom they considered as intruders. Riot and disturbance were the natural consequences of this premature proceeding, and the convention were under the necessity of publishing an ordinance for preserving the peace. To the new settlers these outrages gave much satisfaction as furnishing them with a plea to report the rebellious state of the kingdom, and so successful were they in reporting their unfavourable and aggravated accounts, that the royal act of indemnity was so prepared as to exclude all those who had any hand in plotting and contriving, aiding or abetting the rebellion in Ireland. By which clause the whole Romish party were in effect excluded from its benefits. In the mean-



time the severest ordinances were strictly executed against the Irish Romanists. They were not allowed to pass from one province to another, on their ordinary business, many of them were imprisoned, their letters intercepted, their gentry forbidden to meet, and thus deprived of the opportunity of choosing agents or representing their grievances.

A court of claims was at length erected, consisting altogether of English commissioners who had no connection with any of the parties into which Ireland was divided. Before them were laid four thousand claims of persons craving restitution on account of their innocence. The commissioners had only examined six hundred when it clearly appeared that if all these were to be restored, the funds whence the soldiers and adventurers were to get reprisals would fall short of giving them any tolerable satisfaction. Anxiety and alarm seized all parties. The hopes and fears of all were excited. Some eagerly grasped at recovering their paternal inheritance, some resolute in maintaining their new acquisitions.

An Irish parliament was deemed absolutely necessary to decide upon the jarring interests. The king was urged to call one without delay, he answered that it should be called in due time. Several arrangements were previously to be made in the ecclesiastical and civil affairs of Ireland, both being in a greatly embarrassed and disordered state. The convention had requested that all inappropriate and forfeited tithes and glebes in the king's disposal might be granted to the clergy, and that all escheated lands now exempted from the payment of ecclesiastical dues might hereafter be made liable to the same. Charles, with his usual careless facility, readily condescended to this request, but who the ministers should be who were

to receive these endowments was not so easily settled. Independent of the Scottish preachers in the northern counties, some divines of the presbyterian opinions had recently gained possession of churches in Dublin and the adjacent country, governed themselves by the directory, and preached the covenant zealously. The ecclesiastical benefices of Ireland were indeed at this period too poor to tempt any number of these zealous missionaries from England. But eminently distinguished for moral courage, assiduity, and interest, they had boldly on the king's landing petitioned to have their model of church government established. A petition of the same nature was promoted in the army in Ireland. The divines of the episcopacy were naturally alarmed, and warmly remonstrated against the proceedings. They lost no time in applying for counsel and assistance to the Marquis of Ormond, who proved their powerful and zealous advocate. He represented frankly to the king, that episcopacy and the liturgy were as yet a part of the legal establishment of Ireland, and proposed that instead of trusting to the sense of a new parliament, necessarily in a great measure composed of the adventurers and officers of Cromwell's army, that Charles should immediately fill up the ecclesiastical preferments of the country with men of worth, learning and zeal, of the established church. This advice was entirely approved, and the king immediately filled the four archbishoprics and twelve episcopal sees, with the most eminent of the clergy of Ireland. The consecration of the nominated prelates was however necessarily delayed for a considerable time, in consequence of a new great seal not being prepared to validate the patents. This unavoidable delay created great satisfaction to the opposers of the measures, as they imputed it to the secret reluct-

ance of the king. In every quarter of the kingdom their agents were busily employed, and a petition prepared in which they prayed that his majesty would be graciously pleased to give an order that their godly ministers of the gospel might be continued and protected. All orders and conditions of men were solicited to subscribe this document. The officers of the army had drawn it up, and indeed were its chief promoters. In the ardour of their zeal they had incautiously betrayed their secret aversion to monarchy, as in the petition were inserted many expressions reflecting on the existing government.

But however the passions and prejudices of men were at this time engaged by modes of church government, and religious worship, the temporal interests respecting the lands and possessions of Ireland occupied far more the thoughts and the efforts of the inhabitants. Some settlement was imperiously demanded both by justice and policy, but the variety of pretensions, as well as the unreasonable expectations of the parties and individuals, rendered this an arduous and perplexing task. So various were the claimants, and so clashing the interests, that it seemed next to impossible that they should be satisfied and reconciled. The Duke of Ormond was created Lord Lieutenant as being the only person whose long experienced equity, ability, prudence and intelligence, could give hope of reconciling those jarring interests. A parliament was assembled at Dublin, but as the lower house was almost entirely chosen by the soldiers and adventurers who still kept possession of their lands, it was extremely favourable to that interest. In the house of peers a greater impartiality was shewn. In the meantime, the consecration of the prelates took place, with all due solemnity. This appeared a solemn revival

of the ecclesiastical establishment, and as it was performed with much sacerdotal pomp, it seemed like a triumph over the puritanic party who had hoped for the extinction of prelacy, and who, having laboured assiduously to effect some diminution at least of the ecclesiastical revenues, regarded the circumstance with much dissatisfaction. However the king and his ministers might be actuated by a spirit of justice and equity in regard to the settlement of Irish claims, it was impossible to meet the expectations of all parties. The act of settlement could not be so accurately devised as to guard even against every reasonable objection and exception, a clause was therefore inserted in it, empowering the lord lieutenant and council to modify its enactments according to pressing circumstances. To the soldiers and adventurers a degree of partiality was shewn, nor was it without considerable repining that the loyal officers who had served before the year 1649, or as they were then styled *forty-nine men*, beheld what they deemed an unseasonable indulgence to fanatics and republicans. Several grants were made to the prejudice of their security, and one in particular, which provided that the debts due for furnishing the army should be paid out of this security. So great were the discontents originating in these claims, that the more violent declared for maintaining their possessions by the sword. Such a spirit was quickly caught by the combustible materials of Irish population, and readily spread. The desperate parties in England sent agents to try the dispositions of their numerous partizans in Ireland, now irritated at the apprehension of losing their estates, and found them ready for any factious purpose. A number of Cromwell's officers were easily encouraged to form a scheme of general insurrection, and a committee

was actually formed in order to conduct it, one of which discovered the conspiracy to Ormond. Some of them had devised a separate scheme to seize the castle of Dublin, but this was also defeated.

Subsequent to this the commons addressed the lord lieutenant declaring their abhorrence of the fanatic plot, and representing the danger of the kingdom arising from recusants, and the vast confluence of popish priests, friars, and jesuits; strongly recommending bills for enforcing the oaths of supremacy, and banishing all popish ecclesiastics from the kingdom. Thus things appeared to be reverting to their former anarchy, but the vigilance and prudence of Ormond enabled him to steer his course through the turbulent fluctuations of parties. His discovery of the plot had put an end to any more general insurrection, but meetings were still held, correspondences maintained throughout the kingdom, arms and ammunition prepared, and numbers of the disbanded soldiers engaged ready for any desperate enterprize. Many lawyers, some presbyterian ministers, Blood, who was afterwards so distinguished in English history, some members of the Irish commons, and several republican officers embarked in this design. Declarations were even printed in readiness for dispersion, entreating and encouraging all good protestants to unite in securing the English interest, by averting the dangers threatened to the three kingdoms by the countenance given to popery, confirming the English subjects of Ireland in the estates they had purchased by their services, and for establishing religion agreeably to the solemn league and covenant. Either the discretion of these conspirators was not equal to their zeal, or the vigilance of Ormond was unslumbering, so that intimations of their purpose and proceedings became known to him. The utmost circumspection was necessary



on his part, for although the populace were generally well disposed to the present government, the army was far from being so. A weak government rendered it necessary to proceed with lenity against delinquents engaged in a popular cause, therefore of about five and twenty conspirators who were seized, a few only were condemned, the rest received the royal pardon.

The state of property was still unsettled; the king referred the whole affair to Ormond and his council, directing that they should frame a new bill if possible more congenial to all parties. They proceeded cautiously in an affair so difficult, wherein they were to consider not only what was demanded on the principles of strict justice, but what also might be practicable and attainable in the present circumstances of the kingdom. To provide for what individuals might expect, was under those existing circumstances impossible, but they must study the general welfare, and render the benefits as equitably and as extensively as possible. The purport of their bill was to explain some objectionable clauses in the declaration, to assign better security to the forty-nine officers, and other enactments equally just. It soon however became obvious that no settlement ever could be effected, unless the several claimants would relax in their pretensions. Almost ten months were employed in hearing and answering petitions, examining claims, and considering provisos to be inserted in the new bill. All parties at length, wearied with their unsettled condition, and harassed with the expenses and anxieties of examination, and the difficulties of proof, seemed willing to abate somewhat of their pretensions, in order to obtain some result. The soldiers and adventurers agreed to relinquish a third of their possessions, and as they had purchased their lands at



very low prices, they were certainly not injured by their composition. All those who had been attainted on account of their adherence to the king were restored, also some of the innocent Irish.

It was, however, a cruel and hard situation for a man to be obliged to prove himself innocent, in order to recover possession of the estate which he and his ancestors had ever enjoyed. This hardship was augmented by the difficulty of the conditions annexed to this proof. For instance, if the individual had ever lived in the quarters of the rebels he was not admitted to plead his innocence, as he was for that reason alone supposed to be a rebel. The injustice of this exception was pleaded by the sufferers, as very many, perfectly well affected to the crown, and altogether averse to the rebellion, had lived peaceably in their own habitations, lying within the quarters of the rebels, who, out of reverence to their character, favour of their religion, or other local attachments, had suffered them to remain unmolested, though they declined assisting or concurring in hostilities. They pleaded, that they were not allowed to seek refuge in the capital, and inveighed against the cruelty of depriving men of their just property, for having resided in the only places where they were permitted by government, and in a time of war and commotion for accepting mercy from those they had no power to resist. These pleas were done away, by many equally plausible reasons, which concluded by the declaration, that a strict adherence to the clause was of absolute necessity, to prevent multitudes of dangerous and disaffected papists from recovering their power, embarrassing the king's government, and in all probability renewing the commotions which had convulsed the realm, with all its train

of tremendous consequences. These arguments acquired the greater force, from the inveterate aversion and prejudices of the new race of English settlers against the Catholics. Deeply imbued with a puritanic spirit, they regarded with an abhorrence they sought not to conceal, what they termed their idolatrous and antichristian worship. They urged, as a matter of duty, and as necessary to the public peace, to crush these enemies of God and man, justifying their zeal by exaggerated accounts of their murders, massacres, and barbarities. They contended for what they termed an English interest in Ireland, while both their principles, and their mercenary and ambitious passions served to extend their aversion to all the ancient inhabitants, even of the protestant faith. For this aversion, they pleaded in excuse, that the objects of it, however free from the pollutions of popery, were not sufficiently opposed to prelacy. However constantly and bravely they might have fought against popish insurgents, yet they had done equally so against republicans. In fact it was evident that these *discontents* sought to erect their own power and prosperity upon the ruin of others.

The meeting of the parliament was anxiously desired. It was convened; and though difficulties rose upon every side, Ormond conducted the whole affair disinterestedly, honourably, and conciliating. In the debates of the commons, their doubts and objections were freely proposed and considered, collected and submitted to the lord lieutenant, in the form of a petition. On his part, he exhorted them not to dwell too scrupulously on niceties, at a time when their enemies were on the alert to take advantage of every disunion. He encouraged them to hope for satisfactory results from the power vested in himself and

council, to explain difficulties, and to amend or supply any defects in the act. His answer was voted satisfactory; and without one dissenting voice, they passed the act which fixed the general rights of the several interests of Ireland.

But this was but the beginning of the great and important work of settlement; the difficult part was yet to come in the execution of the act, and the application of the rule to particular cases. For this purpose five commissioners were appointed, who, in the occurrence of difficult cases, were to resort to the lord lieutenant and council. An infinite number of perplexed cases, produced perpetual applications to the state, and for a series of years gave continual employment to the intelligence and prudence of the Duke of Ormond, in providing for the impartial execution of the act, defeating the restless attempts of those who laboured to evade it, and other unwarrantable intrigues.

The state had scarcely begun to attain some composure, when the public mind was greatly disturbed by a violent act, passed by the English parliament, prohibiting the importation of Irish cattle into England; and notwithstanding the remonstrances of Ormond, the expressed opposition of the king, with a spirit of jealousy and tyranny with which the English state seemed to regard that of Ireland, this law, so injurious to the interests of the latter, was passed. It brought, as might well be anticipated, great distress for some time upon the Irish, but ultimately, perhaps, proved beneficial, as it induced them to apply themselves more steadily to manufactures.

During the distresses and discontents of the Irish, on this deprivation of a lucrative trade, the conduct of Ormond was wary, vigilant, and diligent. He well knew there was a faction ever on

the alert, to avail themselves of popular discontent. He watched the proceedings of the popish party, and the futile attempts of the most turbulent of their clergy, to engage the French in a descent upon Ireland. He also assiduously endeavoured to discover the correspondence of the fanatics with those of England and Scotland. He had his agents in all quarters, from whom he every day received information, upon which he acted with prudence, caution, and magnanimity, at once providing measures for security, and avoiding all provocation of the discontented. While engaged in these indefatigable cares to ensure the political quiet of the nation, Ormond was no less attentive to the grand duty of a legislator, that of encouraging, by his noble spirit, the industry of the people subjected to his delegated power. That comprehensive and noble spirit led him to encourage individuals of knowledge and ability in commerce, to suggest schemes for the promotion of industry. A manufactory of woollen cloths was established at Clonmell. (In this place Cromwell had destroyed the castle and fortifications.) The duke procured five hundred Walloon protestant families to remove from Canterbury to this place, to carry on the works. Another manufactory nearly similar was also established at Carrick. His exertions in favour of the linen trade were yet more important and extensive. Thus did Ormond incessantly labour to promote the prosperity and happiness of the nation.

It is upon such cares, upon such exercise of the mind's energies, that we dwell with pleasure, as they occur to us in the records of history, as conferring upon the agents more real and intrinsic greatness, than actions less peaceable, but more splendid and imposing. Ormond also, with that activity and intelligence which so admirably fitted

him for his high and most difficult station, was eminently active to cultivate and encourage knowledge and learning in Ireland, as he was well aware, that by that alone it was possible to expel the superstition which had so long enslaved the people, so that civility and refinement should take the place of the rudeness which weighed down Ireland from rising into national consequence. On his return to Ireland, after the restoration of Charles, he found the university in the utmost disorder, the natural result of the fearful national troubles and confusions that had occurred.

The Bishop of Down, Dr. Jeremiah Taylor, was entrusted by the duke with the regulation of this important seminary, as he justly deemed it an imperative duty of his high station to inspect the discipline, encourage the studies, and promote the interests of the members of this learned institution, and he made choice of an able instrument to effect his intentions.

This eminent divine was the son of a hair-dresser at Cambridge. At the age of thirteen, he was admitted of Caius College, where he continued, until he had taken a master of arts' degree. He subsequently took orders, supplying for a time the divinity lecturer's place in St. Paul's Cathedral, where his distinguished merit introduced him to Laud, who determined to give him better opportunities of study and improvement, for which purpose he caused him to be elected fellow of All Souls, Oxford. After this period he became one of the archbishop's chaplains, then chaplain in ordinary to the king, and in his army. During these several periods, he laid the foundation of several of his works. Upon the decline of the king's cause, he retired into Wales, under the protection of the Earl of Carberry; here he officiated as a minister, and employed his great

talents in the instruction of children, for the maintenance of himself and family. In this retirement he also wrote and published many works. Thus were several years passed in the discharge of the most useful duties, and literary labour. Domestic calamities, and the bereavement of three sons in the short space of so many months, however, rendered the scene too painful; and he accordingly quitted it for the more busy one of the metropolis, where he, at great hazard, officiated in a private congregation of loyalists.

From this exercise of his clerical function he was removed by Lord Conway, whom he attended to Ireland. On the restoration he returned to England, and soon after being nominated to the bishopric of Down and Connor, he was consecrated to that see in January 1661-2; and June following, the see of Dromore was granted to him. On being made bishop, he was appointed privy councillor, and was also made vice-chancellor of the university.

He died in consequence of a fever, at Lisnegarvy, August 1667, and was interred in a chapel of his own erecting, on the ruins of the old cathedral of Dromore.

Dr. Rust, his intimate friend and successor in the see of Dromore, has given us his moral portraiture, which, making every allowance for the partiality of friendship, seems as perfectly faithful as it is pleasing, as it is universally admitted, that Dr. Taylor possessed the acutest penetration and sagacity, a rich and lively imagination, a solid judgment, and profound learning, was perfectly versed in Greek and Latin literature, and well acquainted with the writers of later ages, whether French or Italian. "His knowledge was great, both in civil and canon law, in casuistical divinity, in the fathers, and in ecclesiastical writers,



ancient and modern. With all this intellectual strength, were united those qualities which adorned and directed it—the deepest humility, the most fervent piety. It is believed,” says his friendly biographer, “that he spent the greatest part of his time in heaven, in his intercourse with his Creator, in solemn prayer.” The same delineator adds, “he had the good-humour of a gentleman, the eloquence of an orator, the fancy of a poet, the acuteness of a schoolman, the profoundness of a philosopher, the wisdom of a chancellor, the sagacity of a prophet, the reason of an angel, and the piety of a saint. He had devotion enough for a cloister, learning enough for an university, and had his endowments been parcelled out among his clergy that he left behind him, it would, perhaps, have made one of the best dioceses in the world.” His writings were very numerous, and we believe all on religious subjects. They greatly tended to improve the style, as well as the morals of the nation. The richness of his imagination is displayed by the felicity of his expressions. His compositions have been often printed, and much read, but have too much passed into that neglect, which awaits the highest efforts of human virtue and genius.

But as the highest merit, and the purest integrity too generally expose the individual to the sharpest arrows of calumny, and the insidious attacks of envy, the enemies of Ormond sought to lessen his consequence, and counteract his intentions, by endeavouring to persuade the king to appoint some Englishmen to Irish bishoprics, without the concurrence and recommendation of the duke. The sentiments expressed by him upon this occurrence, are worthy of record, as indicating his care of Irish interests, and their moral and intellectual improvement. “It is fit

to be remembered," he observes, "that near this city (Dublin) there is an university, of the foundation of Queen Elizabeth, principally intended for the education and advantage of the natives of this kingdom, which hath produced men very eminent for learning and piety, and those of this nation. And such there are now in this church; so that while there are so, the passing them by is not only in some measure a violation of the original intention and institution, but a great discouragement to the natives, from making themselves capable and fit for preferments in the church, whereunto, (if they have equal parts,) they are better able to do service than strangers, their knowledge of the country, and their relations in it, giving them the advantage. The promotion too of fitting persons already dignified or beneficed, will make room for, and consequently encourage young men, students in this university; which room will be lost, and the inferior clergy much disheartened, if upon the vacancy of bishoprics, persons unknown to the kingdom and university shall be sent to fill them, and to be less useful there to the church and kingdom, than those who are better acquainted with both."

While the duke was thus employing his delegated power in Ireland to the noblest purposes, his enemies in England were intriguing to deprive him of his appointment. The same reasons which had rendered his friend, Lord Clarendon, the victim of party spirit, urged that restless party to intrigue against the virtuous Ormond. By the most unwarrantable means they collected grounds for an impeachment, as they well knew that the popularity and esteem which the duke enjoyed, would defeat every other means of his removal from power. The king expressed indignation at

these attempts against the duke, and even if he felt no gratitude for his services, he was not quite divested of consideration for a servant so distinguished in his attachment. But the intrigues of the cabal were too insidious and too mighty for the weak sense of gratitude and affection felt by Charles for any one, and Ormond's enemies finally prevailed. He was removed from a station he had filled with so much honour, a short period, during which the government was committed to Lord Robarts, who was equally despised in Ireland, and useless to his faction in England.

John Lord Berkeley of Stratton was nominated his successor 1670. The administration of this nobleman opened, as might be expected, from the party which favoured him, a new and alarming scene in Ireland. Nominated to his high station by the influence of the popish party, who knew that while Ormond continued governor they must not expect indulgence, or gain credit with the king, Lord Berkeley was deemed altogether suited to their views; he was devoted to the interest of the artful Buckingham, and a person equally devoted to the wily courtier accompanied Lord Berkeley to his government, as his secretary. This Sir Ellis Leighton was to be a spy upon the conduct of Berkeley, and to keep him firm to the purposes of the English government. In fact, each was to serve as a check upon the other. The design of erecting arbitrary power upon the basis of popery was already formed, and though deeply concealed, and cautiously developed in England, they fatally concurred with the inclinations and prejudices of the king, his desire of authority, his propensity to Catholicism, and his want of money. The deep counsels of this faction, though apprehended, and productive of much

anxiety to true patriots, were so artfully carried on, that they were not thoroughly known but by the event.

Thus it was in England; but the dependent state of Ireland appears ever to have been the theatre chosen to rehearse any scene of the political drama, which might possibly create too great sensation in the development in England. Hence it was deemed neither indiscreet nor dangerous to make the first experiment in Ireland, the authors of it being entirely forgetful of, or different to the principles and passions of the English inhabitants. Some of the most powerful partisans of the popish interests followed Lord Berkeley into Ireland. The bias of the new governor and his adherents was soon manifest, by various circumstances, more particularly by the countenance which, contrary to his public instructions, he showed to those called *anti-remonstrants*, of whom it is necessary to give a cursory account.

The measure of obedience due by papists to the civil power, was a question continually agitated even from the days of Elizabeth. Necessarily involved in this enquiry was the nature as well as the extent of the papal power, and on both these momentous points, the casuists of their communion were by no means agreed. Several professed civil obedience to the queen, and hence in her wars individuals of the Catholic religion were distinguished for their services to the crown. To James the most unreserved submission was given to his supreme temporal authority. In the disorders of the following reign, the question was revived, and we have seen the presumption and the inveteracy it occasioned in Rinuccini, and his bigoted adherents. On the restoration of Charles, some of the Irish prelates and clergy, mortified at the expulsion of their party from their

ancient inheritances, and dreading further severities, commissioned a Franciscan friar to present an address to the king, congratulating him on his accession to the throne of his ancestors, and imploring the benefits of the peace made with Ormond in 1648. The friar well knew that peace had been violated by numbers of his brethren, and therefore deemed it necessary to obviate the objection against tolerating the Romish religion, from its inconsistency with the security of a protestant government. For this purpose he drew up what he called the *Remonstrance* of the Roman Catholic clergy in Ireland. In this document they acknowledged the king to be supreme and rightful sovereign of the realm of Ireland, that they were bound to obey him in all civil and temporal affairs, notwithstanding any power and pretension of the pope or see of Rome. They openly disclaimed "all foreign power, papal or princely, spiritual or temporal, inasmuch as it may seem able, or shall pretend to free them from this obligation, or permit them to offer any violence to his majesty's person or government." They enlarged upon these principles in the document which, thus framed so as to satisfy the most scrupulous, was presented to the Duke of Ormond. He objected that it was not signed by the clergy, but offered solely on the authority of Walsh, their procurator. One Irish bishop, and about twenty-three of their clergy immediately subscribed it; some few declined doing so. Circular letters were then addressed to the Irish prelates, in their several dioceses, inviting them to concur in an address, which was soon subscribed by an additional number of clergy, and also by a respectable collection of lay lords and gentlemen.

It will readily be supposed that a declaration against the temporal authority of the pope was by



no means agreeable or acceptable to the court of Rome. The holy father however did not think it prudent to interpose his direct authority, but the internuncio of Brussels, upon whom the ecclesiastical affairs of Ireland devolved, and also Cardinal Barberini, were both employed to censure the remonstrance in the name of the pope, as containing propositions already condemned by the apostolic see; the former declared with violence that it would do more injury to the church than any persecution hitherto suffered from heretics. In consequence a powerful party was soon formed against the remonstrance, by those who would not openly acknowledge the authority or influence of these censures. Some, particularly the Jesuits, with the true spirit of their order, proposed a new form of address, which was fraught with equivocation, evasion, and art. Many were the altercations and opinions which divided the actors in these remonstrances or declarations. These were not altogether disagreeable to the state, as it was considered that they would probably engross the attention of the Romish clergy, and prevent their restless spirits from engaging in any practices inimical to the quiet of government. Some of them had expressed a desire that the remonstrance should be debated in a national synod. At this period the king was engaged in a war with France and Holland, and a descent on Ireland was expected. It was therefore thought by Ormond at such a juncture (who knew the discontented Irish were intriguing with France), that it might prevent any secret conspiracies if the Irish council were permitted to convene, expressly for the purpose of declaring their fidelity to the king. The duke therefore allowed them to assemble; the agents of Rome used every effort to prevent it, but after some



vigorous opposition the assembly was appointed to be held at Dublin. The whole proceedings were intemperate and tumultuous. Their assembly broke up without any decision; the members violently inflamed against each other divided into two contending parties, those who supported and those who opposed the remonstrance. To this latter party, the remonstrance not having been adopted was by no means considered as a sufficient triumph: their uncomplying spirit rejected every thing which in the smallest degree approximated to modification. Indeed it is the great character of party spirit to annihilate, if possible, every thing which does not coalesce with itself, one prevailing idea absorbing every other which connects man with man. It has no feeling, no remorse, but considering its object superior to every thing, it thinks no sacrifice too mighty to obtain it; hence it was that the party opposing the remonstrance thought it quite justifiable that those who had framed and supported it should be persecuted and suppressed. Thus was the bitterness of animosity infused into the catholic party within themselves.

Such were the existing circumstances of the party on the arrival of Lord Berkeley, when to put the violent measures of the opposing individuals into effect, provincial councils and diocesan synods were convened. The pope, who named the bishops and commanded the preferments of regulars, found no difficulty in forming his party. The remonstrants were every where dispossessed of their cures and stations. Walsh and his associates were denounced, excommunicated, and left absolutely without the means of subsistence; but by submitting to their persecutors, or exiling themselves, where they were in danger of being burnt as heretics for denying the temporal power of the pope. The anti-remonstrants on their part

had gained a powerful partisan in Peter Talbot, created by the pope archbishop of Dublin, for the decided purpose of chastising the presumptuous opposers of his temporal authority. The new archbishop by frequenting the English court had acquired a passion for political intrigue. He had there enjoyed high favour, was considered of great consequence by the popish clergy, a reverence and servility so pleasing to him that in order to exalt it he had the confidence publicly to declare, that the king had appointed him to superintend their whole order in Ireland. He had the audacity to appear before the council at Dublin in the habit of his order and station, and Berkeley instead of remonstrating against this infringement of the laws, dismissed him unmolested, though he refused to join in any recognition of loyalty. But an incident trifling in itself made a deeper impression on the protestant party than things apparently of more moment.

Talbot proposed to celebrate a mass in Dublin with extraordinary splendour. On this occasion he publicly applied to Sir Ellis Leighton to borrow some plate and drapery which made part of the furniture of the castle. The secretary complied, and in his compliment to Talbot is said to have expressed a wish that high mass might soon be celebrated at Christ church. The insolence of these presuming prelates, conscious of being upheld by a powerful party, was severely felt by the poor remonstrants; they naturally sought relief from the head of the government, and justice and policy equally dictated that it should be granted to them. Secretly instructed, however, or basely intimidated by fear of Talbot, the governor refused to interpose his authority for their protection. Thus Talbot and his colleagues proceeded with impunity in the exercise of a foreign jurisdiction,

and in his severities against those who presumed to maintain the odious doctrine of allegiance. These indulgences to the Roman ecclesiastical jurisdiction were by no means the only favour shown to Irish catholics. Their spirit was too encroaching to rest, while any privileges remained unenjoyed by them: many civil and political were granted to them. Protestants were astonished and alarmed; they possessed their imaginations with new plots and massacres. Crosses were discovered over all the doors of papists, a mark of distinction which it was said intended to secure the inhabitants from slaughter on the day of execution. These fears, perhaps, were not unnatural, but the circumstance of the crosses is a proof how easily the most common occurrence is connected with the principle when it gains possession of the mind, and how much it increases its force.

The crosses which were interpreted as ensigns of murder and massacre were nothing more than those crosses of straw which the vulgar Irish in their childish superstition affix to the front of their habitations on the festival called Corpus Christi. They were intended to secure the inhabitants not from massacre but witchcraft and evil spirits. At this time it was industriously whispered, and the popish party encouraged by every means the rumour, that Charles in his exile had promised the French king to restore the Irish to their estates, and the full freedom of their religion. These rumours were countenanced by the attempts made by Talbot to infringe the acts of settlement. Indeed it daily became more evident that it was the aim of the popish party to effect the abolition of those laws, although they for the present affected moderation. In their private memorials to the king and the duke they represented the rebellion of forty-one but as the act of a

few driven to arms by fear and oppression, that the insurgents had submitted, and adhered to the subsequent peace and to the late king's service; they acquiesced in the declaration of his present majesty and desired only a compensation in money from the king's new revenues. At the same time they magnified their power and consequence in Ireland and their attachment to the crown, desired to be restored to their habitations and freedom in corporate towns, to magistracies, and military command; that the army should be formed gradually of catholics, and the courts of law with catholic judges, they even went so far as to hint the propriety of catholic prelates being admitted into parliament. Ormond was one of the committee appointed to consider a petition to this effect, sent by a number of lords and gentlemen to the king and parliament. The duke could not but feel alarm at the bold and dangerous design of overturning the whole settlement of Ireland. He was aware some errors had been committed and individual grievances sustained, but he also knew these could not be redressed by casting the kingdom into general confusion. He urged that the petitioners might not be heard, nor their counsel admitted to object against the acts. This he could not obtain, he therefore fully answered all the allegations, and the attorney-general reported unfavourably against the petitioners. But the cabal were not thus to be counteracted; another committee, from which Ormond was excluded, was empowered to revise "all papers and orders for the settlement of Ireland," &c. Their report was erroneous; a third commission was issued, and many months wasted in the search of materials to form another report. During these transactions Ireland was a scene of alarm, petitions from every party of protestants were trans-

mitted to England, all agreeing in the maintenance of the present settlement. Even in England the people were not indifferent to Irish affairs. Terrified by every indulgence granted to popery—suspicious of the king—certain of the duke's disposition, they complained and murmured. The ministry took the alarm, and feared they had been too precipitate in the development of their designs, they hypocritically affected to condemn the conduct of Lord Berkeley, and to cover their real intentions removed him from his station, appointing the Earl of Essex in his place. But the English parliament were not satisfied with this measure alone; they presented an address to the king on the affairs of Ireland, and among many requisitions it contained, was that all popish prelates and others exercising ecclesiastical jurisdiction, by the pope's authority, particularly Peter Talbot, pretended Archbishop of Dublin, should be commanded to depart from Ireland; that all convents and seminaries should be dissolved, and all secular priests banished: that Colonel Richard Talbot, assuming the title of agent of the Roman catholics of Ireland, should be dismissed from all command and forbidden access to his majesty's court; and lastly, that the chief governors of Ireland should be ordered and directed to encourage the English planters and protestant interest, and to suppress the disorders of the Irish papists.

These representations were too forcible and important to be altogether treated with indifference; the king declared his resolution to maintain the act of settlement; the obnoxious proceedings in the corporation of Dublin were reversed and ejected protestants restored. But in the settlement of these affairs much turbulence occurred, to suppress which the Earl of Essex discovered more of timid and cold caution than the firm and manly



spirit of a vigorous governor. Embarrassments and difficulties indeed, seemed to accompany his whole administration, particularly in executing the acts of settlement in a country which he emphatically styled "rent and torn," that he could compare its distractions to nothing better than flinging the reward upon the death of a deer among a pack of hounds, when every one pulls and tears what he can for himself.

It is irrelevant to our subject to detail the series of occurrences and intrigues which exposed the Duke of Ormond to the envy of his enemies, and the busy faction which even put his life in danger; the unmanly conduct of Charles towards him, and his final political acknowledgment of his merit, his past services, and resolution to call them again into action by reinstating him in the government of Ireland. Throughout the whole we trace in Ormond the noble and dauntless integrity of a true patriot and upright statesman, moderate in prosperity, patient in adversity, conciliating in opposition, dignified under insult, firm in principle, and dutiful in submission.

After an elapse of a year, during which period Charles had never deigned to speak to this meritorious servant, although he appeared daily at court, the capricious monarch sent the duke a message that he would sup with him. Nothing political passed during the visit, which was pleasing and cheerful, but on parting Charles signified his intention of again employing him in Ireland. The next morning on seeing Ormond approach to pay his usual duty, Charles said, "Here comes Ormond: I have done all I can to disoblige him, and to make him as discontented as others, but he will be loyal in spite of me. I must even employ him again, and he is the fittest person to govern Ireland." In this manner did the witty Charles



pay a just compliment to the invariable integrity of Ormond, and assign to him its reward. From this period the appointment of the duke was decided, and it only remained to give intimation to the Earl of Essex of his removal. Various motives were assigned by the several parties for this appointment of the duke, but it is pretty certain that political reasons, not a sense of pure gratitude, urged Charles to this apparent act of justice and favour. It is believed that Charles wished to appoint Monmouth to the lord lieutenancy of Ireland, but that York fearing his rival should by this station get too great a taste for power, and increase his already great popularity, exerted himself with the king in favour of Ormond, and succeeded as we have related. Be this as it may, the first cares of Ormond's administration were respecting the army, which he found in much disorder, as were the revenues. To remedy abuses an Irish parliament was deemed necessary, in order to provide for the honour and security of the kingdom. Ormond was fully engaged in the various and pressing duties of his renewed high station, when intelligence reached him of the popish plot, and that it extended to Ireland; that Peter Talbot was engaged in it, and that persons were hired to assassinate the lord lieutenant. In the terror and alarm created by this official account from England, amidst the clamours of the vulgar, the violent and the designing, Ormond proceeded with his characteristic temper, steadiness, and vigour. He disarmed the papists, settled the militia, secured the garrisons, and kept the army untainted. Peter Talbot, who was lingering under a painful and dangerous illness, meanwhile removed to the castle to silence all murmurs, and where the supposed conspirator received every attention which his declining state required, nothing having been dis-

covered among his papers to implicate him in the smallest degree. But such is the virulence of party, and its readiness to think ill of those who accord not in opinion, that an administration conducted with temper, by which the protestants were secured from false alarms of danger, without relaxation of that care and vigilance which the circumstances of the time required, and without irritating the popish party by severity or oppression, was yet unsatisfactory to many protestants in Ireland. Various methods were adverted to, to urge the Duke to more violent measures by alarming his fears, and expressing dissatisfaction with his conduct. Complaints against him, however unreasonable or absurd, were eagerly received and greatly exaggerated in England by the prevailing party. The press, then noted for its licentiousness, the virulence of private slander, the prejudices of the narrow minded, the credulity of the vulgar, the art of popular leaders, were all in conspiracy to load the Duke of Ormond with inclining to popery, and that because he had not carried fire and sword against the catholics, merely because they might do mischief and were *suspected of being suspicious*. It was on such insinuations of Shaftesbury against Ormond in the House of Lords, that the amiable Earl of Ossory uttered that energetic indirect eulogium on his noble father, which should have covered his calumniator with confusion.

Shaftesbury, anxious to remove Ormond from his government, was delighted at any thing like an insurrection there, which gave him opportunity to depreciate the conduct of the governor. The king, however, declared he was resolved he never should be removed, nor would he concur in any changes proposed by the artful Shaftesbury. The intriguing party hence found they must proceed cautiously and indirectly. They endeavoured to

produce the rebellion they professed to dread, by resolving to procure orders for the council of Ireland to transmit severe bills against catholic recusants. Should they refuse, they must be removed; should they obey, the Irish might be driven to rebellion. Not content with this intrigue the most nefarious means were resorted to, in order to make it believed that a plot was formed in Ireland by the catholics. Through the whole melancholy progress of perjury and subornation which marked this political manœuvre, the Duke of Ormond acted with his usual dignity, firmness, and caution, and every dishonourable means made use of to discredit him in the popular favour and in the confidence of the king, were defeated by his prudence and integrity. He stood the attacks of his virulent enemies unmoved, and when all apprehensions of Irish plot were allayed, and those accused were clearly acquitted, the minds of the people were relieved from a terrible state of excitement. The composed state of national affairs enabled Ormond to commit the sword of state to the Earl of Arran as deputy, and to obey the call of the king to repair to England.

The arbitrary measures at this period adopted by Charles were so inconsistent with the usual tenour of his conduct, that it has been with some justice asserted they were in consequence of the influence which the Duke of York had obtained over his indolent and facile temper. It was therefore not surprising that he should wish for the countenance of such a devoted servant as Ormond. The Duke, however, was by no means in possession of the full confidence of either the king or York, for it was impossible that a character so just and upright could have approved or sanctioned the councils and purposes which engaged Charles and his too bigoted brother. After two years residence

in England he returned to his government, not being able to prevail on the king to comply with his wishes of calling an Irish parliament, and on his return he soon found designs were formed to which it was impossible he could give his concurrence.

The Duke of York incessantly urged the king to secure the popularity which he had regained since the affair of the Rye-house Plot, by raising an army devoted to his service. For this purpose he directed his attention to Ireland, a country which, he said, if properly managed, would with implicit devotion conform to his wishes. Here he besought the king to look for such a military establishment as might give respect and stability to his government. But it was not the present army of Ireland for which the Duke so peremptorily engaged, this he regarded as an assemblage of factious fanatical republicans, comprehended indeed under the general name of protestants, but totally unreconciled to the existing doctrines of absolute submission and obedience, the descendants of those who resisted his royal father, nurtured in the same principles, and ready for the same crimes.

It was upon another and a far different party he entreated and advised his royal brother to rest his reliance, that of the powerful body of catholics, who, notwithstanding all their grievances, were unalterably attached to the crown, and the presumptive heir, and whose principles and interest must devote them entirely to his service, whose zeal would be enlivened by being restored to favour and consequence, and relieved from the oppression of sectaries and rebels. Charles, with that careless compli  nce which his indolence created, hastily adopted a scheme which required the most mature consideration and deliberate reflection.

But he was well aware it could not be put in

practice under the government of Ormond, being a design totally repugnant to his well known principles. An individual was indeed already fixed upon. Ormond had scarcely, as he expressed it, "felt his head settled from the agitation of the sea," when he received private intimation of his removal, which was soon followed by a letter from the king couched in the most flattering terms, but expressive of his obligation of removing him from the government, as almost general alterations were to be made in Ireland. In order to break the possible mortification this removal might occasion, Lord Rochester, connected by marriage with Ormond, was appointed to succeed him, but with power so limited that it was scarcely more than nominal. He was not to interfere in military affairs, or to name the lowest commissioned officer in the army. That whole province was to be assigned to a lieutenant general, and Richard Talbot, the well known and violent patron of the catholic party, was to be invested with this important station and authority. Nothing could tend more to reconcile Ormond to his removal from a station to which he was naturally, and from the most laudable feeling, strongly attached, than to find he was not to be charged with forming a popish party, in the effecting of which he anticipated manifold evils to the country, which seemed unhappily destined to be the continual scene of violent party animosities, rendered yet more bitter by being mingled with religious controversies, and opinions so discordant.

Rochester discovered some reluctance to assuming the government assigned him with such limitations, this and the fluctuating state of mind betrayed by Charles a short time previous to his decease, suspended Irish affairs for awhile. The hopes of the protestants revived, those of the Ro-

manists sunk in proportion when the death of Charles followed by the immediate recall of Ormond, again produced a total revolution in the prospects, and gave fresh excitement to the passions of the several parties, opening a new scene in Ireland, and once more plunging it into the horrors of anarchy, subjecting the unhappy protestants to the inveterate passions of their hereditary enemies, stimulated by every motive which a thirst for power, a greediness of property, or the bigotry of religion could inspire.



## CHAPTER XXIII.

*Charles and James different in character, but united in opinion—Causes of the latter—Catholics of Ireland animated with high expectations on the accession of James—Anecdote—Lords justices—Chancellor Boyle and Earl of Granard—Protestants disarmed—Triumph of the papists—Talbot created Earl of Tyrconnel—Lord Clarendon made lord lieutenant—Boyle deprived of the seals—Protestants displaced for Catholics—Plans of James gradually developed—Tyrconnel returns invested with great power—His violence—Army new modelled—Tyrconnel intrigues in England to impugn the act of settlement—Tyrconnel supersedes Clarendon in the government—Character of Tyrconnel—Protestants emigrate—Arbitrary proceedings of Tyrconnel—Mandate to the University—Tyrconnel seizes the University plate—Second mandate of the king—Tyrconnel stops the pension of the University—James's insincerity—Popish party contend between themselves—Birth of a prince—Unbounded joy of Irish Catholics—General state of national feeling—Arrival of the Prince of Orange in England creates a great sensation in Ireland—Alarming informations—Panic of the people—Protestant associations formed—James's expedition to Ireland—Resolution of the people of Londonderry—Violence of Tyrconnel—Premature measures of the Protestants—James's entry into Dublin—Proceedings of the king—George Walker—Siege of Londonderry—Ill success of the king's troops—He assembles a parliament at Dublin—Proceedings and acts of it—Unjust proscription—Unpopular measures—Arbitrary attempts against the University—Noble conduct of a popish ecclesiastic—Wretched state of the Protestant clergy—Violences of the Romish clergy—Protestants remonstrate—Severe restrictions of the Protestants—Causes of discontent and disorder—A force sent under Schomberg—His proceedings—Apathy of James's troops—Siege of Carrickfergus—Distress of Schomberg's army—Elation of the king's troops—Make some movements indicating an attack of Schomberg's camp—but retreat—Distresses of Schomberg's army increase—Triumph of the enemy—Effects of religious zeal—*

*Armies retire to winter quarters—William determines to prosecute the Irish war in person—Protestants animated with hope—Their activity—Want of judgment in James's measures—Proceedings of both armies—Departure of James—Disadvantages attending William.*

ALTHOUGH the characters of Charles and his brother stood directly opposed, yet on two points their opinions entirely coincided, the desire of arbitrary power and a constant effort to obtain it, and an attachment to Catholicism. These opinions which occasioned a continual struggle between the crown and the people, privilege and prerogative being ever at variance, were the fatal result of the circumstances attending the eventful lives of these princes, and which in fact might be said to have taken place from their birth, or rather the union which produced it. The unhappy consequences of a marriage between two persons of different religious principles was never more strikingly exemplified than in the marriage of Charles the first with Henrietta of France; Charles himself frequently could bear witness to this truth, which he emphatically stiled his "greatest temporal infelicity," but the consequences were more strongly displayed in their offspring. Henrietta like every good Catholic, believed herself bound to obey her spiritual director, rather than her husband. If the interests of her religion could be advanced, all other duties were to be disregarded, all other ties cheerfully severed. It was this zeal so strictly enjoined by the Romish church, which induced the widowed Henrietta to endeavour to draw her children from that religion in which their father had died a martyr, and though the conduct of Charles, when he discovered she was seducing the amiable Gloucester, proved that at that time his own mind was unperverted, yet his subse-

quent conduct proved the unhappy consequences of having been brought up in a family divided in this great essential point. A difference of this kind can never be concealed from the children when they become capable of observation. Even if the evil extended no further, this should be considered as no light misfortune to the infant mind. To lose the important advantages of maternal instruction in this most momentous of all concerns, that earliest and natural instruction which is so congenial to the human heart, and of all others strikes the deepest root, cannot but be attended with lamentable consequences. But the unhappy royal family suffered more than this. The very principle of their belief was unsettled, that difference between the faith of their parents, if it at first excited only curiosity, unconsciously led to indifference or doubt, and this consequence would have been inevitable even if the queen under a sense of obedience to her husband had refrained from those indirect means of influencing her children, from which no Catholic mother who truly believes the tenets of her own church, will, or indeed ought to refrain. The dying prayer of the unfortunate Charles for the righteousness of the nation, and for the religion and honour of his sons was alas to appearance vain. Both had been corrupted, and that corruption was both a consequence and a punishment of the national crimes. Even the personal vices, and the political errors of Charles the second and his successor, were in no small degree the result of the unhappy circumstances into which they were plunged by the rebellion. How different might have been their conduct had they grown up in peace at their father's court, even though the temptations to which their rank exposed them, had counteracted the influence of his

beautiful moral example. There they would at least have been educated in old English feelings, and in an English taste, with that expansion of mind which readily grants to every station its due prerogative, in order to form the harmonious whole of a community. Had they grown up in a court which could boast of much refinement, they would not have been so detached as they were from that patriot interest, which should ever live in the breasts of princes. Amongst the irreparable evils which the civil war brought in its train, certainly not amongst the least must be ranked the exile of the royal family, who by it had their taste vitiated, their religious principles shaken or corrupted, and their manners divested of that propriety and purity which is the distinguishing praise of the British court.\*

Thus have we endeavoured to trace to its origin that union of religious principle between the royal brothers which one concealed under an apparent indifference to all modes, and the other after having long secretly cherished, at length openly avowed. Fourteen years had elapsed since Charles and his brother had first betrayed their wish and purpose of establishing a catholic interest in Ireland, as deeming the experiment there less hazardous. The spirited remonstrances of the English parliament however, obliged them to suspend the attempt, but it was very far from being abandoned. When the royal authority appeared uncontrouled, it was renewed by Charles with that inconsiderate acceptance so usual to him, of any measures which seemed likely to secure his ascendancy, and by James with the bigoted and passionate zeal of a true Romanist. When James by the unexpected death of his

\* See Quarterly Review, No. 57. article, Burnet's History.

brother found himself invested with sovereignty, he mistook the acclamations of a triumphant faction, for the universal joy of all his subjects, and upon this false presumption he very soon proceeded to measures which laid the foundation of his ruin. Notwithstanding he had declared he would preserve the laws inviolably, he openly and formally avowed his religion, publicly practising all its ceremonies in direct opposition to those laws. But it was in Ireland more particularly that the mask was thrown off, and that James seemed to regard himself fully at liberty to proceed according to the ardour of his zeal, and the violence of his desire of arbitrary power. As he had long avowed his religious sentiments, on his accession to the throne the Catholics of Ireland were animated by high expectations, and fondly anticipated every advantage likely to flow from a monarch of their own persuasion. Ormond was of course removed from his administration, and that with an impatience which proved how deeply rooted were the prejudices of the party against him. The age and infirmities of the duke were however plausibly assigned as the reasons of his removal, and Ormond suffered the excuse to stand. An anecdote is related of him which displays his equanimity under the reverse of fortune. During his administration, a stately hospital had been erected for the reception of old soldiers,\*

\* The Royal Hospital of Kilmainham for the support of the invalids of the Irish army, was founded by Charles the second, on a plan similar to that of Chelsea in England. The building was completed in 1683, and cost upwards of 23,500*l*. It is situated to

the west of Dublin, on an ascent near the south side of the river, and is approached through an avenue of fine trees. The edifice is of quadrangular form, enclosing a spacious area handsomely laid out with grass and gravel. An arcade is carried along the lower story in

before his departure he invited the military officers to an entertainment at this noble institution. On its conclusion, filling his glass to the very brim, he addressed his guests, "See gentlemen!—they say at court I am old and doating, but my hand is steady, nor doth my heart fail, and I hope to convince some of them of their mistake. This to the king's health!" Ormond had been directed to commit the sword of state to the hands of two lords justices. The persons chosen had proved their fidelity. One was the primate and chancellor, Boyle, and the other, the Earl of Granard, both protestants. Such, however, were the fears of the protestant party on the removal of Ormond, and the manifest joy of the catholic party, that they regarded every circumstance with doubt and suspicion. Even the lords justices were suspected of not being true to the church. The primate was considered as having a bias to popery, and Lord Granard as a sectary advanced, in order to divide the protestant interest. But although thus the objects of ill grounded fear and suspicion, the lords justices, whatever might be their political or religious disparity concurred most amicably in support of the general interests of protestants, and of the public tranquillity. Still the insolence of the papists was so manifested, and the animosities of both parties so troublesome that Lord Granard intimated his wish to retire from his high responsibility. But James would not admit this resignation, and in order to reconcile him to remain, assured Lord Granard that nothing should be done prejudicial to the protestant interest in Ireland. A promise which it will be seen

each square to the entrance of the hall and chapel, which are both handsomely decorated.

In the former are several portraits of royal and other distinguished personages.



James made use of his favourite dispensing power to free himself from, when he found it convenient. During the subsequent rebellion of Monmouth, the Catholics of Ireland momentarily expected, and flattered themselves that the puritans at least would endeavour to raise an insurrection in his favour, and it was even insidiously whispered, that Lord Granard was to share the fortunes of the popular duke. Their disappointment however was extreme, no commotion was attempted, no disloyalty appeared, but a resolution to support the reigning prince was universally expressed.

But still the virulent and designing of the popish party affected to believe there was latent danger. Tales were framed, informations taken, and even night meetings were said to be held by protestants to organize a conspiracy. These malignant and odious calumnies were circulated by designing men, of whom there were at this period so many, in order to give to their party the merit of being persecuted for their faith, and more especially to justify the severities which were meditated against the protestants. These designs were soon put in execution after the suppression of Monmouth's rebellion, when James experienced that natural triumph of heart so inherent in man, in having discomfited an individual whom he dreaded and hated. In England his measures were sufficiently arbitrary, but in Ireland they were unreserved, and Monmouth's rebellion was made the justifying plea. A letter to the lords justices informed them that as that rebellion had been extensively diffused it was necessary for the safety of Ireland to disarm the protestants, who composed the militia of the kingdom, embodied, armed, and disciplined by Ormond. The consternation which this order created was greatly augmented by the intemperate triumph of papists. Commotions were ap-

prehended, but by the prudence of the lords justices, the orders of government were obeyed without disturbance. This act however, was but the commencement of deep laid and long meditated designs which were gradually and cautiously to be unfolded. A new chief governor was necessary to effect them. For this purpose, Talbot, the avowed patron of the Irish, was created Earl of Tyrconnel. His boundless ardour for the Catholic cause, added to the natural fire of his temper, and contracted his heart to that one object, while the blindness of his prejudices urged him precipitately on the course which his bigotry suggested. Thus constituted, he was a fit instrument to effect the purposes of James, and alas! to plunge unhappy Ireland into troubles she was but too well acquainted with. Scarcely had Monmouth's rebellion been suppressed, when the Irish Catholic bishops appeared to anticipate the wishes of the king by petitioning that he would be pleased to establish the Earl of Tyrconnel in such authority in Ireland as might secure to them the exercise of their functions. But the time was not yet arrived, when James considered a compliance with this petition proper. For the present, therefore, he appointed his brother-in-law, Lord Clarendon, lord lieutenant of Ireland. The near affinity of Clarendon, and his professed loyalty and submission induced James to believe that he would second his designs, they were therefore in part disclosed to him. In his public instructions the king intimated his desire to grant some legal and official indulgences to the Catholics, while he condescended to assurances towards the protestants, calculated to dissipate suspicions and allay apprehensions. The new lord lieutenant was instructed to declare that no thought of changing the act of settlement was entertained.

When Lord Clarendon received the sword of state, he expressed his satisfaction at assuming an administration in such perfect peace and tranquillity. This was either common place official language, or he was deceived, for in reality the public mind was in a high degree of fermentation. The disarming of the militia had encouraged the lawless banditti called tories, to issue from their mountain and woodland haunts. The English were defenceless, the Irish would not resist, Clarendon found it necessary to restore some arms to those most exposed to these ravagers, but he was too dilatory in his measures to effect much good. But robbery was the least evil the protestants had to endure; assured of encouragement from their employers, a number of base informers laboured to involve individuals in the guilt of treason, the lord lieutenant saw through the falsehood and malice of these innovations of party spirit, or private revenge, yet he could not venture firmly to discourage them on account of the jealousy of his sovereign against the protestants of Ireland. Of course the Catholics were fully aware of this prejudice, and failed not to improve it to their advantage. For this end they took measures to subvert the acts of settlement by sending agents to apply direct to the throne. Their petition if granted to its extent, must inevitably have resulted in the subversion of all establishment of property. Tyrconnel had repaired to England, on the arrival of Lord Clarendon in Ireland, and his representations seconding the petition, were received with perfect confidence by James, so readily does the judgment bend to the will of the selfish. It was very soon evident that Tyrconnel was favoured with the unbounded confidence of James in Irish affairs, and that violent and offensive measures were by no means displeasing to

the cabinet. The primate Boyle, not having been found sufficiently servile to the dominant power, was abruptly deprived of the seals of Ireland, and one more submissive, appointed chancellor. Protestants were removed from other places of trust and honour, and Catholics, not of unstained purity of character, were nominated to the vacated situations; Clarendon boldly represented that this introduction of Catholics, who had not taken the oath of supremacy, was contrary to law. The language of sincerity was not however pleasing to James when it opposed his bigotry. The English protestants very naturally took alarm at such changes and appointments, and many were urged to abandon a country which seemed fast verging to a Catholic state, and where a confusion of property rendered all precarious.

The Catholics seemed anxious to augment the terror of the opposite party, by incessantly dwelling upon the royal designs of intended alterations in their favour, and extraordinary changes in ecclesiastical affairs. The archbishopric of Cashel was vacant, and the popish clergy availing themselves of the king's unwillingness to fill it up, reported that he had written to the pope to nominate the prelate. Whether or no, this was grounded in fact, or the mere suggestion of vanity, it is certain that the revenue of this, and other vacant sees were reserved for the maintenance of popish bishops. The plans of James were gradually developed, orders were soon issued by his command, that the Catholic clergy should not be interrupted in the exercise of their functions, and these orders were very soon succeeded by a notification of his pleasure, that the prelates should appear publicly in the vestments of their order: with the same arrogance of power which urged him to violate the law, and insti-

tute the court of ecclesiastical commission in England, James now issued his command to the protestant clergy of Ireland, prohibiting them from treating of controversial points in the pulpit. The most scrupulous vigilance was given to detect any one offending in this point, and whoever presumed in the remotest and most indirect way to reflect on popery, was immediately delated to the king, and marked out as disaffected and seditious.

To increase the terror and the gloom which these measures caused to the protestants, Tyrconnel returned vested with augmented power, and with elated zeal in the cause in which his sentiments were so congenial to those of his royal master. As he was now empowered to command and regulate the army quite independent of the lord lieutenant, he proceeded with all his characteristic violence to the fulfilment of his commissions. Officers and privates were alike dismissed from the army, which was completely new modelled. No plausible cause was even assigned, but an indiscriminate change was made, frequently rendered more mortifying by abuse, and contumely, or distressing by injustice and cruelty. The places of these individuals, hated and removed only because they were protestants, were supplied by Catholics, the worst and meanest of whom even were appointed. In all preferments those Irish were the most readily admitted, who entertained the highest notions of papal authority. And so extreme was the ignorance of the vulgar that when they had taken the oath of fidelity, they imagined they had sworn fidelity to the pope and their religion, and declared that their priests had forbidden them from taking any other oath ! Tyrconnel, in his fiery zeal, certainly exceeded the commands of James, which implied that all

his subjects should indiscriminately be admitted to serve him without regard to religious principles, but the lieutenant general issued strict orders that none but Catholics should be admitted into the army. Clarendon firmly remonstrated, and Tyrconnel was for a moment daunted so far as nearly to deny his own orders, which had been both peremptory and explicit. So much indeed did his evident partiality encourage the Catholics, that the more tumultuous of them openly boasted that in a few months there would not remain a protestant in the army, and that now they had the power of arms, they should speedily regain their lands. Many of the popish clergy even forbade the people to pay tythes to protestant incumbents. Clarendon remonstrated and applied to the king and his ministry respecting these extravagancies, but the power of habitual submission was strongly exemplified in his conduct, for while he represented the violence and presumption of Tyrconnel, he declared his readiness to execute the king's purposes whatever they might be, though in a manner less offensive and alarming. Nothing satisfactory resulted from his application, but on the contrary, James now refused to repeat his former assurances of maintaining the acts of settlement by a proclamation. Tyrconnel was left at liberty therefore to proceed in his violent course. His intrigues and attention were not confined to the army, which having more than half filled with Catholics, he hastened to England to endeavour to persuade the king to rescind the acts of settlement. Some of the counsellors however retaining a strong affection for what was deemed the English interest in Ireland, represented the danger of the measure in so strong a view, that it had some effect on the king. Tyrconnel in order to second his views, had engaged



an acute and artful lawyer, and on the king's cold reception of the proposal, the popish party resolved to employ the abilities of this man to impugn the act of settlement. He accordingly wrote a treatise on the injustice of the act. It was in the form of a letter from Coventry, and known at the time as the "Coventry Letter." In the meantime it was found convenient to find fault with Clarendon's administration. He was not found an instrument entirely suited to the political designs of the court faction. The appointment of a successor occupied the deep deliberations of the cabinet, at length, Sunderland the minister, flattered the manifest partialities of his sovereign, by recommending Tyrconnel. The rapacity of the minister was gratified by his appointment, for Tyrconnel had stipulated to pay him an annual pension from the profits of the Irish government! He assumed the power under the title of lord deputy. As this nobleman forms a conspicuous figure in the subsequent scenes, we shall have to describe, we shall give a sketch of his character, the fidelity of the portrait being substantiated by his actions. It is in the contending interests of the world that the soul of man is completely developed.

He was a native of Ireland, and descended from the race of the old English of the pale, and was born at the period when that race were in union with the original Irish. Hence he was nurtured in their political prejudices, was early initiated in their intrigues, and led from the ardour of his temperament to concur in their insurrections. From earliest infancy his sentiments of religion and politics were imbibed from the most bigoted to popery, and the most hostile to English government. In early youth he had narrowly escaped from the infernal scene of carnage at

Drogheda. That scene so strongly impressed his imagination, that he ever after associated in his mind the abhorrent ideas of fanaticism and protestantism, and to wage war against what he thus identified became the deep and determined purpose of his soul. Vivacity of manners, and a certain pliant obsequiousness, ever found flattering to those accustomed from their rank to homage, recommended him to Charles and his brother on the continent, at a period when his wit and buoyancy of spirit were particularly acceptable. He seems to have possessed much of that impetuosity of passion, and uncertainty of action which so remarkably distinguishes his countrymen, for in his menaces he discovered more the sudden ebullitions of over wrought passion, than resolution of performance. Yet that general placability which marks spirits of quick susceptibilities and resentments, seems not to have formed a part of his character. On the contrary, revenge once admitted in his bosom, he steadily and unalterably pursued its cruel dictates. However genuine might have been his zeal for the honour and extension of his religion during early youth, it degenerated into an unmixed spirit of faction, for his life was profligate, his conversation profane, and his moral sense so obtuse, that his disregard to truth was ever proverbial. Naturally vain, insolent and arbitrary, as he acquired power, these unamiable traits of character, unchecked by any sense of religion were continually displayed by insults, cruelty, and brutality. And if at any time self interest induced him to condescend to insinuation or artifice, this violence against nature was quickly betrayed, for the smallest disappointment threw him into frightful paroxysms of rage. What can be expected from a man unchecked in his worldly career, by one principle of

religion or moral obligation? "Who believes no providence, adores no creator, and fears no judge?" Hence, that every step of Tyrconnel's exaltation was gained by servility, flattery, and bribery, and enjoyed without temper, justice, or propriety, can be no subject of wonder to those who have studied the human heart. To this infidel in principle, and tyrant in practice, Lord Clarendon resigned the sword of state, which committed the destinies of a nation to his keeping. The agitation of the kingdom was general and violent. On Clarendon's departure he was attended by fifteen hundred protestant families of Dublin, who abandoned a country where every thing that was dear and valuable to them was exposed to the violence and malignity of a triumphant party, and where all power was vested in popish ministers and officers of state. It was in courts thus supplied with Catholics, whose notorious ill characters were redeemed by their religious zeal and their servility to the dominant power, that the validity of outlawries and forfeitures of the titles of protestants, and the claims of papists were to be determined! The army almost entirely formed of Catholics were of course at the devotion of government. A number of the protestant officers who had been deprived of commissions which they had purchased, and were in consequence driven from the kingdom, sought refuge in Holland, and prepared the way for that great revolution to which the bigotry and impolicy of James was precipitating his people.

The innovations of Tyrconnel on the civil bodies were as peremptory and as decided in favour of his party as the remodelling the army. The corporations were filled with Catholics, by the most arbitrary and unjustifiable means. From the invasions made by James on the learned seminaries

in England, it was naturally to be expected that the university of Dublin would not escape his vigilance. It had ever been an object of jealousy and envy to those who wished to make the nation papal, and ere the removal of Lord Clarendon the king's intentions were disclosed by a mandate presented to the governors of the university, directing them to admit an individual named Green a Catholic, to a professorship, with its emoluments and salary. This professorship was artfully styled in the king's letter, that of the Irish language, the ignorance of his advisers and even his own was betrayed, as no such establishment had yet been made in the university. Green was thus disappointed in his expected honour and emoluments. But the incident led the members to expect some innovations, for which indeed the arbitrary measures of the king respecting both Cambridge and Oxford prepared them. They largely shared in the general consternation of the protestants on the appointment of Tyrconnel, and with the timidity of men who were unacquainted with the tumults and collisions of the world, they resolved to convert most of their plate into money for the purpose of strengthening their body, by the erection of new buildings and the purchase of new lands. Having obtained the permission of their visitors, Clarendon was solicited to take the charge of the plate to England, as to a superior market.

Informed of this simple transaction, Tyrconnel determined to possess himself of the prize; he caused the plate to be seized in the port of Dublin, and deposited it in the king's stores. The more moderate of his adherents, however, ashamed of an act so tyrannical, succeeded, with much difficulty, in prevailing upon him to restore the plate to the university. This plate was subse-

quently sold, and the fury of Tyrconnel revived, the purchaser was accused of buying stolen goods, the property of the king, and obliged to give security to prosecute the governors of the university. The attorney-general, however, being in high favour with the fiery lord deputy, by the authority of his opinion defended the university from any further outrage respecting the affair. The terror, however, it had excited in the minds of the quiet collegians, a terror which at this period we cannot sufficiently and duly estimate, had scarcely subsided, when a second mandate from the king directed that a person of the name of Doyle should be admitted to a fellowship, and that without taking any oaths but that of a fellow. It appeared as if James were resolved to try the patience and the principles of the members of his universities, by the persons he required to be admitted of their bodies. This individual, Doyle, was profligate and ignorant, but he was lately become a convert to popery, and this merit was deemed worthy of reward. Once more, however, the ignorance of patrons defeated the purposes of party, and the hopes of the convert. The oath of a fellow included in it that of supremacy, this Doyle refused to take. The vexation of Tyrconnel was displayed in a manner consistent with his narrowness of mind, and meanness of revenge. He stopped the pension annually paid to the university from the exchequer, and which in fact, at this period, constituted the larger portion of their resources. In the meantime, the public calamities increased under a government, oppressive and arbitrary in every view; and such was the senseless bigotry and blind prejudice of the popish ministers, that they apprehended not that in a state it was impossible that one portion could suffer without

affecting the whole. In oppressing the protestants, they forgot the ruin of the catholics must follow. The English ministers, whose views not wholly confined to the establishment of popery, were rather more extended and comprehensive, were alarmed at the defalcation in the Irish revenues, and attributing it to the true cause, they urged the king to appoint a more temperate and efficient governor. Tyrconnel, informed of the prejudices against him, obtained permission to quit Ireland for a while, and to attend the king, then on his progress to Chester. The chief baron of the exchequer, who attended him, so plausibly represented the state of things in Ireland, as favourable to the administration of his patron, that James thought himself justified in remitting Tyrconnel to his government. So difficult is it officially to arrive at the truth. Several addresses were sent from Ireland to Chester, and James proved his insincerity in answering that from the university, which having declared that while they retained their religion, they should not depart from their loyalty, he, in his reply, assured them, that he had no doubt of the loyalty of any of the Church of England; yet Tyrconnel was commanded on his return to dismiss all the protestant officers in the army.

As the popish party had none to contend with, they entered into disputes amongst themselves. The detail is too trifling to enter upon; we shall merely say, that the ruin of the lord deputy was the object, and the instigation a private pique; and that the popish primate drew up the accusation against him, and the Earl of Castlemain was humbly recommended to the king, as worthy to be entrusted with the government, and qualified to effect the king's purposes there. The pope is said to have united in recommending Castlemain,



but the French ministers laboured to counteract him.

Tyrconnel was informed by them of these secret designs, and resolved, if possible, to circumvent them, by some evidence of zeal and abilities. He proposed to convene an Irish parliament, from which he had nothing to fear, as the sheriffs were Catholics; and every thing so modelled to his wishes, that it must prove entirely at the devotion of government. But his scheme proved entirely abortive. The mortification of the Irish Catholics on this point was soon allayed by the birth of a prince. 1688. Before they had any knowledge of the queen's pregnancy, they had disposed of the succession according to their own wishes; they had declared that Fitz-James, natural son to the king, should be legitimized by the pope, and become inheritor of the crown. Their joy however on this occasion was unbounded, and a ludicrous instance of it is given in the popish lord mayor of Dublin, who committed the officers of Christ Church, Dublin to durance, because "their bells did not ring merrily enough" on this auspicious occasion.\*

Nothing could exceed the gloom of Ireland at this period; the people appeared to have reached the maximum of suffering, that state of hopeless despondency, which so often precedes a grand moral convulsion. The materials for this fearful reaction of the moral and political energies of the nation, had gradually increased in strength and magnitude, till they produced an explosion whose

\* Christ Church, or the Holy Trinity, built in 1038, by Durat, Bishop of Dublin, to whom Litricus, son of Amlave, King of the Ostmen in Dublin, granted the scite for that pur-

pose, stands on a rising ground, at the extremity of Wine Tavern Street. It is a venerable Gothic pile, and its appearance evinces its antiquity.

operation was unattended with devastation, but important and glorious in its effects.

So prudently had the enterprise of the Prince of Orange been conducted, that it was yet unknown altogether to the king, when Tyrconnel received intelligence of it, and conveyed it to the English court. It was received with incredulity, but the truth soon became known, and Tyrconnel was directed to transport four thousand men into England. Every day new reports transpired, and in Ireland created the greatest sensation. The Catholics still affected to despise the attempt of the prince, exclaiming that the states were weary of him, and had therefore sent him on a desperate expedition, to end his days on a scaffold, like the Duke of Monmouth. But the party sunk into a depression proportionate to the exultation of their pride in success, when they found that William had actually landed at Torbay, been favourably received, that James had been deserted by his indignant subjects, and that the cause of the prince every day advanced. The state of affairs became deplorable; new commissions were issued by the lord deputy for levying forces; they were granted to all who would accept them, without even paying the fees of office. The popish clergy enjoined their people to take arms in such a time of danger to their cause. In every quarter of the kingdom arose an armed rabble, styling themselves the king's soldiers, unpaid and unrestrained, and supporting themselves by lawless depredations. It was in vain that the English inhabitants endeavoured to defend themselves against these marauders, and the whole country seemed reverting to barbarism and lawless anarchy, as if it had never known the blessing of security and order, and was totally insensible of every tie of social or civil life. Thus does the

spirit of party erase from the soul every feeling and principle which gives dignity to man, and which elevates his moral being. The feelings of social sympathy are sacrificed at the altar of opinion. In fact, the "spirit of party is a fatality from which few whom it once seizes are strong enough to escape." The public mind was in this state of distraction, when a letter, without signature, was addressed to Lord Mount Alexander, in the county of Down, warning him that a general massacre was contemplated by the Irish; the style was vulgar, but the intimation was full, confident, and circumstantial, pointing out the very day and time when the design was to be executed. A similar intelligence was conveyed to some other gentlemen of the northern province. Whether these letters were mere artifices, or were founded in truth, their influence was great upon a people habitually possessed with horrid ideas of Irish barbarity, who had been accustomed from infancy to listen to the terrible accounts of the insurrection in 1641, exaggerated by the feelings of relative affection. Commotions were at all periods too readily excited in the unhappy country, and few hesitated a moment to give credit to these alarming informations. They were confirmed by several coincident circumstances. Popish priests had announced to their congregations what they darkly termed "a secret intention," and enjoined them to stand ready armed to obey their orders. It was remembered, and was fearfully alluded to, that a friar of Derry had preached with much animation and energy on the subject of Saul's destroying the Amalekites, and the iniquity of sparing those whom divine vengeance had devoted to destruction.

The warning letters were sent to Dublin, copies

multiplied, and thus the intelligence spread through every grade of society. The capital became a scene of uproar and confusion; a tumultuous crowd ran precipitately to the shore, imploring to be conveyed from the daggers of the Irish. It was in vain that Tyrconnel sent persons to assure the panic struck wretches, that they were secure, and should be protected; the terrified multitude were deaf to these assurances. An unusual number of vessels were at this time in the harbour, the people crowded on board, leaving their less successful friends stupified with astonishment and terror. The whole country was quickly pervaded with the same terror. At length the inhabitants of Derry set the example of resisting the Catholics, and Protestant associations were universally formed. These associations were published in the several counties, declaring that they had united for self-defence, and the Protestant religion, that they were resolved to act according to the government of England, and to call a free parliament. County councils were nominated, and a general council, which appointed officers, and directed the operations of the associated body. Thus was a religious war once more to desolate Ireland, that most bitter of all animosities; for when a sentiment so inherently noble becomes mingled with human passions, with ambition, hypocrisy, or political intrigue, it depraves and indurates the heart it was intended to exalt and to soften. The circumstances of the abandonment of James by those subjects, whose rights he had so scornfully trampled upon, his dismay, his flight, and his refuge in France are all so well known, that it would be altogether unnecessary to enter into any detail of them. Indeed we are now arrived at a period, when, although diversity of religious faith was the grand

cause of contention, yet is entirely barren of any thing which may be regarded as relevant to our subject, the peaceful duties of the sacerdotal character and function being exchanged for the tumults of war, and the violent purposes of faction. Our retrospect, therefore, will be very brief of transactions which took place when James, assisted by Louis XIV., made an effort to regain his power, by an expedition to Ireland, where Tyrconnel had erected his standard, and the protestants were resolved to resist him.

Of all the northern cities, Londonderry afforded the principal shelter to the fugitive protestants. It was surrounded by a firm wall, but by no means sufficient to sustain the siege of a regular army. On the first alarm of the invasion of the Prince of Orange, Tyrconnel had recalled the garrison of this city to Dublin; but he soon perceived the error of leaving it to the government of the townsmen, and detached a regiment composed of papists, Irish, and Highlanders, to take their quarters at Londonderry. The inhabitants determined not to receive them. The bishop, cautious from years, and from his principles an enemy to resistance, preached peace and submission; but the spirit of opposition was roused, and the movement of an irritated people is not to be stopped at will; remonstrance has no power to still its impetuous violence. A brave defence against the papists was the general cry; the magazine afforded a few arms, and a small quantity of ammunition. They threatened to fire on the king's troops, and conjured their neighbours to concur with them in defence of their lives, their properties, their religion. An account of their dangers and proceedings was without delay transmitted to the society in London, to solicit succours from the prince, and at the same time the magistrates

and more moderate of the citizens addressed themselves to Lord Mountjoy, who had commanded the garrison, to mediate with Tyrconnel, acknowledging their utter inability to restrain the impetuosity of the people. They declared themselves determined to confine themselves to self-defence, without violating their allegiance. Tyrconnel issued orders to reduce the city, sending Lord Mountjoy, with six companies, for that purpose. Mountjoy, a protestant lord, was highly acceptable to the inhabitants, but not so his popish forces; they disclaimed all mutinous or seditious purposes, but were firm in resolve to defend themselves. Some conferences took place, and Mountjoy was admitted on conditions, taking the command of the city. By his advice the arms were repaired, money subscribed for the purchase of ammunition, and the agent in London solicited to procure provisions. We have thus cursorily related the resolution of the inhabitants of Derry, because it excited the spirit of general emulation among the protestants, and the example was in various places followed of refusing admittance to popish troops.

In the mean time various negociations were carried on with France, the result of which did but inflame the fury of Tyrconnel against the protestants. The arms yet remaining in their hands were wrested from them by the soldiers, their horses seized, their persons insulted, and houses plundered. In these violences he was further encouraged by intimations from James, that he would soon appear in Ireland with a powerful armament. In the interval the zeal and ardour of the protestants received several checks, and the contest was no longer bloodless. The northern associates had, on the assurance of supplies from England, proclaimed William and Mary in the



north-eastern towns. This premature and injudicious measure was soon checked; they were commanded by proclamation to lay down their arms and dissolve their assemblies. General Hamilton marched against them with considerable force; they retired before him, were overtaken, again fled, and were pursued with slaughter. They gained Hilsborough, their principal seat, were compelled to abandon it, resign the castle, and continue their flight: they appeared entirely broken, several fled to England, others accepted protections from the Irish army. By the spirit and prudence of their leaders, however, four thousand rallied and took their station at Coleraine, which they were able to fortify, as well as to collect their forces, as the Irish were fully engaged in riot and plunder.\*

Coleraine was at length attacked, and the enemy bravely repulsed, but the place was not long found tenable. The Irish after a successful skirmish passed the Bann in boats, and the associates fled by different routes to Derry. The government of this city, after the departure of Mountjoy to negotiate in France, had been resigned to Lundy, a man who flattered the protestants with professions of attachment and resolution to fight against the odious government of Tyrconnel; yet his sincerity was doubted, and as it proved, justly so. While his equivocal and uncertain conduct perplexed the people and had nearly obliged them to abandon the city, their agent arrived from London with assurances from William of speedy succours: they were urged not to abandon a

\* Coleraine, in county of Londonderry, and province of Ulster. It was formerly a place of great consideration, it being the chief town of the county,

and erected by Sir John Perrot during his able and vigorous government of Ireland. It is elegantly built.

cause so glorious, and which would speedily triumph. All murmurings, discontents, and apprehensions were dispelled by this communication; a brave defence was again the universal cry, the garrison was cheerfully regulated, provisions distributed, and even Lundy appeared to have caught the enthusiastic spirit, announcing his resolution of marching to engage the enemy. Such was the state of affairs when James, having determined to make Ireland the scene of his operations for the recovery of his power, landed at Kinsale.\*

At Cork† Tyrconnel appeared to welcome his royal master, and with his characteristic cruelty displayed his zeal on the occasion by ordering a magistrate to execution, who had declared for the Prince of Orange. James created his zealous servant a duke, and proceeded in a stately progress to the capital, into which he made a splendid entry, followed by a numerous train of French, British, and Irish, and attended by the French ambassador, D'Avaux. He was met by the magistrates and the whole body of Roman ecclesi-

\* Kinsale, in county Cork. In this place are the ruins of several monasteries and religi-

† Cork, capital of county of the same name. It is an episcopal see, the largest and most populous of any in the kingdom, Dublin alone excepted. It was built or rather fortified by the Danes in the ninth century. The see of Cork is reputed worth 22,700*l.* per annum. The chapter consists of a dean, chanter, chancellor, treasurer, archdeacon, and 12 prebendaries. The church is dedicated to St. Barr, or Fin-

ous houses, which prove it to have been a place of some ecclesiastical consequence.

barr, and the diocese is divided into five deaneries. There is little to be found in ancient writers respecting the foundation of the cathedral, yet it is generally ascribed to St. Barr, in the seventh century. Many of its bishops have been benefactors to it. Through time the church became quite ruinous; it was therefore completely rebuilt, and is now an elegant modern structure.

astics, secular and regular in their appropriate habits, with the host borne in solemn procession and adored devoutly by the king, amidst the acclamations of those who favoured his cause and those who could not resist his power.

To those who know how easily the human heart is excited by circumstances addressed to the senses it cannot be subject of wonder that a scene so impressive elevated the popular feeling to the utmost pitch of devotional spirit, which prepared it to become the ready instrument of any agent employed to direct its operations. In the present instance the enthusiasm was superstition put in action, but without any just conceptions of the object which had put it in motion. Addresses in these moments of excited feeling poured upon the elated James from all quarters; that of the protestant established clergy touched gently on the distractions of the times and the grievances they had endured. The king graciously assured them of protection and redress. To the university he was yet more gracious, he promised to defend and even to enlarge their privileges. His actions however so ill accorded with these gracious assurances that coldness and suspicion took place of that confidence which had in the first burst of loyalty been excited. After several acts of sovereignty, of which one was the alarming removal of protestants from the privy council, and the admission of some of his zealous adherents, the king deemed the reduction of the north an important object of his attention. Various counsels respecting Londonderry (considered as the grand seat of what in the court of James was of course termed rebellion) were proposed and rejected. The plan ultimately fixed upon was to press it by slow siege, so as to inure the Irish forces to discipline and fatigue, and to teach them the arts of

war: in order to encourage the besiegers and alarm the obstinate insurgents, James resolved to conduct the operations himself. He was far from being an inexperienced soldier, and his military talents were eminent; early called into exercise and honourably displayed: his resolution therefore to command was calculated to encourage and animate his army; but he was to be resisted by an individual, who ranks among those gifted few, raised up in times and circumstances of great emergence by the exercise of their mental energies to direct the destinies of individuals or of nations, and to prove the empire of mind over physical force, the power of principle to resist the plans of prudence and the dictates of policy.

Among the resolute and active northerns who had associated themselves against the fiery Tyrconnel and the principles of his misguided master, was George Walker, a clergyman of a Yorkshire family, and rector of a parish in the county of Tyrone. In times of turbulence and danger, such as distracted Ireland, it became the duty of all men to unite in defence of their altar and their hearth, and this patriot call was obeyed by the unassuming rector. In the defence of law, liberty, and religion he added the sword to his pastoral staff; zealous and indefatigable in the cause to which he was attached, he raised a regiment and commanded it. In carrying his zeal thus beyond the proprieties of his sacred office, he was justified by the melancholy circumstances of his country. Abstractedly considered, it cannot be justified, nor ought it to be deemed any example or apology for clerical faction or political interference. As the army appeared to become more formidable by the arrival of James, the activity and ardour of Walker increased, and the contest would it is probable soon have been terminated had not the

cowardly and treacherous Lundy shamefully abandoned his post at a critical moment and hid himself within the wall of Derry, actually closing the gates against many who sought the same refuge. The town council having in consequence determined to offer terms of capitulation to James, who was slowly advancing to the city, the people were seized with a frenzy of rage, they rushed to the walls, pointed their guns and fired at the king and his advanced party approaching to take possession of the city.

A deputation was immediately sent to intimate this violence was not the act of the many, but of a few headstrong enthusiasts, but at the very instant the cries were universal for defence; governor, council, magistrates were alike disregarded, their authority in this moment of overwrought popular rage was annihilated. The garrison chose for themselves two new governors, Walker, and a Major Baker, that if either should fall they should not be left without command. By their direction they were formed into eight regiments, amounting to seven thousand and twenty men, three hundred and forty one officers. The first ebullition of popular feeling was far too violent to continue; it sunk not however into debility, but into composure and calmness. The timid were permitted to depart unmolested. The base minded Lundy was suffered to escape by the connivance of the new governors, who were glad to be rid of him. Every thing to prepare against the siege was regulated with judgment and precision, quietly and without parade. Eighteen clergymen of the established church and seven non-conformist teachers cheerfully shared the labours and dangers of the siege, and every day in their turns collected the people in the cathedral church, and by the fervour of their devotions and those strains of



eloquence inspired by circumstances so awful, breathed forth with an unction which such circumstances perhaps alone could produce, animated and encouraged their hearers. Imagination pictures a crowded congregation collected together by one commanding and noble motive, forming a grand connecting link of sympathy. That motive elevating the most insignificant to the level of the most powerful, and forming that equality of mental force which acknowledges no station, requiring only the freeborn soul for its sanctuary. Such a congregation, under such circumstances, prostrate before the Great Disposer of events, imploring in the expressive forms of our excellent liturgy his present aid, his future help to make his just cause triumph, and to impart grace that it may be received with humility and enjoyed with moderation; that he would open the eyes of the blinded and recall the erring to the right way; that he would give strength to the weak, stability to the wavering, and power to all: this presents a picture to the imagination well worthy the hand of genius to embody, at the same time it exemplifies the source of that persevering fortitude which enabled a garrison, in a town weakly fortified and miserably supplied, encumbered with thirty thousand fugitives, who could give them no assistance, and assailed by twenty thousand besiegers, to withstand every physical evil, at the recital of which the very soul recoils, during a siege of one hundred and five days. At the conclusion of this period the town was relieved and the enemy retired. "But," says the plain unstudied Walker in his Diary, "the resolution and courage of our people, the necessity we were under, and the great confidence and dependence among us on Almighty God that he would take care of us and preserve us, made us overlook all those difficulties."



The cause of James was equally unsuccessful in various places; at Enniskillen, about two thousand of his troops fell by the weapons of an enemy transported with resentment and zeal; five hundred plunged in a lake to avoid their fury; the same number were made prisoners, and with these their general. While the armies of James were so unsuccessful in the north he returned to Dublin and assembled a parliament. In the upper house were a number of new popish lords, as well as several whose outlawries had been reversed; this gave a preponderance to their party, which could not be balanced by four or five protestant lords still remaining in the kingdom, and three prelates summoned by writ to form a part of the assembly. The commons were it might be said entirely composed of men named by Tyrconnel, returned from such counties as were subject to his power or otherwise influenced. The university returned two protestant members, to whom we may add four more from other places. The opening speech was fair in profession, declaring the intention of James to make no other test or distinction but that of loyalty, that he was ready in all things to meet the wishes of the nation "as far forth as might be consistent with reason, justice, and the public good." A bill was brought in containing a recognition of the king's title, and an abhorrence of the Prince of Orange and his usurpation. But whatever might have been the conciliating and liberal sentiments and intentions of James, he was placed in a situation very unfavourable, if not entirely contrary to their accomplishment. Completely enslaved by different factions, he was incapable of any act of free agency; depending upon France, he was servilely attentive not to offend D'Avaux, who evidently took the lead in his councils. The Irish were dis-

contented to find all promotions in the army given to Frenchmen; they were indeed consoled by their ascendancy in the senate, and resolved to avail themselves of it by providing for their own interests with little apparent concern respecting those of the king.

Instead of providing relief for the sufferers by the long contested acts of settlement, the commons with an indecent and tumultuous shout of joy received a bill for a repeal of these acts. In the lords however the protestant Bishop of Meath argued against it, both on the principle of justice and sound policy, and this we are assured by the direction of James; but in vain. It was not only the favourite object of the Irish, but warmly recommended by D'Avaux, and their united power was not to be resisted. In a preamble to this bill was a clause whereby the real estates of all those who dwelt in any of the three kingdoms, and did not acknowledge King James's power, or who aided or corresponded with those who had rebelled against him, were declared to be forfeited and vested in him. This parliament was not however contented with recovering their estates and expelling the protestant proprietors: a proscription worthy of the haughtiest periods of Romish despotism was enacted. An act was passed by which a number of persons in the service of the Prince of Orange, those who had retired from the kingdom, and did not return in obedience to the king's proclamation, numbers who were resident in Britain, and therefore adhered to the new government, were all attainted of high treason, and adjudged to suffer the penalties of death and forfeiture unless they surrendered within certain assigned periods. Even the estates of those who were detained abroad by sickness, nonage, or other involuntary detention were to be

seized by the king, not to be restored till the claimants could prove their own innocence. Two thousand four hundred and sixty-one persons of all orders and conditions were included in this dreadful proscription; their names were hastily collected, and the sentence which condemned so many to difficulty and want was treated with so much ease and levity, that when Nagle, the attorney-general presented the bill to James, he carelessly observed, "many were attainted on such evidence as satisfied the house, and the rest on common fame." It was so framed as to preclude the king from all power of pardoning after the 1st day of November 1689; but the injustice of this transaction did not end here.

A statute so important as affecting the properties and lives of so many was carefully concealed from them, being suffered to remain unknown in the hands of the chancellor. At length, when four months had elapsed from the day limited for pardoning, Sir Thomas Southwell obtained a view of this fatal act for the instruction of his lawyer, who was to draw out a warrant for his pardon, promised by James. Nagle was surprised and enraged at this discovery; he insisted, after a course of base evasions, that the king was merely a trustee for the forfeitures, and had now no power of pardoning Southwell. All indeed that was in the power of the enslaved James was to reproach Nagle for having framed an act intrenching on his prerogative. Among other acts of this assembly was one for liberty of conscience, another took away the provisions formerly made for ministers in towns corporate, and one for entitling the Roman clergy to all tithes and ecclesiastical dues payable by those of their own communion. In one point James would not concur, viz. to establish inns of court in Ireland for the

education of law students, a point long and ardently pursued by the Irish catholics. The arbitrary disposition of the monarch was proved not to have been abated by his reverses of fortune in regard to the supplying his necessities from his people, several unpopular measures for this purpose met even the disapprobation of his council; but he resented their interference, retorting upon them their own sentiment, that it was a branch of his prerogative to levy money. "If I cannot do this," he remarked with asperity, "I can do nothing." One mode he took which rendered him justly unpopular: he established a mint in Dublin and Limerick, from whence was issued a coin in the last degree base, it was obtruded on protestants with many circumstances of insolence and cruelty. This evil was, however, only one among very many they had to endure, during the melancholy period in which the Romish party were predominant. To all the distresses of war and disorder was added the wanton insolence of their restless adversaries.

James meanwhile, in the midst of this unpopularity, public disorder, the opposition he already experienced, and the dangers which seemed to be enclosing him, still resigned himself to the influence of the Romish clergy, and entered zealously into all their plans for the extension of their faith. A protestant school erected by the Duke of Ormond at Kilkenny, was by a new charter converted into a popish seminary. Not deterred by the consequences of his attempts on the English universities, James in a very few months after his arrival in Ireland, ordered a mandamus to be presented to the governor of the University in favour of the individual Green, who had been disappointed of his imaginary professorship. He was now destined to fill the office of senior fellow of Trinity

College, the governors undauntedly refused obedience to the mandamus, and that at a time when their society had shared largely in the general calamities, when no rents could be received, when their pension from the exchequer was withheld, when their daily food was even purchased by the proceeds of their remaining plate, when the terrors of royal vengeance were denounced against them, and James and his forces were ready at hand to execute his threats. They pleaded their own cause before the attorney general, urging the incapacity of Green, and the false allegations of his petition. But, they added, "there are much more important reasons, drawn as well from the statutes relating to religion, as from the obligation of the oaths we have taken, and the interests of our religion (which we will never desert) that render it wholly impossible for us without violating our consciences to have any concurrence, or to be in any way concerned in the admission of him." How shall we reconcile the subsequent facts with the assurances of James, that he was ready to grant and to meet the wishes of his subjects in every point "as far forth as might be consistent with reason, justice and the public good." This prince prided himself on the sincerity of his character, did his promises then mean nothing, or were they to be dispensed with according to circumstances without imputation of his sincerity and probity? The issue of the contest between him and the University was at once speedy and decisive. In a few days both fellows and scholars were forcibly ejected from their learned retreat, by the soldiers of a prince who had promised not only to defend, but to augment their privileges. The private property of particular members, the communion plate, library, and furniture of the community were seized, their chapel desecrated to a magazine, and their



chambers converted into prisons. The personal liberty of the members was obtained only by the earnest intercession of the Bishop of Meath, and this on the express condition that three of them should not meet together on pain of death. Father Petre, the spiritual guide of the infatuated king, is said to have possessed him with the design of conferring this college on the Jesuits. After having the pain of relating this instance of cruel injustice, and senseless impolicy, we are pleased to be able to add that an individual named Moor, a popish ecclesiastic, was nominated provost, a man possessing liberal sentiments, and superior literary taste, who, with the assistance of another individual of his own order preserved the library, books, and manuscripts from the Vandal ravages of a bigoted and barbarous army.

The state of the protestant clergy, as might well be expected, was at this time deplorable, for they were for the most part deprived of subsistence. They were unable to recover dues from non-conformists, as these were by the recent act for liberty of conscience, exempted from the jurisdiction of the ecclesiastical courts. Neither could they demand tithes from the numerous body of Roman Catholics, the proportion of whom in the population was at least fifteen to one of protestants, while popish incumbents who every day multiplied by the death, cession, or absence of protestants exacted them from all parties. Yet such is the tendency of persecution to attach men strongly to their principles, that both clergy and laity felt an increase of fervour in their devotion, and crowded to their places of worship as if to prove that the operations of the mind cannot be influenced by violence and force, and that the soul rejects the chains which would place its freedom in bondage.

Much offence and some alarm was created in



the popish government by these meetings. A proclamation was issued confining protestants to their respective parishes. This was in effect depriving numbers of the benefits of public worship altogether, as in various parts two parishes or more had but one church. Still these measures oppressive and arbitrary as they were, met not the spirit of opposing zeal which was followed up as a merit by the popish clergy. Aided by magistrates of their own persuasion, they levied churches for their own use not in the country only, but the capital. The Protestants thus painfully deprived altogether of their privileges dared to remonstrate with the king on measures so very inconsistent with his professions of protection. He acknowledged his promises of protecting them, and published a proclamation against these outrages. But the clergy and their votaries were too well aware of the strength of their cause, and the advantages which the bigotry of James had yielded to them, to pay any attention to his authority when it demanded a concession repugnant to the interests of the faith. They disdained obedience to the proclamation, and hence a contest now arose between them and the king, who had the mortification to find himself foiled and defeated upon the ground of his own principles and arguments. Totally renouncing his authority in ecclesiastical affairs, they retained the churches with a contemptuous disregard to his repeated orders to give them up. By some his order of restitution was evaded by representing the church demanded for the Protestants as a place of strength, and therefore highly improper to be yielded to their custody. Christ church in Dublin for instance was seized, and could not be restored because arms it was said were concealed in it.

Whatever mortification and resentment James

might experience from these individual acts of clerical contempt and renunciation of power and authority, it appeared to cause no change of sentiments in him, he probably thought they were fully justified in thus acting according to their conscience. He still resigned himself as abjectly to the will and guidance of his clergy, apparently only solicitous to employ his short-lived power in Ireland, in making it what he termed a Catholic kingdom.

In consistency with these views and principles an order was issued in the name of his governor of Dublin, that no more than five Protestants should meet together, even in churches on pain of death. For this senseless and bigoted severity an alarm of an invasion was pleaded. Perhaps it would be difficult to cite a more lively illustration of the contracting influence of superstition and bigotry on the mind than James presented at this time, when he thought himself meritoriously and worthily employed in filling the diocese of Meath with popish incumbents, and erecting a Benedictine nunnery in Dublin, and that at the very moment when the formidable powers of his enemies were fast gathering around him, and the destinies of a nation were depending under Heaven on the vigour of his conduct, and the exercise of those energies with which nature had endowed him. An administration at once so contemptible, tyrannical and oppressive, which produced so much discord and so much trouble to unhappy Ireland, was greatly owing to, and protracted by the duration of the factions in England, and those embarrassments and distresses experienced by William upon his elevation. He was ill treated by his parliament, for they tore his laurels from his brows, and placed them on their own. They made him account for all the money they granted him, like a steward; they even forced

him to send away his favourite Dutch troops, although he condescended to petition the commons that he might retain them. He was surrounded with secret as well as avowed enemies, and the nation which he had liberated was full of discontents. War with his mortal foe Louis was declared. Insurrection was brooding in Scotland.

Amidst these complicated dangers, and the judicious management which these contending parties required, it was impossible that William could proceed in the service of Ireland with that vigour which was absolutely necessary to effect any good end.

William had scarcely found himself seated on the throne which had been offered him, when the parties which had united in his favour resumed their original bias, and he found himself at the head of a faction as the avowed friend of the presbyterians, consequently hostile to the established church. Several attempts in favour of dissenters excited the prejudices of the churchmen against him, his tolerant principles not being agreeable to them. Even the papists enjoyed the benefit of his moderation in religious matters. He firmly rejected the proposals of some zealots who exhorted him to enact some severe laws against them. During these political disputes and party divisions, the neglect of Ireland was a subject of popular complaint. The Protestants there sinking under the oppression and tyranny of their insulting foe, had made repeated application for relief, and James had already been six months in Ireland ere the circumstances of affairs in England allowed any effective measures to be taken. At length a considerable force was sent under the command of Duke Schomberg, who unaware of political expediency and cabinet intrigue, was with the natural ardour of bravery impatient of

the delay, and at length with part of his forces landed in the bay of Carrickfergus. It appeared as if that delay deprived the forces of James of all energy, for they might with ease have frustrated the landing of the English, instead of which they retired to Carrickfergus and there made a stand. Schomberg having refreshed his troops, proceeded and invested the place, which was so peculiarly fortified by nature and art that if well defended it might have checked the progress of Schomberg. On the first approach of the besiegers, however, the garrison condescended to parley, demanding liberty to send for succours or for licence to surrender. Their demands were scornfully rejected, and the siege proceeded in form.

Such was the revengeful spirit which the insults of the papists had generally excited, that when after hostilities of some days, Schomberg allowed the garrison to march to the next Irish garrison with their arms and some baggage, the Ulster Scots were so indignant at the indulgence, and such was the virulence against every thing popish, that regardless of the articles, they fell furiously upon the garrison, and having disarmed them, would have murdered the unfortunate wretches, had it not been for the vigorous interposition of the general. In proceeding on his march through a desolated country, Schomberg found that the popish inhabitants had fled precipitately before him with their cattle and effects, and had set fire to several places. Schomberg by a trumpet threatened to give no quarter should the enemy continue these barbarities. They abandoned Dundalk without injury, and thither the English advanced. So exalted an idea was formed of Schomberg's military genius by the officers of James, that they appeared panic-struck at the thought of engaging him, and they even deliberated whether it might not be advisable to retire from

their present situation at Drogheda, and also from Dublin. Tyrconnel, however, succeeded in dissuading them from such a dastard resolution. Hastening with his troops to Drogheda, it was resolved to maintain their present position. In the meantime the distresses of Schomberg's army were very great, unused to the nature of the country, wasted by fatiguing marches through bogs and over mountains, in rain and tempest, in cold and hunger, dispirited by the aspect of a desolated country, which the inclemency of the season rendered still more dreary, they sunk under the pressure of privation and sickness, giving full employment to detached parties to collect them and convey them languishing to the camp. Under these distressing circumstances, Schomberg deemed it highly imprudent to advance further.

When this circumstance became known to the army of James, it caused the greatest elation. Marshal Rosen when he found Schomberg had halted, at once pronounced that he must be in want of something, and immediately ventured his forces near Dundalk. The duke fortified his camp, determined not to be forced to an action under circumstances so disadvantageous; for his soldiers were now enduring almost every physical evil. While he was vigilantly and humanely engaged in every way in relieving and mitigating the sufferings of his soldiers, the enemy advanced; and even the whole army was drawn out, headed by James, displaying the royal standard, but Schomberg insisted that they had no intention of fighting. At length they made such dispositions as seemed to indicate an intention of storming the camp, and Schomberg ordered his foot to stand to their arms and his cavalry to return from foraging. Most joyfully these orders were received by troops anxiously solicitous to be relieved from their

present suspense and distress, even the sick and languid seized their muskets in full confidence of victory; but at the moment when their ardour was thus excited, James drew off his forces. Even his own army were filled with astonishment and vexation at this unexpected retreat, for as it was an enterprise of trifling danger they could impute the irresolution of James to no other cause than his tenderness for his English subjects. Rosen exclaimed in a tone of half reproach and mortification, "If your majesty had ten kingdoms you would lose them." The English on the other hand suspected that the manœuvre had been intended only to countenance a conspiracy formed by some French papists to betray the camp; and in fact on the following day the design was discovered; the principal accomplices executed, and a number of popish soldiers disarmed and sent to Holland.

In the mean time Schomberg experienced all the evils of the injudicious position he had chosen at Dundalk. Encamped on low and moist ground, with the mountains of Newry to the east, the town and river to the south, and hills and bogs to the north, the distresses of his army every day increased, dysentry and raging fever resisted every effort to subdue them, and daily carried off numbers. Several of the most distinguished caught the infection, languished and expired. Discontent quickly followed suffering and disease, Schomberg was unjustly accused of indifference towards his troops, while to the decay of his faculties from age were attributed the protraction of the war and his caution in not leading them against an enemy whom his men were persuaded they should defeat. He directed them to erect huts for shelter, but with that listless despondency produced by disease, which forms its most afflicting feature,



they slighted the order, as well as every other expedient for a relief, superstitiously conceiving they were fated to destruction.

In this enervated state of mind they sought for instances calculated not to rouse it from the morbid feeling, but still further to weaken and depress it. The calamities of former years which had distinguished Dundalk were recounted, they eagerly listened to details of meteors hovering over the very place on which they lay, of spirits and groans heard in the air, the sure portents of great calamities. The contracting influence of physical suffering which concentrates the feelings of the soul in itself soon became apparent, depriving these miserable wretches of human sensibilities. Habituated to continual spectacles of misery, their companions died unnoticed, the survivors even in horrid apathy used their cold bodies for seats, and when they were removed for interment, fretfully murmured at being deprived of a convenience! To these complicated miseries were added the insults of their enemies, who encamped on more elevated and firmer ground, were yet not exempted from a portion of similar suffering; they imputed it to the judgment of heaven that the heretical army was overwhelmed with rains, while they themselves enjoyed a cloudless sky; but this boasted exemption did not long continue, their calamities in the end became equally grievous and their numbers daily reduced. As a proof how the intemperate religious zeal which reigned with equal force in the bosom of the hostile armies extended itself to matters in themselves of perfect indifference, we need but mention that when this wasted and suffering army heard the enemy was at hand, even the faintest and the most diseased attempted to sieze their arms, and uttered in a tone of confidence, "The papists shall now pay

for our being so long detained in such dismal quarters." Luckily however the alarm proved false, and both armies retired to winter quarters.

The bad success of this campaign, from which so much had been expected, produced the greatest discontents in England, and William, perplexed and distracted between factions which he equally feared and found unmanageable, determined to quit them for a time, and to prosecute the Irish war in person. The first report of this design inspirited the English army in Ulster. About half of the forces Schomberg had brought with him yet survived the ravages of disease and privation, and the comforts and ease of winter quarters had greatly restored their vigour. Several petty successes had further elevated them, and every preparation was made to open the campaign with effect. Nor was James less assiduous, and had his policy and judgment been equally well directed the result might have been far different to him. It must be admitted that he betrayed a great deficiency of both by accepting five thousand French troops under the conduct of Count Saurin, and in their place an equal number of Irish were transported to France. The unfortunate James had soon the mortification to find his new auxiliaries both refractory and disobedient, they knew and acknowledged no superior but Saurin, who attended to the pleasure and interest of his troops, not that of the monarch, whom he came to serve, and considering himself as in an enemy's country lived at free quarter.

It is no part of our plan to enter into the detail of subsequent events which closed the royal authority of James in Ireland, those events are universally and well known to have offered in the conduct of William as the great actor in them a striking contrast to the supineness, the irresolu-

tion, and timidity of James, feelings which perhaps were produced by the latent consciousness of how justly he had aroused the resentments of his people, a consciousness which ever enervates those energies which are necessary to meet the consequences of misguided folly. For a moment indeed he displayed a spirit consistent with his birth and with the importance of the cause he was to maintain, but French counsel prevailed, and his vaunted determination to maintain his post ended in a secret preparation for flight from a contest in which he should have shed his blood.

Without surrendering a moment to delay, William immediately on his arrival reviewed his army. The Irish army fell back to the south of the Boyne at the approach of their opposers, who in high health, spirits, and commanded by their sovereign, seemed confident of victory. The famous battle of the Boyne began at six in the morning. The forces of James acquitted themselves well, but were at last defeated with the loss of 1500 men. The protestants lost but one-third of that number, but among them were several to be greatly regretted. Of these was the venerable and gallant Schomberg, a man equally admirable for his military talents and his intellectual and moral excellences, a protestant by principle, his deportment was marked by those graces of the Christian character, courtesy and humility; his mind was cool, penetrating, resolute, and sagacious, and his probity was equal to his courage. He had attained the advanced age of eighty-two years when he received the wound which deprived him of life. The gallant Walker, he who had defended Londonderry, fell in this memorable action: he had been graciously received by William, and an acknowledgement of five thousand pounds was granted for his services. William shared in all the dangers and fatigues of

this decisive action, animating his troops by his presence and encouraging coolness. James stood aloof during the engagement on the hill of Dunmore, surrounded by some squadrons of horse, and at intervals was heard to exclaim, when he saw his own troops repulsing those of the enemy, "O spare my English subjects." Amidst our contempt for the imprudent James at this period, we feel a sentiment of pity, when doubtless the fluctuation of ideas brought back to his mind the due bounds of justice and power. The spirit of party slumbered for a moment, and he saw things in a proper light. He was now plunged into that frightful state of remorse which follows the commission of error, when the circumstances which had caused it, were changed, or rendered, by the mutability of events of less commanding force on the soul. Hence doubtless his pathetic ejaculation to "spare his English subjects," from a consciousness that they were sacrificed to his despotic conduct. Seeing that victory had declared against him, he retired to Dublin, and so completely was his mind overwhelmed, that he made not a single effort to reassemble his broken forces. Had he possessed either spirit or conduct his army might have been rallied and reinforced from his garrisons, so as to have kept the field, and even to have acted on the offensive; but while his troops were yet fighting, he quitted his station, and leaving orders to guard the pass at Duleek, repaired to Dublin. He advised the magistrates of that city to make the best terms they could with the victors, and set out for Waterford, where all things being in readiness, he sailed for France. When he first deserted his troops at the Boyne, O'Regan, an old Irish captain, was heard to say, "That if the English would exchange generals the conquered army would fight them over again."

It had been deliberated at Dublin, whether if the enemy prevailed it would be adviseable to fire the city, but James charged the magistrates on their allegiance to commit no such outrage, which might reflect dishonour on him and irritate the conqueror. He was obliged, he said, to submit to force, but would never cease to labour for their deliverance ; too much blood had been already shed, and Providence seemed to declare against him ; he advised them therefore to submit to the prince, who was merciful. Nor did the peculiar pressure of William's circumstances enable him to follow up, as he otherwise might, his advantages, for expecting every day an invasion of England, and of course being required in that kingdom, he could not venture to divide his army, or remove it from the coast.

## CHAPTER XXIV.

*Friends of James determine to prosecute hostilities—Dublin threatened with the evils of anarchy—Spirited and judicious conduct of Fitzgerald—William enters the city—Thanksgivings for his victory—He returns to his camp—Protestant clergy attend him with an address—Causes rendering the government of William unpopular—Oppressive spirit of the English—Irish resolve to prosecute the war—Wretched state of the country—Civil transactions—Rapparees—Decision of the people to trust their cause to the sword—The opposing armies—Conduct of St. Ruth—Enthusiasm excited—The desperate battle—Death of St. Ruth—The Irish defeated—General Ginckle suffers many to retire to Limerick—Irish make a brave defence—Terms of capitulation exorbitant—Siege continued—Ginckle offers liberal terms—Articles signed—Kingdom submits to the English government—Ginckle created Earl of Athlone—Prejudices yet rankle—Causes of discontent and distress—William's interest in foreign concerns produces neglect of home policy—Disputes between him and his parliaments—Perplexed and harassed by opposite parties—Neglect of Ireland—Lord Sydney's severe rule—Abuses in disposing of the forfeited estates, and other causes of complaint—The king entreated to redress them—Promises given, but no steps taken—Party spirit violent—Irish papists oppressed under Lord Capel—Interest formed against him—William Molineux publishes a treatise to prove Ireland entirely independent—Address to his majesty—Its contents—King promises attention—Irish forfeitures a great cause of contention—Commissioners appointed—Proceedings of parliament respecting them—Chagrin of the king—Death of James II.—War in consequence of the violation of the treaty of Ryswick—Preparations of William for a brilliant campaign—His death—Accession of Anne—General review of religion and literature.*

A. D. 1690.

As the battle of the Boyne was by no means a decided one, the friends of James determined to



prosecute hostilities, although it does not appear that he gave any instruction to his officers for that purpose. Yet, although he had renounced the assistance of the Irish, the interests of their religion were so involved in his cause, that they could not at present be separated, nor had they any hopes of recovering the lands of their ancestors or securing those they possessed, but by contending against the new government.

The indignation of the army was violent against James, both on account of the reflections he had cast upon them, and his desertion; they affected, however, to rejoice at the latter, as relieving them from a leader who had neither spirit for enterprise nor real concern for their interests. Dublin was once more threatened with all the well known evils of anarchy.\*

The civil officers of James had already fled, and no detachment had yet been sent by William to secure the city. The protestant prisoners were set at liberty, they were fired with animosity against their prosecutors, with equal intemperance breathed

\* Dublin, the metropolis of Ireland, province of Leinster, county Dublin, seated at the bottom of a large and beautiful bay, the river Liffey divides the city into two equal parts. It is a place of great antiquity, and is now a most beautiful city, surrounded with interesting and delightful scenery. It has had a variety of names; its present one is from Dub-leana, or the "Lake of the Sea." In 448 Alpin Mac Earchard, king of Dublin, and all his subjects were converted to Christianity by St. Patrick. The civil government of the city was anci-

ently under the management of a provost and bailiffs. In 1409 the chief magistrate was changed to that of mayor, and those of bailiffs to sheriffs. Charles the Second granted the title of lord mayor and 500*l.* per annum in 1665; Sir Daniel Bellingham was the first lord mayor. In 1672 Arthur Earl of Essex introduced new rules for the better government of the city; and in 1683 the Tholsel was built for the purpose of the magistrates meeting to hold their courts, assemblies, &c.

revenge against them, ready to avail themselves of the remotest plea for gratifying it. With these sentiments of revengeful zeal they assembled in groups and held their consultations, which resulted in the determination to force the houses of the papists and to rifle them. From this lawless and desperate measure they were however deterred by a military officer, who had been liberated from confinement, and who fortunately possessed those rarely combined qualities of insinuation, activity, firmness of purpose, and decision of will and action which have such a commanding influence over the popular opinion. He suddenly appeared among the irritated and revengeful people and dissuaded them from a purpose which must have plunged the city into the extremity of distress. With the assistance of some clergy and principal gentry, he assumed the government of the city pro tempore, gained the keys of the castle, persuaded the main guard, composed of about thirty popish militia, to lay down their arms, put them in the hands of protestants, and despatched expresses to William's camp to request immediate aid. All this was accomplished with a celerity which left the discontented no leisure to inquire how and by what authority the change was effected, while the active and intelligent Fitzgerald continued his judicious precautions to preserve peace, leaving no spot exempted from his vigilance. Alarms were raised at every moment; it was whispered that the enemy had returned in strength; the suburbs were fired; Fitzgerald flew to extinguish the flames. In the mean time the populace, excited to frenzy, were still impatient for plunder, and broke into some habitations. Again the indefatigable Fitzgerald rushed amongst them, at the hazard of his life, and by persuasion, by menaces, by violence restrained them from ex-

tremities. A force was now sent to his assistance, attended by the Duke of Ormond; William in the mean time continued to advance, and encamped at Finglass, a village near the capital; from thence he entered the city and immediately repaired to the cathedral of St. Patrick to return thanks for his victory. The solemn thanksgiving concluded, he returned immediately to his camp: it was here that the protestant clergy attended him with an address, congratulating him on his arrival, praying for his success, and expressing their loyalty; they concluded by entreating him not to think unfavourably of them for continuing in Ireland, and submitting to a power they could not resist, and by which continuance they had been enabled to serve both the church and his majesty. He answered in his usual cold and moderate manner, that he came to free them from popish tyranny, and doubted not by divine assistance to complete his design; permitting them to appoint a day of public and solemn thanksgiving, and to compose a form of prayer for the occasion. But this fair augury of peace and tranquillity was clouded by some injudicious measures, which forcibly illustrate the mischiefs resulting from mingling secular interests with religious differences, the one adding asperity to the other, interposing selfish advantages to the conciliating spirit which should ever accompany the other principle.

Among the causes which rendered the government of William unpopular were, his commands that all present tenants of protestant subjects were to pay their rents to their respective landlords, and that the tenants of those who were concerned in rebellion should detain their rents until the commissioners of his revenue should decide to whom they were to be paid. As to the leaders of the rebellion, he declared his resolution to leave

them to the event of war. A pardon thus limited, and so expressly indicating to those who had engaged in the cause of James that they had no alternative, but that of obstinately continuing the contest, is with justice imputed to the influence of those English who were impatient for the forfeitures. The commissioners, actuated by the same mercenary spirit, seized without mercy, and dreadfully harassed the country, while protections which had been granted to the peasantry were so shamefully violated that they crowded to their old leaders and took up arms for security.

Thus, when every thing seemed leading the way to peace, were the Irish urged by their characteristic jealousy of any invasion of their rights to renew the war with every passion exasperated and every principle in action which can render an enemy dangerous and desperate. The aspersions which James had thrown upon their national courage had fired them with the resolve to redeem it. Their religion they now saw on the point of being extinguished; the wreck of their property seized by strangers; no security from submission; no reliance on promises of pardon. Governed by their priests and elated by the successes of France, they determined to prosecute the war, and when Waterford was summoned by William the garrison demanded the enjoyment of their estates, the freedom of their religion, and liberty to march out with arms and baggage. The last article only was admitted, and the place surrendered to the determined foe. Having reduced this and several other places, William intended to leave the prosecution of the war to his generals, and to quit Ireland; but finding that the secret machinations of his enemies had been defeated, he resolved to remain some time longer. The war therefore continued with unabated violence, attended with

atrocities and distresses revolting to the imagination. The miserable inhabitants, of whatever party and denomination, fled from the outrages of the soldiery to their respective friends, but even then found no security. The contending armies were equally distressed, for unpaid and unprovided, they supplied their wants by ravage without distinction of parties, regard to protections or faith of promises. In short, unhappy Ireland was become the terrible scene of whatever can mark human debasement and human depravity.

To give some check to the hideous aggravations of war which desolated the country, the new lords justices laboured to give form to the civil government. The commission of forfeitures found so oppressive was superseded; lords lieutenants were appointed in the several counties, subject to the English power; commissions granted to the officers of the militia, who were armed in order to defend their properties, and a privy council constituted of such men as were esteemed most attached to the new government. With a particular, and perhaps a necessary severity, it was ordained, that papists of every county should be responsible for the ravages committed by those of their communion, and that where a number of Rapparees were collected, no popish priest should be suffered to reside. Some weak attempts were made to correct the disorders of the army, but with little effect, the officers treating the civil power with indifference; the soldiers acknowledged no superior but their officers, while the foreigners made no distinction, and the suffering people exclaimed that the army were worse than rapparees, although they acknowledged that the Dutch were an honourable exemption from this censure. Having named that class of individuals who were distinguished by

the title of Rapparees, we will explain the nature of the annoyance which was derived from them.

To aggravate the distresses we have named, as arising from a rapacious army, the country swarmed every where with those lawless banditti, who, unrestrained by any laws, lived in a state of savage nature. We have already alluded to them under the designation of *Creaghts*, as forming the army of Owen O'Nial, in the rebellion of 1641. At the conclusion of that war they were far from being suppressed, but plundering in every district they visited, roving for subsistence, were at once dreaded and detested by their countrymen, they continued their depredations during the reign of Charles II., and under the name of tories became an object of government attention. These lawless marauders were ready to seize any opportunity of public disorder, to extend their ravages, and multiply their numbers. At the period of our retrospect we now allude to, they readily obeyed the call of the priests, who at every mass exhorted all men to take arms, and stand prepared for war. Arming themselves with a weapon easily procured, namely a sort of half pike, they took their designation from the Irish name of their weapon, *rapparee*. Their weapons were carefully concealed, but ever ready for execution. They assembled in the dead of night in solitary places, projected their enterprises, rushed suddenly on their destined victims, vanished to their inaccessible retreats on the first appearance of opposition, and as readily collected. Many united with these lawless miscreants, some influenced by example, others urged by dire necessity. In summer, they hung about the English camp, killing every straggler they found, for the sake of his arms and clothing; and in the horrid rage of national hatred, frequently mangling the



body they stripped. Through the whole dreary season of the year, the English forces were every where harassed in pursuit of these banditti. The Irish soldiers were frequently permitted to join their troops, and to encourage and share their disorders ; the English frequently found it necessary to repel them by another body of marauders of their own party, who were called protestant rapparees. Thus did the sacred distinctions of religion become the distinguishing appellations of freebooters and murderers.

We may imagine the conduct and the horrors of this war, when we recollect the character of the agents who were employed in its prosecution. Nothing but a general reduction of the kingdom could, it was evident, terminate those calamities which Ireland had experienced for ages with little interruption, which now appeared to have reached their maximum, and which were at once the cause and the effect of that restless, litigious, and complaining spirit, which forms so dark a shade in the moral portraiture of the Irish.

But unhappily it had ever been the private interest of officers of state, and the considerable English settlers in Ireland, that rebels should be exterminated rather than reconciled. Hence many obstacles were thrown in the way of conciliation, and a final decision of the war; thus was a nation's happiness, a nation's prosperity, nay, the very existence of the Irish as a people, sacrificed to private passions and isolated interests. On the part of the Irish, a determination of resistance was general, notwithstanding the repeated successes of the enemy. Those of them who inclined to the French interest, still sanguinely rested on that feeble reed. They who had bravely sustained the fury of battle, imputed their ill success to the weakness and inexperience

of their associates, entertaining hopes of future success from the lessons derived from experience. They who had weakly yielded in the hour of trial, stung with the reproaches of their stronger companions, impatiently desired to retrieve their honour. They who had espoused the cause of James from principle, who had fought for their country and their religion, and what they deemed their rightful property, reflected seriously and painfully on the fearful situation of their party. Aware of the real power of the English government, they entertained no hope of pardon; nothing remained to them but, by some desperate exertion of valour, to make a revolution in the state of affairs. "It is your fault," said their prisoners to the English officers, "that you have so many enemies; we are sensible of our unhappiness in depending on the French, but you have made it necessary for us; we must, and will, and are prepared to fight it out." What can more forcibly illustrate the desperate resolves of an oppressed people than this remark? Thus it was, that actuated each by his peculiar motives, the whole Irish party concurred in the determination of bringing their long protracted contest to the decision of the field.

The fate of Ireland now hung on the event of one desperate effort; whether the English power was at length to be unalterably established in the harassed country, or whether it was to be once more exposed to the dreadful calamities of a protracted intestine war, depended on the event of a few days. The minds of all men were strained to the extremest tension of anxiety and expectation. General Ginckle, with eighteen thousand men, was now to attack an enemy amounting to twenty-five thousand most advantageously posted. St. Ruth, the general of James, from his com-

manding situation, had a full view of the English ; he saw them prepare for battle, and drew out his main army in front of his camp ; the sight was grand and imposing ; he rode to every squadron and battalion, he reminded the Irish officers that their future fortune hung on the issue of one encounter ; their honour, their liberty, their estates, were the great objects for which they were to fight ; but what was far superior even to them, they were now to establish their holy religion on such a firm basis, as the powers of hell and heresy should never shake ; that the dearest interests, and most honourable engagements of this life, and the ravishing prospects of eternal happiness, called for a vigorous exertion of that valour, which their enemies affected to deny that they possessed. The priests proceeded through the ranks, inspiring by every means the soldiers with the same sentiments, and we are even told, obliging them to swear on the holy sacrament, that they would not desert their colours. Urged by their personal sufferings and political discontents, these appeals easily roused their enthusiasm to the highest pitch, and with all the impatience of the national character, the Irish burned with ardour for the battle.

The engagement that ensued may well be imagined desperate ; it continued in suspense during the whole of the day, when at a critical moment a cannon-ball deprived the gallant St. Ruth of life. His body was instantly conveyed away, but the intelligence of his death ran through the ranks ; they became confounded and disordered, and as the order of battle had not been communicated to Sarsfield, on whom the command devolved, he could not support the dispositions of the deceased St. Ruth. The English pressed forward, drove the enemy from the camp, pur-

sued their advantage until the Irish, after an engagement supported with the fairest prospect of success, while they had a general to direct their valour, fled precipitately. In the battle, and a bloody pursuit of three miles, seven thousand of the Irish army were slain; the whole materiel of the army was taken, together with thirty-two colours, destined as a present to the queen.

Such was the victory of the English army; General Ginckle wisely considered that the season of action was quickly wasting, that the Irish war was a grievous embarrassment to the continental interests of William, and a dangerous encouragement to the disaffected in England, he therefore wished to terminate it at once, and suffered as many of the Irish as chose to retire to Limerick. In this last retreat the Irish made a brave defence. The winter approached, and Ginckle had made no decisive effect upon the place; at length a parley was beat, a cessation granted, and an amicable intercourse opened between the contending parties. As Ginckle had urgent instructions to terminate the war on any terms, he was ready to receive the proposals of capitulation. They were, however, so exorbitant, they could not be acceded to consistent with the laws of England, or the honour of the general; he therefore resolved to continue the siege. By a second deputation, he was desired to propose such terms on his part as he could grant. Every thing conspired to induce General Ginckle to renew the treaty. The Irish, it is true, had offered terms little consistent with their desperate situation; but General Ginckle, with a liberality and honour worthy of his profession and the responsibility he held, made his propositions as to men who claimed attention and indulgence, and such

as the Irish, had they even been victors, could hardly have refused with prudence. He agreed that all in arms should receive a pardon, that their estates should be restored, their attainders annulled, their outlawries reversed; that all Roman Catholics should enjoy the same toleration with regard to their religion as in the reign of Charles II., and that no oath should be required of any except that of allegiance; that should the troops, or any number of them, choose to retire into foreign service, they should be conveyed to the continent at the expense of the king.

Those Irish who had submitted on less liberal terms, were mortified at these large concessions, and by those protestants who lived in an habitual hatred and horror of the Irish, they were regarded with indignation, as well as by those who studied the extension and security of the English interests, or were impatient to enjoy the estates of their enemies. But the views, peculiar circumstances, and interests of William, rendered them necessary; nor ought we to doubt, that they were in part, at least, dictated by equity and humanity. "There was," says Dalrymple, "a simplicity, an elevation, and a utility in all the actions of William's life." It is fair, then, to believe, that higher principles than mere selfishness and policy actuated the prince on this occasion. William was conscious that the Irish had engaged in the present contest, upon principles honourable to man; they fought for a king of their own religion, by whom they naturally hoped to be restored to those advantages their ancestors had forfeited, or which, in the conflicts of parties, they had themselves lost.

On the first of October, the lords justices arrived in the camp; they signed the articles,

together with General Ginckle, and thus a period was put to the war, which threatened the Romish party with utter ruin.

In consequence of this treaty, about fourteen thousand of those who had fought for King James passed over to France, having transports provided by government for conveying them thither. Thus all expectations which the exiled king might have formed from Ireland were frustrated, the kingdom submitting quietly to the English government. Yet were the hopes of James not entirely dispelled by the reduction, although the Highland chieftains, who favoured his cause, were also exterminated.

In the picture we have given of this final contest in Ireland, we have no records remaining that are sufficiently clear and minute to admit of an unmixed detail of ecclesiastical affairs.

The reduction of Ireland being thus effected, Baron Ginckle returned to England, where he received the thanks of the parliament for his eminent services, and was created Earl of Athlone by his majesty.\* Notwithstanding these fair appearances, however, we shall find in pursuing our detail, that although the blood-stained sword was sheathed, the prejudices which had caused

\* Athlone, a town of Westmeath, situated on both sides of the Shannon, both parts connected by a high raised and well built bridge, in the centre of which stands a monument, with figures cut in the marble, together with the arms of Queen Elizabeth, and some inscriptions, denoting the period of its foundation, and the founders. The castle was built by King John, on some land

belonging to St. Peter's Abbey, for which he granted a compensation. It is built on elevated ground, a or high-raised mound, resembling a Danish rath or fort. Formerly there were two convents or monasteries. This town gives the title of earl to the family of Ginckle, in commemoration of the eminent services rendered by the general of that name in 1691.



it to be drawn were still the same ; and that things seen through this distorted medium were ever found sufficient to produce animosity, jealousy, and dispute. The credulity of some, the rashness of others, the violence of passion, and incidental circumstances, all combined to magnify evils, and to apologize for opposition. The English and the Irish differed so much in their early associations, in their religious opinions, in their customs, and even in their temperament, that they appeared as if they never could arrive at any point of agreement. All these causes of disunion were augmented and heightened by the contracting spirit of bigotry, which can only be dispelled by diffusing the light of knowledge, and the introduction, by early instruction, of that pure faith, which has such a tendency to enlarge the mind, and to free it from the bondage of mere speculation, and false intemperate zeal.

Other causes of discontent and distress also still existed. These were the various restrictions laid upon the Irish trade, and the invariable preference given by government to the manufactures of England. On the part of England, it was supposed that as Ireland had been subdued by force of arms, the inhabitants ought in every respect to be regarded as a subject state, and of course that the English interest in reference to it, ought to be consulted and promoted without attention to the effect it might have on the dependent power. Hence have arisen various grievances, suspicions, and complaints against government. The Irish, jealous to excess of their rights, heated with their theological contests, and continually excited to mingle their religious opinions with their secular interests, regarded their relative situation with respect to England in a

very different view. They rejected all ideas of dependence upon the British ministry and parliament, and though they acknowledged William's right by conquest, they disclaimed all authority of the British parliament, and of course regarded the restrictions on their trade and other acts affecting them as grievous and intolerable oppressions. Unfortunately, in dealing with a people thus prejudiced, and thus lofty, the policy has ever been to suppress the murmurings of discontent, rather than to remove their causes, and having effected in any degree the former, the latter have been either neglected or forgotten. Hence do they brood in secret, continually acquiring fresh malignancy in the estimation of the sufferers, and exciting a combustible spirit, ready to catch the smallest spark directed by circumstances to inflame it. We have seen that William was at least in part urged by the pressure of his continental affairs to expedite the reduction of Ireland, indeed so great were his apprehensions for the balance of power, and the fluctuating interests of Europe, that they absorbed every other concern. His prevailing motive for accepting the English crown, was to engage the kingdom more deeply and effectually in this great object of his care and ambition, and in the prosecution of it, he became unmindful of the cultivation of the internal polity which keeps down faction, and softens party spirit. He formed alliances abroad, but neglected to observe the growing influence of party at home. Hence, gradually arose a disrespect of his authority, a laxity of political morals, a neglect of those pursuits which confer honour, and produce refinement, and the elevation of the unworthy to those distinctions which should be the meed of the upright patriot

alone. On accepting the crown, William had resolved to preserve as much of the prerogative as possible, and he asserted it in one point beyond the example of his predecessors, that of refusing his assent to some bills that had passed both houses. From this and other causes there were perpetual disputes between him and his parliaments. His whole heart and views bent upon his foreign conquests, William was led to sacrifice every thing for the means of enabling him to pursue them, provided the parliament supplied him with resources, he permitted them to rule the internal polity their own way. In fact, fatigued with opposition, he admitted every restraint upon the prerogative of England, did he but obtain the means of humbling the pride of France. The sums granted for this purpose were incredible. But when the general pacification took place, William experienced the evil of the parties he had suffered to gain ascendancy. Perplexed and harassed by their oppositions, presumptuous, and contending interests, he regarded his English seat of power as one of labour, disquietude and altercation, and he quitted it as often as he could to enjoy the pleasures of his Dutch palace of Loo. If thus unmindful of the factions formed in his immediate seat of government, William cannot be expected to have paid much attention to the affairs of Ireland, of which indeed the record is very scanty and unsatisfactory from this period. We find by the reports of the English parliament of 1692, that the discontents of the nation were inflamed by complaints from Ireland, where Lord Sidney was said to rule with severe and despotic authority. These complaints were officially communicated by several eminent persons who were examined at the bar of the house. Both

houses concurred in the inquiry of the allegations, and the result was, that great abuses had taken place in disposing of the forfeited estates (that never ending source of contention). That protections had been granted to the Irish, not included in the articles of Limerick, so that protestants were deprived of the benefit of the law against them, with various other grounds of complaint. The Commons in their address to the king upon this subject, were particularly free in explaining the abuses and mismanagement of the Irish government, by exposing the protestants to the free quarter and violence of a licentious army, by recruiting the troops with Irish papists, who had been in open rebellion, by granting protections to Irish Roman Catholics, whereby the course of the law was arrested, by reverting outlawries against treason, not comprehended in the articles of Limerick, by letting the forfeited estates at an under value, &c. These abuses his majesty was humbly entreated to redress, as they greatly encouraged the papists, and injured the protestant interest in Ireland. Promises of particular attention to these remonstrances were given, but no material step was taken to remedy the evils complained of. The Lords Sidney, Athlone, and Coningsby, who appeared to have possessed great part of the forfeitures by grants from the crown, and another individual who had been guilty of great acts of oppression, continued in the enjoyment of their property, and were not called to any account respecting their abuse of power.

Thus the spirit of party early manifested itself, for Sidney although possessing a character so opposite to William, was yet a favourite, and the stream of honour, preferment and favour, was evidently on the side of the whigs or the court party. Ireland partook of the same party spirit, and was

infected with the same factions, of course the results were nearly similar, or only modified by national peculiarities. During the government of Lord Capel in 1695, the Irish papists it would appear were treated with much oppression, and with a great disregard of equity and moderation. In a parliament which he convened, the attainders and acts passed in the *pretended* parliament of king James were annulled, one was framed in order to prevent foreign education, also one for disarming papists, and one for settling the estates of intestates. The assuming power of the lord deputy excited the jealousy and resentment of the opposite party, and Sir Charles Porter, the chancellor attempted to court popularity by espousing the cause of the Irish against the severity of the administration. He succeeded in forming a kind of tory interest which thwarted Lord Capel in all his measures, and of course disturbed the administration, and created intrigues, jealousies, and secret resentments, with all their concomitant political evils. This spirit of opposition was manifested in various instances, and even the press was employed in aid of the principles which the immoderate exercise of power had called into action. William Mollineux, a gentleman of Dublin, published a work in order to prove that Ireland was totally independent of the English parliament. The latter indignant at this assumption, appointed a committee to inquire into the cause and nature of this literary performance, and bold assertion, and an address was voted to the king, that he would direct the means for the discovery and punishment of the author of a work so inflammatory. The commons in a body presented an address to his majesty accordingly, representing the dangerous attempts made by his subjects of Ireland, to throw off their subjection

and dependence upon England, attempts apparent not only from the pernicious assertions of the book recently submitted to their examination, but also more unequivocally and plainly by proceedings and votes in the Irish commons. His majesty was humbly besought to give effectual orders for preventing such encroachments for the future, and the pernicious consequences of what was past, by punishing those who had been guilty, and to discourage every thing which might have a tendency to lessen the dependence of Ireland upon England. The king promised compliance. But it was the Irish forfeitures which still seemed to be the great cause of contention, and the English parliament made them a plea to gratify their spleen against the king, whom they appeared resolved to mortify, by prosecuting his ministers and calling in question their acts. These "anti-courtiers" believed they could not more effectually annoy, than by inquiring into the Irish forfeitures, which the king had distributed among his dependents. Seven commissioners were appointed to examine these particulars, four of these were animated with all the virulence of faction, the other three were secretly guided by ministerial influence. It was not likely therefore, that the subject would be dispassionately, moderately, or equitably considered. In fact, they proceeded with a severity which clearly manifested the bias of their minds, and indicated resentment to the court, rather than a love of justice, an abhorrence of corruption, or a sincere desire to arrive at the truth. The result of the whole was, that the commons of England came to the resolution, (presented to the king in the form of an address,) that the procuring and passing those grants had occasioned great debts upon the nation, and heavy



taxes upon the people, as well as highly reflected upon the king's honour, and that the officers and instruments concerned in the same, had highly failed in the performance of their trust and duty. The king replied to this disrespectful address that he was not only led by inclination, but urged by a sense of justice and duty to reward those who had served well in the reduction of Ireland, out of the estates forfeited to him by the rebellion. The commons however, prepared, finished, and passed a bill of resumption. That justice might be done to purchasers and creditors in this act of resumption, thirteen trustees were empowered to hear and determine the claims relating to these estates, to sell them to the best purchasers, the proceeds to be appropriated to pay the arrears of the army. William was of course extremely chagrined at the bill which he considered as an invasion upon his prerogative, a personal insult and an injury to his friends and servants. He resolved at all hazards to prevent its passing into a law, but he was overruled in his purpose by the remonstrances and entreaties of those in whom he confided. These circumstances however increased his disgust at his situation, nor could he dissemble his resentment. His habitual reserve increased even to sullenness, his peevishness became morose; these peculiarities of temper were ascribed to his dislike of the English people, when in fact they arose from the perplexities, the aggravations, and the narrow-minded oppositions of party. This situation would soon have been intolerable to William, (who, however he delighted in the field of military warfare, possessed not the popular qualities which distinguish in that of politics,) had not an event occurred which gave a fair plea for engaging once more in the tumults of the former, and which

moreover rendered his parliament ready to assist in his engaging in a new continental war. This event was the decease of the exiled James, and the consequent violation of the peace of Ryswic by the French king's acknowledgement of the son under the title of James the third, king of Great Britain and Ireland. The parliament, much as they thwarted and opposed William, entered warmly into the indignity offered him by the French monarch, they passed a bill of attainder against the prince for assuming the title of king of England, and also a bill obliging all persons holding any office in church or state, to abjure his claim to the crown. William thus supported in his favourite scheme, was making vast preparations for opening a brilliant campaign, when a fall from his horse threw him into a fever, which put a period to his life, but by no means to the bold designs he had formed. The early declaration of Anne, that she was resolved to pursue the objects of the grand alliance, dissipated the hopes of the French, which the death of William had created, while they revived the spirits of the confederates, naturally depressed by that event.

We must now regard the political machine to be actuated by two noblemen connected by family interest as well as political views, Lord Godolphin being placed at the head of the treasury, and Marlborough being appointed commander in chief of the English forces, and ambassador extraordinary to the states. We have thus brought our retrospect to the close of the seventeenth century. The paucity of materials on the minutiae of ecclesiastical affairs in Ireland, has obliged us to combine with them those political changes which involved them, and ere we proceed in the mingled detail, we will once more review the general state

of religious and other parties, glance at the literature and its effects upon the manners and the morals of the people to the period which opens to us the events of the eighteenth century.

## CHAPTER XXV.

*Ecclesiastical polity—Convocation—Its nature—English constitution—Collision of parties subsequent to the Reformation—William favourable to the Nonconformists—Act of Toleration—Perplexities flowing from the endless diversity of sects—Schism in the church—Nonjurors—High church—Arminians and Quakers—Literature—Newton—Boyle, &c.—Wilkins—Royal Society—Polite literature—Causes of national debasement—Great influence of books.*

WE paused in our general retrospect at that period of anarchy and confusion, when the ecclesiastical constitution of England and Ireland was overthrown by the storms of faction, after having long been undermined by the insidious efforts of hypocrisy and fanaticism. On the restoration of Charles the second to the throne of his ancestors, the ecclesiastical establishment reverted to its former state. Its government revived, and episcopacy was reinstated in the seat from which it had been hurled. Since the reign of Henry the eighth, the kings of England were, we have seen, styled in all public acts the supreme heads of the church. The title, however, we are not to regard as conveying a spiritual supremacy, but only as denoting the regal power to prevent any ecclesiastical differences, or in other words, to substitute the king in place of the pope, before the reformation. With regard to temporalities and the internal economy of the church, the kings of England never intermeddle in ecclesiastical disputes, but are contented to give a sanction to

the legal rights of the clergy. The ecclesiastical government of England being, properly speaking, lodged in the convocation, which is a national representation or synod, and answered nearly to that of a parliament. They were convoked at the same time with every parliament, and their business was to discuss upon, and consider the state of the church, to call those to account who advanced new opinions inconsistent with, or subversive of the doctrines of the church of England,

The powers of this convocation were, however, carried to such a height, that it was found at length inconsistent with the principles of religious toleration, and even encroached on civil liberty. The crown was necessitated to exert its prerogative of calling the members together, and dissolving them; and they have now long ceased to form a separate body for the purpose of business.

King, church, and people; lords, prelates, and commons, form the fabric of the British constitution: each have their peculiar duties, privileges, and rights; the invasion of any of which destroys the symmetry of the edifice, as well as undermines its foundation. Each have their rights sanctioned and established by law; and one violation of justice in regard to any, endangers the safety of the whole. Superficial and unreflecting indeed must be the mind which does not perceive, that when once the ideas of mankind are confounded on subjects which they have ever held sacred, venerable, or respectable; and when deficiency of principle, or a general carelessness respecting moral obligations and religious sanctions takes place, the invasion of rights naturally follows; and that not singly, but in a train of encroachments: and it is generally found, that those who committed the first violation, are as generally the first to experience the effects of

their own pernicious doctrines. These remarks were strongly exemplified in the collision of parties, which agitated the religious world subsequent to the reformation. On complicated questions, indeed, it cannot be expected that men will unite in opinion; the stronger minds—those most earnestly and sincerely engaged in the search of truth, and animated by a sincere principle of diffusing good, are yet prone to receive a bias, by thinking long in the same track; and, in the warmth of zeal, are too apt to depart from charity and meekness towards those who differ; nay, sometimes to reflect with asperity upon those, who with equal sincerity, may yet view the subject of difference in another light. Thus, amidst the complication of disputes in which men were involved, at the period we now review, we may observe, that the appellation of puritan alone indicated three parties, virulent against each other, from the shades of difference which distinguished them. There were the political puritans, who maintained the highest opinions of civil liberty; in fact, were pure republicans: the puritans in discipline, who opposed and abhorred the ceremonies and episcopal government of the church: and the doctrinal puritans, who rigidly defended the speculative system of the first reformers. The reformation had given great freedom of discussion on religious matters: men no longer restrained from unveiling the supposed errors of the church, boldly investigated the foundations of their faith; and the disciples of the various sects produced by this investigation, keenly censured and questioned the tenets of each other. Hence, numberless disputes agitated the minds of men, of no importance to the real religion; serving only to cloud its lustre, and injure its simplicity. The spirit of infidelity



kept pace with that of enthusiasm ; and as the sectaries or nonconformists disputed respecting the unessential doctrines of scripture, they boldly denied, or insidiously undermined the authority, and called in question the credibility of the whole, by their sophistical arguments or daring assertions. Charles II. having revived episcopacy in England, extended the same alteration to Scotland and Ireland ; and a law was enacted, by which all who refused to observe the rites, and subscribe to the doctrines of the church of England, were entirely excluded from her communion. From this period to the revolution, the non-conformists were in a precarious and fluctuating state ; sometimes in calamity and great trouble ; at others enjoying partial gleams of hope, according as the varying spirit of the court and the ministry directed affairs ; but never entirely free from perplexity and fear.

But in 1689, their affairs took a favourable turn. William had a bias to Calvinism, and was, from principle, averse from persecution. He experienced much vexation and opposition from the church of England, which greatly alienated him from its interests. This resentment, concurring with his principles, determined him to remove the obstacles affixed to non-conformity, and to render all protestant dissenters capable of enjoying and exercising civil employments. He endeavoured to do away the sacramental test, as necessary to render them competent to places of trust and power ; but could only effect the framing of an act for the toleration of all protestant dissenters, except Socinians ; and thus relieved them from the penalties to which they had been subjected by the act of conformity, and other acts passed during the sway of the house of Stuart. This act of toleration was extended to Ireland and Scot-

land; the latter, being permitted thereby to follow the ecclesiastical discipline of Geneva, was freed from the jurisdiction of bishops, and from the peculiar forms of worship annexed to the episcopacy.

It is from this period, we must date the liberty and tranquillity of the dissenters from the church of England. We must however refer to the religious liberty at this time granted, the continual increase and multiplicity of religious sects and factions which have arisen, and still continue to arise, among the sectarian protestants; and the various perplexities, divisions, and controversies naturally flowing from that diversity.

In the reign of William, divisions among the friends of episcopacy ran so high, that they terminated in that memorable schism in the church of England, in which originated the terms high and low church. It was the strong desire, and favourite scheme of William, to comprehend all the protestants of his dominions in one union; but the measure was strongly opposed, as a step at once dangerous and inconsistent with the honour, duty, and welfare of the church. The agitation of this question was attended with great heat and acrimony; but the cause of schism in the church itself, was the scruple of conscience which deterred Sancroft, archbishop of Canterbury, and seven other prelates, equally distinguished for probity, learning, and piety, from taking the oath of allegiance to William. The ground of this refusal, was their opinion, that although James II. was banished from his dominions, he yet remained their rightful sovereign. The non-jurors, as they were termed, contended, that Christianity was a doctrine of the cross; that no pretence whatever could justify an insurrection against the sovereign; that the primitive Christians had been passive under every invasion

of their rights, affording a plain example to all men; that non-resistance was the fundamental doctrine of the English church, confirmed by all the sanctions that could be derived from the laws of God and man. The other party, on the contrary, not only supported the natural rights of man, and explained the use that might be made of the doctrine of non-resistance in exciting commotions; but they also argued, that if passive obedience was right in any instance, it was clearly so in regard to the existing government, the obedience required by scripture being indiscriminate. "The powers that be are ordained of God." "Let every soul be subject to the higher powers." From these texts they inferred, that the new oaths ought to be taken; and that those who refused them, concealed party spirit under the cloak of conscience. The non-conformists retorted, that those opinions levelled all distinctions of duty and justice; that those who held such opinions, attached themselves solely to persuasion, not right; therefore, if there were a succession of usurpers, they, of course, in consistency with their principles, would recognise the last, however unjust might be the means which had been used in the acquirement of power. With these sentiments, they vilified the bishops who acknowledged William, as apostates and base temporisers. The conscientious scruples of the primate, and the seven bishops, being insurmountable, they were suspended from their sacred functions, and deprived of their sees, which were filled by other prelates of eminent character, but whose principles were not opposed to the existing government. The deposed bishops, and the clergy holding the same sentiments, formed a distinct episcopal church, differing in certain points of doctrine, and other circumstances

of public worship, from the regular established church. This community received the denomination of non-jurors, on account of their refusing the oaths of allegiance. They were also called the *high church*, on account of the high notions they entertained of the dignity and power of the church, and the extent they gave to its prerogatives and jurisdiction ; assertions of power which had been naturally created by the gradually encroaching influence of the sectaries, which had induced the friends and supporters of the established church to rally their forces ; nothing therefore could be more unfortunate than the division which this scruple of conscience produced, both as giving a plea to the enemies of the church to impugn its weakness and to deride its disunion, as well as actually decreasing and injuring its power and respectability. Those who had disapproved of this schism, who had distinguished themselves by their moderation towards the dissenters, or were less ardent in extending the limits of ecclesiastical authority were denominated low churchmen. The bishops who were deprived and those who espoused their cause openly maintained that the church was altogether independent on the jurisdiction of the king and parliament, subject to the authority of God alone, and fully empowered to govern itself by its own laws ; consequently that the sentence against those prelates by the great council of the nation was destitute of justice and validity, as it was only by a decree of an ecclesiastical council that a bishop could be deposed. This lofty idea of the prerogatives and authority of the church produced bitter controversies too nice and intricate ever to arrive at conclusion. In conformity to the principles of the non-juring clergy, they considered the bishops, although deposed, rightful possessors of the dignity as long

as they lived, and those who occupied their sees as unjust possessors of ecclesiastical dignities, rebels against the state, as well as schismatics in the church. All who held communion were of course chargeable with rebellion and schism. They pronounced this schism which rent the church a most heinous sin, whose punishment must inevitably fall heavy upon all those who did not return sincerely to the bosom of the true church, from which they had departed.

Among those who thus incurred the anathemas of their bretheren were Tillotson, Moore, Patrick, Kidder, Fowler, and Cumberland, whose names are associated with all we can conceive of solid worth, profound learning, and exalted piety, and who appear in history as fair pillars in the temple of the English church.

We are to consider the term high church as now of more extensive meaning than we have named as distinguishing this schism, as it is now applied to all those, who though far from being non-jurors or otherwise disaffected towards the present establishment, yet from high conceptions of the authority and jurisdiction of the church, would support its superiority of rank in the state.

During this century there also sprang from the bosom of the reformed church two sects, "whose birth and progress were for a long period painful as well as perplexing to the parent who bore them:" these were the Arminians and Quakers. Indeed the unbounded liberty which every individual in England enjoys in publishing without restraint his religious opinions and worshipping God in the manner dictated by his conscience, must necessarily produce a variety of sects and give rise to an uninterrupted succession of controversies about theological matters. Unfortu-

nately it is not in our power to direct the faculties of men without restraining them. Hence the fanaticism of any particular train of ideas has too often led to violent actions and an illiberal spirit, by becoming united with human interests, for rare indeed is it to meet with individuals who attach themselves by lively zeal to an opinion independently of the results it may produce upon their general interests.

The age of which we now treat was far from being so favourable to polite literature as to the sciences, for until the revolution the liberty of the press was very imperfectly enjoyed. Amidst the dense obscurations of bigotry and ignorance which marked so large a portion of this period, there were some brilliant stars, whose irradiations have been attended by a luminous train of intellectual light, illuminating even our present times; stars destined to maintain their high ascendant till the end of time. The name of Newton stands pre-eminent on this exalted list; in him we contemplate the greatest and the rarest genius that ever arose for the ornament and the instruction of the world. "While all the grandeur of other days is now mouldering into forgetfulness," says the energetic Chalmers, "the achievements of our great astronomer are still fresh in the remembrance of his countrymen, and they carry him forward in the stream of time with a reputation ever gathering and the triumphs of a distinction that will never die." And what has conferred upon him that high distinction among mankind? Not only the discoveries he made by unveiling the mysteries of nature, but his modesty and intellectual courage in rejecting every thing which he could not demonstrate, and which while he proceeded undauntedly in his march of intellect, more anxious to merit than to acquire fame, led him to ponder



every step, and as he passed through the rich and magnificent field of his discoveries, to suffer no glare of imagination or of prejudice to seduce him from his path. Let us learn a lesson of humility from this truly great man, who appears to us more indeed as a high intelligence to whom the mysteries of nature were unfolded. A short time before he quitted the world to which his spirit was so superior, he said, "I do not know what I may seem to the world, but as to myself I seem to be only like a boy playing on the sea shore, and diverting myself now and then finding a smoother pebble or prettier shell than ordinary, while the great ocean of truth lies all undiscovered before me." Well may we say with the eminent author we have quoted, as we contemplate the moral portraiture of Newton, rendered attractive and holy by the purest sense of religion, "I cannot forbear to do honour to the unpretending greatness of Newton, than whom I know not if ever there lighted on the face of our world one in the character of whose admirable genius so much force and so much humility were more attractively blended." It would carry our digression too far to enumerate even the names of the men of superior genius who at this period drew on themselves and their several countries the regard and attention of the civilized world. Besides a Newton and a Boyle, England could boast the eminent mathematicians Wilkins, Wren, Wallis, the patient Hooke, and Sydenham, the restorer of true physical science.

Wilkins was a clergyman and had married Cromwell's sister; he was afterwards Bishop of Chester: with him a few congenial spirits established conferences for the mutual communication and improvement of their philosophical discoveries. Immediately after the restoration these intellec-

tual friends procured a patent from Charles, and augmenting their number, formed what is known by the denomination of the Royal Society. In regard to polite literature, although perhaps we may regard the period of the restoration as that when our language assumed much facility and clearness, as well as fluency and grace, from the study of the French literature, yet it is far from being justly termed the Augustan age of England, for though mere style was improved, yet the sentiments conveyed by the refined language partook far too largely of that great licentiousness which marked the morals of the times. In no period of the history of our country had so many causes combined to injure the national character. In the tumultuous struggles for power and the general anarchy, riotous intemperance marked the habits of the men, who frequently became the victims of ambition and the tools of desperate leaders.

The licentiousness of those who were instigated by pride, poverty, and passion to set their lives at hazard, was scarcely more destructive to morals than the horrid hypocrisy which succeeded. In the first instance the calamitous circumstances of the times had precluded attention to education, and the restraints of authority were relaxed, while the ruin of individuals deprived them of the means of instruction for their children. When fanaticism triumphed, learning was regarded either with abhorrence or contempt. In this deteriorated state, Charles was called to assume authority, but he was during the whole period of his reign too much involved in pecuniary difficulties, the natural result of his licentious habits, to be the efficient encourager of learning like his proud contemporary, Louis.

Among the causes and effects of this debasement of national purity and refinement we may

confidently rank the degradation of the female character. The free principles of the times had loosened the bonds of relative affection as well as those of authority; the characters of women were so much altered during the progress of the national troubles that we can hardly recognise them as a part of the same community as the English, and this particularly illustrates the evils of revolutions, which level the distinguishing grades of civil and moral being. "The young women," remarks Lord Clarendon, "conversed without circumspection or modesty, and frequently met at taverns and common eating-houses. They who were stricter and more severe in their deportment became the wives of the seditious preachers, or of the officers in the army, while the daughters of noble and illustrious families bestowed themselves upon the divines of the time or other low and unequal matches." Till this calamitous period it had been customary to give females a learned education, by which, if it sometimes produced pedantry, the intellectual resources of women were the security of their moral conduct, as their studies were generally directed to the sources which strengthened their moral and religious principles. But when the national troubles deprived individuals of the power of obtaining those advantages, they soon became undervalued in the estimation of society. Thus the very springs of instruction were closed, or if a few rills yet remained, they were polluted by licentiousness or rendered disgusting by fanaticism; but not only did this selfish spirit interfere with private and domestic instruction, it also even suspended its public use. The pious and observant Evelyn remarks in his journal, that during the tyranny of the common-wealth, he was accustomed on Sunday afternoon to catechise and instruct his family. "These exercises," he adds,

“ universally ceasing in the parish churches, so as people had no principles, and grew very ignorant of even the common points of Christianity; all devotion being now placed in hearing sermons and discourses of speculative and national things.”

It is an assertion of which experience attests the truth, that where the women sink in character, where the household and feminine virtues have no longer estimation, manly dignity, probity, and honour and national prosperity must be endangered, weakened, and destroyed. Sir William Temple bears witness to this lamentable demoralization of the period. He says, “ I have seen no country so generally corrupted as my own by a common pride and affectation of despising and laughing at all force of order, and virtue, and conformity to laws, which after all,” he emphatically adds, “ are qualities that most conduce both to the happiness of a public state and the ease of private life.”

Amongst those who had the disgraceful and lamentable pre-eminence in debasing and corrupting the public morals by the perversion of talents, and the unprincipled use of the keen weapons of ridicule, stands conspicuous Lord Goring, whose life so injurious to the morals of his country was ended in a Spanish Dominican convent, for passing from the extreme of profligacy to that of superstition, he assumed the monastic habit.

Buckingham followed in his sins, abusing all the advantages of fortune, station, and talents to the worst purposes, and with other compeers in wickedness made the court of Charles a scene of depravity. Most of the writers of this age indeed present evidences of genius perverted by the most corrupt and impure passions, and though eminent in abilities, as distinguished for the perversion of them. Sir William Temple seems almost the only

honourable exception, one who remained unpoluted by the contagion of vice and licentiousness which pervaded the nation: we speak of what is termed elegant literature. In history we may rank Clarendon for accuracy, impartiality, and variety of incident, truly interesting, though defective and prolix in style. As a mathematician and divine Dr. Barrow ranks high, possessed of an enlarged and comprehensive mind, an imagination glowing and rich, he placed his subject in the most luminous point of view, and forcibly and impressively brought his arguments to bear, for deeply feeling the emotions he desired to excite, his was the command of true eloquence. The high church Tillotson contrasted with Barrow, but he possessed his own peculiar excellencies. Strength and fervour marked the one, simplicity and gentleness distinguished the other.

In philosophy the name of Locke cannot be forgotten; the highest powers of intellect are embodied in language marked by precision, perspicuity, and simplicity, almirably suited to the subjects treated. These and numberless other writers distinguish the period between the restoration and the commencement of the reign of Anne, to which we are arrived; after this period, which may be better regarded as the Augustan period of English literature than that of the restoration, a host of writers arose, who in different ways contributed to accelerate the march of intellect, and to enlarge and refine our language and our moral sentiments. How great an influence has literature upon national manners, and how powerful the influence of manners on the press! There certainly is not a more subtile and terrible poison in the world than that which is extracted from and administered by corrupt literature, as there is not a more powerful engine of good than that of books,

written in the spirit of virtuous benevolence and drawing their arguments from the pure founts of rational religion and true philosophy. Mineral, vegetable, and other poisons operate only on the physical system, they destroy only the corporal man, they reach not his better part, his undying soul. But that which is administered by books, while it is deadly, is slowly and imperceptibly imbibed by the victim. It fascinates the mental taste, and spreads its envenomed influence on a page of snow. That only deserves the name of mortal poison which affects not the corporal powers, but the faculties of the mind, the sentiments of the heart. The inexperienced soul, unsuspecting of danger, has no thought of the seduction which is stealing over its best feelings; it has no consciousness of imbibing evil with the pleasure it experiences in the gratification of its taste in marking the daring flights of genius. The mischief is not suspected nor perceived till the germs of it have taken root, and favouring circumstances cause the deleterious plant to spring; then it is found that impressions strongly received into the mind cannot be obliterated without agony; thoughts which have fixed their blasting influence on the brain. The virtuous feelings of the soul cannot be recalled; the delicate bloom of mental and moral innocence once removed, is never to be replaced. If such are the effects of literature on the human mind, how much does it behove experience to direct the youthful student, and firmly though gently to enter a protest against all those writers who prostitute their talents to the purposes of vice, licentiousness, and baneful sophistries, making good evil, and evil good!



## CHAPTER XXVI.

A. D. 1703.

*Discontent and oppressions in Ireland—Their causes—Lord Ormond invested with the government—A parliament—Its acts—Intrigues of the catholics—Discontents of England, have great influence on Ireland—Acts of the clergy—Sacheverell tool of the tory party—Excitement of popular feeling—Sacheverell impeached—Impolicy of the measure—The trial and sentence—Changes in the administration—Conclusion of a peace—Marlbrough removed—Parties equally violent in Ireland—Contentions and acrimony of the parliament—Duke of Shrewsbury governor—Prorogues the parliament—Returns to England—Leaves Chancellor Phipps and the Archbishop of Armagh justices of the kingdom—Hopes of the jacobins elevated by the peace of Utrecht—Demise of the Queen—Accession of George the First—Impeachment of the Duke of Ormond, with the Lords Oxford and Bolingbroke—Ormond and Bolingbroke escape to France—Parliament of Ireland—Its disposition and acts—Pretender passes into Scotland—Commences operations—Attacked and routed by the royal army—State of popular feeling—Parliaments made septennial—Acts of the English parliament of 1718—Discontents and disorders—South Sea scheme—Noblemen committed to the Tower—Atterbury banished—Oppressions and grievances in Ireland—Practice of appeals from the Irish to the English parliament, complained of as an intolerable grievance—English parliament brings in a bill for the better securing the independence of Ireland—Affair of Wood—It increases the popular irritation—Tranquillity enjoyed under the government of Lord Carteret—An upright parliament—Judicious acts and regulations—Lord Carteret succeeded by the Duke of Dorset—Lord Chesterfield's popular administration—Charles Lucas—His political character—French invasion—Parliament assembles—Loyalty of the Irish—Hostile invasion—Siege of Carrickfergus—French take and plunder it—They sail—White Boys—Causes of popular commotion—Sufferings of the people—Judge Aston—The catholics protest their loyalty—Disturbances in Ulster—The cause—Oak Boys—Steel Boys—Their disorders—Commercial restrictions—Calamitous effects to the country—Irish affairs taken into consideration, but unsuccessful in result.*

WE once more return to our retrospect of Ireland, which presents one unvarying scene of discontent and oppression. These were both produced by the unwarrantable conduct of the trustees, for the continued cause of contention was the forfeited estates. The troubles of the kingdom had also been increased and fomented by the importation and encouragement of the factions which disturbed England. When the Duke of Ormond, however, succeeded Lord Rochester in the government, he was received most joyfully, from the remembrance of his virtuous ancestors, so distinguished as the protectors and bulwarks of the protestant interest. In an animated speech at the opening of a parliament, he assured the Irish that his inclination, his interest, and the examples of his progenitors, equally prompted him to improve every opportunity to the advantage and prosperity of his native country. Various acts were framed in this parliament relative to the forfeited estates, the acknowledgment of the succession, and other matters; but that which is more decidedly relevant to our subject, was the enactment of a severe bill against the increase of popery. Among other clauses, it enacted that all estates of papists should be equally divided amongst the children, notwithstanding any settlement to the contrary, unless the persons on whom they might be settled should qualify themselves by taking the oaths, and communicating with the Church of England. The English ministry were greatly chagrined at this bill, but as they did not think it politic to reject it altogether, they added a clause, which they hoped the Irish senate would refuse, that is, that no persons in that kingdom should be capable of any employment, or of being in the magistracy of any city, who did not qualify themselves by receiving the sacrament

according to the test act passed in England. Though this bore directly on the dissenters, the parliament were so eager to secure themselves from the dangers of a revival of popery, that they accepted the amendment. And it would appear, that their fears were not entirely ungrounded, as a member of the house asserted, that in the county of Limerick in particular, the Irish papists had begun to form themselves into regular organised bodies, ready to plunder the protestants of their arms and property, and that they maintained a free correspondence with the disaffected in England, as well as with foreign powers. The house declared it as their opinion, that the intrigues of the catholics were occasioned by the hopes they entertained of the accession of James Stuart, known by the name of James III. They passed an act for preventing popish priests from coming into the kingdom, and also one for naturalizing all protestant strangers.

The discontents of England had great influence also in Ireland, where there existed a reciprocity of political feeling. The queen, by yielding to the tory faction, had incurred the jealousy and resentment of the whigs, who were in the revolution of state intrigue in a manner proscribed, and were, in consequence, suspicious of the designs of their opponents against the protestant succession. Elevated by their good fortune, the tories had indeed revived the almost exploded doctrines of high monarchical and high church principles, they even held a secret correspondence with the court of St. Germain, on the presumption that the queen was disposed to favour the succession of her brother, and to obtain a repeal of the act of settlement. In order to forward these views, and to obtain a complete triumph over their political opponents, the tories loudly

contended that the church and monarchy were both endangered from the prevalence of republican and sectarian principles, and a bill against occasional conformity, which would have excluded all dissenters, consequently a great number of whigs, from all civil offices and public employments, was twice presented to parliament, but as often rejected. The failure of this measure, and other circumstances, indicating the strength of the whig party, induced several of the weaker to conceal their sentiments, and to coalesce with the stronger, at the same time persuading the queen to bring a few of the whigs into office, and to dismiss some of the more violent tories. This division in the English cabinet, with the discontents in Scotland respecting the union, encouraged the popish party, animated their hopes respecting the son of James, and led Louis to hope that he might create a distraction in England, by an invasion, so as to divert and weaken the efforts of the allies in Flanders. That these party feuds extended their influence to Ireland is abundantly apparent from the transactions of the parliament there.

In the session of 1705, the houses came to some resolutions, which obliquely reflected on the convocation of clergy, as enemies to her majesty's government, and the protestant succession. The clergy, in order to acquit themselves of suspicion, resolved in their turn, that the church and nation had been happily delivered from popery and tyranny by King William, at the revolution, that the continuance of these blessings were due, (under God,) to the auspicious reign and happy government of her majesty Queen Anne, that the future security and preservation of the church and nation depended wholly, (under God,) on the succession of the crown, as settled by law, in the

protestant line; therefore, if any clergyman should, by word or writing, declare any thing in opposition to these resolutions, they should regard him as a sower of divisions among the protestants, and an enemy to the constitution. They also levelled a resolution against the presbyterians, that to teach or preach against the doctrine, government, rites, or ceremonies of the church, or to maintain schools or seminaries for the education of youth, in principles contrary to those of the established church, was a contempt of the ecclesiastical laws of the kingdom, of pernicious consequence, serving only to continue and to widen the unhappy schisms and divisions of the nation.

This parliament was prorogued by the Duke of Ormond, until the same month (June) of the following year, as he passed over to England, leaving the administration in the hands of Sir Richard Cox, lord chancellor, and Lord Cutts, commander-in-chief of the queen's forces. Never was the virulence of the spirit of party more strikingly illustrated, than in the notoriety obtained by Sacheverell, who was made the tool of the tory party, to excite the popular feeling in aid of their intrigues. The favour of the multitude is as evanescent as it is worthless; it is only to be retained by offering it continually renewed objects of excitement. The inflammatory doctrine, that the church was in imminent danger from dissenters, and men of free principles and civil liberty, had been the constant theme of the high church party, from the commencement of the reign of Anne. These opinions were received among the vulgar with their usual credulity, and believed implicitly to be the fact, producing continual jealousies and suspicions, and creating many animosities and unfounded prejudices. This discontented and

sedition feeling was augmented to a pernicious height by the individual we have named, who, in a sermon delivered before the lord mayor of London, and the court of aldermen, inveighed in the most violent and opprobrious terms against the dissenters, and the more moderate part of the Church of England, whom he denominated *false brethren*; he also threw severe and pointed reflections on persons in power, inculcating in strong and unequivocal terms the doctrine of passive obedience and non-resistance, animating the people to rise in defence of the church, which he declared was in danger, and for which, he said, he sounded the trumpet, desiring them to put on the whole armour of God. The lord mayor, who was a zealous high church man, not only encouraged this bold and seditious preacher to publish his discourse, but also accepted a dedication, which was still more violent and inflammatory than the sermon itself. Sentiments so congenial to their views, rendered the whole meritorious to the tory faction, and such is the tendency of the human mind to admit novel and daring opinions, that forty thousand copies are said to have been circulated in the space of a few weeks, although it had nothing to recommend it but the virulent spirit of party which dictated it. The sensation it created, however, was mighty; it divided the opinions of the nation, and awakened the slumbering spirit of discontent and fear. These feelings would have easily passed away with the scurrilous production which had aroused them, had it been treated with the contempt it merited; but unfortunately, the ministry thought it of sufficient consequence to ground a parliamentary prosecution. Nothing could be more satisfactory to Sacheverell than this publicity, which brought him prominently forth as the cham-



pion of the church. As his offence was not deemed punishable by common law, it was resolved to proceed by impeachment; and to complete the folly of the whole affair, after Sacheverell had been taken into custody, articles were exhibited against him by the house of lords, and his trial was appointed to take place in Westminster-hall, that the whole body of the commons might be present. Nothing could be more absurd and impolitic than this measure; instead of counteracting the impression which his seditious and inflammatory discourse had made, it converted the writer into a popular idol; every thing wrong in his composition was forgotten, and he was regarded as the innocent victim of a powerful and malignant party, whom they were determined to crush, because he had had the moral courage to speak the truth, and to disclose their ambitious and self-interested intrigues. Importance was given to every assertion, and those who had perused the discourse only from curiosity, now believed the propositions were well grounded, and that the church and monarchy were indeed in imminent danger of destruction. London became a scene of anarchy and confusion, during the period of this extraordinary trial, so great was the excitation of the popular feeling, and many outrages were committed.

At length the proceedings closed, Sacheverell was found guilty, but his sentence was so lenient, that it was regarded as a triumph by the tories: he was suspended from preaching for three years, but not precluded preferment; his sermon was condemned to be burnt. The populace ascribed the mildness of his sentence to the principle of fear, not to the moderation of the ministry; their prejudices were, therefore, in no degree removed, nor the rancour of party spirit softened. Their

victory was celebrated with every token of exultation, addresses were sent from all parts of the kingdom, asserting the absolute power of the crown, condemning the doctrine of resistance, as the result of anti-monarchical and republican principles, of which principles the whigs were unequivocally accused by the opposite party, who engrossed the royal confidence, and inspired the mind of the queen with jealousies against those who had formerly enjoyed her entire favour, and who, in fact, had held her in a political captivity. She availed herself of the present state of popular feeling to emancipate herself from this thralldom, and effected material changes in the administration, retaining only of the whole whig party, the Duke of Marlborough.

We have found ourselves obliged to give this cursory relation of the opposing parties of the realm, because the whole transactions of the period are connected with their struggles for power, their jealousies, and their public acts, differing, for political reasons, from the private sentiments of the parties. The tories rested not in their intrigues till they had elevated themselves into power, the result of which was the conclusion of a peace, preceded by the removal of Marlborough from all his employments, which effected the entire downfall of the whig party. So true is it, that it rarely happens, that the individual who owes his elevation to the opinion of the people, can long preserve it. A glory, created and rewarded by public suffrage, deriving from the same source its existence and its celebrity, is a state altogether at the mercy of public inconstancy, and experience abundantly proves, that brief as is the life of man, it yet is of far longer duration than the judgments, the affections, and the support of his contemporaries.

The parties which thus divided the state in England, were equally violent in Ireland. In the parliament there of 1711, the Duke of Ormond and the majority of peers supported the tory interest, while the commons adhered closely and warmly to the whigs; of course, the session was distinguished for severe resolutions against each other, and each espoused the predominant principles which guided their respective parties in England. After the session, the duke again returned to England.

When the Duke of Shrewsbury was nominated lord lieutenant, the parliament he assembled were still entirely at variance, on the opposite principles of whig and tory. A bill was brought in to attain the pretender and his adherents, and a person of the name of Edward Lloyd was prosecuted for publishing a book, entitled, "Memoirs of the Chevalier de St. George." An address was also agreed upon, to be presented to the queen, to remove from the office of chancellor, Sir Constantine Phipps, who countenanced the tories. It was, however, resolved by the lords, that the chancellor had in his several stations acquitted himself with honour and integrity. The two houses of convocation presented an address to the same purpose, by complaining of Mr. Molesworth for having insulted them, by remarking, when they appeared in the castle of Dublin, "they that have turned the world upside-down are now come hither also." He was accordingly removed from the privy council! What can more forcibly illustrate the mean revenge and narrowing influence of party spirit than this incident. A parliament actuated by such contracted principles, and divided against itself, portended nothing but contention and acrimony; the Duke of Shrewsbury was therefore directed to pro-

rogue it. Having done this, he obtained permission to return to England, leaving Chancellor Phipps with the Archbishops of Armagh and Tuam justices of the kingdom.

In the meantime the peace of Utrecht highly raised the hopes of the Jacobites, who flattered themselves that the general tranquillity would afford the queen leisure to take some effectual step in favour of the Pretender, whose interest she appeared sincerely desirous to promote. It is unnecessary here to enter into a detail of the measures and intrigues resorted to in order to effect the succession of this bigoted prince. But as a proof how far party will overcloud the judgment and nullify the lessons of experience, we cannot omit to relate that the majority of the Tories, in their vehement zeal for the hereditary descent of the crown, passed over or forgot the danger of the Pretender's attachment to the Romish religion, appearing totally unconscious that it is the commanding principle of that faith to sacrifice all civil engagements to its service and extension. For surely had they been impressed with these truths, they could not have ventured upon the absurd and dangerous assurance, that if the Prince would only *outwardly* conform to the Church of England without the formality of a public recantation they would endeavour to obtain the immediate repeal of the act of settlement. Thus would they have bribed their future monarch to become a hypocrite. We are not however to expect a very tender moral sense in the frequenters of courts, or the members of a cabinet.

The designs thus formed by the Tory party seemed ripening for execution, when the demise of the queen at once changed the current of affairs. Of course the elation of the Whigs was high on an event which they supposed would dispel their fears

respecting the succession. The Tories were depressed by the sudden defeat of their schemes, and the adherents of James utterly disconcerted. Agreeably to the act of settlement orders were given immediately on the decease of the queen, to proclaim George Elector of Brunswick King of Great Britain. A regency was appointed according to his nomination, his title was acknowledged by foreign powers, and every thing remained tranquil in England until his arrival. Power now reverted into the hands of the Whigs, as the king openly avowed himself their friend and patron, in fact, owing to them in a great measure his accession to the throne. One of the first principal acts of his reign was the impeachment of the Duke of Ormond with the Lords Oxford and Bolingbroke. Ormond and Bolingbroke effected their escape to France, but Oxford remained in confinement. These proceedings and the evident partiality of the monarch to the Whigs created great discontents, which were industriously fomented by those who had not cordially liked the accession of the house of Hanover. The seeds of rebellion were thus very early planted. The disbanded soldiers were gained over to the Jacobite party by money and fair promises. Infamous libels were industriously circulated respecting the electoral family. The Pretender's manifestos as diligently dispersed, all the Whigs were brought under the description of dissenters, and as a ready and effectual excitement of popular feeling, the cry of an endangered church was loudly revived. These discontents and cabals would undoubtedly have resulted in some great national contest, had not Providence by circumstances overruled the portentous events and defeated the purposes of the Jacobites. The parliament of Ireland, which we must regard as the sense of the nation, seemed at this period more

zealous if possible than that of England for the present administration. They passed bills for the recognition of the king's title, for the security of his person and government, for setting a price on the Pretender's head, and for attainting his great adherent the Duke of Ormond. They desired the lords justices would issue a proclamation against the popish inhabitants of Limerick and Galway, who presuming upon the capitulation signed by William, claimed an exemption from the penalties imposed upon other papists. They warmly engaged in an association against the Pretender and all his abettors. Orders were also given for apprehending several noblemen suspected of disaffection to the government.

In the meantime, notwithstanding the indigence which depressed him, and the small chances of success which appeared, the Pretender passed into Scotland there to assert his rights. He was joined by several lords and commenced his hostile operations. But a want of unanimity among the rebel chiefs proved fatal to the cause, which was wildly commenced and injudiciously prosecuted. The rebel forces were attacked and completely routed by the royal army.

When we reflect upon the duplicity and bigotry of this branch of an unfortunate family, we must regard the result of his attempt as an important circumstance to the happiness of our country. The suppression of this rebellion greatly increased the influence of the crown, but national dissatisfaction still continued. Many victims of rebellion had necessarily from a due sense of justice suffered, and although during the dangers of rebellion the sacrifice had been considered unavoidable and just, yet now fear had subsided the usual reaction took place in the popular sentiment, and the humane passions took place of the vindictive. From ad-



miration of the fortitude, and pity for the fate of those individuals who had paid to their country the forfeit of their lives, the transition was easy to a bias for the cause for which they had bled. The ministry, aware of this universal disaffection, and justly dreading the influence it might have on a new parliament, intrigued to effect the repeal of the triennial act, and by a new law to extend the term of parliament to seven years, although this very act was by them pronounced essential to the conservation of British freedom. The bill, although warmly opposed, was finally carried by a great majority, and confirmed the stability of the Hanover succession.

Amidst the various factions and consequent transactions which agitated England during the administration of Walpole, and the previous irritation arising from the South Sea scheme, the political pulse of Ireland seems to have beat in unison. Oppressions and grievances were loudly complained of as intolerable; the validity of possessions produced continual aggressions and appeals, till they both grew so perplexed and aggravating, that a representation was made to the king, that the practice of appeals from the Irish parliament to the English peers was not only an insufferable grievance, but an usurped jurisdiction of the latter, and could no longer be borne with. This however so far from proving any mitigation of the grievance, rivetted the chains more closely, for a bill passed in the English parliament for the better insuring the dependence of Ireland. The irritation of the Irish at this confirmation of what was considered restraints upon their just rights, was greatly exasperated by a patent being granted to an Englishman, named Wood, to coin halfpence and farthings for the use of Ireland. In this affair Wood is stated to have acted very dishonourably,

inasmuch that a shilling of the halfpence he made were not intrinsically worth one penny. Powerful remonstrances were made against this patent, and among the writers who excited the gratitude of the country in pointing out the destructive influence of the measure upon the trade and revenue of the nation was Dean Swift, who by the manliness of his arguments and his fearless truisms nearly involved himself in danger. The Irish by these oppressions were rendered yet more tenacious of their rights and jealous of their invasion, while the British ministry seemed eagerly to watch for every opportunity of encroaching upon them. It is pleasing however to find the vexations and causes of irritation passed away, and that under the government of Lord Carteret the Irish people enjoyed singular tranquillity, while the parliament at that period proved (what they should be,) the fathers and friends of their country. Funds were established for the discharge of the national debt, and for maintaining the expense of government, wholesome laws enacted, and many judicious regulations in different branches of civil economy. When Lord Carteret returned to England he was succeeded by the Duke of Dorset.

Nothing interesting marks the interval between this and the government of Lord Chesterfield, appointed in 1745. The term of this nobleman's power is distinguished for the moderation he evinced and the attention he gave to the liberties of the people. He was advised to augment the forces of Ireland by four thousand men, on account of the apprehensions of government respecting the rebellion in favour of the pretender. Instead of this he evinced his confidence in the Irish by sending four battalions to the army of the Duke of Cumberland, and encouraged the volunteer associations which formed in different

places for the defence of the country. All this was done with a judicious attention to economy and mindfulness to avoid all oppression of the people. More especially was his administration popular and satisfactory on account of the attention he paid to the catholics. Before his arrival the Roman catholic chapels had been shut up; their priests were commanded by proclamation to leave the kingdom, and such as disobeyed had been subjected to imprisonment and other penalties. Lord Chesterfield however, from a conviction that the affections may be gained by gentle means, permitted them to exercise their religion without disturbance; with a generous confidence he disregarded the insinuations thrown out of their forming plots against government, nor was the tranquillity of the nation in any degree disturbed by the indulgence granted. On Lord Chesterfield leaving Ireland his bust was placed at the public expence in the Castle at Dublin.

Having quitted his honourable station in the spring of 1746 Ireland continued to be governed by lords justices till the autumn, when Lord Harrington was invested with the power as lord lieutenant. It was at this period that the celebrated Charles Lucas, distinguished for his patriotism and firmness, advocated the rights of his fellow citizens, which had been invaded, and produced a protracted contest between the commons and aldermen in Dublin. Government became alarmed at the boldness of Lucas, and the popular excitement it produced. He was charged with libel from some expressions in his publications; he was voted an enemy to his country, and the lord lieutenant was addressed to prosecute him. The universal esteem however with which he was regarded saved him from the effects of ministerial severity, but he was obliged to leave Ireland.

After some time he returned, and such was still his popularity, that he was chosen member for Dublin, in which honourable station he continued to distinguish himself by the same virtuous principles he had ever held, and finally died with the character he had preserved through life of the *incorruptible* Lucas.

In 1759 the alarm of the French invasion, which disturbed the tranquillity of England, diffused itself also to Ireland, producing some public disorder. The parliament assembled at Dublin, and a message of the lord lieutenant intimated the alarmed state of national feeling, and urged the Irish to maintain the honour and to exert themselves in the defence of the kingdom. The loyalty of the Irish was manifested on this occasion; no sign of disaffection to the reigning family appeared, but on the contrary, the wealthy individuals of the Roman catholic faith offered to accommodate the government with considerable sums in case of necessity, in order to support the existing establishment against its enemies, strongly expressing their sense of the king's paternal tenderness for his kingdom of Ireland, and gratefully acknowledging that protection and indulgence they had enjoyed under his dominion. They professed their indignation at the threatened invasion of the kingdom by an enemy who, vainly flattered with an imaginary hope of assistance in Ireland, from the former attachment of the people, presumed upon it. They added, that such schemes they solemnly averred were altogether inconsistent with their principles and intentions, and declared they were ready to unite in defence of and support of his majesty's person and government, &c.

Such assurances could not but be pleasing at a juncture so important and critical; but although no disaffection prevailed, a spirit of dissatisfaction

manifested itself among the populace of Dublin. This arose from the idea among the lower classes that a union was soon to take place between Great Britain and Ireland, in which event the latter would be deprived of its parliament, and as it was thought all vestige of independency, and subjected to the same taxes which might be levied upon the English. This notion, whether justly grounded or not, so greatly inflamed the populace that they assembled in great multitudes, broke into the House of Lords, insulted the peers, and compelled the members of both houses to take an oath, that they would never consent to such union or give any vote contrary to the true interest of Ireland. The military were drawn out on the occasion, but the multitude dispersed during the night. A committee of inquiry was appointed the following day to discover and punish the ring-leaders.

The year 1760 is distinguished in Irish annals as having been disturbed by an inconsiderable hostile invasion by the French, as a diversion to facilitate the enterprize of M. de Conflans, which ended so fatally for him. The invading armament now alluded to consisted originally of five vessels, having one thousand and seventy land forces on board; the whole was commanded by the celebrated Thurot, whose reputation as commander of a privateer had advanced him to the important service. On arrival at the coast of Ireland, a violent storm obliged the armament to seek shelter in Lough Foyle, and the wind shifting the vessels were obliged to put out to sea. Two of them were separated; after being tempest beaten some time and reduced to very scanty allowance the officers requested their commander to return to France, lest they should perish by famine; but he was regardless of their entreaties, frankly

telling them that he would not return without having struck some stroke for the service of his country. In the hope of meeting with some refreshment he steered to the island of Isla, where they anchored and obtained some cattle and a small supply of oatmeal, for both of which Thurot honourably paid. Animated by this timely refreshment they thence sailed to Carrickfergus; the whole kingdom having caught alarm from the arrival of the French on the coast. The troops effected a descent; they amounted to about six hundred men. Lieutenant-Colonel Jennings then commanded four companies of undisciplined men at Carrickfergus; he commanded a detachment to watch the motions of the enemy, taking the precaution to send some French prisoners to Belfast. A regular attack on the town was made by the French, and a spirited defence ensued, but was rendered unsuccessful on the part of the English by the failure of ammunition. The enemy took possession of Carrickfergus, and the garrison betook themselves to the castle, where they were soon obliged to capitulate, after having killed about two hundred of the enemy, with the loss of only three on their own side. The French having plundered the town did not attempt to advance further into the country, for a considerable number of troops had been assembled and the people manifested a laudable spirit of loyalty and resolution. The French therefore set sail, and were three days subsequent captured by Captain Elliot, Thurot being killed in the engagement.

Soon after the accession of George the Third Ireland first began to be disturbed by a banditti, called by some Levellers, and by others White Boys, from their wearing a white frock to distinguish themselves. These lawless individuals being principally of the Romish religion, the pre-



judices against that class of the community broke forth in the usual manner. It was alleged that a plot had been formed against the government, and that French and Spanish emissaries had been sent over to Ireland to be employed in the execution of the treasonable designs. It may be truly said that physical misery leads to moral delinquency, and to the former we may attribute the unlawful acts of the wretched population, which under these circumstances are the too ready engines to effect the complicated designs of deep politicians, or bold ambitious spirits. The origin of the popular commotion at the period we allude to may be traced to causes far removed from political.

Early in this century the murrain broke out among the horned cattle in the dutchy of Holstein, from thence it spread to other parts of Germany; from Germany it reached Holland, and as might be expected extended to England, where it raged with violence several years. Some investigation of the penal laws against papists about the same period encouraged the inhabitants of the south of Ireland to direct their thoughts to agriculture, and in consequence the poor even began to enjoy the necessaries of life in a comfortable manner; but by reason of the cattle-disease mentioned, a foreign demand for beef and butter became very considerable. The ground appropriated to grazing of course became more valuable than that employed in tillage: the poor cottars were everywhere dispossessed of their little possessions, which the mercenary landlords let to monopolisers, who could afford a higher rent. Whole baronies were now laid open to pasturage, while the former inhabitants were plunged into poverty, wretchedness and desperation, not knowing how to obtain a subsistence. Those know little of the human

heart, who are not aware how much the moral sanctions which animate and direct it are weakened or deadened by the existence or combination of circumstances that plunge an individual into want or approximate him to it, and more especially so when such a wretched state is produced by oppression and injustice. The milk of human kindness and sympathy is then turned to gall, and the oppressed thinks himself justified in acts of hostility and revenge. In consequence of this state of things in Ireland, numbers of the peasantry, who were progressively improving their condition in their native land, were driven to emigrate, or fled to the immoral atmosphere of cities. A few who remained took small plots of land at an exorbitant price, where they endeavoured, if possible, to procure the means of protracting a miserable existence for themselves and families.

The aggregate of human misery produced by these individual instances was very great, and insensibly poisoned that generous feeling which attaches a man to the government of his country. During some time these poor creatures were allowed by the more humane landlords the liberty of commonage; but subsequently this was disallowed, in despite of common justice and even positive agreement. At the same time the payment of tithes and the low price of labour, (not exceeding the wages in the time of Elizabeth,) aggravated beyond measure the distresses of the sufferers. In such a situation it can be no subject of wonder, when we consider the ignorance of the lower classes, that illegal methods were resorted to in expectation of redress. The people assembled in parties during the night, turned up the ground, destroyed cattle, levelled enclosures, and committed other acts of violence. These ebulli-

tions of desperate feeling and unavailing efforts were construed into religious frenzy and plots against the government: numbers of the offenders were apprehended in Limerick, Cork, and Tipperary, and some condemned and executed. In some places these poor unhappy wretches, instead of being regarded as they truly were, as objects of compassion, were prosecuted with severity. Judge Aston however forms an honourable exception to this severe spirit; he executed his painful and arduous duty, when sent to try them, with so much humanity as to do the highest honour to his feelings and integrity. An extraordinary and affecting instance of this is related. On his return to Dublin after having tried the prisoners at Clonmell, for above ten miles from that place the road was lined with men, women, and children, who, as he passed, kneeled down and implored the blessing of heaven upon him as their guardian and protector.

The violences of the White Boys continued. The idea of rebellion still prevailed, and many gentlemen supposed to be instigators were obliged to give surety in order to protect themselves from injury. The Catholics of Waterford presented a petition to Lord Hertford the governor in behalf of themselves and brethren, protesting their loyalty and ready obedience to government. But the error was, no step was taken to investigate or to remove the *cause* of the disturbances. About two years subsequent to this appearance of the White Boys, a similar commotion arose in Ulster, but the cause was different, and the effect of much shorter duration. By an act of parliament the making and repairing highways in Ireland was formerly a grievous oppression on the lower ranks. A housekeeper who had no horse was obliged to work at them six days in the year, and if he had a horse the labour of

both was required. Besides this the poor complained that they were frequently obliged to work at roads made for the convenience of individuals, and which were of no service to the public. Complaints were also made of the unreasonable tithes exacted by the clergy, and the high rent of lands. It was in 1773 therefore that being exasperated by a road proposed to be made through a part of the county of Armagh, the inhabitants most nearly affected by it rose simultaneously and declared they would make no more high roads of the kind. As a mark of distinction they wore oak boughs in their hats, and hence were styled Oak Boys. The number of these partizans rapidly increased and the insurrection became general throughout the counties of Armagh, Tyrone, Derry, and Fermanagh. In a few weeks however they were dispersed by the military, and the public tranquillity was restored with the loss of only a few lives. The road act which had roused the latent inflammatory feeling was repealed the next session, and it was determined for the future that the roads should be made and repaired by a tax equally assessed on the lands of the rich and poor. Besides these two parties of insurgents, a third arose calling themselves Steel Boys. They appear to have been instigated by the following incident. The estate of an absentee nobleman happened to be out of lease, he therefore proposed instead of taking additional rent, to take fines from his tenants. Many who at that time possessed his lands were unable to comply with his terms, while others who could afford to do so, insisted upon a greater rent from the immediate tenants than they were able to pay. The usual unhappy consequences of such a species of oppression, of course took place. Numbers being dispersed became destitute and desperate, committed outrages which rendered them obnoxious to the laws. One of these wretched indivi-

duals charged with felony was carried to Belfast in order to be committed to the county gaol, but his associates exasperated at their situation, determined to release him. The design was eagerly entered into by great numbers all over the county, and several thousand having provided themselves with offensive weapons, proceeded to Belfast in order to rescue the prisoner. To prevent this he was removed to the barracks under the guard of soldiers. But the determined Steel Boys pressed forward to effect their purpose by force, and some shots were actually exchanged between them and the military. The consequences would undoubtedly have been very serious but for the courageous conduct of a physician, who interfered even at the risk of his life, and prevailed on those concerned to release the prisoner. The tumult however was not thus quelled, the combustible spirit had been ignited, and the flame rapidly spread. The number of insurgents daily increased, and the disorders and violences committed greatly exceeded those of the former parties. Some of the ringleaders were taken and tried at Carrickfergus, but none were condemned. This indulgence was attributed to the fear of popular resentment influencing the judges, an act was therefore made enjoining the trial of such persons, for the future, to be held in counties different from those in which the crimes were committed. But this breach of a fundamental law of the constitution was so offensive, that subsequently when some of the Steel Boys were taken up and committed to Dublin Castle, no jury would pronounce them guilty. The obnoxious law was therefore repealed, after which some of the insurgents being tried in their respective counties were condemned; but again as no efforts were taken to remove the cause of revolt, the continual distresses of the people drove thousands of them to America. We have related these causes of dis-



trepreneur to prove that it was neither religion nor fanaticism which inspired the public, but an intolerable sense of oppression produced by a narrow and superficial policy, and a culpable indifference to individual and national welfare. In the tumult of man's passions it is impossible to make him understand, that his personal interest is intimately connected with the maintenance of general order. These passions may be coerced by the strong arm of authority, but they acquire internal strength, and are ready to rise into action on the first plausible opportunity afforded by the vicissitudes of the political or moral world. The irritation of wretchedness is easily produced, and it is necessary under such circumstances that a spirit of beneficence and forbearance animate the governing, softening by its attention and assistance the excess of wretchedness existing, and which by a multitude of channels like the vital stream, spreads itself through forlorn beings whom misery had almost exhausted.

It is unnecessary to dwell upon the long continued discontents of the Irish, relative to their commercial restrictions. Suffice it to say that these, combined with remonstrances from England on various accounts, particularly for the payment of forces abroad, produced in the country the most calamitous effects. Individuals of every rank and condition were deeply involved and affected by the depression. Had the state of the exchequer admitted, grants might have been made to promote industry and to alleviate the national distress, but it was too much exhausted to afford relief. To illustrate this national poverty it is only necessary to add that the forces abroad could not be paid, and to enable the Irish government to pay for those at home they were obliged to borrow 50,000*l.* from England. The money re-



quisite for parliament was also borrowed at exorbitant interest. England could not but be affected by the wretched state of the sister kingdom. Indeed individuals possessing estates in Ireland were sharers in the common calamity, and the attention of many in the British parliament was directed to the situation of the unfortunate Irish, even though they possessed no personal interest in it. While things were in this deplorable state, Earl Nugent undertook the cause of the Irish in parliament, by moving that their affairs should be taken into consideration. This being agreed to, it was followed by several others favourable to the commerce of the Island.

The trades and manufactures of England however took the alarm, and petitioned against the Irish, and such was the opposing spirit that a warm contest took place at the second reading of the bills. Though the efforts of those who favoured the cause of Ireland proved at this time unsuccessful, they renewed their endeavours before the Christmas recess, urging that independent of all claims from justice and humanity, the relief of Ireland was enforced by necessity. Ireland had hitherto been passive, but there was danger by driving her to extremities, that she would cast off the yoke altogether, on the other hand they insisted that very considerable advantages must ensue to Britain by the emancipation of Ireland, and every benefit extended to that country would be returned with accumulated interest. The result of this was equally unsuccessful. Various other efforts were however made to render the laws of trade more effectually beneficial to the country, but nothing more could be obtained than a kind of compromise, by which Lord Gower pledged himself, as far as he could answer for the conduct of others, that during the recess some plan should be devised

for accommodating the affairs of Ireland to the satisfaction of all parties. Thus were the hopes of the oppressed and the miserable from time to time defeated. Against every effort of arbitrary power the mind naturally revolts, conciliation and gentleness are the most powerful engines both in the political and moral world.

## CHAPTER XXVII.

*Latent discontent—Crisis of affairs—The roused spirit of the Irish volunteers—Irish parliament address the king—Irish affairs discussed in the English parliament—Propositions of Lord North—Acts of parliament—Popularity of Lord North in Ireland—Discontent manifested—Increase of volunteer associations—Letters of Owen Roe O’Nial—Mutiny bill—Henry Grattan—Discontents—Reviews—Anticipated invasion of Ireland—Bad policy of the government—Resolution of the volunteers—Meet at Dungannon—Proceedings—Mr. Grattan moves an address to his Majesty—Association formed—Duke of Portland appointed lord lieutenant—Grattan renews his address—Succeeds in it—His great popularity—Jealousies continue—Conduct of Britain equivocal—Lord Temple appointed lord lieutenant—Representation to the English parliament—Result satisfactory—Effects of French revolution in Ireland—Character of the Irish—Mischievous union of religious opinions and political party spirit—United Irishmen—Their reforming views—Bill for the relief of the catholics—Military force—Proceedings of United Irishmen—They publish a manifesto—Disunion of the Irish—Catholic convention—Proceedings—They prepare a petition to the king—The result—Jealousies increase—Popular excitement—Debates respecting the Irish in the British parliament—Earl Fitzwilliam recalled—Lord Camden governor—Public ferment—Activity of United Irishmen—Revolutionary spirit—They apply to the French government—Lawless excesses—French prevented landing—Proclamation—Martial law—Organization of Society of United Irishmen—Prejudices against the catholics—Societies of Orangemen—The activity of reforming emissaries—Inflammatory document—Effects—Intercourse with the French—Invasion attempted, abortive, as also was a second attempt—Determination of the government—Members of Directory arrested—Proclamation—Military execution—Distresses—Severity of government—Insurrection checked—Dreadful ravages—Insurrection spreads—Measures of coercion necessary—The consequences.*

UNDER these circumstances of external suffering the embers of a discontented spirit, and impatience of neglect and oppression were continually gaining additional warmth, until they burst forth into flame. The affairs of the country hastened to a crisis, and forced the British ministry to attend to those means which could relieve the suffering country. As long as the Irish affairs were under the consideration of the British parliament the inhabitants observed some portion of patience, but when they found the minister desert the cause he had favoured, their discontent was inflamed in the highest degree. The laws which had been passed in their favour were considered, but as a cruel mockery cheating them with hopes of relief, and it was now resolved to resort to such measures as should effectually convince the ministry that it was not their interest to act as they had done. Despairing of redress, they had recourse to the forming associations, and in a few months almost the whole nation was up in arms. Neighbouring powers were astonished to see an army of 50,000 volunteers risen on a sudden and equipped at their own expence, ready either to repel foreign invasion or domestic usurpation. Such as presumed to oppose the voice of the people, were exposed to obloquy and contempt. These volunteer associations openly avowed their fixed determination to demand a restitution of their rights from the British ministry, while they proposed unbounded loyalty and attachment to the king. In their conduct they were exemplary, for instead of exciting disorders they restrained every kind of irregularity, and exerted themselves with unanimity and vigour, in the due execution of the laws.

That they were, however, objects of apprehension to government is not surprising; for when once men have entered the path of popular re-

sistance, it too often happens that any thing tending to peace and reconciliation, though it were really favourable to their interests, would be rejected, and the public mind had been too much irritated not to excite apprehension of the result. These associations might, doubtless, in their infancy, have been repressed, by attention to the causes which had produced them ; but they had now proceeded too far to be resisted without imminent national danger ; those benefits which the Irish had entreated as generous boons from the ministry, they were now fully prepared and determined to demand as their just rights. As it appeared impossible to restrain these associations, attempts were made to bring them under the crown ; this, however, was impracticable, therefore a generous confidence in them was thought to be the most politic ; it was accordingly ordered that sixteen thousand stand of arms should be delivered to them. The Irish parliament, animated by the spirit manifested by the nation, and pressed by various individual difficulties, resolved to exert themselves, in order to procure the relief the country so greatly required. In an address to his majesty, 1779, it was said, “ that it was not by temporary expedients, but by a free trade alone that Ireland was now to be saved from impending ruin.”

The popular agitation was at this time very great : in the British house of peers the grievances of Ireland were the first subjects of discussion, and produced warm debates. A nobleman forcibly represented the necessity of granting relief ; he observed that the Irish, now conscious of possessing a force and consequence not before enjoyed, had resolved to apply it to obtain the advantages of which the nation, by their spirited exertions, now showed themselves worthy. He

then moved a vote of censure on his majesty's ministers, for neglect of Ireland; this was rejected, but Lord Gower declared his firm conviction that it was well founded.

In the commons, on the 13th of December, Lord North made three propositions: 1st. To repeal the laws prohibiting the exportation of Irish woollen manufacture to any part of Europe; 2nd. That so much of the act of 19 George II. as prohibits importation of glass to Ireland, except of British manufacture, or to export glass from that kingdom, be repealed; and 3dly, that Ireland should be suffered to carry on a trade of export and import to and from the British colonies in America and the West Indies, and to the settlements on the coast of Africa, subject to such limitations, restrictions, and duties, as the parliament of Ireland should impose. These propositions were approved, and regularly formed into acts. By the Irish they were received with the utmost joy and gratitude, who passed some resolutions in consistency with them. The highest encomiums were passed upon Lord North; his exertions in favour of Ireland were declared to be great and noble, he was styled the great advocate of Ireland, and it was foretold that he would be of glorious and immortal memory in that kingdom. The censures of the opposing party were, of course, strong in proportion, inducing a bitter spirit of party, and much acrimonious language between political adversaries. To the propositions already named, Lord North subsequently added three others, in favour of the country whose cause he had espoused. Notwithstanding all the satisfaction these gave, it was not long before discontent again was manifested. It was suggested, that a free trade could be of little use, if held by a precarious tenure. The repeal



of the obnoxious laws was broadly represented as an act of necessity and fear, not of choice, or generous attention to national distress. When therefore that necessity (it was argued) no longer existed, the same parliament might recall the benefits it had granted, again fetter the Irish trade with restrictions, perhaps more oppressive than before. To secure the advantages they now possessed, it was necessary that they should enjoy a free constitution. For this the people looked up to their volunteers, and this object in view inspired them with such enthusiasm, that the numbers were greatly augmented ; other causes also tended to increase them, they had received the thanks of both houses of parliament, and thus had obtained the sanction of the legislature. Many, in consequence, who had scrupled to unite themselves with a lawless body, now entered the lists. Government also engaged many of their friends in the volunteer cause. New companies were raised, and whatever might be the political bias of the officers, the privates were universally attached to the popular cause. The national spirit was supported and elevated by various patriotic publications, particularly a series of letters, signed Owen Roe O'Nial, which greatly attracted the public attention. In order to give the greater weight to their determinations, the volunteers formed themselves into battalions. The newspapers were filled with resolutions from the several corps, declaring Ireland to be an independent kingdom, entitled by reason, nature, and compact, to all the privileges of a free constitution ; that no power on earth, excepting the king, with the lords and commons of Ireland, had, or ought to have, power to make laws for binding the Irish, and that in support of these rights and privileges, they were determined to sacrifice their

properties and lives. With all this zeal, however, the representatives of the people seem to have been supine and inconsistent. This was manifested in the case of a mutiny bill, which they allowed to be made perpetual in Ireland, though similar bills in England had invariably been cautiously passed from year to year. After it was passed, however, some of the zealous patriots, and particularly Mr. Grattan, forcibly pointed out the bad tendency of the act. He contended that the mutiny bill, or martial law methodised, was directly opposite to the common law of the land; it set aside the trial by jury, and all the ordinary steps of law, establishing in their stead a summary proceeding, arbitrary punishments, a secret sentence, and sudden execution. The object was, to bring those who became subject to it to a state of complete subordination, and to render the authority of the sovereign absolute. These and many other arguments, equally tending still further to the excitation of the public feeling, sufficiently illustrated the dangerous tendency of the bill. A general dissatisfaction took place, increased by two unsuccessful attempts in the house of commons, one to obtain an act to modify Poynings' law, and the other for securing the independence of the judges. An universal disgust against the fruitless attempts of parliament now ensued, and the hopes of the people were once more directed to the volunteers, as it became now probable that the national rights would be asserted by force of arms; preparations for which were indeed made, by reviews of the troops being appointed; these reviews presented a formidable force, well appointed and disciplined, and they proved their alacrity to serve their country in the field, on a report having arisen, that the kingdom was to be invaded by

the combined fleets of France and Spain, and for their spirited behaviour on that occasion, they received the thanks of both houses.

Although this formidable spirit and array alarmed the British government, still nothing was done to fulfil the wishes of the complainants. It was thought the lord lieutenant might still the spirit of discontent. The Duke of Buckingham was recalled, and the Earl of Carlisle appointed. The new governor, however, found it impossible to repress the roused spirit of the nation, although he found no difficulty in obtaining a majority in parliament. Redress thus seemed effectually denied; the volunteers, heated by disappointment, resolved now at once to show that they would do themselves justice, proudly conscious they had it in their power to do so. They had arrived to that degree of fermentation, in which the spirit of party is fully developed, and in a sense of their wants and their power, found ample motives of enthusiasm and animosity.

At a meeting of the officers of the southern division of the Armagh regiment, commanded by the Earl of Charlemont, it was resolved that the most vigorous measures ought to be pursued, for rooting corruption out of the legislative body; secondly, that a meeting for this purpose was necessary, and Dungannon, as the most central town of Ulster, was named as proper for that meeting. On a day appointed, this meeting did take place at Dungannon, although every method had been taken by the government to discourage it. The representatives of a hundred and forty-eight volunteer corps there assembled. The results of their deliberations were, that it having been asserted that volunteers, as such, cannot with propriety debate, or publish their opinions on political subjects, or on the conduct of parliament or

of public men, it was resolved, that a citizen, by learning the use of arms, does not abandon any of his civil rights; that a claim from any body of men, other than the king, lords, and commons of Ireland, to make laws to bind the people, is illegal, unconstitutional, and a grievance. The modification of Poynings' law, and the mutiny bill, were also adverted to, as well as that relating to the independence of judges. They then declared their fixed resolve to obtain redress, and pledged their honour to pursue the path they had entered upon, until they obtained their desire. A committee was formed to act for the volunteer corps, and to call general meetings as occasions should require.

While these proceedings took place at Dungannon, the ministerial influence in parliament greatly prevailed. The resolutions passed at Dungannon were received throughout the kingdom with great applause. A few days after, Mr. Grattan moved an address to his majesty, asserting the rights of the people, and the principle that now prevailed, that Ireland could legally be bound by no power but that of the king, with the lords and commons of the country, though the British parliament had assumed such power. Directed with his characteristic sagacity in catching at the propitious moment of feeling, Mr. Grattan, by the impassioned eloquence of his arguments, inspired the patriot feeling which appeared to animate himself, yet the motion was rejected by a large majority.

But the proceedings of the volunteers soon produced their effect. These having appointed their committees of correspondence, were enabled to communicate their sentiments to one another with facility and rapidity. An association was formed, in the name of the nobility, representa-

tives, and freeholders of the county of Armagh, wherein they set forth the necessity of declaring their sentiments openly respecting the fundamental and undoubted rights of the people. They declared their resolution to maintain, by every means in their power, the constitutional right of the kingdom, to be governed by the king and parliament of Ireland, and that they would strenuously oppose any acts, except such as were derived from their own parliament, pledging themselves to support their resolutions with their lives and fortunes. These resolutions were generally adopted by similar meetings. The change in the British ministry, in 1782, facilitated the wishes of the people. The Duke of Portland was appointed lord lieutenant, and sent a conciliatory and welcome message to parliament, expressive of his majesty's concern for the state of Ireland, and recommending the most serious attention to the national concerns, and such as might give mutual satisfaction to both kingdoms.

Mr. Grattan's active patriot zeal lost not this opportunity of display. He ventured to propose a second time the address which had been before rejected by parliament. In an eloquent speech he pointed out the grievances, the rights, and the noble pride of the Irish. "The Irish nation," he said, "were too high in pride, character, and power, to suffer any other nation to make their laws; England, indeed, had brought forward the question, not only by making laws for Ireland the preceding session, but by enabling his majesty to repeal all laws which England had made for America. Had she consented to repeal the declaratory law against America? And would she repeal that against Ireland? The Irish nation were incapable of submitting to such distinction."

The brilliant eloquence of Grattan was more prevailing than formerly, the motion which had been rejected, was now after a short debate agreed to, and the address to his majesty prepared accordingly. This document, after a full statement of complaints and regulations, concluded with expressions of confidence, that they would be graciously redressed, “as the people of Ireland had been and were not more disposed to share the freedom of England than to support her in difficulties and to share her fate.” To this address a gracious answer was given.

The Lord Lieutenant assured both houses, that immediate attention had been paid to their representations; and that the legislature of Britain had concurred in the resolution to remove the causes of discontent, and were united in a desire to gratify every wish expressed in the late address to the throne; and that in the mean time his majesty was graciously disposed to give his royal assent to acts to prevent the suppressing of bills in the Irish privy council, and to limit the mutiny bill to the term of two years.

The joy that now diffused itself over the kingdom appeared genuine, and was extreme. The warmest addresses were presented, not only to his majesty, but to the lord lieutenant. The commons instantly voted one hundred thousand pounds to his majesty, to enable him to raise twenty thousand men for his navy; and soon after, five thousand men were likewise voted from the Irish establishment. The volunteers became in a peculiar manner the objects of gratitude and panegyric, but none so conspicuously as Mr. Grattan, whose popularity was now at its acme; and the legislature seemed to participate in the feelings of the people, for in the fervour of admiration of his talents and services, addresses of



thanks flowed to him from all quarters, and the commons addressed his majesty to give him fifty thousand pounds, as a recompense for his services, for which they promised to make provision. This request was also complied with, yet the jealousies of the Irish were far from being completely eradicated. As the repeal of the declaratory act was found to be simple, without any clause expressly relinquishing the claim of right, several members of the house of commons were of opinion, that the liberties of Ireland were not yet entirely secured. The majority, however, were of opinion, that the simple repeal of the obnoxious act was sufficient ; but many of the nation at large differed in sentiment upon the point. Mr. Flood, a member of the house, and a zealous patriot, took the lead in this matter ; while Grattan lost a portion of his popularity, by expressing a contrary opinion. The matter, however, was in appearance finally settled, by the volunteers declaring themselves on Mr. Grattan's side. Still some murmurings were heard ; and it must be candidly confessed, that even yet the conduct of Britain seemed equivocal. An English law was passed, *promising* importation from *one* of the West India islands to all his majesty's dominions, and of course including Ireland, though the trade of the latter had been declared *absolutely free*. This was regarded in a jealous and unfavourable light. Other causes of jealousy and suspicion, which it is unnecessary to dwell upon, still kept in full activity the spirit of discontent. All causes of hostile feeling, however, were, at least for a time, removed on the decease of the Marquis of Rockingham. Lord Temple was appointed to Ireland, and his brother and secretary went to England, where he made such a representation of the discontents that prevailed concerning the insufficiency of the declaratory act,

that a member of the house of commons moved to bring in a bill to remove from the minds of the people of Ireland all doubts respecting their legislative and judicial privileges. This bill contained every thing that could reasonably be desired; and thus the long contest at last terminated, and the kingdom became tranquillised, and freed from every restriction, either of commerce or manufactures.

It will readily be imagined, that the moral effects produced by the great political revolution, which at this period shook Europe to its centre, and made all institutions, however firm their basis, totter to destruction, were powerfully felt among a people constituted as the Irish, and situated, as they were, politically as a part of a great empire, but suffering under real or imagined oppression. It has been remarked, that the Irish are a nation, in which the extremities of virtue and vice are singularly blended; haughty, impetuous, and arrogant in prosperity; abject and desponding in adversity; in all things given to excess, whether on the brighter or the darker side. These were the very elements to receive readily, and cherish enthusiastically, those opinions which formed the frenzy of the day: opinions by which all the laws of moral obligation, and religious responsibility, were insidiously undermined, or violently assaulted, were too readily imbibed by the ignorant, and those whose system of religion had habituated them to be directed by others. Hence it was, that although the odious restrictions on Irish commerce were removed, and a wider sphere of political freedom was attained, many entertained projects of a deeper kind—of a radical reform in the political system, and even of revolution, subversive of the existing government.

The failure of several measures was attributed, perhaps truly, to the national disunion caused by the partition of the people, divided by the antipathies of protestants, protestant dissenters, and Roman catholics. It was thought, that if those discordant sects could be induced to abandon their religious distinctions in the one grand pursuit of political reform, and cordially to coalesce, every thing required might be obtained. And as the main strength of the nation was considered to rest in the catholics, it was an object of primary importance to give them a proportionate weight in the system, and to interest them warmly in the design. Hence, the removal of those legal restrictions and disqualifications by which the catholics were deprived of what was deemed their due share of political power, became desirable, and vigorous efforts were made, and various engines put in motion, to effect this end. Thus was formed a dangerous and mischievous union between religious opinions and political party spirit; the former, by such union, assuming too often the violence of fanaticism, prescribing its laws to every individual on whom it lays its baneful influence. The truth of these remarks was exemplified by the Irish, in the events it is the painful duty of the historian to record. It was in the year 1791, that a society was formed, designating itself that of the United Irishmen. It formed one of the most formidable of those political clubs instituted by the favourers of innovation. Its views were, to combine in one political band, as many as possible of their countrymen, without distinction of sect, for effectuating a change in the government of Ireland; or, as they declared in the true spirit of the French school, "for the purpose of forwarding a brotherhood of affection, a communion of rights, and a union of power,

among Irishmen of every persuasion, and thereby to obtain a complete reform in the legislature, founded on the principles of civil, political, and *religious* liberty."

Catholic emancipation, and parliamentary reform, were thus blended as the avowed objects of their pursuit. By the former, was to be understood, a total abolition of all political distinctions between catholics and protestants; by the latter, a completely democratic house of commons, according to the spirit of the times. In the English parliament of 1791, a judicious and liberal bill was passed for the relief of the catholics; both parties supported it, to prove their confidence in those who had protested against the dangerous and disloyal opinions imputed to their sect. By this new act, they were exempt from all penal inflictions, except those which excluded them from civil and military employments, on condition of their abjuration of the following doctrines: namely, that princes excommunicated by the pope, may lawfully be deposed and murdered by their subjects; that no faith is to be kept with heretics; and that the church may dispense with moral duties, or absolve a person from heinous sins.

Meanwhile the *innovators* of Ireland attempted, so early as 1792, to attain their objects by a military force. Money was raised by subscription to arm and embody a number of men, in the metropolis, under the title of national guards. Preparations for a general muster of these guards were made; but government judiciously determined to suppress, in their infancy, all armed associations not authorised by the state. Intimidated by the firmness of the governing power, made known by proclamation, the muster did not take place; the heads of the society, however, published a manifesto,

exhorting the volunteers to resume their arms, and advising the protestants to choose deputies for the provincial assemblies, preparative to a general convention, which they declared necessary to form a common cause with that of the Romanists. Several were the victims of their enthusiastic feelings on this occasion. Were we possessed of the ability, it would be tedious, as well as unnecessary, to trace the motives of the various individuals who were the principal contrivers and promoters of this conspiracy; and which, in a short space of time, spread its ramifications throughout the kingdom, endangering, in its course, the established government. Doubtless, the motives were mingled and various, as in all political revolutions; and it would be uncandid not to believe, that a pure spirit of patriotism incited some who might think, in the generous enthusiasm of their own feelings, that a new government, tending effectually to the amelioration of the national condition, might be effected, even without bloodshed. But alas! how easily are such generous souls deceived in their calculations; they recollect not that the many understand not those passions they feel animating their own heart. Crimes of every description, even those useless to the cause adopted, are dictated by the ferocious enthusiasm of an excited populace. He therefore, who wishes to obtain influence in periods of political crisis, must identify himself with the multitude. "He feels not," says a great writer, "the panic terrors which spring from ignorance; but he must minister to the hideous sacrifices which it requires." Perhaps there cannot be a greater proof of the habitual disunion of the Irish people, which had so often defeated the best concerted plans for their welfare, than the circumstance, that while the conductors of the general

association were endeavouring to combine all their countrymen, without distinction of sect, in one political band, the chiefs of that persuasion predominating in zeal, as well as numbers, planned an association apparently co-operating, and even constituting, a part of the former, but suspected of entertaining very different views. This association was called the Catholic Convention. A merchant of the name of Byrne, a member of a secret committee of catholics, which had subsisted some years in the metropolis of Ireland, issued a sort of writ to the parish priests of that communion throughout the kingdom for the election of deputies, to compose an assembly representative of the entire body of Roman catholics. We learn from Gordon, that two deputies were chosen in each parish by the majority of all the adult males of the congregation assembled at the Romish chapel, the parochial deputies of each barony chose in like manner two baronial deputies out of their own body, and the baronial deputies of each county two representatives, all of whom, together with the representatives of cities and towns corporate similarly chosen, composed the catholic convention, public as to its assembly, but *profoundly secret* in its deliberations. By the authority of this assembly and its permanent representative the committee (composed of nine of its number), great sums were assessed and regularly levied on the Romanists, the whole mass of whom submitted implicitly to the orders of this their supreme council, as of the most firmly established government. This assembly prepared a petition to the king, and a deputation headed by Mr. Byrne carried it to London. They obtained introduction to the king, who received it graciously. The protestants of Ireland were invited to meet in their respective counties, and to de-



clare their opinions respecting the emancipation requested by their catholic fellow citizens. The protestants met accordingly, and declared their disapprobation of indulgences beyond those which had already been granted to the petitioners. In consequence of this the king recommended the relief of his catholic subjects to his two houses of parliament in Ireland. The jealousies of the parties were greatly augmented by this proceeding : the influence of the crown prevailed in both houses upon the subject.

The mischiefs of blending civil and religious opinions together now began to be manifest. Whatever were the ultimate plans of the leaders of the catholic party, the lower classes appeared evidently to identify the ideas of a political revolution, and the exclusive establishment of their own church. Elated in the expectation of such an event, the sentiments of the people were in several instances betrayed, and some commotions took place, but were easily suppressed. In 1795 warm debates took place in the British house of commons on the affairs of Ireland. The catholics had flattered themselves of a grant of further emancipation, not included in the concessions of 1793, and it is said that Earl Fitzwilliam, on his appointment to the lord lieutenancy, had countenanced the catholic leaders with promise of support : the earl was abruptly recalled, and Earl Camden nominated his successor. The discontents of the catholics were greatly increased by this measure, and disturbances took place in several parts of the nation.

During this state of public ferment it may well be supposed the society of United Irishmen were upon the alert. Their endeavours were unceasing to inflame and poison the minds of their deluded countrymen by the dissemination of democratic

publications, adapted to the range of their understanding and addressed to their passions. That the overthrow of the existing system of government and the erection of the Irish nation into an independent republic, unconnected with England and not merely a reform in parliament, was the object of this society, at least of the majority of its members, is clearly proved by the engagements they entered into, as they are all of a direct revolutionary cast. One of these documents is as follows, it is entirely illustrative of our assertion.

“ In the present great era of reform, when unjust governments are falling in every quarter of Europe, when religious persecution is compelled to abjure her tyranny over conscience, when the rights of man are ascertained in theory, and that theory substantiated by practice, when antiquity can no longer defend absurd and oppressive forms against the common sense and common interests of mankind, when all government is acknowledged to originate from the people, and to be so far only obligatory as it protects their rights and promotes their welfare; we think it our duty as Irishmen to come forward and state what we feel to be our heavy grievance, and what we know to be its effectual remedy.

“ *We have no national government:* we are ruled by Englishmen and the servants of Englishmen, whose object is the interest of another country, whose instrument is corruption, whose strength is the weakness of Ireland, and these men have the whole of the power and patronage of the country, as means to seduce and subdue the honesty and spirit of her representatives in the legislature. Such an extensive power, acting with uniform force in a direction too frequently opposite to the true line of our obvious interests, can be resisted with effect solely by unanimity, decision, and

spirit in the people—qualities which may be exerted most legally, constitutionally, and efficaciously by that great measure essential to the prosperity and freedom of Ireland, an equal representation of all the people in parliament.”

But independent of the language of this declaration there is abundant evidence to prove the extent of the revolutionary frenzy at this period among the Irish reformers, and too many causes of discontent arose from various species of oppression, serving to irritate rather than soften the moral malady. In 1796 the chiefs of the society made application to the French government, and an invasion of Ireland was promised by the latter for the subversion of the British power in Ireland. The vigilance of government however penetrated this design of internal and external hostility, and the executive administration was invested with augmented power to counteract it: as must ever be the case when the governing and the governed pursue different interests, acts of severity on the one part excited the determination of resistance on the other. Hence the lower classes, to obtain arms like the defenders, assembled in the night and disarmed those whom they regarded as adherents to government; and in the prosecution of their designs various species of violence were committed. In the mean time, in despite of the enforcement of a proclamation against these outrages, the united Irish of Ulster would have obtained and certainly employed the means of insurrection, if the French forces had effected their landing at Bantry Bay. This was prevented by a storm, which divided the fleet, said to have contained an army of fifteen thousand men, and the exertion of the society to second this invasion was prevented by a remarkable inconsistency of intelligence referring to it. A systematic con-

tinuance of outrages occasioned of course an increased determination to suppress them; a proclamation was issued enjoining all persons, not empowered to keep arms by government, to surrender them and ammunition to the commanding officers in their respective vicinities: this measure however was found an inadequate remedy for the evil. The civil power was then declared not adequate to the preservation of peace, and the martial law was deemed necessary; much misery, discontent, and disorder ensued, but order was at length restored throughout Ulster, the administration was again vested in the civil power.

Mean time several changes took place in the organization of the society of United Irishmen, adapted to the circumstances which excited their attention. This society has justly been said to have composed "an artfully framed union," the component parts of which it does not seem necessary here to specify; suffice it to say, that it was a great revolutionary machine which speedily and accurately put in motion many lesser operations in the political world. To form a fund for the various expenses attendant on the operations of this great engine, monthly subscriptions were collected in the several societies, and treasurers appointed by suffrage for their collection and disbursement. From this fund also was derived supplies to remunerate the emissaries employed to extend the union and to disseminate the principles which were to form the bond which attached them. These political missionaries were directed to work on the passions, the prejudices, and the feelings of those to whom they addressed themselves, and where ability was found, to supply with books to keep alive the impression made by oral communication. What were the arguments used may well be imagined by those who

have witnessed that tremendous revolution which, in another country, levelled the distinctions of right and wrong, let loose the basest propensities of the human heart, and abandoned men to the maddening violence of their own passions, while principles were trampled under foot, which never can be prostrated with impunity.

Inconsistently with the original plan of the United Irishmen great pains were taken to revive and exasperate the ancient religious antipathy of the catholics against their protestant fellow subjects, and the means resorted to for this purpose were similar to those it has been our painful duty so often to record during the progress of this retrospect. Societies of orangemen, as the protestant parties were called, took their first rise in the county of Armagh, where a mortal feud originating, it is said, from a private quarrel, had subsisted since 1785, between the lowest class of the presbyterians and Romanists, (see Gordon,) and this antipathy was manifested by various cruel outrages.

For self-preservation the protestants of Armagh, in the year 1795, formed associations under the denomination of Orangemen, a denomination derived from William Prince of Orange, who having rescued the protestants of Ireland had given them the ascendancy. Thus was religious hatred extending its baneful influence over the unhappy country, each assuming some fair ostensible reason for the acts suggested by their private opinions. The poison which the revolutionists had infused into the breasts of the ignorant and the simple, was soon made apparent by its deleterious effects.

Too many causes of complaint existed, so to give ample subject to the declamations of the reformers forcibly to act upon the feelings of the

populace; the tithes, that ever prominent feature in the picture of discontent and oppression, were represented in a view all could too well understand, and the fair prospect of their abolition was held out to tempt the unguarded peasantry to enter into their deep laid designs.

While the emissaries of the union thus aroused and interested the feelings of the peasantry with respect to tithes, they were not less assiduous and artful in their endeavours to prejudice the opinions of the laity in general against every part of the ecclesiastical establishment. They argued that the vast expenses of this establishment were useless for the purposes of religion or the encouragement or support of literature, since preferments were given solely from temporal or political motives, without regard to moral character or literary merit. Thus arguing against the use by the abuse of the institution, and pointing out solitary instances as the evils of the entire system; to persons unused or unable to form just distinctions they easily excited an unconquerable and decided prejudice against the objects of their insinuations. Though the precautions of the legislature had circumscribed the liberty of the press, still means were found to employ this all-powerful engine to the augmentation of the popular feeling. One extract from a paper which was privately printed and industriously circulated we extract from Gordon's History, as it sufficiently illustrates the spirit of those who called themselves patriots and the friends of their country.

“ Let the indignation of man be raised against the impious wretch who profanely assumes the title of *reigning by the grace of God*, and impiously tells the world *he can do no wrong*. Irishmen! is granting a patent and offering premiums to murderers to depopulate your country and take your



properties no wrong? Is taking a part of the spoil no wrong? Is the foreign despot incapable of wrong who sharpens the sword that deprives you of life, and exposes your children to poverty and all its consequent calamities? O man, or rather less, O king! will the smothered groans of my countrymen, who, in thy name, fill the innumerable dungeons you have made, for asserting the rights of man, be considered no wrongs? Will enlightened Irishmen believe you incapable of wrong who offer up the most amiable of mankind daily on the scaffold or the gibbet to thy insatiable ambition? Is burning the villages of what you call your people and shooting the trembling sufferers no wrong? Is taking the church into partnership and encouraging its idle and voluptuous drones to despoil industry of its reward, and teach a lying doctrine to sanction their injustice, no wrong? Are the continual wars you engender and provoke to destroy mankind no wrong? Go impious blasphemer and your hypocritical sorcerers to the fate philosophy, justice, and liberty consign thee. It is inevitable; thy impositions are detected; thy kind have been brought to justice; the first professor of thy trade has recently bled for the crimes of the craft, his idle and vain followers, who escaped the national axe, are walking memorials of justice, begging a miserable livelihood over those countries whose tottering thrones encourage but an uncertain asylum. Ere the grave which is opening for thy despised person, embosoms thee, make one atonement for the vices of thy predecessors, resist not the claims of a people reduced to every misery in thy name, give back the properties that thy nation wrested from a suffering people, and let the descendants of those English ruffians restore to Irishmen their country, and to their country liberty; 'tis rather late to trifle, one

fortunate breeze may do it, woe to him who was a tyrant or who is unjust." Such was the nature of the revolting and seditious publications with which the demagogues of faction sought to poison the principles and irritate the feelings of a people constitutionally ardent, impetuous, and thoughtless, and suffering under physical privation, with a small prospect of relief.

The effects were what might be expected; before the conclusion of 1797, the peasantry in the central and southern counties were almost universally sworn into the conspiracy, and fully prepared for insurrection. Various plans to embarrass the government were formed and carried into effect. Such was the interdiction of spirituous liquors, in order to diminish the revenue; the caution against purchasing the quit-rents of the crown, which it was proposed to sell to raise supplies; and the obstructions to the circulation of bank notes. These animosities were couched in language adapted to the capacities of the populace, and teemed with superficial arguments they could not fail to understand. Many attempts were made to seduce the army; hand-bills were circulated among the troops, peculiarly directed against their better feelings, and calculated to cloud the judgment, while they excited the passions to the frenzy of revolt.

While thus every engine of internal opposition to the constituted government was put into dangerous action, a constant intercourse with the demoralised French was maintained by the Irish directory. To follow the steps of this intrigue is unnecessary; it is sufficient to say, that in October of the year 1796, an accredited messenger from France arrived in Ireland, announcing the design of an invasion, with an army of fifteen thousand men. It is well known that it

was attempted, and proved abortive, at Bantry Bay. A subsequent designed attempt was gloriously defeated in 1797, by a squadron of British vessels, under the command of Lord Viscount Duncan.

This double disappointment did not, however, discourage the party, and every preparation was made to receive the expected succours from France. Even instructions in detail were issued from the military committee to the adjutants general, concerning the modes of preparing for open warfare against government, and various measures were taken to augment, in every way, the strength of the conspiracy.

While the chiefs of the United Irish thus proceeded in their plans, resolved, if possible, to avoid insurrection, till the expected arrival of their French supplies, the government, on the other side, was determined, if possible, to disorganise their complicated system, and to destroy the conspiracy, before an event, which bid so fair to ensure the success of the party, should take place. In pursuance of this determination, many acts of power took place, the most important of which was the arrest of thirteen members of the provincial committee of Leinster. The vacancies made in the directory by the arrest of these individuals, as well as other persons, were quickly filled, but with persons less fitted to effect the arduous plans proposed. The measures of government, although they tended to weaken the conspiracy, were however far from destroying its force, or adequate to prevent its final success; the organization was too complete, and the designs too artfully formed, to yield to the usual methods of suppression; they produced only partial effects on the political, or rather revolutionary hydra, which, in various instances, boldly

displayed its formidable aspect, to the terror of the districts it disturbed.

At length recourse was again had to proclamation and military execution. The army was ordered to proceed to the disturbed counties, and the commander invested with full power to act according to his discretion, for the attainment of the proposed object; the military orders were accordingly prompt and decisive. In such a disturbed state of society, it may readily be supposed that many aggressions on both sides were continually occurring; in fact, so various and great were the vexations attendant on the maintenance of the soldiers at free quarters, and many acts of severity produced by various causes, that they amounted to such a degree of disquietude and distress, that all exhortations of patience from the leaders proved utterly vain with their wretched instruments, the lower classes. With the characteristic impatience of evil distinguishing them, many surrendered their arms, and confessed the means of their seduction, as well as betrayed their seducers. These defections alarmed the chiefs of the union, and fearing the utter disorganization of their society, and the destruction of their force before the arrival of their auxiliaries, they determined to try their unassisted strength against government, and immediate plans for the purpose were digested by the military committee of the union.

It is to be regretted that the great severity of the government measures, at this period of political excitement and national peril, tended strongly to confirm the prejudices already too much excited by the emissaries of sedition. To enter into a detail of disorders inseparable from such an agitated state of national feeling, would carry us beyond our proposed limits. By many arrests, and other precautions, an insur-

rection which was planned to commence on the night of the 23d of May, was frustrated; the plot had been announced late in the evening of the 21st, by a letter from the secretary of the lord lieutenant to the lord mayor of Dublin, and on the 22nd, by a message from the lord lieutenant to both houses of parliament. To prevent its execution, the regular troops, the militia, and the yeomanry, were disposed under arms in the most advantageous positions. By these means the capital was preserved in tranquillity; but in the neighbouring counties, notwithstanding the disorganization of the confederacy by the operations of government, insurgents assembled in many places, and during that night and following day several skirmishes were fought. Naas was attacked, but was effectually defended; some other garrisons did not so well resist the rebels, but in some parts they were routed with loss. The scenes of horror consequent to this display of national frenzy may be imagined. At Catherlagh, four hundred of these miserable and deluded men were encompassed and massacred! In Ulster the insurrection was soon quelled, but in other districts it was far otherwise. In places where the insurgents were successful, a tumultuous exultation was manifested, and false intelligence was conveyed from post to post to inspire the revolt. Multitudes of women followed in the train of the rebel troops, who, with shouts and cries of "Down with the Orangemen," kept up the daring spirit so terribly excited, and clearly marked, that the object of the insurrection, at its very commencement, was, in the minds of the lower orders at least, not the restitution of civil rights, but the destruction of the heretics. In the spirit of this frantic zeal, several murders were committed.

During this state of cruel alarm, the situation

of the loyalists was most distressing; they in terror abandoned their possessions to the rapacity of the rebel foe, and in their fugitive state must have perished, but for the supply of provisions from the military stores. War being thus decidedly and openly commenced by the conspirators, the strongest measures of coercion were become necessary on the part of the government. The loyal troops in general, during this civil contest, prevailed by superiority of arms and discipline, but on some occasions were repelled by the desperate courage of the rebels. One of the first steps of government was to issue a proclamation, giving notice that orders were conveyed to all his majesty's general officers serving in Ireland, to punish according to martial law, by death or otherwise, as their judgment should approve, all persons acting, or in any way assisting in the rebellion. "The effects of this procedure," says the writer from whom we extract, "the necessity of which marked the calamitous condition of the country, were quickly felt by great numbers of the lower, and some of the higher classes of the people." Many fell sacrifices to the confusion and precipitance which necessarily attends a trial by military law in the rage of a rebellion, and paid the forfeit of their lives, which might have proved useful and honourable to their country, had they not given way to a tide of political theories, the fatal practical consequences of which they perceived not, or forgot. In this terrible scene of civil distraction, the incaution and vain confidence of the insurgents were continually manifested, sufficiently exemplifying the delusion which deranged their judgment, and almost proving, that a revolution suspends every power but that of force.



## CHAPTER XXVIII.

*Rebels murmur—Instance of undue military ardour—Insurrection in Wexford—John Murphy raises the standard of rebellion—Excesses and distresses—Rebels attack Enniscorthy—Town fired—Garrison forced to abandon it—Distress of the fugitives—Wexford an insecure asylum—The place evacuated—Retreat to Duncannon—Gorey abandoned, dreading the rebels—Father Kern—Attack Bunclody—Rebels repelled—Victory important in its consequences—Habits of the rebels—Distressed state of the country—Affair of New Ross—Insurgents suffer—Superstition of the common people—Affair of Arklow—War religious—Rebels act on the defensive—Their principal post on Vinegar Hill—Father Philip Roche—The royal army force the head quarters of the rebels—Surprise a force under Roche—Dreadful situation of the protestants—Pleasing instance of the humanity of Philip Roche—Army commanded to march to Vinegar Hill—The attack—Non-attendance of one division of the army—The rebels escape by the opening—Enniscorthy relieved; and also Wexford—Horrible massacres—Comparative quiet of Ulster—Affair of Ballinahinch—Rebels at length disperse—Wexford insurgents, their operations, they are finally dispersed—Conclusion of the rebellion—Quiet of the capital—Punishment of the rebels—Earl Cornwallis—Treaty between the government and rebel chiefs—Its non-fulfilment—Predatory bands—Cruel policy—Losses of the loyalists—Sufferings of the country, and fatal effects of rebellion.*

A. D. 1798.

AT length discouraged by defeat, the rebels began to murmur and to wish for permission to retire in safety to their homes, in order to resume their several occupations. This disposition to surrender was however attended with many melancholy results, in consequence of an undue military ardour excited against them. One illustrative instance

only among very many we shall name, wherein this ardour was manifested. A protestant clergyman had fallen into the power of the insurgents, and had been saved from slaughter by the humane interference of a Catholic priest. Having been thus spared by the rebels, he was deemed a rebel by the soldiery. Under this impression they were proceeding instantly to hang him, when they were in a critical moment prevented by the interference of his brother in law.

But the raging flame of rebellion yet found ample combustible materials to keep it in terrible and destructive action. An insurrection broke out in a quarter where it was least expected, and quickly attained such a formidable aspect as to excite the most just and serious alarms. In the county of Wexford many of the catholic inhabitants had protested their loyalty, and pledged themselves to arm if permitted in defence of government, whenever occasion rendered their services desirable. But a small military force was stationed in this county, while an injudicious and severe system of coercion was followed by the magistrates in regard to suspected persons. The defence of the county was almost depending on the troops of yeomen and their supplementaries, and most of them being protestants were prejudiced against the catholics, of whose cruelty in Ireland tradition and probably individual family suffering had informed them. Some papers found in the pockets of some prisoners excited the fears which prejudice easily admitted, as these papers contained some of the ancient sanguinary doctrines of the Romish church, which authorised the extermination of heretics. The apprehensions awakened by these documents, acting upon minds already deeply prejudiced, produced actions but ill calculated to allay religious hatred or to still the tumult

of rebellion. It is not our province to say, if in the then state of the unhappy kingdom rebellion would have agitated Wexford if no acts of aggression and severity had occurred, but certainly it is to be lamented that they were thought necessary.

However this question may be decided as to the probability of a different issue under different conduct, we have to record the distressing fact, that the standard of rebellion was raised between Gorey and Wexford in May 1798, and that by a minister of peace, John Murphy, a Romish priest of Boulavogue, and familiarly known by the name of Father John.\* This man (says Gordon), coad-

\* The journal of this priest was found on the field of battle at Arklow, by Lieutenant Colonel Bainbridge, of the Durham Fencible Cavalry, and was sent by him to General Needham; it is a curious document.

" Saturday night. May 26, at 6 A. M., began the republic of Ireland, in Boulavogue, in the county of Wexford, barony of Gorey, and parish of Kilcormick, commanded by the Rev. Dr. Murphy, parish priest of the same parish, in the aforesaid parish; when all the protestants in that parish were disarmed, and among the aforesaid, a bigot, named Thomas Bootrey, who lost his life by his rashness, 26th. From thence came to Oulart, a country village adjoining, where the republic attacked a minister's house for arms, and was denied of; laid siege immediately to it, and killed him and all his forces; they the same day

burned his house, and all the orangemen's houses in that and in all the adjoining parishes in that part of the country. The same day a part of the army, to the amount of a hundred and four of infantry, and two troops of cavalry, attacked the republic on Oulart Hill, when the military were repulsed with the loss of a hundred and twelve men, and the republic had four killed; and then went to a hill called Corrigna, where the republic encamped that night; and from thence went to a town called Camolin, which was taken without resistance, and the same day took another town and *sate* of a bishop. At three in the afternoon of the same day they laid siege to Enniscorthy, when they were opposed by an army of seven hundred men, where they were forced to set both ends of the town on fire, and then took the town in the space of an hour, and then encamped

jutor or assistant curate of the parish priest, was a man of shallow intellect, a fanatic in religion, and from the latter circumstance too well qualified to raise to a dangerous height the superstitious prejudices of the ignorant multitude. From this commencement of hostility the commotion spread rapidly on every side, while the collection of rebel parties was greatly increased by the influence of reports disseminated, of numbers of people being shot in the roads, in the fields, and even in their habitations, unoffending and unarmed, by strag-

on a hill, near the town called Vinegar-hill.

Dated this 26th.

BOY BULGER,  
DAARBY MURPHY,  
(His hand and pen.)

Some of the rebels who escaped this bloody conflict, in their forcible way of expressing themselves, said, speaking of the slaughter of the soldiery among them, "By Jasus, they mowed us down by the acre!" No political ebullition ever takes place without a manifestation of the noble as well as the ignoble passions of our nation. It is in the great collision of interests that the hearts of men unfold themselves. A pleasing instance occurs to the recollection of the writer as illustrative of the remark. During the Irish rebellion, a protestant who was a prisoner in the hands of the rebels, was called out to be executed; the executioner ordered him to turn his back, the prisoner refused, calmly

declaring he was not afraid to face death, and just as the former was about to fire at him, the latter told him to stop, and requested to be dispatched with dexterity, at the same time pulling off his hat, coat, and waistcoat, which were new, he threw them to the executioner, as a present to favour him with a speedy death. The man was so impressed with this undaunted conduct of his prisoner, that he declared his conviction that he must be innocent, and actually refused to kill him; in consequence of this, another rebel rushed forward to put an end to the existence of the hated protestant, upon which the executioner swore he would lay breathless the first man who attempted to hurt him, and immediately conducted him in safety out of the rebel army. Many other similar instances of the triumph of the better feelings might be adduced if necessary.

gling parties of yeomen. To relate the excesses which ensued, would but harrow up the feelings of our readers, it is only here necessary to say that the original causes of contention appeared lost in forgetfulness, and that a frantic religious animosity appeared to animate the adverse parties.

In a skirmish which took place at an early period of this Wexford rebellion many rebels were pursued and killed while the yeomen exasperated by the death of an officer, burned two Romish chapels and about a hundred cabins and farm-houses of Romanists in the short march of seven miles. This will give some idea of the devastation of this terrible strife. The country exhibited a scene of distress and consternation it is impossible to describe. Houses in flames, the inhabitants flying on every side in search of an asylum, some to the towns, others to the hills, while the rebels under Father John flushed with victory perpetually gained fresh accessions. They took possession of a small town six miles westward of Gorey, the loyal inhabitants of which had taken refuge in the latter, and thence advanced to Ferns two miles further, whence the loyalists had fled to Enniscorthy to which they were followed by the rebels. These attacked the place, making use of the ancient mode of harrassing the enemy by driving a number of cattle before them, raising loud and terrible shouts, as on such occasions was their custom, they made a furious and irregular onset. A scene of distress and confusion ensued. To render the town untenable, it was fired in many places by the disaffected part of the inhabitants, some of whom even aimed shots from the windows at the garrison. The success of the day was for a long time so fluctuating, that many persons to avoid the fury of each prevailing party in turn alternately displayed the orange and green ribbon.

At length the enemy prevailed, and the garrison after a gallant defence of some hours abandoned the town, retreating in disorder to Wexford. Most of the loyal inhabitants of the place also, and very many others who had resorted thither for protection fled through the flames toward Wexford, the calmness of the atmosphere providentially favouring their escape through the burning streets. Description must fail to picture the terror and distress of these unfortunate fugitives flying from an infuriate enemy. "Women," says the historian of this terrible rebellion, "habituated to all the indulgence which an affluent fortune affords, not only fled on foot, but also in that situation carried their children on their backs to Wexford the distance of fourteen English miles, and one actually waded twice through the river Slaney under the fire of both parties and escaped with one child unhurt. She was obliged to leave six children behind her in the burning town! Had not the circumstances of the weather and their not being pursued favoured the escape of these fugitives, it is but too certain they would have been destroyed. Some who found no opportunity of escape, were immediately sacrificed to the fury of the assailants, or imprisoned and reserved for future butchery. Those who had sought a refuge in Wexford were far from being in safety. The place commanded by hills on all sides was indefensible against artillery, supplied as it was only with a garrison of six hundred men, while the force of the rebels amounted to fifteen thousand, independent of a strong force left at Enniscorthy.

To complete the depression and distress consequent upon these circumstances, a number of disaffected yeomen deserted to the stronger side, and many were suspected of waiting their opportunity within the town to cooperate with those



without. Under these adverse circumstances the commanding officer thought himself obliged to evacuate the place, and two deputies were sent to the rebels, to prevent their acting as if the town had been taken by storm. The army retreated to Duncannon, accompanied by such of the loyalists and refugees from other places as were willing and able to perform the march of twenty-three miles.

While all the southern parts of the county of Wexford were in this state of horrible commotion, the northern was also frightfully agitated. The inhabitants of Gorey abandoned the place in terror and dismay, dreading the rapid approach of a furious enemy. A body of rebels consisting of five thousand men was commanded by several chiefs among whom was Father Kern, a man of extraordinary stature, strength, and ferocity, they attacked a beautiful little town in the north of Wexford, but by an accidental manœuvre were repelled. We name this attack and victory, as it was of infinite importance at this critical juncture to the loyalists; as had the rebels taken Bunclody it would have opened a passage for them into the county of Carlow. And if, as is most probable, the inhabitants had united and co-operated with them, as the country was circumstanced it might have been subversive of all the efforts of government.

Gordon gives the following account of the habits of the rebels in this terrible warfare. " Hills of commanding prospect were always chosen for their stations or posts. These posts they termed camps, though they were destitute of tents except a few for their chiefs. The people remained in the open air in vast multitudes, men and women promiscuously, some lying covered with blankets at night, and some without any covering than the

clothes which they wore in the day. This mode of warfare was favoured by an uninterrupted continuance of dry and warm weather, to such a length of time as is very unusual in Ireland at that season, or any season of the year. This was regarded by the rebels as a particular interposition of Providence in their favour, and some among them are said to have declared in a prophetic tone, that not a drop of rain was to fall until they should be masters of all Ireland. On the other hand the same was considered by the fugitive loyalists as a merciful favour from heaven, since bad weather must considerably have augmented their distress, and caused many to perish. It may well be imagined that in these semi-barbarous encampments the greatest disorder prevailed. In nothing were they more irregular than in the preparation of their food, many of them cutting pieces at random out of cattle scarcely dead, without waiting to flay them, and roasting the pieces so obtained on the points of their pikes, even with parts of the hide adhering. The heads of the cattle were seldom eaten, but were generally left to rot on the ground, as often large pieces of the carcasses. The hardiness and agility of the lower classes of the Irish were continually and strikingly displayed in the course of this rebellion. Their swiftness of foot, and activity in passing over bogs, brooks, and ditches, was so remarkable, that it was sometimes impossible for horsemen to overtake them, and their physical strength was singularly proved by the difficulty found to kill them, the tenacity of life being so strong, that a multitude of stabs did not quench the vital spark, and many desperately wounded recovered with an astonishing facility. The state the country was reduced to, is affectingly illustrated by the following incident.

After one of the battles in the south of Wexford two yeomen coming to a brake or clump of bushes, and observing a small motion as if some person was concealed there, one of them fired into it, and the shot was answered by the piteous and loud cry of a child; the other yeoman was then urged by his companion to fire, but being of less ferocious habits and disposition, instead of firing commanded the concealed persons to appear, when a poor woman with eight children almost naked, one of whom was severely wounded, came trembling from the brake where they had concealed themselves for safety. At New Ross the malcontents suffered severely, for in a fruitless assault upon that town a great number lost their lives. The engagement lasted above ten hours. Several acts of horrid cruelty occurred during the transactions of this bloody day, proving the dreadful power of party to destroy the dictates of conscience, and the searing effect of fanaticism on the heart of man.

Indeed, such was the avowed stimulus of the rebel troops, that the priests possessed the full influence over their actions. Nor are we to be surprised at this; from their ignorance, their apprehension of moral obligations must be vague and defective, and this is undoubtedly increased by the doctrines taught in the Romish church concerning absolution; a doctrine easily comprehended, and, if not, from habit implicitly believed and followed. Thus the priests, by their habitual and allowed government in spiritual matters, had naturally the predominant sway, more especially those whose rage of bigotry was most violent and conspicuous. Hence great numbers of the rebels acknowledged no other leader than Father John Murphy, the fanatic who first raised the standard of rebellion in Wexford. We

need no further proof of the abject superstition of the lower orders of the Irish at this period of national agitation than their firm belief that this priest and also his brother were invulnerable by bullets or any kind of weapon. To confirm them in this belief, Father Michael Murphy frequently showed his ignorant and deluded followers musket balls which he avowed he caught in his hands as they flew from the guns of his enemies. This priest was, however, killed by a cannon shot in the attack of Arklow while he was leading his people on.

The repulse at Arklow, although not the most bloody, was perhaps the most important of this terrible war. It would seem to have decided the fate of the rebellion, and thus happily left undecided how far religious animosity would eventually have carried the individuals engaged. The war from the very commencement had taken a religious turn; a consequence which might be foreseen by all who reflected upon the peculiar opinions and prejudices of the population. Actuated by real or fancied zeal, and a sense of oppression, a desperate impulse was given to the passions of the people, and it was apparently a subject of indifference to them whether they perished by fire, sword, the arm of the law, or the miseries they endured in the contest against those who questioned their rights and contemned their religion, to defend the supremacy of which, they were taught would entitle them to temporal and eternal reward.

After the repulse at Arklow the rebels were obliged to act on the defensive. They had not yet given up hope of French succour, and they endeavoured to maintain several ports in expectation of this aid, which assuredly would give a favourable turn to their affairs. The great station

of the revolvers was on Vinegar Hill, an eminence at the base of which the town of Enniscorthy is situated. It was determined by the loyalist army to force the head quarters of the rebel host, attacking it at the same moment from different quarters, one detachment to make an attack on Enniscorthy. A man called Father Philip Roach had been chosen by tumultuous election general of part of the rebel troops, who, by his commanding stature and boisterous manners, was well calculated to direct the motions of the disorderly bands who selected him for their leader. The march of the royal army surprised the force under the command of this priestly general. They fled in confusion, leaving much plunder behind them. Separating into two bodies, one of which took its way to Wexford, the other to Vinegar Hill, they joined the Wexford insurgents, who were there concentrating their forces.

This eminence, rendered interesting as the scene of events so intimately affecting the destiny of the devoted country of which it forms a part, had with the town of Enniscorthy been some weeks in the possession of the rebels. It was during this period that the horrid nature of fanaticism was fully developed. Horrors indescribable and apprehensions the most terrible agitated the hapless protestants who had not effected their escape from this devoted spot. Living where they were sought out and seized, a few immediately murdered, but most conveyed to Vinegar Hill, where they were immolated at the shrine of popular and religious fury with every refinement of cruelty.

It is stated by a writer deserving of the utmost credit that five hundred persons were thus butchered in this fatal station, and the bloody list would have assuredly been even much larger had



not in many instances individual humanity or friendship generously interposed to arrest the raised hand of murderous zeal. It is worthy of observation as teaching us a lesson of candour, that Philip Roach, in appearance so fierce and sanguinary, saved many persons by his interference. A pleasing illustration of this fact is given by Gordon. Two brothers in a respectable situation of life being seized and conveyed to Vinegar Hill, some of the catholic tenants anxious for their safety hastened to Roach's quarters at Lachen, and begged his assistance. He immediately sent an express to bring the two prisoners to Lachen, pretending to have charges of a criminal nature against them, for which they should be tried. The cruel miscreants on Vinegar Hill, who were preparing to butcher these unoffending men, though they were advanced in years and unimpeachable with any crime but that of protestantism, on receipt of Roach's orders relinquished their prey, not doubting but that death awaited them at Lachen. But Roach, whose object was to snatch these innocent men from the jaws of the bloodhounds, immediately on their arrival at his quarters gave them written protections, and sent them to their homes, where they were soon after in danger of being hanged by the king's troops, who were too ready to pronounce disloyal such as had been spared by the rebel parties.

The army commanded to march from different quarters to surround the rebel post on Vinegar Hill, constituted in the whole amount, a force of thirteen thousand effective men, with a formidable train of artillery. The attack began early in the morning. All the troops were in their appointed posts except one corps, which did not arrive till three hours after the commencement of the attack. The rebels after sustaining the fire of the artillery for



an hour and a half, abandoned their station through the passage unfortunately left by the non-attendance of the division appointed to it. Many hundreds were killed, and among them not a few protestant loyalists, who had been taken prisoners by the rebels, and in the confusion now shared their fate. The precipitation of the flight caused the rebels to leave behind them a large quantity of rich plunder and their cannon. Enniscorthy thus recovered, many loyalists in it were relieved from a state of terror and distress which may perhaps be imagined but not described. Many acts of cruelty occurred, too common when the baneful spirit of religious and party spirit actuate a people. Wexford was also relieved on the same day, after an action vigorously kept up for some hours; the rebels were repulsed with considerable slaughter, and it was remarked that it was fought by the rebels with great military skill, so apt had they been in acquiring their knowledge of tactics, and resolution to put it in practice.

The loyalists of Wexford while in the power of the insurgents had been in a state of cruel and incessant fear. Numbers of protestants had assembled at this place as a refuge, with prisoners from different parts of the country; of these many were confined in the gaol, others detained prisoners in their houses in perpetual dread of some cruel death; for what could they expect from individuals credulous to absurdity, debased by superstition, inflamed, and ferocious? and that such was the general character of the rebels there is abundant evidence to prove, though there are very many honourable exceptions recorded. The blood curdles however, to read of the horribly atrocious massacres of Enniscorthy and Wexford, many of them equalled those which have fixed eternal infamy on the agents of French *regenera-*

tion. It is related that at Wexford when ninety-seven men had been butchered with horrible solemnity, the slaughter which had commenced at two in the afternoon, was abruptly interrupted at seven by the interference of Father Curran, who announced the alarming intelligence that the post of Vinegar Hill was beset by the king's troops, and that reinforcements were required in that quarter. Father Curran having in vain supplicated the assassins to desist from their work of death, commanded them to *pray* before they should proceed, and having thus caused them to kneel, dictated a prayer. That God should *show the same mercy to them, which they should show to the surviving prisoners*. The priest judiciously touched the only chord of feeling capable of responding in the bosoms of the fanatical butchers he addressed, self-interest. But as the impulse had been sudden, it would doubtless have been transient, had not the news of danger caused it still to vibrate. The alarm was announced aloud by a person arriving hastily in the town, which caused the multitude of spectators to disperse. The surviving captives were reconducted to prison by their guards, who swore horribly that the next day neither man, woman, nor child, of the protestants in Wexford should remain alive! While the surviving loyalists were rejoicing in their providential deliverance, tragic scenes were elsewhere acting. Mountains and other close recesses were now the retreats of the rebels expelled from Enniscorthy and Wexford, and those who remained armed endeavoured by rapid and devious movements from one position to another, to elude the king's forces and thus protract the war until the arrival of their French allies. While affairs were in this state of suspense in Wexford, the province of Ulster where the spirit of insurrection was supposed most active,

and was most dreaded, remained undisturbed excepting two districts, in which disorders were soon suppressed. This province furnished in these times of anarchy, an undoubted evidence of the benefits of national instruction, and the salutary influence of a rational religion. The people of Ulster are better educated, and possess a more genuine faith than other parts of the population of Ireland, hence the instances of plunder, devastation, and murder, bore no proportion to those which marked the insurrections of the south.

The rebels not discouraged by several defeats during what might be termed a guerilla war, reassembled a force of between four or five hundred men at Ballynahinch, near to, or in the very demesne of Lord Moira. Here a force of fifteen hundred men formed a junction to engage them. Both armies passed the night in preparation for battle. Early in the morning it began while the town was in flames, having been wantonly fired by the soldiery. The valour of the insurgents was displayed in the action, but the want of discipline deprived them of the advantages gained by courage. They became confused at a sudden movement of their adversaries, retreated to an eminence which they defended gallantly a long time, but at length gave way and dispersed in all directions. The main body retired to the mountains, where they soon separated or surrendered, returning to their several homes. During this partial but active insurrection, many lesser actions took place unnecessary to notice, but all contributing to the suppression of the rebellion. In the meanwhile the Wexford insurgents, who it will be recollected escaped towards that place from Vinegar Hill through the space left by the non-attendance of the brigade appointed to fill it, continued their active operations. To trace them

in their progress would be far beyond our ability, and tedious to the general reader, but it was during these last events of a warfare which spread ruin, misery, and desolation, throughout a country peculiarly favoured by nature, that innumerable instances were displayed of surprising physical strength, endurance of hardship, and mental vigour "well worthy" says their historian "of a better cause." After a series of engagements, marches and counter-marches, in which these qualities were manifested, the Wexfordian rebels were finally dispersed. Thus was terminated a bloody and desolating civil war, during which the capital enjoyed a tranquillity interrupted only by rumours of plots within and hostilities without. It was vigilantly guarded by a strong military force, consisting principally of the citizens formed into yeoman companies.

But the period was now arrived when those who had hurried on the path encompassed by destruction, were to be precipitated in the gulph to which it led, to be overwhelmed in the whirlpool they had themselves created. Trials and executions had indeed early commenced in the capital, following the discovery or suppression of the various local insurrections which had agitated the country. A judicious system of mercy was however adopted on the arrival of the Marquis Cornwallis, as lord lieutenant. Amongst those who suffered, there were many (as must always be the case in popular tumults) possessing the most amiable and useful qualities, but who, seduced by the meretricious glare of political regeneration, entered the dangerous arena of revolution, discovering too late that they had entered the lists at the head of an ungovernable mob, under the excitement of the worst and most outrageous human passions.

Justly has it been remarked, that an individual

who has been thus beguiled by an illusion to enter on the horrid activity of revolution, soon finds "he must immolate victims whom no interest leads him to fear, whom his character and feelings often prompt him to save. He must commit crimes without the excuse of seduction, be guilty even of atrocity at the command of a sovereign whom he has himself assisted to elevate, whose orders he could not foresee, and none of whose direful passions his enlightened soul can adopt."

Earl Cornwallis on his arrival in Ireland soon exhibited in the discharge of his high functions, by his activity and wisdom what might be regarded a phenomenon in the country where (as we have seen in the course of our retrospect) "the vice-royalty had too often been a sinecure and the viceroy a pageant of state."

In a few days a proclamation was issued authorizing his Majesty's generals to give protection to such insurgents as being simply guilty of rebellion should surrender their arms, abjure all unlawful engagements, and take the oath of allegiance. Every generous feeling gave sanction to this amnesty, on reflecting how many had been seduced by artifice, deluded by specious appearances, and forced into the horrors of rebellion by the powerful influence of unfortunate circumstances. A kind of treaty was entered into between the government and the chiefs of the United Irish, whereby an agreement was made that the latter, without being obliged to implicate any individual, should give all the information in their power concerning the internal transactions and foreign negotiations of the society, and that those under sentence of death and others who chose to take the benefit of the treaty should be pardoned as to life, but be obliged to depart out of Ireland. (See Gordon's History.) Seventy-three persons signed a contract to this



effect, and in consequence of it several rebel chiefs who had hitherto remained in arms, surrendered their persons. Six principals of the Union also gave details on oath, in their examination before the secret committee of both houses. "Whatever (says Gordon) were the original terms of the contract, and by whatever subsequent events the contractors were influenced or affected, the principal prisoners (fifteen in number) were not liberated, and a power was reserved by ministers to detain them in custody, at least during the continuance of the war with France." This non-fulfilment of agreement, from whatever cause it originates, affected not in the remotest manner the honour of Marquis Cornwallis, which remained unimpeached even by the boldest of the chiefs of the conspiracy.

For a considerable time after the termination of the rebellion, the country as might well be expected was annoyed by different predatory bands, who, concealing themselves in the retreats of the mountains and the woods, emerged suddenly from their haunts on the defenceless, perpetrating burnings and massacres before troops could arrive to intercept them. These massacres were mostly found to have proceeded from a spirit of religious hatred, and as the murderers could not be brought to justice, a cruel policy was resorted to check the horrid practice. Where any protestants were murdered by these banditti, a greater number of Romanists were put to death in the same neighbourhood by the yeomen. Such are the horrid sacrifices which fanaticism exacts! Such the crimes it seeks to justify! The burnings and plunderings of course augmented the desolation caused by the ravage of rebellion, which was in itself dreadful. The losses which the loyalists sustained were not however the work of the rebels



alone, great part of the damage was committed by the soldiery. It is asserted that the Hessians exceeded the other troops in the depredations, and many loyalists who had escaped from the rebels, were put to death by these foreigners.

The sufferings of the country during the dreary season of the winter following the rebellion, were beyond measure distressing. Nocturnal marauders completed the ruin and desolation rebellion had begun; one species of mischief was the burning of Romish chapels in the night, while the wretched inhabitants of the poor cabins were continually deprived of their provisions, beds, and frequently their scanty apparel, and left exposed to all the inclemencies of the severe season. In thus naming the violences committed, the natural concomitants of the commotions of civil warfare, and the subsidence of rebellious spirit, we mean not to infer any neglect on the part of the royal military forces, who, as far as possible, were the protectors of this harassed people. To estimate the losses and detriment the country sustained in this dreadful conspiracy, would be neither possible nor necessary; every generous compensation was made by government to the suffering loyalists. But the loss of property was, perhaps, the least evil resulting from this ill-fated revolt; if we add to the vast sum estimated as thus lost, that of lives, the neglect of industry, the idle turn given to the habits of men from warfare, the obstruction of commerce, interruption of credit, and, above all, the depravation of morals; we may form some faint idea of the magnitude of those evils inseparable with and flowing from a state of civil dissension and popular tumult, combined with religious prejudices.

## CHAPTER XXIX.

*Succours from France arrive at Killala—Small garrisons—French at first successful, but finally repulsed—Distresses created by this renewal of warfare—The behaviour of the French at Killala orderly and honourable—Bigotry and superstition of the lower orders of the Irish—Contempt of the French for the priests—Excesses of the Connaught rebels not great—Many tried—Bartholomew Teeling—Matthew Tone—Theobald Wolfe Tone—His trial and suicide—Proposed remedies—Legislative union of England and Ireland—Question agitated in the parliaments of both kingdoms—It is finally agreed upon: articles of the bill—It is not cordially received—First united parliament assembles at Westminster—The claims of the catholics alluded to—Changes in the Cabinet—Projected invasion—Spirit of the country—Ireland unquiet—Democratical opinions disseminated—Disturbance in Dublin—Murder of Lord Kilwarden and his nephew Mr. Wolfe—Insurrection suppressed by the military—The chief instigators suffer—Emancipation of the catholics—Their disabilities—The petition—The question agitated—Remark of the king—His determination—Ministry dismissed—Digression—Address to his majesty from Sion College—Also from the city of London—Circumstances apparently favourable to the catholic claims—The question is again agitated—Proceeds favourably, but the bill finally lost—Catholic petition—Observations—Catholic claims again discussed in parliament—Observations.*

WHILE the remnants of the political tempest were thus yet hovering over the country which its violence had devastated, the succours from France, so long and so anxiously expected, arrived at their destination. An expedition, under the command of General Humbert, landed at the Bay of Killala, in the north-west of Ireland, remote

from the scene of recent rebellion, and in a part of the island which had not yet exhibited signs of disaffection. The force consisted of a thousand men and seventy officers, conveyed in three frigates, which had sailed from Rochelle, on the 4th of August, 1798, with a design to invade the county of Donnegal, in which they were frustrated by contrary winds. The garrison of Killala, consisting only of fifty men, of whom a part were yeomen, attempted in vain to oppose the entrance of the French vanguard, and were compelled to flee with precipitation, leaving two of their number dead, and their two officers prisoners. We shall not enter into the detail of operations, as it will be sufficient to say that the French were successful in two engagements, but were subsequently obliged to surrender on the approach of a strong force. The Irish who had united with them were also defeated, and a subsequent defeat of another French fleet by Sir John Warren, prevented any further attempts of the enemy to add to the flame of Irish rebellion.

Various and great were the distresses produced by this renewal of warfare; but, as is justly remarked by a narrator of the scenes acted at Killala and elsewhere, during the progress of this contest, "The plague of war so often visits the world, that we are apt to listen to any description of it with the indifference of satiety; it is the actual inspection only that shows the monster in its proper and full deformity." The town of Killala was thirty-two days in the possession of the French and the rebels; the behaviour of the former is stated to have been honourable to them as gentlemen and soldiers, and the little army of invaders remarkable for "intelligence, activity, temperance, and patience." Fortunate was it for the inhabitants of Killala, and even for Ire-

land in general, that such was the character and conduct of the invaders, had it been otherwise, the county of Mayo would probably have exhibited similar scenes as had disgraced Wexford. The absurd bigotry of the lower orders of Ireland, would appear very inconsistent with the free notions of their French allies. It seems as if the spirit of party destroyed the influence of its fanaticism, or it would appear impossible that any zealous papist could come to any terms of agreement with men who openly boasted "that they had just driven Mr. Pope out of Italy, and did not expect to find him so suddenly in Ireland." It astonished the French officers to hear the recruits, when they offered their service, declare that they were come to take arms for France and the *Blessed Virgin*. (*See Narrative of Transactions at Killala.*)

The French seemed to hold the priests, who engaged in the treasonable enterprise, in the utmost contempt, although to conciliate them seemed an act of policy, from their known influence over the population. The protestants of Killala enjoyed, under the protection of the French officers, the privilege of attending divine service every Sunday in the bishop's palace, commonly called the castle; the cathedral remained shut, and the catholics often threatened to take it for their own use, but were always restrained by the presence of these officers. It is a circumstance of which historic justice demands the mention, that during the time of this civil commotion in Connaught, not a drop of blood was shed by the Connaught rebels, except in the field of war. Much may be ascribed to the example and influence of the French, which went a great way to prevent sanguinary excesses. But not to this cause alone would it be just to ascribe the moderation and

forbearance we have named ; for a large range of country lay at the mercy of the rebels for several days after the French power ceased. It may certainly be attributed, in no small degree, to the system of indulgence, which led the loyalists to make some concession to the feelings of men driven (it is admitted through their own conduct) from their dwellings, however wretched ; and, under that impression, to abstain from those rigorous measures which had been too often practised, in order to destroy the organisation of conspiracy, and which too surely served to feed the fire of revenge in the sufferers. The evils, however, invariably attendant on rebellion, were sufficient to impress the actors and sufferers in this western rebellion, with the conviction, that uniting with the enemies of our country is not a matter of little moment, or a state we can safely trust to, or easily emancipate ourselves from, however we may find it fraught with misery, and teeming with continually increasing hazards and evils.

Numbers of the rebel chiefs and other insurgents were tried at Killala and elsewhere, and suffered the sentence of the law. Among these, the historian of the rebellion observes : “ particular notice and particular compassion are due to two men, who, Irishmen by birth, had been in the military service of France before the invasion, had come into Ireland with the French fleet, and had, as well as the best of the French officers, used the most active exertions to save the lives and properties of loyalists. These men were Bartholomew Teeling, and Matthew Tone, whose steady humanity, made evident in their trials, and steady fortitude under sentence and execution, command our pity, and for their personal qualities, our esteem.”

It may be considered one of the greatest evils of such popular insurrections, that they draw within their vortex men of this description, through the ardency of their feelings, thereby injuring the purity of our moral sense, for by blending our admiration and pity for the victims, with the licentiousness or baseness of the cause they have espoused, the distinctions of right and wrong are confused, while our horror of unlawful acts is diminished. The famous Theobald Wolfe Tone, a principal in the united society, and agent to the French, was also captured in the action of Admiral Warren, with the armament sent from Brest. He was on board the *Hoche*. Thus he who had by his activity and talents mainly contributed to give vitality to the formidable conspiracy, which received a fatal blow by the ill success of the French armament, could hardly be said to survive its fate. Tried by a court-martial, he rested his defence on being a denizen of France, an officer in the service of that country. He attempted not to deny the charge against him, nor to offer any plea in mitigation of his political conduct; so true is it that the spirit of party lays claim to glory from all those actions which men would labour to conceal, as tending to cover them with infamy, were they performed from motives of personal interest. Frightful is the situation of that individual, who is prompted to the commission of crime by a feeling or principle he considers honourable! The unhappy Irishman was found guilty; he requested the indulgence of being shot as a soldier, instead of being ignominiously hanged as a felon; and on the refusal of this request, committed suicide in his prison!

With the death of this chief original projector of the conspiracy, the reduction of the predatory



bands in the mountains, and the disappointment of French aid, ended a rebellion deeply and artfully formed, proving the ability of the formers, but in its result illustrating the truth, that however judiciously and ably plans may be laid, it is difficult indeed, if not impossible, to meet with and fix upon proper and effective instruments to put them in execution.

It is to be feared, that although the embers of rebellion are smothered in this our sister kingdom, that the smallest igniting spark would raise them into flame, until England can succeed in calling into action those feelings of our common nature, which are the main-springs of moral improvement. The first duty of reformers of every kind, is to secure the affections and confidence of those whose condition, moral, physical, and intellectual, is to be reformed. They must be won slowly and gradually from those opinions and those habits which oppose improvement, and cherish the vicious propensities, while they narrow and debase the mind. To enter, at least in appearance, into their rude feelings and peculiar habits, and thus by cultivating the soil, to give hope of a healthy produce.

Most unhappily, the prejudices of religious antipathy are so deeply rooted among the lower classes of the Irish Romanists, that any civil disturbance, however unconnected with religious principles, would be quickly converted into a quarrel of that nature, even the most bitter. Nothing but the enlightening and enlarging the minds of the population, by early and judicious instruction, will have power to counteract this propensity among a people who have a traditionary notion of exclusive right to the divine favour, and of the merit of opposition against those who question the doctrine. Their jealousy is awakened

against the first motion towards the invasion of their rights, civil and religious, and they never fail to identify them. This jealousy becomes a fruitful source of precipitate judgments and false impressions, many imaginary grievances and unjust complaints.

This developement of religious with political zeal is however very natural, and entirely to be expected in the collision of human interests. Whatever raises a church into importance will be applied (or at least the attempt to apply it will be made) to the extension of that church's power and creed. Zealous protestants regard the security and prevalence of their faith as a legitimate end; many of them as the most important end for which their social advantages can be employed, and it must in candour be expected that the catholics act upon the same principle.

As it is far from our intention however to recommend in this cursory retrospect any line of policy, as it aims no higher than a simple narration of events, we leave it to deeper thinkers and abler pens to suggest the remedies to be applied to the evils complained of by the Irish, and which awaken the interest of the English. Much has been done and much yet remains to be done, but we must guard against being too precipitate in the means and too sanguine in the hopes of amelioration. The evils are manifold and deeply seated, of course the remedies must be applied by skilful judgments, and be progressive not rapid in their operation. A consequence of great and general importance, the result of which is yet hid behind the veil of futurity, flowed from the misery experienced in the civil distractions in Ireland we have recorded, and the sense of danger which the country had so providentially escaped, of yet incalculably greater miseries, had the rebels proved successful. This was the legislative union

of Great Britain and Ireland. It was believed that the political incorporation of the two kingdoms might remove the baneful jealousies so long existing, and more particularly remedy the evil and inconvenience of a system of two distinct legislatures, *nominally* independent, but one *practically* dependent on the other. This was the view in which many intelligent and reflecting men among the Irish regarded the measure; but it was not to be expected that the number was great, whose minds could thus rise above national prejudices or personal and local advantages. To the majority the very idea of such union was odious, and such was the determined prejudice against it, that there was not the smallest probability of success, if the measure were proposed. The calamities and dangers of the rebellion somewhat softened these prejudices.

The existing connection between Great Britain and Ireland not being deemed sufficiently close for mutual safety, the consideration of the important subject was recommended by his majesty to the British and Irish parliaments in the year 1799. In order to give ample time for reflection upon a subject involving the destinies of a great nation, the actual proposal of the question was deferred to the following year. There was just reason to expect that the subversion of a regular and independent parliament would greatly wound the feelings of a high-spirited and proud people, and that the deprivation of some individual and local advantages would have more weight with the popular members than the prospective general benefit to be derived from an imperial parliament. These apprehensions were certainly well founded, even the rumour of the scheme excited in Ireland strong sensations of disgust; when the lord lieutenant mentioned the king's desire and hope of a speedy improvement of the

connection between the realms, some of the most eloquent members of the commons so forcibly roused the assembly, that ministry could only procure in one division a majority of *one*, and in another of *two* votes. In two subsequent discussions each party alternately prevailed.

In the commons of Great Britain Mr. Pitt argued on the expediency of applying in the case of Ireland, that principle of union which had so happily healed the divisions and harmonised the discords which had prevailed between the English and Scottish parliament; he disclaimed any intention of insinuating that any serious disagreement existed between the Irish legislature and that of Britain, but from the independence of the former and the risque of its being occasionally influenced by local prejudices, he apprehended a variance might sometimes arise dangerous to the welfare of the British empire. This danger he considered more probable and more alarming from the certainty, he well knew, that the French were still meditating, in concert with many disaffected Irish, an absolute disjunction of the island from the empire of which it had so long formed a part. A scheme of such magnitude and importance could not be expected to pass without very many strictures and spirited animadversions. It was says an English historian "assailed by the sarcastic wit and nervous oratory of Sheridan, the more chastened and dignified eloquence of Grey, the acuteness of Tierney, and the casuistry of Lawrence.

The Earl of Moira opposed it chiefly on the ground of its being repugnant to the wishes of the people of Ireland, Earl Fitzwilliam and Lord Holland resisted it because they conceived it was unnecessary and might be highly injurious to the connection it was intended to cement. The several

opinions of these enlightened statesmen are well known. Lord Moira had ever, with his characteristic mild dignity and moderation, recommended measures of conciliation instead of coercion with his unhappy countrymen. He never failed to advise the gaining the affections of the Irish by plans of mildness, rather than by harsh and precipitate measures to rouse the irritable feelings of a people so impatient. Earl Fitzwilliam entertained similar sentiments and acted upon them during the continuance of his popular government in the country.\*

The strong and discriminating mind of Sheridan grasped the various relations of the subject with a perspicuity that was embellished by his noblest effusions of eloquence, which for the moment disarmed prejudice of its sting and lulled the spirit of party; though, as was too usual with him, he was sometimes hurried to a levity of remark unworthy of the great national question agitated.

The several arguments of the orators went to prove that every purpose of connection was fully answered by the existing identity of the executive power of the two realms, that in the event of the proposed union there never could be that perfect incorporation, either physical, moral, or political which had been effected in the alleged case of

\* So highly venerated was this nobleman during his lieutenancy in Ireland, that a panic more easily to be conceived than expressed pervaded the whole kingdom, but more particularly the city of Dublin, upon the news of his recall being made public. The nation seemed again to sink into despondency; the houses, shops, &c. were shut up in

the streets through which he passed on the memorable day on which he sailed to England. These marks of national gratitude, sorrow, and disappointment greatly affected his lordship, particularly as he had anticipated the enjoyment of being the instrument to confer national happiness, a result which his recall denied him to experience.

Scotland. It was warmly contended that the removal of all religious restrictions would alone effectually promote concord and unity; that from the subversion of the parliament of Ireland mischievous discord must inevitably ensue, nor could any thing in the smallest degree justify the extraordinary measure, but the free and declared sense of the people at large, obtained by *new elections*.

All arguments however proved vain to prevail on the cabinet to abandon the measure. During this interval of the year, however, the ministerial interest gained such accession in Ireland, that a majority of forty-two voted in the commons against the popular cause. In the meantime the articles of union were framed, according to the outlines which had been sketched and voted in England, and were included in an address to his majesty. The Marquis Cornwallis communicated to the Irish house of peers, and commons, the resolutions voted in the British parliament; and a full development of the scheme was given by Lord Castle-reagh. The articles being agreed to by the Irish parliament, they voted the address, in which they declared that they cordially embraced the principle of incorporating the two realms into one, by a complete legislative union, that they had been assisted by the resolutions of the British parliament in framing a plan of that kind, and that they were ready to give their final sanction in concert with great Britain, to the articles which they now offered to their sovereign.

His majesty after communicating this address to his parliament, recommended them to complete the great work of union, and after debates, continuing through several weeks, all the articles were sanctioned. The bill contained eight articles; by the first three, a union of the two realms, a confirmation of the protestant succession, and a



consolidation of the parliaments were ordained ; the next adjusted the mode of securing the interests of Ireland in the combined legislative body, to insure this four prelates were ordered to sit alternately in each session, and twenty-eight laic peers were to be chosen for life, while two members for each of the thirty-two counties, and thirty-six citizens and burgesses, were to represent the Irish commons. The fifth article united the churches of England and Ireland, leaving Scotland distinct. The sixth provided that the people of Great Britain and Ireland should be entitled to the same privileges and be on the same footing as to encouragements and bounties on articles of commerce being the “ growth, produce, or manufacture of either country.” The seventh left the public debt of each kingdom on a separate basis, with regard to interest and final liquidation, and required that the expenditure of the united kingdom should be defrayed in the proportion of fifteen parts for Britain, and two parts for Ireland ; but after the lapse of twenty years it was to be at the option of the parliament to continue this arrangement or not. The eighth article provided for the conservation of the laws which were then in force, and the preservation of the regular courts of judicature, subject however to such alterations as might appear to the legislature to be occasionally expedient.—*See History of Europe.*

Although these stipulations seemed calculated for the purposes intended, those of harmony and conciliation, yet very many regarded the measure in toto as the final act of the subjugation of the country, a total annihilation of its liberties and a tyrannical encroachment on the freedom, a base invasion of the rights of an independent nation. These strong impressions were in a great measure

produced by the strenuous exertions made to influence the house of commons, and the omission of that constitutional appeal to the electors which such an important national change required. The Irish persisted in declaring that it was forced upon them, and against every act of assumed power the mind strongly and naturally revolts; but although Ireland disapproved the union with its elder sister, his majesty declared that he "should ever consider it as the happiest event of his reign."

It was in the critical period of 1801 when so many memorable events marked the state of the political world both abroad and at home, that the first united parliament of the two kingdoms assembled at Westminster. His majesty in his address to both houses observed, that he derived great satisfaction from being enabled for the first time to avail himself of the advice and assistance of the united parliament. "This memorable era, he said, "distinguished for the accomplishment of a measure calculated to augment and consolidate the strength and resources of the empire, and to cement more closely the interests and affections of my subjects, will I trust be equally marked by that vigour, energy, and firmness which the circumstances peculiarly require." The case of the catholics in Ireland, whose claims after the union formed a subject of discussion in the cabinet, was frequently alluded to.

Mr. Pitt and Lord Grenville favoured the wishes of the catholics, as necessary to confirm the interests of the united kingdom, they affirmed that as no danger could arise from it, policy required the concession. Many members however were of a different opinion, alleging that the oath taken by his majesty at his coronation precluded beyond all doubt, his assent to any measure which might

in its consequences endanger or trouble the religious establishment of the realm. In consequence of opposition of opinion, Mr. Pitt declared that he conceived himself bound by his duty, his conscience, and his honour to resign that situation in which he was not at full liberty to pursue his ideas of equity and public benefit. Many changes took place in the cabinet, and the Earl of Hardwicke was appointed lord lieutenant of Ireland, and Sir John Mitford chancellor in the ensuing year.

In 1803, when the negotiations of Lord Whitworth with the first consul had abruptly terminated, and in consequence there became an evident necessity to defend the country against Gallic invasion, an additional force was to be promptly raised. Accordingly an army of ten thousand men, under the title of the army of reserve, was formed, independent of the regular and supplementary militia, and a general levy en masse was recommended. The roused spirit of the country at that memorable epoch rendered this latter measure totally unnecessary, as it soon presented a further force of three hundred thousand effective volunteers.

While these arrangements tending to secure the united kingdom against foreign hostility were vigorously in progress, the alarm of internal commotion in Ireland once more arose. That unhappy kingdom was still perturbed and distressed, consequently in a state of discontent; deep distress brooded beneath apparent indifference, whilst the inveterate discordance subsisting between the two religions of the population kept alive that unceasing irritation which was ready on the least occasion to explode in some dangerous action. Nor did all the endeavours which had been made to soften prejudices or to close divi-

sions, produce that coalition of plans and interests, without which a country can neither enjoy peace nor prosperity. Men will bear the extreme of suffering and want with wonderful patience, while they suppose the evil to arise from a natural and inevitable necessity, but if they once imagine it to proceed from any fault of their rulers, or think that relief is attainable if proper means were pursued for the purpose, however depressed they may be by the harshness of government, or the weight of financial burdens, they will take fire, and no bounds can be prescribed to the violent ebullition of feeling. Ireland has too often illustrated the truth of our assertion. The discontent pervading the body of the people was greatly augmented by the wily stratagems and artful sophistries of the abettors of democracy, themselves deceived by an illusory picture of political perfection. It was on the popular feverish irritability that they found the seeds of sedition and disloyalty were likely to germinate, and they failed not to keep alive the unnatural warmth in the bosoms of Hibernia's sons.

These popular leaders were not distinguished by rank, but they possessed those imposing talents which easily obtained an influence over the multitude, while they were themselves in that highly excited state of mind produced by the spirit of party, considering its object as superior to every thing that exists; it fears no danger and can repent of no sacrifice when that end is to be obtained. It was on the evening of July 23d, 1803, that the rash multitude of Dublin, instigated by these leaders, armed themselves with pikes and other offensive weapons, and sallied forth, having previously distributed a number of inflammatory addresses, by which the people were exhorted to take arms,

in order to rescue themselves from an insupportable yoke. During the ensuing tumult the Lord Chief Justice Kilwarden and his nephew were stopped as they were passing in a carriage, dragged violently from the vehicle and murdered by the insurgents. To account for this dreadful outrage against Lord Kilwarden, it is necessary to state that he was thought, if not absolutely known, to have been the adviser of most if not all the severe laws which had, for some years gone by, been enacted in Ireland, and which had suspended (at least in the opinion of the popular party) some of the most important and constitutional privileges of the people. In private life his lordship, who thus fell a victim to popular resentment, had the high character of a steady friend and an honest man. The fatal career of sedition was however on this occasion soon arrested, but it was by means which must ever be most painful to generous spirits to employ, though no one can doubt the necessity of the system of coercion in this instance. A body of yeomanry and soldiers attacked the insurgents, of whom many fell victims to their rash enterprise; some of the loyal combatants also lost their lives, although their cause finally prevailed in the distressing conflict.

Had not this insurrection in the capital been thus promptly and effectually opposed, it would there is reason to fear have extended as rapidly as that of Wexford, the spirit of which it has been remarked quickly took possession of the shop of the tradesman, the cottage of the peasant, the pulpit of the dissenting minister, the confessional of the catholic priest, and as we have seen, advanced with boldness, ferocity, and unanimity of concert to the completion of the projected design. In the present instance the intelligence received

by the provincial conspirators, of the check given to the insurrection in Dublin, repressed the spirit of rebellion. Many of the inferior agents in this ebullition of treason were taken and capitally punished before the concealment of their leaders was discovered, but they were at length taken and brought to trial. The evidence against Emmet, the principal, was conclusive, he was declared guilty, and suffered with coolness and courage; he frankly avowed his hostility against the existing government, but firmly denied having solicited aid from the French, strongly deprecating the interposition of that government in foreign national affairs, as invariably where they entered as friends they had acted like determined enemies. Russel, the associate of Emmet, with equal candour and boldness acknowledged his invincible repugnance to the prevailing political system, and met his fate with a similar fortitude; he had not like Emmet openly engaged in the insurrection, but was in full possession of the scheme, and had by various means encouraged the disaffected to take an active part in the treason. It appeared from the evidence against those victims of their own misguided principles, that a scheme of provisional government had been prepared, intended to be recommended to, or enforced on, the people, that measures were taken for arming the enemies of the government, and other revolutionary acts, and that it was intended to retaliate upon the armed adherents of the court the violence that had been exercised under the forms of law against the true friends of Ireland. Thus whatever might have been the effect of a milder system acted upon by the government, it is certain the observance of a contrary one offered too good a plea to the disaffected for discontent, complaint, and resistance.



In every reform or revolution desired by the Irish, the emancipation of the catholics must be the primary step, since it would be a necessary one to give prospect of success, as from their numbers they would bring a vast accession to the weight of the people in the political scale, as well as possess the greatest and most powerful popular influence. It is, however, to be lamented, that the catholics of Ireland, as far as relates to their endeavours for the recovery of their civil rights, should so invariably blend them with manifestations of religious proselyting zeal and bigotry, and thus awaken those fears of theological conflicts, of which the experience of the past informs us but too truly of the lamentable results to nations and individuals. Too often the powerful feeling of political degradation is associated with that equally powerful of pride at the ancient religious supremacy enjoyed. These injudicious manifestations of religious partialities tend to increase the fears of catholic emancipation, strengthen the apprehensions of those who regard it as a dangerous measure, and cause even hesitation in those who have been accustomed to deem it an act of political expediency and justice, and who, from considering it abstractedly as a political measure, begin to apprehend its possible influence on the established religion. That protestants also act with religious bigotry cannot be doubted. Many instances might be adduced, and it is to be feared that the discordance of the parties is too great ever to admit of any solid and permanent coalition in the national affairs, though specious junctions may be formed even to deceive the superficial observer. That many partial inconveniencies should arise even from the Union which it was hoped would produce general and mutual good to the kingdoms united, was what might reasonably

be expected, and ought not to form a subject of bitter complaint, or to produce resentful feelings towards the agents of the measure.

In the session of 1805 a contest took place not likely to conciliate parties, or to heal divisions injurious to true patriotism. The leading catholics of Ireland revived that subject of complaint which had so frequently disturbed the tranquillity, and excited jealousies between the two countries, namely, their disabilities for offices of national trust and consequence. It had been resolved at a meeting of these individuals, that a petition should be presented to both Houses of Parliament for the utter extinction of those incapacities, restraints, and privations, which were at once severe and humiliating, and urging that the system of "exclusion, reproach, and suspicion, was even ignominious, and deeply affecting them in every condition and station of life. Professing their admiration for, and their high regard of the constitution, they prayed to be restored to the full enjoyment of its benefits, that they might be animated to a defence of its blessings." Their advocate in the House of Peers was Lord Grenville; in the Commons, Mr. Fox with his accustomed energy argued in their favour. It was contended that differences of religious opinion ought to have no influence in regard to the civil rights of the individuals forming a great community, and that until it could be clearly and unquestionably proved that those religious opinions were incompatible with the constitution, and dangerous to its safety, all citizens whatever their creed had equal pretensions to the benefits, the honours, and the emoluments of the state which they contributed to uphold and defend. It was urged that various circumstances prevented the catholics from being individually or collectively objects of just fear.

It was broadly insinuated, that if they were objects of fear, too much had already been conceded to them; but as these fears appeared to be altogether visionary, the measure could not with any shadow of justice be delayed or refused, as it promised permanent concord of parties, accession of strength to the realm, and stability to every political institution, which concentrated wisdom should devise for the national good.

In reply to these arguments, it was said, that admitting that toleration in religious opinions might be claimed as a right; political power stood on a different ground. That every state had an undoubted power to confine as it pleased its offices and its favours to those who were from their religious connection most interested in its support; therefore, that in a constitution formed upon the basis of principles, the value of which had been proved by time and experience, and an establishment erected by wisdom learnt in the best of all schools, and in which the principles of protestantism were thought so essential to its security and peace, that even the sovereign was not allowed to profess any other, the admission of those into power who were opposed to those principles by a recognition of a foreign jurisdiction and a denial of the king's ecclesiastical supremacy, would be both irrational and inconsistent, if not dangerous;—as it was to be feared that the known zeal of the catholics would increase in proportion to the means afforded to exercise it, and thus the nation might gradually lose its distinguishing religious character, while intestine divisions would be created.

With respect to the established church, even its enemies must admit, that it stands clearly exempted from the charge of undue zeal, or severity towards those holding a different form of faith.

Persecution cannot be deemed an evil of the times. The claims of church power are far from being carried too high, nor does a spirit of intolerance characterize the episcopal hierarchy. The catholics, therefore, had no reason to apprehend a persecuting zeal, or that the restraints thought necessary by legislative wisdom to secure the superiority of the protestant faith of the realm could ever be for a moment thought derogatory to the admitted high qualities, or degrading to the character of the Irish catholics.

The result of the debates was unfavourable to the catholic claims; a result anticipated by the petitioners, who, however, determined to trust to perseverance for ultimate success. Accordingly, the question was again brought forward in 1807, and several conferences took place between the king and his ministers on the important subject. The king when pressed to consent to the bill by the first Lord of the Treasury, replied, "My Lord, I am one of those who respect an oath. I have firmness enough to quit my throne and retire to a cottage, or to place my neck on a block or a scaffold if my people require it, but I have not resolution to break that oath, which I took in the most solemn manner at my coronation." Many distinguished members of both houses had for some time desired their catholic fellow subjects completely to participate in every national privilege, while many were only advocates for removing restrictions with regard to the army and navy. The alarming increasing power and enmity of France, was at this time pleaded as a conclusive reason why the required boon should be granted, as it would ensure the warm exercise of all the energies of the empire. To this might be added the disordered state of Ireland, which rendered the measure peculiarly expedient, as it

would tend to allay the discontents of that kingdom more effectually than any other. From the commencement of the agitation of this measure the king expressed his disapprobation of the indulgence meditated, but strongly urged by a memorial from the cabinet, he assented to its being discussed.

A correspondence even ensued with the viceroy of Ireland, during which some explanation referring to the plan was desirable, and an unequivocal one was given by the king. While the bill however was in actual progress, the king declared himself hostile to the proposed concessions. Modifications of the scheme were humbly offered, but his majesty was firm in his opinion, exacting a solemn pledge of his ministers that the question should not again be brought forward. They however refused giving this pledge, for though willing to yield to the conscientious objections of their sovereign, they still declared their unchanged conviction of the expediency and policy of yielding to the wishes of so large and loyal a portion of the community. The king dismissed this ministry immediately, but with just acknowledgments of their talents and his sense of their merits.

We have professed to relate only simple facts, feeling our incompetency to judge of the policy, or to view with clearness and precision in all its bearings any legislative act. We therefore are far from attempting to decide upon the merits of the question so warmly agitated at this period, in which the king evinced his high respect for the solemn obligations of an oath. Rigour against any thing that bears the name of religion is justly reprobated by every genuine mind, and must ever give it pain, and it is certainly better to extend too far than to circumscribe too narrowly the bounds of forbearance and indulgent charity; but

let those who think the exclusion of the catholics unjust, ungenerous, and severe, reflect upon the dangerous tendency of the doctrines of the Romish church.

“ If popery,” says an ecclesiastical writer, “ considered as a pernicious system of policy, should be pleaded as a sufficient reason to except it from the indulgence due to *merely speculative* systems of theology, if the voice of history should be appealed to, as declaring the assassinations, rebellions, conspiracies, the horrid scenes of carnage and desolation, which popery in its proselyting zeal has occasioned ; if the standing maxims and principles of the Romish church should be quoted, which authorize these enormities ; if it should be alleged finally, that popery is much more malignant and dangerous in Great Britain than in other Protestant countries ; we acknowledge that all these pleas *are well founded*, and plead for *modifications* to the liberty which the clemency or indulgence of the legislature may grant to that unfriendly system of religion. All we desire is, that mercy and humanity may ever accompany the execution of justice, and that nothing like merely religious persecution may stain the British annals.”

Now we would diffidently ask if the exclusion of the Catholics from merely temporal and political advantages, can with any shadow of justice be deemed persecution, or interfere in the smallest degree with their spiritual welfare ? But it is said the rapid march of mind during the last, and the early portion of the present century, the improvements in science, and the enlargement of the intellectual powers, have divested the catholic religion of all its dangerous dogmas, or rather deprived it of all power to influence the actions of those to whom they have been taught.

We fully admit the natural tendency of intel-



lectual improvement to strengthen and confirm the cause of simple religion, and its power to open the mental eye to the errors of a perverted principle. But we may do well also to remember that the very *basis* of popery is a blind submission to an usurped authority over the *understanding*, as well as the consciences of men, and an implicit credulity that adopts without due examination, assertions deriving their existence from the questionable sources of fanatical reveries, or the artful misrepresentations of imposture ; hence it has, in too many instances, been no more than a political power, attacked or defended according to the sole interests of this world, and the engines by which it was worked have been ignorance, secrecy, and obscurity. “ The right of examining what we ought to believe is,” says an admired writer, “ the foundation of Protestantism.” The first reformers did not so understand it, they thought they could fix the pillars of Hercules of the human mind at the boundary of their own knowledge, but they were wrong in imagining that men would submit to their discussions as if they were infallible. They who had rejected all authority of this sort in the catholic religion. Protestantism then was sure to follow the progress of knowledge, while *catholicism boasted of being immoveable in the midst of the waves of time*. But if the progress of free inquiry have a natural and irresistible tendency to undermine or destroy the foundations of popery, and to render its dogmas innoxious in a protestant country, how can it be accounted for, that amid the general illumination of the human mind, it not only exists in perfect vitality, but seems even to have renewed a portion of its former vigour. The question is an interesting one, and it behoves the friends of catholic emancipation to examine it candidly and deeply, ere they accuse those who differ from

them in opinion, of bigotry, narrow-mindedness, or evil policy. It will be acknowledged that it is much easier to espouse a cause, than to examine and review the principles of it, or the authority on which they have been taken up. Let but a sincere desire to arrive at the truth, a due consideration of the subject in all its bearings, a candour which allows for human imperfection, and charity which thinketh no evil, but guide us in the examination of any question which regards others, and we shall surely not very much err in our judgment—observing ever that while we condemn catholicism as a system, we beware of cherishing any prejudices against catholics as men.

But to return from this perhaps unwarrantable digression. On the decision of his Majesty on the catholic question, an address was presented to him from Sion College, of which we give some extracts. After the usual forms of opening an address, the clergy of this college thus express their approbation of the ~~king~~'s conduct.

“ We feel, Sire, that we should be utterly unworthy of that uniform and pious protection which through the course of a long and auspicious reign your Majesty has, under Divine Providence, extended to the church established in this United Kingdom, if we did not in the present posture of affairs express our deep and indelible gratitude to your Majesty, for a recent instance of your royal wisdom and constancy in the preservation of those sanctions which experience has proved to be necessary for the protection of our constitution in church and state. These sanctions were the legacy of our revered ancestors, who lived in times most distinguished by the progress of true philosophy and the sagacity of legislative wisdom.

“ Sire, we are fully aware of all the dangers

and confusions which must arise from depriving the established church of that mild, tolerant ascendancy which equally prevents the ruinous conflicts of contending sects, and the overbearing supremacy of a foreign spiritual jurisdiction, inconsistent with either liberty or toleration, or genuine allegiance to a protestant prince.

“ In your Majesty’s firm refusal to sanction projects utterly subversive of all that the wisdom of our forefathers devised, and destructive of the strongest barriers of that constitution which your august family were called by Divine Providence to defend, we recognize with veneration and gratitude an eminent regard for the true principles of christian toleration, and the high duties incumbent on a monarch of the protestant succession, and a most conscientious adherence to the sanctity of your coronation oath, which places the protestant religion, as established by law in this kingdom, under your Majesty’s peculiar and incessant protection.

“ That your Majesty may long here on earth enjoy the allegiance, affection, and gratitude of all your faithful subjects, and the approving testimony of your conscience, and that you may late inherit the unfading crown which is reserved in Heaven for the protectors and defenders of the sincere and uncorrupted faith of Christ, is the fervent and constant prayer of, Sire, your ever dutiful and affectionate subjects,

“ THE PRESIDENT AND FELLOWS OF  
SION COLLEGE.”

Given at Sion College,  
April 18, 1807.

The approbation of the citizens of London was conveyed in a similar manner, and in terms equally expressive of their deep sense of gratitude to the

monarch for his scrupulous regard to the preservation of the established church, and to the inviolability of his coronation oath.

“ We contemplate, Sire, (they observe in this address,) with the warmest affection and most profound veneration, the exercise of those unextinguishable principles in the royal breast, which protect in every situation the religious interests of your people, and provide for the happiness and freedom of posterity by guarding the protestant succession in your Majesty’s royal house on the throne of the United Kingdom.”

When the prince was, in 1811, appointed Regent of the kingdom, on the melancholy malady of his august father being pronounced of such a nature as to preclude all hope of speedy restoration, every thing seemed favourable to the catholic cause, which, although not publicly agitated, still occupied the thoughts of many, and was to those immediately interested the great object of their exertions and their desires.

In the session of 1812 their claims were once more debated. As the king’s sentiments on the subject no longer opposed an obstacle to the desired grant; as the Prince Regent was supposed to be at least not unfriendly to the asserted claims, and as numbers of all parties appeared willing to promote, by acquiescence, religious union and harmony, and as the ministry had promised to leave the question to the uninfluenced decision of parliament, there was every reason to anticipate that the remaining disabilities of the complainants would be at length finally removed. Some indeed there were, who entertained strong doubts of the success of the renewed application, and more were of opinion that the two Houses were bound to reject it altogether.

In a question which had been so frequently

agitated, little novelty of remark could be expected in the present discussion, although it was viewed in all its varied aspects by the keen vision of profound politicians. It was at last voted that the claims should be referred to the consideration of a committee. Mr. Grattan with his accustomed felicity of expression shed, over the hackneyed subject, the radiance of his eloquence, or varying his style into the close and energetic, concentrated the force of his argument in advocating a cause which so long had occupied the high faculties of his mind, and interested the best feelings of his heart. He moved that the civil and military disqualifications under which they laboured should be entirely removed, with such exceptions and regulations as might be deemed necessary for the security of the protestant succession, and of the church as established.

Some protested against the hazardous grant, unless it was precisely known what securities would be offered. The majority, however, agreed to the proposition, and a bill was introduced for its accomplishment. The spirits of the catholics revived—their hopes seemed near fulfilment—their perseverance near its reward. In this period of suspense, a Member expressed his wish that various inquiries might be instituted before the bill should be permitted to pass into a law. He urged the expediency of examining the state and number of the catholic clergy, the nature of their intercourse with the Roman see, the regulations respecting the appointment of prelates, the opinions which were entertained of oaths and tests enforced by the rulers of the state, and, in fact, to investigate closely and maturely every particular which could illustrate the subject, so that the question of security might be accurately determined. This motion was rejected with much

warmth, as indicating an insidious hostility. The bill, it was contended, invested the king with the power of a veto against any episcopal nomination, and of opposing the reception of any bull, brief, or other instrument sent by the pope, unless it should be pronounced unobjectionable by a council, consisting of distinguished catholics and protestants. It also imposed an oath of the most comprehensive kind, and having by this, secured submission and loyalty, gave the desired right of sitting and voting in parliament, and of holding every office except the chancellorship of England, and the vice-royalty of Ireland. Notwithstanding these arguments, however, the protestant Members expressed themselves so dissatisfied with the proposed securities, that on a motion made by the Speaker, which was strongly supported, there was a majority of four for the continued exclusion of the catholics from the two Houses of Parliament, and the bill was thus rejected.

Thus were the hopes of the catholics, so apparently near fruition, again rendered vain, and they had still to trust to perseverance and happier auspices to attain their desire.

Perhaps it is almost invariably found that as we the object of our wishes is removed from us, we become in proportion more eager in pursuit, more tenacious of the privileges we fear to lose, and more resolved to regain what has been wrested from us. That such were the effects upon the catholics from their frequent disappointments has been abundantly proved; but as this work is intended as a retrospect of the past, without aiming at any detail of contemporaneous history, we shall bring it near conclusion by citing a document which, as it seems fully to develope the sentiments of that portion of the British community who suppose themselves degraded, disho-



noured, and contemned, we trust notwithstanding its length we need no apology for inserting.

At a general meeting of the catholics of Ireland, held at Dublin in the spring of 1812, the following petition was unanimously resolved upon to the Prince Regent.

“ That we humbly approach your Royal Highness as the guardian of the honour and interests of this great empire, and presume respectfully to submit to your royal consideration our peculiar condition under the penal laws now in force against us.

“ We have publicly and solemnly taken every oath of fidelity and allegiance which the jealous caution of the legislature has from time to time imposed as tests of our moral and political principles, and although we are still set apart (how wounding to every sentiment of honour!) as if unworthy of credit in these our sworn declarations, we can appeal confidently to the sacrifices we and our forefathers have long made and which we still make, (rather than violate conscience by taking oaths of a spiritual import contrary to our belief,) as decisive proofs of our profound reverence for the sacred obligation of an oath. By those awful tests we have bound ourselves in the presence of the all-seeing deity whom all classes of christians adore, ‘ To be sure and faithful, and bear true allegiance to our most gracious sovereign Lord, King George the Third, and him to defend to the utmost of our power against all conspiracies and attempts whatsoever against his person, crown, or dignity; to use our utmost endeavours to disclose and make known to his Majesty and his heirs all treasons and traitorous conspiracies which may be formed against him or them, and faithfully to maintain, support, and defend to the utmost of our power the succession to the crown in his Majesty’s

family against all persons whomsoever.' That by those oaths we have renounced and abjured obedience and allegiance to any other person, claiming or pretending a right to the crown of this realm. That we have rejected as unchristian and impious to believe the detestable doctrine that it is lawful in anywise to injure any person or persons whomsoever under pretence of their being heretics. And also that unchristian and impious opinion that no faith is to be kept with heretics; that it is no article of our faith; and we renounce, reject, and abjure the opinion that princes excommunicated by the Pope and Council, or by any authority whatsoever may be deposed or murdered by their subjects, or by any person whatsoever. That we do not believe that the Pope of Rome or any other foreign prince, prelate, state, or potentate, hath or ought to have any temporal or civil jurisdiction, power, superiority, or pre-eminence within this realm. That we firmly believe that no act in itself unjust, immoral, or wicked, can ever be justified or excused by, or under pretence or colour that it was done for the good of the church, or in obedience to any ecclesiastical power whatsoever; and that it is not an article in the catholic faith, neither are we thereby required to believe or profess that the Pope is infallible or that we are bound to any order, in its own nature immoral, though the Pope or any ecclesiastical power, should issue or direct such order, but that on the contrary, we hold that it would be sinful in us to pay any respect or obedience thereto. That we do not believe that any sin whatsoever committed by us can be forgiven at the mere will of any Pope, or of any priest, or of any person or persons whatsoever, but that any person who receives absolution without a sincere sorrow for such sin, and a firm and sincere resolution to avoid fu-

ture guilt, and to atone to God, so far from obtaining thereby any remission of his sin, incurs the additional guilt of violating a sacrament. And by the most solemn obligations we are bound and solemnly pledged to defend to the utmost of our power, the settlement and arrangement of property in Ireland as established by the laws now in being.

“ That we have declared, disavowed, and solemnly abjured any intention to subvert the present church establishment for the purpose of substituting a catholic establishment in Ireland in its stead.

“ And we have solemnly sworn that we will not exercise any privilege to which we are, or may become entitled, to disturb and weaken the protestant religion or the protestant government in Ireland.

“ We can with perfect truth assure your Royal Highness, that the political and moral principles asserted by these solemn and special tests are not merely in unison with our fixed principles, but also expressly inculcated by the religion we profess.

“ And we do most humbly trust that as professors of doctrines which permit such tests to be taken, we shall appear to your Royal Highness to be entitled to the full enjoyment of religious freedom, under the happy constitution of these realms.

“ Frequently has the legislature of Ireland borne testimony to the uniform peaceable demeanour of the Irish Roman catholics; to their acknowledged merits as good and loyal subjects; to the wisdom and sound policy of admitting them to all the blessings of a free constitution, and of thus binding together all classes of the people by mutual interest and mutual affection. Yet may

we humbly represent to your Royal Highness, and we do so at this perilous crisis with sincere regret and deep solicitude, that the Roman catholics of Ireland still remain subject to severe and humiliating laws, rigidly enforced, universally felt, and inflicting on them divers injurious and vexatious disabilities, incapacities, privations, and penalties, by reason of their conscientious adherence to the religious doctrines of their forefathers. For nearly the entire period of the last twenty years the progress of religious freedom has been obstructed, and while other christian nations have hastened to unbind the fetters imposed upon religious dissent, the Roman catholics of Ireland have remained unrelieved.

“ The laws which unequivocally attest our innocence and our merits, continue to load us with the pains of guilt, our own consciences, the voice of mankind, acquit us of crime or offence. Our protestant fellow citizens press forward with generous ardour, and enlightened benevolence to testify their earnest wishes for our relief. Yet these penal laws of which we humbly complain, cherish the spirit of hostility, and impede the cordial union of the people, which is at all times so desirable and now so necessary. These penal laws operate for no useful or meritorious purpose, affording no aid to the constitution either of church or state; not attaching affection to either—they are efficient only for objects of disunion and disaffection. They separate the protestant from the catholic, and withdraw both from the public good, they irritate man against his fellow creature, alienate the subject from the state, and leave the Roman catholic community but a precarious and imperfect protection, as the reward of fixed and unbroken allegiance. We forbear to detail the numerous incapacities and inconveniences inflicted

by those laws directly or indirectly upon the Roman catholic community ; or to dwell upon the humiliating and ignominious system of exclusion, reproach and suspicion, which they generate and keep alive. Perhaps no age or nation has ever witnessed severities more vexatious or inflictions more taunting than those which we have long endured, and of which but too large a portion yet remains. Relief from these disabilities and penalties we have sought through every channel that has appeared to us legitimate and eligible. We have never consciously violated or sought to violate, the known laws of the land, nor have we pursued our object in any other manner than such as has been usually adhered to, and apparently best calculated to collect and communicate our united sentiments accurately without tumults, and to obviate all pretexts for asserting that the Roman catholic community at large were indifferent to the pursuit of their freedom ; we can affirm with perfect sincerity we have no latent views to realize, no secret or sinister objects to obtain. Any such imputation must be effectually repelled as we humbly conceive by the consideration of our numbers, our property, our known principles and character.

“ Our object is avowed and direct—earnest yet natural. It extends to an equal participation of the civil rights of the constitution of our country, equally with our fellow-subjects of all other religious persuasions ; it extends no further.

“ We would cheerfully concede the enjoyment of civil and religious liberty to all mankind, we ask no more for ourselves.

“ We seek not the possession of offices, but merely eligibility to office in common with our fellow citizens ; not power or ascendancy over any class of people, but the bare permission to rise

from our prostrate posture, and to stand erect in the empire.

“ We have been taught that according to the pure and practical principles of the British constitution, property is justly entitled to a proportionate share of power, and we humbly trust that no reasonable apprehension can arise from that power which can only be obtained and exercised through the constitution.

“ We are sensible, and do not regret that this equality of civil rights (which alone we humbly sue for) will leave a fair practical ascendancy, where-soever property shall predominate, but whilst we recognise and acknowledge the wholesomeness of this great principle, we cannot admit the necessity of the disqualified disfranchisement of any part of the people in a constitution like that of these realms. We are gratified by the reflection that the attainment of this our constitutional object will prove as conducive to the welfare and security of this great empire, as to the complete relief of the Roman catholic community, that it will secure the quiet and concord of our country, animate all classes of the people in the common defence, and form the most able protection against the dangers which heavily menace these islands.

“ For we most humbly presume to submit it to your Royal Highness as our firm opinion that an equal degree of enthusiasm cannot reasonably be expected from men, who feel themselves excluded from a fair participation of the blessings of a good constitution and government, as from those who fully partake of its advantages; that the enemies of this empire who meditate its subjugation found their best hopes of success upon the effect of these penal laws, which by depressing millions of the inhabitants of Ireland, may weaken their attachment to their country and impair the means of its



defence, and that the continued pressure of these laws in times of unexpected danger only spreads the general feeling of distrustful alarm, and augments the risk of common ruin. To avert such evils, to preserve and promote the welfare and security of this empire, and to become thoroughly identified with our fellow-subjects in interests and affection, are objects as precious in our eyes upon every consideration of property, principle, and moral duty, as in those of any other description of the inhabitants of these realms. If in thus humbly submitting our distressed condition and our earnest hopes to the consideration of your Royal Highness, we would dwell upon the great numbers and the property of the Roman catholics of Ireland, already so considerable, and rapidly increasing, and to their consequent more important contributions to the exigences of the state, we would not do so with a wish of exciting unworthy motives of coercion, but in the honest hope of suggesting legitimate and rational grounds for constitutional relief. And deeply indeed should we lament if these very recommendations should serve only to hold us out as objects of harsh suspicion at home, or of daring attempts upon our allegiance abroad.

“ May we then with hearts deeply interested in the fate of this our humble supplication, presume to appeal to the wisdom and benignity of your Royal Highness on behalf of a very numerous, industrious, affectionate, and faithful body of people, the Roman catholics of Ireland.

“ And to pray that your Royal Highness may be pleased to take into your valuable consideration the whole of our condition, our numbers, our services, our merits, and our sufferings. And as we are conscious of the purity of our motives, and the integrity of our principles, we therefore humbly pray to be restored to the rights and privileges of

the constitution of our country, to be freed from all penal and disabling laws in force against us on account of our religious faith, and that we may thereby become more worthy as well as more capable of promoting the service of the crown, and the substantial interests of this great empire, now committed to the unrestricted wisdom of your Royal Highness." (*See Holt's George III.*)

To offer any comment upon the above quoted document would be insulting to the understanding of the reader, we therefore forbear any remark, which it is abundantly calculated to suggest. We pretend no higher than to write a faithful record of facts, we presume not to judge of the hearts, or weigh the opinions of others, yet may we be permitted to observe that the doctrines of the catholic church implied in it, do not well agree with the protestation of the Irish church in the year 1626 to which we refer our readers, page 28 of our history. Have then the doctrines of the Romish church undergone a change? and is the spirit which once animated its acts utterly extinct, so that it has become an innoxious principle in the bosom of a protestant country? It is not for us to determine these questions, the progress of time and the power of circumstances will resolve them.

During the session of 1813 one of the petitions to which the public anxiously looked forward for discussion, *final* discussion, was that of the Roman catholic claims. This great question, though agitated with moderation of language and close reasoning, was more varied in its objects and principles than heretofore. To the obvious interests of individuals of that communion in freeing themselves from degrading restrictions, and obtaining access to power and emolument, was added a warm zeal in supporting the fundamental maxims of equality of rights among the citizens, and the

entire separation of religious from political concerns, which it was declared operated upon many independently of personal motives. On the other side, to the natural reluctance of the members of an establishment erected with so much cost, to resign any of its prerogatives, was certainly subjoined those feelings of aversion towards the Roman catholic religion, which perhaps can never rationally be expected to be expunged from the hearts of the British public; feelings which have on various occasions united in opposition to it, those individuals who not only on other subjects have had no community of sentiment, but who have even differed most widely from each other. The reason is obvious, it is found in the pages of history. They there read that if the "outworks are given up to Rome the castle may probably be soon obliged to surrender," perhaps also with a painful conviction in consistency with the affirmation of a priest of their own persuasion, the justness of which has been too often borne out by history, "that the popish religion has been mediately or immediately the cause of almost all the political disturbances in Europe, since the days of Gregory the Seventh."\*

We have thus brought our retrospect to the close of the earthly reign of a monarch who was worthy of the warmest affection and heartfelt veneration of his people, and whose almost last ray of rational judgment was exercised by a question involving the religious and civil unity of his subjects, and the determination of which incontestably proved the just sense he entertained of the awful sanction of an oath, and the high responsibility to which it bound him. Let us then while we with gratitude enjoy the blessings which this solemn regal oath protects, regard with pity and

\* See Geddes, quoted in Marsh's Sermon.

christian charity those we think in error. Let us enter our protest against these errors, but in the spirit of christian candour, and christian kindness. Thus and thus only can we remove prejudices, encourage examination, engage the understanding, win the heart, and by shewing in ourselves with truth and simplicity the beauty of holiness and moral worth, haply withdraw many from the mazes of erroneous faith, to that plain and bright path marked out for our pursuit by the martyrs of the glorious reformation. "It is," says an animated and pious divine, "the relation and subserviency of protestantism to legitimate liberty and *vital* christianity, which form its highest and best commendation, and blessings, temporal, spiritual, and eternal, have actually been connected with it." Let us cherish the remembrance of that great event which gave to us such blessings, and guard them with assiduous care, as a great national as well as precious individual deposit.

## CHAPTER XXX.

*State of the arts, sciences, and literature, and of pulpit eloquence  
—The Papacy—Its vicissitudes—Concluding observations.*

A. D. 1800.

SUCH and so multifarious have been the improvements in the arts, sciences, literature, and education since the period in which we paused in our general retrospect, that we are lost amidst the multitude of subjects which invite our observation in those several departments of national intellectual riches. A splendid constellation of eminent geniuses in almost every portion of the hemisphere of knowledge bursts upon our mental view, dazzling our perceptions and perplexing us from what quarter to select the most brilliant stars. But with this amazing march of mind we have the painful duty to mark in too many instances the perversion of its energies; to observe almost super-human talent, assume arms against the highest hopes and the best blessings of man, and waste itself in fanciful theories of human perfectibility, while ordinary and safe means of attaining solid moral excellence were disregarded or contemned, and the plain obligations of duty made to yield to speculative notions, tending to no end but the excitement and encouragement of human pride, and to exalt man above his Creator.

To enter into any illustration of these remarks would be but to repeat what has been fully dis-

cussed by far abler pens, we presume not, therefore, to enter upon a task which, perhaps, might be deemed invidious, of selecting for remark any from the numerous instances that might be adduced, both of superior piety and moral excellence, combined with high talent, or of those who have attained the melancholy pre-eminence of devoting their high intellectual faculties to the service of irreligion, licentiousness, and the low passions of human nature. To attempt such a task would be indeed similar to any one ignorant of astronomy giving his opinion upon the relative position of the stars which illuminate the glorious concave above him. He can see, he can admire their brilliancy indeed, yet would but expose his ignorance, were he to presume to judge of their all-wise end, to pronounce upon the system which preserves them in beautiful harmony, or dare to say why "one star differs from another star in glory." Lest therefore we might incur the contempt which would be justly due to such a self-conceited individual, we shall confine ourselves to a few general observations upon the prevailing literary spirit of the age of which we write, and the influence of mind in its various operations on society during that period.

Many writers there were, who, endowed with the noble gift of eloquence, had also the moral hardihood to renounce the relaxed fashionable opinions, to silence even the counsels of vanity and the instigations of self-love, and to be solely actuated by that universal and durable interest, the happiness both temporal and eternal of their fellow-creatures. In contradistinction to these upright patriots there were too many who exercised their lofty talents in artfully destroying, or at least relaxing, the bond which unites feeble man to his maker; bewildering in the mazes of



their sophistry the timid, the indolent, the thoughtless, and even the sincere inquirer after truth, seeking to render every thing confused, that they might easily undermine religion by attacking its outworks.

Again, we could cite many lively instances, where talent has directed the ignorant, the thoughtless, and the inquiring by wise, affecting, and moderate discourses, or by a judicious blending of reason and sensibility, strengthened the authority of salutary and important truths; but there were also not a few, who in their eagerness to emancipate their fellow-beings from superstition, endeavoured incautiously or wilfully to relax religious restrictions, and thus degenerated into that culpable indifference which is so deadly to all the best and noblest feelings of man, a sort of moral gangrene, which imperceptibly, but surely communicates its morbid influence to every right energy of the soul. The list is ample also of those writers, who in their varied compositions, have served the cause of religion by beautifully illustrating the end it proposes—to assist us to combat our depraved inclinations, to point out the errors, and to save us from the snares of vice, to preserve among us the sacred deposit of principles which are the foundation—the only sure foundation of public order, of private happiness, and to maintain the ethereal light which is to illuminate the path of wisdom and true happiness, while it from time to time recalls our wandering minds to the contemplation of those universal duties so necessary to our well-being, and which we describe under the general name of good morals; duties which we have forcibly seen, in our cursory retrospect, that men would too often inconsiderately wish to separate from public interest, but which are bound to it by so many secret and imperceptible

ties, that they cannot be severed with impunity. "Every act of wisdom and virtue may not indeed," says a luminous writer, "be of immediate importance, but morality must be cultivated by degrees, and fortified by habit." If we make a distinction between personal, domestic, and public manners in order to neglect, as we find it expedient or convenient, one part of our duty, we shall soon lose the charm of it, and every day virtue will become more difficult, for without private integrity there can be little of public virtue. But while many exercised their noblest intellectual faculties in improving those of others and diffusing around them the light of religious knowledge and moral obligation, there were multitudes who imbibed too rapidly the baneful poison of irreligion and anarchy mingled together, which had been insidiously infused in the public taste by the French and German minute philosophers, long before their deleterious effects were manifested in the acts of the most tremendous revolution which ever convulsed the moral world, and these disciples disseminated the poison which polluted their own vicious imagination. The consequences were dreadful to the nations whose patriot spirit had ever resisted the physical force of their demoralized enemies. There is no country in which Infidelity has not thus exhaled his deadly poison, and scarcely any nation of Christians among whom might not be found individuals who either aimed at the total extinction of all religion or endeavoured to invalidate the authority of the Christian system. Some carried on their attempts in an open manner, others under an assumed mask, and that often even of Christian profession. Much is it to be lamented that the inestimable blessings of religious liberty, improved by the good and wise to the glory of Christianity, by setting its doctrines and precepts in a rational

light and bringing them back as far as the mutations of time will allow to their primitive simplicity, have been so far abused by the pride of some, and the art, the ignorance, and the licentiousness of others, as to excite an opposition to the Christian system in general, designed and adapted as it is to lead men through the paths of virtue to happiness and perfection. Hence, although these sublime doctrines have been propagated over the world with laudable zeal by the Protestant and Roman churches, while missionaries have exposed themselves to privations, to dangers, and to exile in order to diffuse the light of the gospel, a multitude of adversaries, who close their eyes upon its excelling lustre, have used every means to eclipse it, even from the view of others. For this purpose they availed themselves of the very institutions for the diffusion of knowledge, which confer such honour upon their projectors and encouragers, and upon the age and nation distinguished by them. In too many instances they were perverted by these evil spirits, into seminaries to further their pernicious purposes, and to infuse into the ductile minds of youth the mental poison, under the guise of public utility. Compilations and compositions of every form to attract the young and the credulous were multiplied and circulated with assiduity, and read with avidity. In these productions, the vehicles of irreligion, disloyalty, and immorality, which found their way through numerous channels into the remotest cottages of the land, not only loyalty and subordination were scoffed at, all legal authority defied, but religion was denounced as a system of craft and imposture, the gospel and its divine author reviled or denied, and its ministers laughed to scorn, while every moral restraint was represented as an encroachment upon the natural liberty of the subject, and

as cruel tyranny or unwarrantable despotism. Well have those publications been termed "the moving pestilence of the land," their object was to rob the poor, the uninformed, the youthful, and the credulous of their best inheritance, to snatch from them the blessings of time, to deprive them of their everlasting hope. Such have been some of the abuses of the diffusion of knowledge; it remains for us who have witnessed a part at least of the terrible operation of the poison, to use the same as the all powerful engine, as an antidote to the moral and mental contamination so widely diffused and so deeply seated. We must do this with vigour, resolution, and perseverance, for with subtle policy the enemies of national religion, of national virtue, or national welfare are still covertly but assiduously employed. The stream of knowledge has burst from its exhaustless fount, let us not check its soul refreshing waters, but rather facilitate its progress, but let us at the same time carefully remove from it every thing that can pollute or poison the living spring. It was in the eighteenth century that the prolific seeds of those noxious plants of infidelity, scepticism, and deism, which yet deform our land, were sown and cherished; when men were urged to desert the sure and peaceful refuge of religion for the dreary wilderness of doubt, to condemn the clear and defined principles which she teaches, and to seek in vague notions that peace they have no power to bestow; to leave established and time-honoured doctrines for airy or for crude speculations, consoling hopes for perplexing anxieties, the conditional certainty of happiness eternal for the gloomy anticipations of annihilation: This in truth may be considered as an age, which as a great writer has emphatically observed, "men of

genius hurried themselves even to destruction, *light* was changed for *conflagration*."

But while we have thus thought it our literary duty to take a glance at those far different exercises of the human intellect exhibited in the eighteenth century, we have also the more pleasing task to record that during the same period arose the majestic fabric of reason and science which now adorns and distinguishes our land.

The fine arts, directed by the enlightened hand of philosophy, soared above the mere purposes of amusement; they shed their softening influence upon manners, were employed in exciting greatness of soul, and stimulating the heart of man to virtue, hence are they become more worthy of their celestial origin.

The mechanic arts and useful inventions marked the rapid march of mind, so various have been the improvements, that in our day scarcely any thing is left undiscovered which can add to the convenience or supply the necessities of life, preserve it unharmed, or shield it from external evil; while philosophy entering familiarly into the juvenile circle, explains various phenomena which used to inspire terror or feed superstition, but are now converted into subjects of interest and amusement, or sources of permanent utility. The domain of intellect has thus been progressively extending, and the cultivation of letters, arts, and sciences continues to be encouraged with even increasing enthusiasm, the present race ardently following up the example of their predecessors in the paths of improvement in every branch of philosophy.

We have by implication mentioned the institutions which provided especially for the gratuitous education of the poor, so peculiarly distinguishing the period of which we now write; but they de-



serve a more direct mention. The small grain sown by the wise and good has in our day grown up and become a large tree, shooting out its fostering branches over the land, sheltering and protecting many from the corruptions of the world. Notwithstanding every imperfection which will necessarily cling to every thing human, these seminaries may justly be considered as the grand counteraction to the vicious principles prevailing, and as the effectual but simple means of producing a salutary change in the manners of the lower classes of the population.

The pulpit eloquence of the eighteenth century gathered its peculiarities from the prevailing taste rather than directed it, as would be its legitimate province. From what we have asserted respecting the perversions of the privilege of free inquiry, it will readily be imagined that the doctrine of faith in the Redeemer, was extinct in the minds of many; and in those who did not entirely reject it, rather a cold languid speculative opinion, than a vital principle exalting the operations of the mind, and harmonizing the feelings of the heart. "Hence," says an animated writer, "the churches were no longer resorted to, to hear truths, believed and at the same time respected by the auditors, men were no longer animated with sentiments of mutual and sympathetic devotion; curiosity, and not good-will to the service, was too often the motive that influenced them. They came to criticise rather than to be edified."

In order to affect the minds of men we must endeavour to please and attract their willing attention, and to enter into their feelings, at least we must be cautious not to wound or disgust them. Hence it was that the preachers of the eighteenth century felt the influence of the prevailing spirit. Fearful of being displeasing, and thus to lose their



power over the minds of their auditors, they gradually became reserved in fulfilling the whole duties of their ministry by dwelling upon that doctrine which humbles the proud spirit of man, they rather confined themselves to those subjects immediately connected with morality. The effect was as injurious to eloquence as to vital religion. Those exhaustless sources of deep feeling, sublime emotions, and commanding interest, the Holy Scriptures, were ill exchanged for reasons drawn from human sanctions, however profound, or sentiments of mere morality however elegant.

The constant allusions to the spirit-stirring passages of holy writ which had given force and energy to the thoughts, and a sublime simplicity to the sentiments of the divines antecedent to the period we are now speaking of, were in a great measure neglected in proportion as the doctrine of the influence of the Spirit of God on the heart, and the experience of his consolations on the soul, was rejected as enthusiasm, and that of inherent depravity was questioned or denied by man proud in fancied excellence. Man is prone to pass into unreasonable extremes, and in nothing more has this been proved than in the various opinions respecting the doctrine of the influence of the Holy Spirit in the work of salvation. Thus while some rejected it as visionary and enthusiastic, others there were who adopted equally erroneous doctrines in the opposite quarter, apparently forgetful that if the all-sufficient mediator effected a new and gracious covenant, that covenant is also a *mutual* compact, consisting of free mercies on his part, and of conditions to be fulfilled on the part of man, and under these stipulations the benefits of redemption are freely open to all; what those conditions and stipulations are, may be found comprehensively expressed in the divine remark, "If

ye love me, ye will keep my commandments." Passing this line of truth so plain and edifying, these individuals represented works as unnecessary and ineffectual, resting their full hope on simple faith in the Redeemer. They contended that no man could be in a state of salvation or favour with God, unless he had an inward experience, a firm conviction of the divine instruction of the Holy Spirit, touching not at all or slightly inculcating the necessity of showing forth the indwelling of this spirit of grace, by the fruits of piety and moral worth. No one indeed who reads the Scriptures, and duly marks the vicissitudes of feeling in his own bosom, can it is thought deny that the assistance of the Holy Spirit is in fact necessary to our salvation; our sufficiency is of God. It is equally certain that moral deportment alone can never be the ground of our acceptance at the mercy-seat, but faith cannot be genuine unless it be evidenced by its sacred fruits. Experimental religion must lead to practical holiness, all besides is but delusion, we are expressly told "faith without works is dead." That the assisting and sanctifying spirit of the Almighty is graciously extended in boundless mercy to all his creatures, who by their own good endeavours have qualified themselves for the participation of it, is a doctrine full of comfort and encouragement to man, feeling his weakness, conscious of his frailty. That it should have been perverted from its simplicity, is but a proof of the constant danger there is of our best principles breaking through their legitimate bounds, and the proneness of man to rest his sentiments on the uncertain ground of his own speculations, rather than to draw them from the transcript of the divine wisdom plainly presented in the gospel.

In reference to that high self-constituted power,

the Papacy, the eighteenth century does not present much to our notice. The modern Bishops of Rome formed not as they had heretofore done the prominent figure in the grand historic picture, as they exhibited little more than an empty shadow of their former power. Their prerogatives were diminished and their encroachments restrained; sovereign princes and states who even embraced their communion, no longer trembled at the thunders of the Vatican. They indeed still laded the Holy Father with pompous titles, and treated him with external marks of veneration and respect, yet did they give a mortal blow to his real authority by the prudent and artful distinction they made between the court of Rome and the Roman pontiff, for under cover of this politic distinction they paid respect to his person, but opposed the measures of his court. Intestine divisions existed in the church, but they produced little general sensation, if we except that which arose from the furious disputes between the Jansenists and Jesuits concerning grace, freewill, and other abstract points of theology. The disputed points were referred to the Pope, who pronounced against the Jansenists by a bull styled Unigenitus. This decision, of course interested every catholic country, Ireland not excepted, whose population is composed of so large a portion of Roman catholics; but in France where it originated, it produced the greatest commotion. The great body of the people, the parliaments, the archbishop, fifteen prelates, and many of the inferior clergy violently opposed it as an infringement of the rights of the Gallican church, the laws of the realm, and an insult on their private judgment. But the king at the instance of his confessor enforced its reception, and the kingdom was quickly divided into *acceptants* and *recusants*; nor was the dispute terminated but by

the death of the king. The Duke of Orleans while Regent ordered the prosecution to cease, at the same time enjoining the recusant Bishops to accept the bull accompanied with certain explanations. Necessitated to comply many did so in opposition to their conscience and sentiments, for the sake of peace. Though still reprobated by the people, the obnoxious bull from this period to 1750 occasioned no public disturbance. At that time the clergy resolved to demand confessional notes of dying persons, and it was ordered that these notes should be signed by the clergy adhering to the bull, without which no viaticum, no extreme unction could be obtained; we name this as an evidence of the pertinacity of the Holy See and of its chief agents and supporters the Jesuits. The consolatory rites alluded to were refused without pity to all recusants, and to such as confessed to recusants. The new archbishop of Paris engaged with all the ardour of a zealot in this scheme, and the parliament espoused the cause of the people. Other parliaments followed the example of that of Paris, and those clergymen who refused to administer the sacraments to persons in their last moments, were thrown into prison. The church complained of the interposition of the civil power, and the king by an act of his absolute authority prohibited the parliament from taking cognizance of such points. The parliament however asserted its prerogative, the dispute ran high, but the parliament firmly adhered to their principles, and retired from business, rather than compromise them. The greatest confusion ensued, the clergy persisted in refusing the sacraments, and the civil power in prosecuting them for such refusal. The king was again brought over to the dispute and referred it to the Pope. Benedict the fourteenth, of mild disposition and moderate

sentiments, felt he could not retract a constitution regarded as a law of the church, he therefore declared in a circular brief to all the Bishops of France that the bull *Unigenitus* must be acknowledged as an universal law, against which none could make resistance “ *without endangering their eternal salvation.*” The king commanded that the brief should be respected, and prohibited the secular judges from ordering the administration of the sacrament, concluding with the declaration that *he would be obeyed.* What was the result? one hundred and twenty-four members of the different courts of parliament gave in their resignation the following day, and also fifteen counsellors of the great chamber, while the desperate fanatic Damiens stabbed the monarch, declaring he had no intention of killing, but of merely wounding him, that God might touch his heart, and incline him to order the administration of the sacraments at the time of death. (*See Russell's Europe.*)

It is here almost unnecessary to add that from this memorable dispute may be traced the suppression of the order of Jesus in France. To this dispute also, we may perhaps justly attribute the rapid enlargement of the human mind observable in this century. From the emancipation which the people gained from spiritual tyranny, the transition was easy to attain other species of liberty. They learnt to trace the motives of human action, to demonstrate the influence of external causes upon the moral conduct of man, to investigate the powers and principles of man as a free agent, and as connected with society, and the powerful effect of government and laws upon the human character. Thus every thing conspired to forward the march of mind. The Dauphin of France, son of Louis XV., had wished for a reform in the society of Jesuits, rather than the extinction of it,



and he avowed the opinion that they were unjustly persecuted. Their subsequent intrigues in Spain, however, justified the policy of the measure. For the interesting and curious account of their extirpation from that country we must however, refer our readers to other histories. It is well worthy the attention of all those who love to mark the mutations of human events and human opinions. As a convincing proof of the declining power and influence of the Papacy we may remark, that at the instance of his Catholic majesty, the Jesuits were also expelled from Naples, and sent into the Papal territories. The Pope warmly remonstrated, but no regard was paid to his memorial. The Archduke Ferdinand as governor of the Milanese, gratified the people by the suppression of the inquisition. The Venetian state also concurred with the Duke of Parma and other Italian princes in restraining the Papal power; more especially the duke, who having requested Clement XIII. to abridge the exorbitant privileges of the clergy, was so terribly incensed at the pontiff's refusal, that he prohibited appeals to Rome, declared null and nugatory all bulls and briefs, and peremptorily ordered that all ecclesiastical dignities in his dominions should be enjoyed only by his own subjects. Clement, who was a strenuous advocate for the supremacy of the church, and a friend of course to the Jesuits, condemned by a brief the orders of the duke, and declaring the clergy exempt from laic or temporal jurisdiction, threatened to excommunicate that prince and all his advisers or abettors. The duke, however, entirely disregarded this threat, he enforced his edict, and still further defied the Pope by expelling the Jesuits from the duchy, and dissolving the society. The kings of France and Spain also desired his Holiness to revoke his



briefe as militating against the rights of sovereigns. But these and other solicitations were unavailing with the pontiff. The Pope's perseverance in his spiritual warfare subjected him to many serious temporal effects. His mental uneasiness impaired his health, and he died 1769, while the great dispute yet subsisted on the extent of ecclesiastical power.

Such was the confused state of affairs, that the papal chair remained vacant above three months. French and Spanish interest, however, at length procured a majority of votes for Francis Laurence Ganganelli. He assumed the designation of Clement XIV. as Rezzonica, the deceased pontiff, had created him a cardinal. Moderate and liberal, he entered upon the discharge of his high functions with the desire and hope of conciliating the courts which were at variance with that of Rome, without derogating from the rights of the Holy See. He declared that he would not so far yield to the clamours against the Jesuits as to condemn them unheard, but would call a general council to decide the question as to the prudence and policy of continuing or suppressing the society. In his conduct towards the several princes, he evinced a dignified moderation, perfectly conciliating, but untinged by servility or meanness.

In regard to the decision of the subject of the Jesuits, the French king desired a prompt decision, but Ganganelli delayed more than four years the determination of the question. Long and profound were his meditations upon a step so important, frequent his consultations with every intelligent individual he believed capable of assisting him in the scrutiny, the result of both seemed a disposition to yield to the wishes of the adversaries of the society. He caused a bull of dissolution to be prepared, he submitted it to the

inspection of the most learned and enlightened theologians; sent copies of it to most of the European princes, soliciting their advice for its improvement. When their answers arrived, still he hesitated; but at length the result of this protracted deliberation was, a resolution to put an end to a society which had excited general odium, alleging the decline of that utility which had once attended the existence of this numerous order, referring to the restless spirit of political intrigue which influenced the majority of its members, and lamenting the effects of their pernicious doctrines, he signed and promulgated the memorable edict of suppression. In consequence all the colleges and seminaries of the Jesuits were seized, and their revenues confiscated, pensions being allowed them to spare them from absolute poverty. The general of the order was required to sign circular letters, addressed to the missionaries and dispersed members of the society, intimating that it had been suppressed with the consent of all the Catholic princes, and that it was their duty to obey the bishops of the different dioceses in which they were then resident. (*See History of Clement XIV.*)

This measure reconciled the courts which had been hostile to the pope. The territories of the church were restored, but great discontent was excited among the high churchmen in Italy, and all other Catholic countries, by the suppression of an order peculiarly devoted to effect the exaltation of the papal power. From the known and general character of Clement XIV., liberal, free from bigotry, severity, pride, and arrogance, he could not a moment be suspected of a wish to exercise either temporal or spiritual tyranny; his edict appears to have been the sincere result of discriminative judgment, a firm conviction of

the justness of the measure, in order to effect and ensure temporal peace and spiritual good—not to arise from an oppressive spirit, anxious to gratify a thirst of power, but from a deep sense of the political expediency and moral duty of suppressing a pernicious society, or which had at least become so in the progress of time, and concurrence of events. This pontiff, who greatly owed his elevation to the recommendation of Louis XV., did not long survive that monarch. In the year 1775, a jubilee had been announced by Ganganelli, and it is worthy of remark, that it was a current prophecy, that he would not survive to officiate at the grand solemnity;—he did not. He certainly had cause of apprehension from the individuals of that order he had suppressed, and hence the supposition that his death was occasioned by poison, but there is no evidence to substantiate such a suspicion.

As it was naturally the wish of the cardinals to fill the vacant chair with a prelate more zealously devoted to the high claims of the church than was the deceased pontiff, a delay of nearly five months took place, before the choice could be final. At the expiration of that period, John Angelo Braschi, who had been introduced into public life by Benedict XIV., obtained the suffrages of the sacred college. This pontiff, both previous to his elevation and subsequent to it, rather steered between the zealous party and moderates, than attached himself conspicuously to either, but he found the management of both a difficult task. His conduct was vigilantly observed by both; he was alternately awed by each, and each accused him of duplicity.

While the spirit of reform, and the assertion of freedom of thought, spread over Europe with rapidity, the papacy was subjected to the inno-

vating career of a monarch, in whose dominions the *illuminati* had more especially propagated freedom of thinking. Joseph, Emperor of Germany, made various ordinances of religious reform, which startled the jealousy of the Roman see. Pius VI., however, though he saw the danger, had no power to avert it; he possessed not the requisite qualities to extend or secure the prerogatives of the holy see; he was rather the elegant courtier than the able statesman; his acts were neither judicious nor consistent, though he was not destitute of capacity and knowledge. The prohibition of applying to the court of Rome for dispensations, and other infringements on the rights of the papacy, made by the emperor, aroused the indignation of Pius, and impelled him to a personal vindication of his dignity. For this purpose he determined to visit the emperor; but he moved not the inflexibility of the monarch; the sole use of his journey was, having gladdened the populace with his frequent benedictions, while it made the emperor more determined in his reforms; he even presumed to style himself the "supreme guardian of the church, and administrator of its temporalities."

This pope was also involved in disputes with the courts of Berlin and Petersburg, the result of which equally proved his declining power, and the diminution of reverence with which he was regarded. The courts of France and Rome had continued, with one only exception, upon amicable terms, from the death of Ganganelli, but when the revolution broke out, the very nature of that terrible explosion presaged a termination of this concord. The non-payment of first-fruits, and the vote which declared the church possessions to be national property, sufficiently indicated the spirit of the times, and was

sufficient to alarm and disgust the pope, while the arbitrary proceedings of the assembly, on the subject of his territories in France, aroused his indignation. It will be in the remembrance, doubtless, of our readers, that it was proposed those territories should be reannexed to the Gallic realm. The measure was convenient, therefore, in the true spirit of the time it was pronounced *just and lawful*. The distress and displeasure of the clergy on the seizure of their property, and the alterations made by the assembly in the disposal of benefices, and in spiritual discipline, drove thousands from their native land during this melancholy period, and when they nobly refused to take the constitutional oath required of them, whereby they were to renounce their *prejudices*, as they were termed, England and Ireland opened their arms widely to receive the unhappy refugees.

But Pius VI. was decreed to endure yet deeper humiliation from a power which had once been the most friendly to the papacy. In the year 1797, during the successes of the victorious armies of Bonaparte in Italy, he sought to crown his victories by the humiliation of the pontiff. His holiness had not fully executed the stipulations imposed on him by the arrogant foe, and his subjects had been stimulated by the priests to resist their encroachments. These were aggressions quite sufficient for those predisposed to hostility. Regardless of the saints who were invoked for the support of the Catholic church, of the holy images exhibited, or of miracles said to be wrought, the French troops were put in motion to invade the ecclesiastical states. Resistance was vain; all objections to unreasonable terms were overruled by menaces, and a treaty was signed between the contending powers. This

treaty was an act of flagitious violence and shameless rapacity; it was but the beginning of the insults the pontiff was to endure. An affray, instigated by the revolutionists at Rome, was made a pretence for further hostility. His holiness, in consistence with his profession, doubtless, but careless as contending for temporalities, trusted more to his spiritual arms than those who were able to defend his country. He ordered three of the most sacred relics of the Catholic establishment to be carried in procession to St. Peter's, and there exhibited on the altar for eight days, that the people might venerate them with devout zeal, and implore the divine assistance amidst the solemnities of the Romish ritual, and the effusions of contrite hearts. "These are our arms," (said the pontiff,) "holy and pacific arms, because they inflict not death, but tend to procure eternal life for every one who will make a proper use of them, and not infrequently, even in this world, enable pious Christians to withstand violence and oppression." (*Duppa's Account of the Subversion of the Papal Government.*)

Willing, however, to try the effect of negotiation, the pope took measures to treat with the French general, whose approach was so much dreaded. The general gave fair promises. In the meanwhile Pius issued a proclamation, desiring the people not to give the least cause of offence to the French, who had disclaimed hostile intentions. The republican host advanced, procured an immediate surrender of the castle of Angelo, took possession of all the gates of the city, detained some cardinals and nobles as hostages for the peaceable behaviour of the people, for the grant of pecuniary aid, and general relief to the troops. Regardless of his promise, the French general prepared to abolish the papal



government, which he did on the Capitoline hill. The unfortunate Pius was celebrating the anniversary of his election to the pontifical dignity, when two officers entered the chapel in which he was enthroned—they announced the termination of his power! His own guards were dismissed, and he was placed under the protection of republican soldiers. The cardinals were deprived of their authority and possessions, and were actually obliged to join in the *Te Deum laudamus*, for the change by which they were degraded and ruined!

The pope did not long remain to witness the tyranny of the invaders, and his country degraded; he was in the first instance escorted to Sienna, whence he was removed to a monastery near Florence. After enduring a variety of suffering and degradation, he died a prisoner of the French.

Rome and its dependencies were subsequently recovered by the co-operation of the English and Austrians, with the troops of his Neapolitan majesty. The Cardinal di Chiaramonte was chosen at Venice to succeed Pius VI., and assumed the pontifical name of his ill-fated predecessor.

We have thus brought our general review up to the close of the eighteenth century, and to the apparent demolition of the papal power. It belongs to the historian of the age now in progress to describe its partial revival, to prognosticate a renewal of its power. We have taken for our study the past; “the perfect story of man cannot be told while it is proceeding;” the picture is too confused, and its colours too dazzling to allow us to select the figures with judgment, or to pronounce with accuracy upon its merits and demerits. We have dwelt the longer upon the decline of the papal power, because we feel the conviction that it is intimately blended with the

subject of our work, the national fluctuations of Ireland. Though the events referring to the Roman see, which we have related, seem to have no connexion with, nor form any distinct feature of historic record in Ireland, yet there cannot exist a doubt in the mind of any one who has the smallest knowledge of the ecclesiastical polity of the Catholics, or of the principles which distinguish their religion, that there is a responsive pulse of feeling subsisting between every member, however remote, of the Catholic body, and the head; that as it droops, or is elevated, so are the members vigorous or enervated, depressed or elated. From this strong sympathy, we may trace the springs which have actuated the Irish Catholics on many occasions, and doubtless may still continue to do so.

The study of history would be but the indulgence of a vain curiosity, did it not serve to guide our policy for the future. That ever any reconciliation can take place between the Catholic and Protestant communions, seems perfectly visionary, although it has by many been fondly thought practicable. The precluding causes are too obvious to need illustration. We have it in our power, however, to prevent the growth, and to limit in some degree the extent of error among our Irish fellow subjects; we must convey the stream of knowledge to the remotest recesses of the land; we must gently loosen the fetters that enchain the human mind; we must open wide to them that sacred volume that points out to them their religious duties, and their high destiny; which in its divine precepts commends the poor and the weak to the protection of the opulent and the powerful; that gospel, which, universal in its views, turns its attention from the contrarieties of interests which divide mankind, and

considers all as forming one great society, united by the same origin, and tending to the same end. Taking man in the most simple, the most elevating and honourable of his relations, viz. that which is derived from his intercourse with the Supreme Being, every hostile division of kingdom against kingdom, sect against sect, at once disappears from the grand scheme of benevolence. The heart of man is formed to enter into this grand scheme, and it is the glory of individuals and of nations to act upon it. Let us then allow for deep-seated prejudices, wherever they meet our view; more especially, let us endeavour to make our Irish fellow-subjects feel, that we earnestly desire to contribute to their temporal and eternal good; let us treat them universally as equals, subject to the same passions, alive to the same sensibilities, and heirs of the same hopes as ourselves; and let us throw the veil of candour and indulgence over their waywardness, while we unceasingly, perseveringly, and tenderly, use the means so amply in our power, to render them an enlightened, well educated people. Then may we hope, and not reasonably till then can we hope to see them contented, happy, and prosperous. Every patriot heart will exert its highest energies to expedite the arrival of that auspicious era, when Hibernia shall be free indeed!

Her own elegant and sagacious Burke has observed, (speaking of liberty,) "I certainly think, that all men who desire it, deserve it; it is not the reward of our merit, or the acquisition of our industry, it is our inheritance, it is the birthright of our species; we cannot forfeit our right to it, but by what forfeits our title to the privileges of our kind, I mean the *abuse* or *oblivion* of our *rational* faculties, and a ferocious indocility, which makes us prompt to wrong and

violence, destroys our social nature, and transforms us into something little better than a description of wild beasts. To men so degraded, a state of strong restraint is a sort of necessary substitute for freedom, since bad as it is, it may deliver them in some measure from the worst of all slavery, that is, the despotism of their own blind and ungoverned passions. The freedom that I love is not solitary, unconnected, individual, selfish liberty, it is social freedom, in which the liberty of no man, and no body of men, is in a condition to trespass on the liberty of any person, or any description of persons in society."

## ADDITIONAL NOTES.

---

### EARL OF ESSEX.

THE death of Essex was suspected by many to have been in consequence of poison, though it would appear to be naturally accounted for from the anxiety of his mind and the physical hardships of his military situation. Among the Lansdowne MSS. is a letter to Lord Burghley from Nicholas White giving an account of the last sickness and death of Essex. It by no means justifies the suspicion of poison.

“ My dear good lord,

“ I receaved by my nephewe your lordship's loving letters all written with your awne hande, which were more comfortable to me than I can express. I finde in themme a rule to direct me and a piller whereon to stay me, besydes a confirmation of your accustomed favour towards me whom yourself hathe lifted uppe from stumbling downe whereof I and my posteritie shall alwaies cary a loving memory. I will not presume to prohibite your honor to write any thing to the governor which youe shall thinke good for me, but I suppose he hathe made choise of such as he thinks fittest to be acquaynted with his plott and therefore using me but as *tanquam vocatus* am to require no more, but his indifferency, and favourable acceptation of my best advise in the service of my prince and countrie.

Oh my good lord, here I must among others advertyse your lordship of the dolefull departure of Th' Erle of Essex who ended this life to begyn a better the xxij<sup>nd</sup> of September, in the Castell of Dublin, and felt his syckness first at Talaghe, th' archebisshope of Dublin's house, in his journey towards Baltinglass to meet th' Erle of Ormonde accompanied with the chancelour, the last of August. I was moche abowte him in the later ende of his syckness and behelt such trew tokyns of nobilitie, conjoynd with a most godly and vertuos mynde to the yelding upp of his breath, as is rare to be sene. Two daies before he died

he had speche with me of your lordship and sayd he thought he was borne to do you and yours good. But nowe sayd he I must comytt the oversight of my son and all to him. He likewise spoke lovingly of my Lord of Sussex with many other thyngs which for prolixitie and otherwise I omitt to write. He doubted that he had bene poysoned by reason of the violent evacuation which he had, and of that suspicion acquitted this lande saying no not Tirrelagh Lurnaghe himselfe wold do no villainy to his person. But upon the openyng of him which I could not abyde the chancelour told me that all his inwarde parts were sounde saving that his hart was somewhat consumed and the blader of his gall empty. Suche as toke upon theme to be his phisicians as Chaloner, Knell a preacher, and the deputie's phisician called Dr. Trever applied him with many glisters, and thereby filled his body full of winde which was perceyved, so as either their ignorance or some violent cause beyond their skill ended his life. His fleshe and complexion did not decay, his memory and speche was so perfitt that at the last yelding up of his breathe he cryed 'cowradge, cowradge, I am a soylder that must fight under the banor of my Savior Christe,' and as he prayed alwise to be dissolved, so was he loth to dye in his bed, which made me remember your Lordship's tale of your father. Emong others he had the care of my seconde son which is all this while brought upp with the yonge Erle his son without any chardge to me because his mother was a Lennox. And required Mr. Waterhouse to move your honor that he might stille attend on his son and be brought upp with him, wherein I refer his case to your accustomed goodness. His lordship comytted to my keping the patents of his creation and comntreyes here and made me one of his feoffees of truste. I hope with the deputies favour to turn those landes to a reasonable yere commoditie to his son. I do send your lordship here inclosed the names of suche of the erles servaunts as were abowte him in the tyme of his syckness and served him most painfully and dilligently, for with respect I thinke them worthy the favour of all men. It is doubted what ende the deputies will make of this great sturr in Conaght.

"From St. Kathrins besyds Dublin, this last of September 1576.

"Yo<sup>r</sup> honors moste bounden during life,

"N. WHITE.

"To the right honnorable my singular good L. my  
L. Burghley Lord Treasurer of Englande."

(See *Ellis' Original Letters*, vol. ii. p. 280.)



## CHARLES I. AND THE EARL OF GLAMORGAN.

IN the Harleian MSS. there is a letter entirely in the king's own writing addressed to the Earl of Glamorgan. It is dated Hereford 23d June, 1645 (soon after the battle of Naseby,) and is as follows:—

“ Glamorgan,

“ I am glad to hear that you are gone to Ireland and assure you that as my selfe is nowais disheartened by our late misfortune so nether this country, for I could not have expected more from them than they have now freely undertaken, though I come not hither absolute victorious which makes me hope well of the neighbouring shores, so that (by the grace of God) I hope shortly to recover my late losse with advantage, if such succours come to me from that kingdom which I have reason to expect, but the circumstance of tyme is that of the greatest consequence being that which now is chieftiest and earnestliest recommended to you by your most assured, reall

“ Constant friend

“ CHARLES R.”

(See *Ellis' Original Letters*, vol. iii.)

This letter pleads in excuse of the impatience of the ardent Glamorgan, and accounts for the facility with which he entered into the intrigues of the nuncio in the expectation that they would expedite the succours so urgently desired by his royal master.

## DUBLIN LIBRARY.

IN a letter of N. Marsh, D.D. to Thomas Smith, DD., dated 4th May, 1700, contained in the Bodleian Library, and given in Aubrey's Selection, we have the following account of the founding a library at Dublin. He is writing to Dr. Smith on various familiar subjects, and thanks him for having procured him some choice books. He then adds, “ And now, sir, that you may know the better what sort of books will best fit for me, I must declare to you a secret, which is this; that by the blessing of God I do design to leave all mine Oriental MSS. to the Bodleian Library when I die, and for the rest of my books I hope to dispose of them thus:—The archbishop's house at Dublin, called St. Sepulchre's, though it may well be called a palace, for the stateliness of all the public rooms of reception, yet hath no chapel nor library belonging to it, nor indeed any convenient

room to hold an ordinary study of books. This consideration hath made me resolve to build both a chapel and a library, which had been done by this time, if the title to the ground on which I am to build could have been cleared, which I hope will soon be done. The chapel is designed for the use of the archbishop's family, the library for a public use; which will be of great use here, where is no public library, (that of the college being open only to the provost and fellows,) and where the booksellers shops are furnished with nothing but new trifles; so that neither the divines of the city, nor those that come to it about business, do know whither to go to spend an hour or two upon any occasion of study. In this library, if God will enable me to go through with the work, in order to the building whereof I have laid by 800*l*. (which is money that became due to me from the king whilst I was concerned in the government last summer,) in this library, I say, my intentions are to lodge all my printed books when I die. Sir, the design reacheth yet a little further, I have now 600*l*. worth of books lying ready in Dublin to be put into the library as soon as it shall be built, which is the study of a learned gentleman that will give them freely, provided the king will settle upon him 200*l*. per annum out of the first fruits of the kingdom, as a salary for being library-keeper, (which he will attend,) until I or my successor can bestow upon him the chancellorship or treasurership of St. Patrick's in Dublin, (on which are no cures,) to be appropriated to that use for ever. The gentleman is Mr. Bouhereau, who published *Origen contra Celsum*, in French, with learned notes, in Holland. He is a man as well qualified to be a library-keeper as any I do know, being well skilled in critical learning, and one of great correspondence. The matter hath been before the king some time, and now that the troubles of the parliament are over, I hope we shall have a gracious answer speedily; my Lord Galway being deeply concerned in it, because Mr. Bouhereau is his secretary, and hath been so for many years. I have near 200*l*. worth of books by me, that I would put into the library presently, were it built, and the rest when I die; and I hope, if my Lord Galway might continue in the government a little longer, to find a way by a removal to get one of the for-mentioned dignities for a library-keeper, without being chargeable to his majesty for any thing out of the first fruits. Rev. Sir, I have now opened my heart to you, and told you what are my sincere designs for God's glory; whereupon I have two things to beg of you, first that you will offer up your daily prayers to God for me, that he will enable me to go through with this great work, or else that he will direct me to do something else in lieu of it, that may make more for his honour and glory. Secondly, that you will, from time to time, give me

your advice what books come out that are fit for a public library. I desire your advice before you order them for me, lest I should have them by me before, as I have the new edition of *Sirmondus Works*, *Basnagius Ecclesiastical History*, the *Bibliotheca Patrum Maxima*, in 27 volumes folio, and several others lately from France. Sir, I tire you with this long letter, but I am sure you will pardon me when you have read it; pray for me daily, as I do for you.

“ Being sincerely, Rev. Sir,

“ Your affectionate brother and humble servant,

NARCISSUS.\*

\* This excellent divine and amiable man was born at Honnington, Wilts, December 20th, 1638, of an ancient and respectable family. He received his first education in his native place, and in 1654 was placed at Magdalen Hall, Oxford. He took his B.A. degree in 1657, and in 1658 was elected fellow of Exeter College, where he proceeded in his degrees, taking that of D.D. June 23d, 1671, at which time he was appointed principal of St. Alban's Hall by the Duke of Ormond, then chancellor of the university. The duties of this office he executed with so much zeal and judgment, that according to Wood “ he made it flourish more than it had done many years before, or hath since his departure.” By the interest of Dr. Fell, and at the request of the Duke of Ormond, Charles the Second nominated him to succeed Dr. Ward, in the provostship of Dublin College, and in January, 1679, he was sworn in. He was then admitted doctor of divinity, and in 1683 raised to the sees of Leighlin and Ferns; hence he was translated, in 1690, to the archbishopric of Cashell, to Dublin in 1694, and in 1703 to that of Armagh. After having lived with honour and reputation to himself and benefit to mankind in general, he died November 2d, 1713, at the advanced age of 75, and was interred in a vault in the church-yard of St. Patrick's, Dublin. This excellent prelate seems to have expended the greater part of his life and income in acts of benevolence and utility; he not only founded the library mentioned in the letter, which he filled with the books of Dr. Stillingfleet, as well as his own collection, but he endowed an hospital at Drogheda for poor widows, greatly encouraged the propagation of the gospel, repaired many decayed churches in his diocese at his own expense, and extended his bounty to other works of munificence and charity. His character, perhaps, is in no place better delineated than in the letter we have in part quoted; but the epitaph placed on the monument erected to his memory, in St. Patrick's church, cannot but confirm the good opinion which must be formed of his real virtue, unaffected piety, and ardent charity.—(See *Aubrey's Selection*.)

THE END.

LONDON:

IBOTSON AND PALMER, PRINTERS, SAVOY-STREET, STRAND.



